

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 06917 282 1

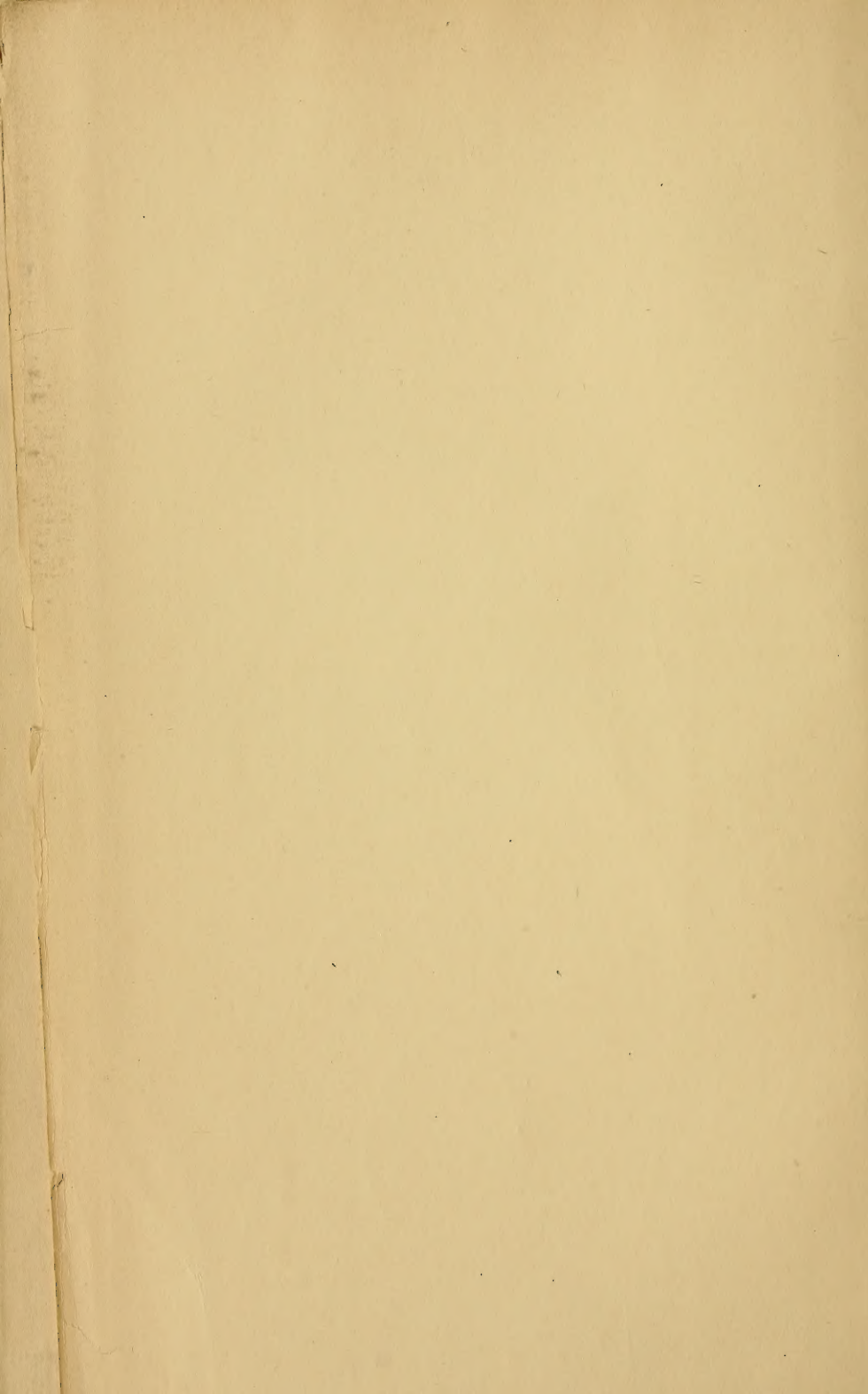
★  
No. 4478.481

v. 3



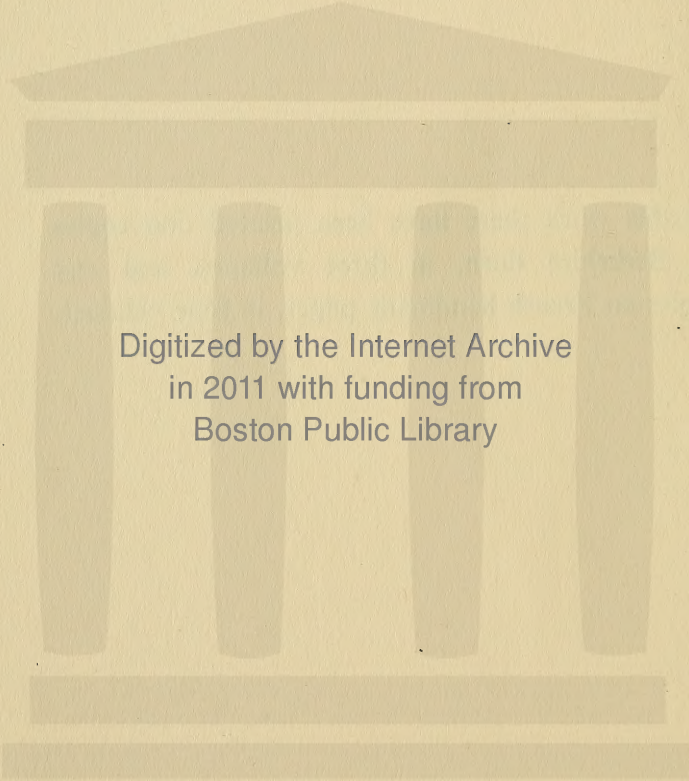








Of this work there have been printed 600 copies on Berkshire linen, in three volumes, and 135 copies on French handmade paper, in four volumes.



Digitized by the Internet Archive  
in 2011 with funding from  
Boston Public Library



HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND

VOL. III





# HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND

FROM ITS  
DISCOVERY AND SETTLEMENT  
TO THE  
PRESENT TIME

BY  
BENJAMIN F. THOMPSON

THE THIRD EDITION  
REVISED AND GREATLY ENLARGED  
WITH ADDITIONS AND

A BIOGRAPHY OF THE AUTHOR

BY  
CHARLES J. WERNER  
MEMBER OF THE LONG ISLAND HISTORICAL SOCIETY

VOLUME  
III

NEW YORK  
ROBERT H. DODD

1918

✓

✓

✓

3 vols.

Letter Eps. #371.12, etc.

Nov. 7, 1921.

F.

Copyright 1918,  
By ROBERT H. DODD

THE QUINN & BODEN CO. PRESS

RAHWAY, N. J.



# TABLE OF CONTENTS

## VOLUME III

	PAGE
FLUSHING . . . . .	3
NEWTOWN . . . . .	47
LONG ISLAND CITY . . . . .	79
BUSHWICK . . . . .	81
WILLIAMSBURG . . . . .	95
GRAVESEND . . . . .	105
FLATLANDS . . . . .	128
NEW UTRECHT . . . . .	147
FLATBUSH . . . . .	168
NEW LOTS . . . . .	193
BROOKLYN . . . . .	196
PRESENT CONDITION AND FUTURE PROSPECTS OF LONG ISLAND . . . . .	274
BIRDS OF LONG ISLAND . . . . .	282
THOMPSON FAMILY . . . . .	292
CAPTAIN JOHN SCOTT . . . . .	302
JOHN BOWNE AND DESCENDANTS . . . . .	306
LION GARDINER AND DESCENDANTS . . . . .	313
MATTHIAS NICOLL AND DESCENDANTS . . . . .	334
TALLMADGE FAMILY . . . . .	345
COLONEL BENJAMIN TALLMADGE . . . . .	349
FLOYD FAMILY . . . . .	358
REV. JOHN YOUNGS AND DESCENDANTS . . . . .	370
MAJOR RICHARD SMITH AND DESCENDANTS, OR THE "BULL SMITHS" . . . . .	375
RICHARD WOODHULL AND DESCENDANTS . . . . .	384
GENERAL NATHANIEL WOODHULL . . . . .	390
STRONG FAMILY . . . . .	424
CAPTAIN NATHAN HALE . . . . .	429
HON. FRANCIS LEWIS . . . . .	437
EGBERT BENSON . . . . .	442
COMMODORE THOMAS TRUXTUN . . . . .	447

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

	PAGE
COLONEL BENJAMIN BIRDSALL . . . . .	451
CAPTAIN NATHANIEL NORTON . . . . .	454
MELANCTHON SMITH . . . . .	456
REV. DAVID S. BOGART . . . . .	461
WHITEHEAD HICKS . . . . .	469
CAPTAIN CALEB BREWSTER . . . . .	473
ELISHA W. KING . . . . .	479
HENRY S., SHEPARD A. AND WILLIAM S. MOUNT . . . . .	483
WILLIAM MOORE, M.D. . . . .	489
WRIGHT POST, M.D. . . . .	492
VALENTINE SEAMAN, M.D. . . . .	497
PETER W. RADCLIFFE . . . . .	500
MAJOR GENERAL EBENEZER STEVENS . . . . .	504
NATHAN SANFORD . . . . .	507
CAPTAIN THOMAS WILLET AND FAMILY . . . . .	511
COLONEL MARINUS WILLET . . . . .	514
RUFUS KING . . . . .	518
SAMUEL JONES . . . . .	525
ISAAC LEDYARD, M.D. . . . .	533
RICHARD RIKER . . . . .	537
GEORGE WOOLSEY AND DESCENDANTS . . . . .	542
DE WITT CLINTON . . . . .	549
VALENTINE MOTT, M.D. . . . .	558
DR. SAMUEL LATHAM MITCHILL . . . . .	562
DR. ZOPHAR PLATT AND THE PLATT FAMILY . . . . .	567
ENGLEBERT LOTT AND DESCENDANTS . . . . .	574
PHILLIPS FAMILY . . . . .	578
SANDS FAMILY . . . . .	581
THE TANGIER SMITHS . . . . .	590
JOHN, WILLIAM, AND THOMAS LAWRENCE AND DE- SCENDANTS . . . . .	600
SAMUEL TOWNSEND AND FAMILY . . . . .	622
APPENDIX . . . . .	630
CAPTAIN JOHN UNDERHILL . . . . .	640
INDEX . . . . .	653



# LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS

## VOLUME III

Gowanus Bay . . . . .	<i>Frontispiece</i>
	FACING
	PAGE
View at Whitestone . . . . .	3
Erasmus Hall, Flatbush . . . . .	168
North Western View of Brooklyn From Near Peck Slip .	259
Residence of the Late Judge Thompson at Islip . . .	292
Casina, the Farm of Mr. Woolsey, Hell-Gate Neck . .	542

## MAP

Travellers' Map of Long Island in 1848. Folding Plate .	118
---	-----



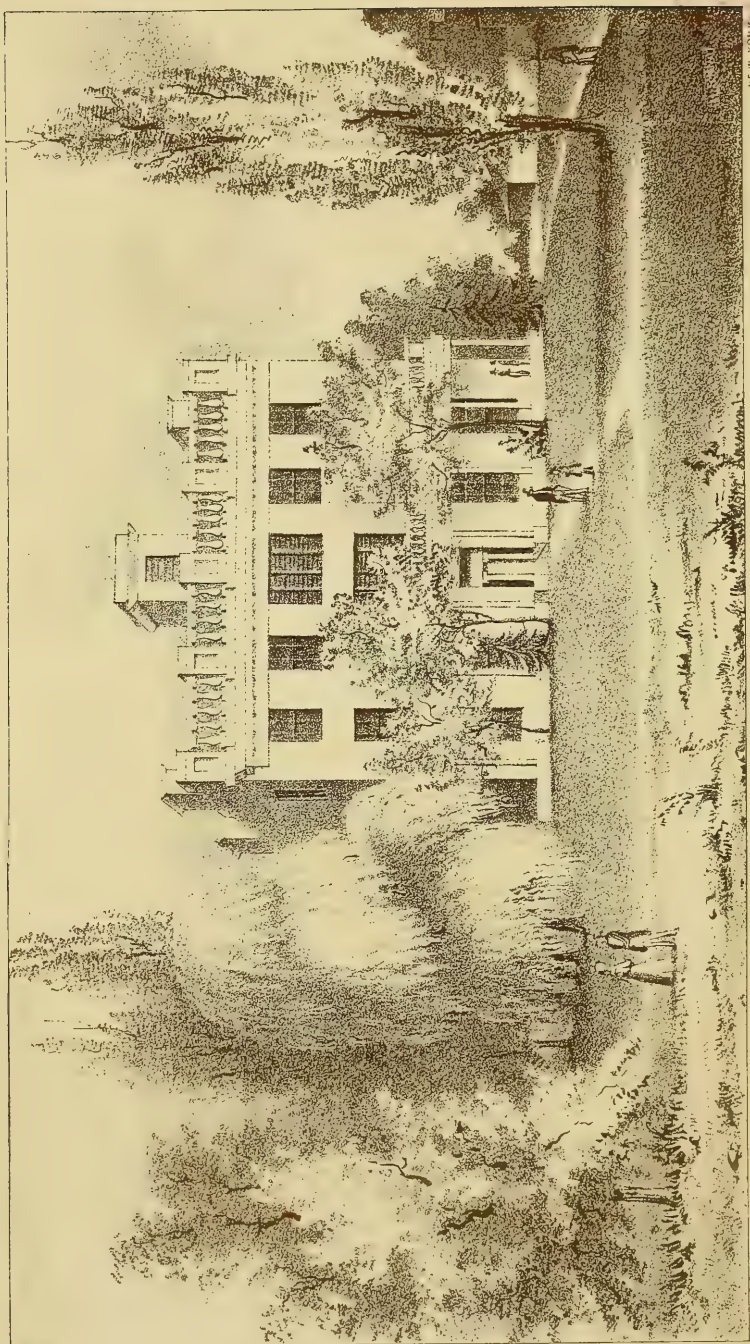


HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND  
VOL. III









LITH OF ENDICOTT

NEW YORK.

# VIEW AT WHITESTONE J. L.

RESIDENCE OF SAMUEL LEGGETT ESQ.



# HISTORY OF LONG ISLAND

## FLUSHING

Is bounded north by the Sound, east by North Hempstead, south by Jamaica, and west by Newtown, is centrally distant from the City Hall, New York, about twelve miles, and contains an area of twenty-five square miles or 16,000 acres.

The older records of the town are entirely wanting, having been destroyed by fire in 1789,<sup>1</sup> which circumstance is not only greatly to be lamented, but has subjected the compiler of its history to serious difficulty in obtaining the most material facts and circumstances in relation to its early settlement and subsequent progress.

It seems that long before much effort was made to settle upon any part of the territory within the limits of the town, a conveyance had been obtained from the Indians by the West India Company, evidenced by the following instrument translated out of the Dutch records in the office of the secretary of state.

“ We the Directors and Council of New Netherlands, residing in the Fort Amsterdam, under the dominion of the High and Mighty States General of the United Netherlands, and the chartered West India Company, at the Chamber of Amsterdam, do witness and declare by these presents, that upon the day underwritten, appeared before us in their own persons, Mechowod, Chief Sachem of Massapeague, Sintsinck, alias Schouts Bay, and the de-

<sup>1</sup>At the house of J. Vanderbilt, town clerk, on October 31, 1789.

—EDITOR.

pendences thereof, and did freely and premeditatedly declare, with consent of Piscamoe his cousin, Wortte-woockhow, Kackpohor, Ketachquawars, likewise owners of the aforesaid lands, for and in consideration of a certain parcel of merchandise, which they acknowledge, before this present act, to have received into their hands and custody, to have transported, delivered up, and made over in a true, just and free possession, as they do transport, deliver up, and make over to and for the use of the Directors of the General Chartered West India Company at the Chamber of Amsterdam, all the appearants patrimonial lands, and the jurisdiction thereof, lying upon Long Island, in the Indian tongue called Sewanhacky, beginning, in length along the south side of said island; in breadth to Martin Gerritson's Bay, and from thence west along the East River to the Vlacks-Kill or Plaene Creek, with all the right and title of him Mechowod or any of his heirs, belonging and reserved or kept by them in quality as aforesaid, constituting the said Lords in his stead, real and actual possession thereof, and thereby giving to them, by these presents, full and irrevocable power, authority and special command, that they or those that shall hereafter receive their right, may accept, freely possess, keep, enjoy and use the said lands and dependences—and further to deal therewith and dispose of them, as with their own well obtained lands, without any reservation or power of the transporters in the premises, but all to the benefit before expressed, with condition that he the said Mechowod, with his adjacent people and friends may remain to dwell, to plant Indian corn, to fish, and to hunt in the said lands, and so to live with his people, under the protection of the said Lords, who shall give him likewise all possible help and favor by their substitutes in these parts. In witness whereof, and in testimony of the truth by witnesses hereunto required, who have been present at the time of the bargains. Done in the

Fort Amsterdam, in New Netherland this 15th day of January, 1639."

"David Pieters de Vries, Mourits Janse, as witnesses.

"In knowledge of me

"CORNELIUS VAN TIENHOVEN, Secty."

It is clear that this grant included also the lands in Jamaica, and extended from Martin Garrison's Bay on the east to Flushing Creek on the west, the present boundaries of the town in those places. There is no reason to believe that any settlement was attempted here by the Dutch, and it is moreover satisfactorily ascertained that the first planters were a set of intelligent Englishmen, who, having resided for a time in Holland, had been induced to emigrate to this region as well from their uncomfortable condition there, as the encouragement held out to them by the agents of the province of New Netherlands, that they would here enjoy to the fullest extent all the civil privileges and religious immunities of their native country, or as if it were a British province.

It would be highly gratifying to be able to give the names of those brave pioneers of Flushing who, honestly confiding in the assurances aforesaid, and the integrity of the Dutch, chose this part of the island for their future residence.

How well they enjoyed the advantages which had been promised, and to what extent they were allowed to indulge their religious freedom, will be fully disclosed in a subsequent part of this article; for however much liberty of conscience and freedom of opinion were talked about at that period, it will be abundantly evident, that its nature was very imperfectly understood, and its exercise circumscribed within very narrow limits. In short,



they were subjects of which few, if any, possessed very correct notions, and in which scarcely any were sufficiently enlightened to appreciate them to their full extent.

The name of *Vlishing*, or *Vlissingen*, was probably adopted at the suggestion of their Dutch neighbors, it being that of a seaport in the province of Zealand, and in grateful remembrance of much kindness experienced by the settlers of the town from the inhabitants of Holland, from whence some of them probably took their departure for America.

They arrived at New Amsterdam in the spring of 1645, and having in the same year located themselves on the site of the present village of Flushing, obtained a patent or ground brief from the director general of New Netherlands, the Hon. William Kieft, bearing date October 19, 1645, in which Thomas ffarington, John Lawrence, John Townsend, Thomas Stiles, John Hicks, Robert ffield, Thomas Saul, John Marston, Thomas Applegate, Lawrence Dutch, William Lawrence, Henry Sawtell, William Thorne, Michael Millard, Robert firman, and William Pidgeon were named as patentees for themselves, their successors, associates, and assigns, who were to improve and manure the land included in said patent, and settle thereon, within a short time thereafter, a competent number of families. The conditions mentioned in the patent were fulfilled by the settlers, and the place soon rose into comparative importance, although the want of any direct conveyance from thence to the city, except by water, must have very much retarded that rapid increase of inhabitants, which, under other and more favorable circumstances, might have been expected.

The natural exuberance of the soil was most extraordinary, and it is therefore very remarkable that the Dutch had not commenced a settlement here long before, as they had done in Kings County.

There is a tradition among the people that a few years after the commencement of the settlement, another person of the name of Thorne, whether a relation of William is uncertain, with his wife and children, left England with the intention of settling in this province, and it so happened that the vessel in which he took passage, coming through the Sound, and being either wind bound or met by the tide, cast anchor near Throg's Point. The passengers, desirous of inspecting the country and to be once more on shore, landed upon the island, where they met and conversed with some of the white inhabitants. Finding them Englishmen also, and the land presenting appearances of great fertility, Mr. Thorne resolved to seek no further for a place of residence, and immediately agreed for the neck or point in the eastern part of the town adjoining the East River, which was long after known as Thorne's Point.

This valuable estate continued in the family, till about the close of the eighteenth century, when it was sold to a man named Wilkins, from which time it has generally been distinguished by the name of Wilkins' Point, and is one of the most valuable and handsome farms in the country. Some of the posterity of Mr. Thorne formerly owned the beautiful farm of the late John Titus (since the property of Robert Carter, deceased), and were in possession of it long subsequent to the Revolutionary War.

It is matter of tradition that for many years after the settlement of the town, no safe and convenient high-

way existed by which the city could be reached except by a circuitous route by the way of Jamaica, owing doubtless to the existence of swamps, streams, and dense forest, which obstructed a more direct route of communication.

Hell Gate was then considered dangerous to navigation, except for small vessels keeping near the shore, yet an individual who kept a store near the head of the bay, had purchased a canoe from the Indians, capable of conveying a hogshead of molasses and a few passengers, whom he was in the habit of transporting to and from the city in good weather.\*

Quite anciently there stood near the site of the late town pond a building called the Block House, in which most of the public business was transacted, the town records preserved, and arms and ammunition deposited.

In a comparatively short period after the organization of the settlement, the people began to experience strong evidence of the illiberality of those who conducted the government of New Netherlands; indeed, the earliest entries upon the council minutes demonstrate that a hostile feeling existed between the administration and a portion of its subjects, which led eventually, as might have been expected, to frequent acts of insubordination, and no little violence and bad temper on both sides.

\* To exhibit clearly the scarcity of silver money in this quarter of the world at that distant period (1647), and in the now wealthy village of Flushing, it needs only be related, as a well authenticated tradition, that an old English shilling having been accidentally picked up in the highway was considered a matter of so much curiosity that the public attention was attracted to it, and an inquiry set on foot to ascertain, if possible, the ownership of an article so rare in that era of *shell-money*. It was finally ascertained that the man above spoken of, who kept a store near the bay, had at some time been seen in possession of a similar piece of money, and was able to exhibit satisfactory evidence that the coin found belonged to him.



On the public records of April 8, 1648, is the following extraordinary information:

"Thomas Hall, an inhabitant of fflishingen, in New Netherlands, being accused that he prevented the sheriff of fflishengen to doe his duty, and execute his office, in apprehending Thomas Heyes, which Thomas Hall confesseth, *that he kept the door shut*, so that noe one might assist the sheriff, demands mercy, and promises *he will do it never again*, and regrets very much that he did so. The director and council doing justice condemn the said Thomas in a fine of 25 guilders, to be applied at the discretion of the council."

The Rev. Francis Doughty, who, it seems, was in Taunton, Mass., at the time of its settlement, came to Long Island in 1644, and was the first minister of Flushing, probably a Baptist, but afterwards turned Quaker; and it is believed that all the families of that name in this part of the state are the descendants of this gentleman. His salary was at first 600 guilders, and in 1647 an order was issued by the council of New Amsterdam to assess the inhabitants of Flushing for his salary, they having refused to pay it voluntarily. It farther appears that after his decease, an action was brought by his son, Elias Doughty (named in Nicoll's and Dongan's patents), in the year 1666, to recover the arrears of salary due to his father; but on its being shown that Governor Stuyvesant had *forced* the town to sign the articles for the maintenance of the minister, "he, taking the people into a room one after another, and threatening them if they did not sign," the court ordered a part only of the amount claimed to be paid.\*

\* This was the same Francis Doughty who was at Cohannet, now Taunton, in 1640, and one of the first purchasers there. He is mentioned

At a meeting of the supreme council of New Amsterdam, April 22, 1655, Thomas Saul, William Lawrence, and Edward Farrington were appointed magistrates out of the list of persons nominated by the town.

Tobias Feeke was also appointed schout or sheriff. This individual was the son of Robert Feeke, who was at Watertown, Mass., in 1630, and who is said to have married the daughter-in-law of Governor Winthrop. He was also one of the representatives of the general court at Boston, and came here in 1650, where he died in 1668 at an advanced age. The records in the surrogate's office in the city of New York show that administration was granted on his estate to Sarah, his widow, then of Flushing, June 19, 1669.\*

A number of individuals entertaining the opinions of the Quakers, who had now become inhabitants of Flushing, were victims of that odious intolerance so disgraceful to any government, and which, beyond all question, had a principal agency in bringing about the overthrow of the Dutch power in 1664.

These revolting scenes, in which it was basely attempted to circumscribe and prevent the exercise of religious liberty by public authority, took place in this town, and in some other places within the Dutch juris-

by Leechford, in his *Newes from New England*, as being dragged out of a public assembly for asserting that Abraham's children should have been *baptized*, which harsh treatment may well account for his leaving that colony soon after, as he did with his wife and children.

He was the first minister in Newtown to whom and others it will be seen a patent was granted for lands in that town in 1642, the next year after his expulsion from Massachusetts. His posterity are numerous and are allied by marriages with many of the old Long Island families.

\* Feeke, or *Feaks* (as the name is sometimes spelled) was one of the persons appointed by the colony of New Haven in 1640 to purchase from the Indians the land now comprised in the town of Greenwich, Conn., but he, it is said, violated his engagement, and with a few settlers placed himself under the Dutch Government.

diction, between the years 1650 and 1664, when that arbitrary disposition could no longer be indulged. The odious circumstances which transpired during this critical period in the history of the province, it is now impracticable to relate, as little reliance can be placed in the sources whence our information must be derived.

In December, 1657, the governor and council issued an order to the people of the town, requiring them to cease from giving any countenance to or entertaining Quakers, and directing them to apprehend and send to the city such as should profess or preach the doctrines of that heretical sect. The strong and spirited remonstrance which was returned on the occasion, will be found in our article entitled "Quaker Persecutions," and is a noble exhibition of ability and independence. It is signed by Edward Hart, clerk, and thirty other principal inhabitants of the town.

Tobias Feeke, who was now schout or sheriff, at the request of his fellow-citizens, presented the remonstrance to the governor, and was immediately arrested, and with Edward Farrington and William Noble, two of the magistrates who had signed the same, was summoned to appear and answer for their disregard of the orders which had been issued and the placards of the governor.

"It was ascertained (says the record) that the magistrates had been inveigled and seduced by the sheriff, but considering their verbal and written confession, and their promise to conduct themselves in a more prudent manner thereafter, their fault was *graciously pardoned*, and forgiven, provided they paid the costs of the examination, &c."

The following is the apology made by the magistrates on the occasion referred to:



“To the honorable the governor and his council, the humble petition of William Noble and Edward Farrington,

Sheweth:—That, whereas your petitioners having subscribed a writing offensive to your honors, presented by Tobias Feeke, we acknowledge our offence for acting so inconsiderately, and humbly crave your pardon, promising, for the time to come, that we shall offend no more in that kind. And your petitioners shall ever pray for your health and happiness.

EDWARD FARRINGTON.

his

“WILLIAM ✕ NOBLE,  
mark

“Amsterdam, January 10, 1658.”

The clerk, it seems, was also persuaded by apprehensions of danger to himself, and from the temper shown by the authorities of New Amsterdam, to apologize for the part he had acted in relation to said remonstrance, and therefore sent them a paper of which the following is a copy:

“Right honorable governor and council:—Forasmuch as I have written a writing whereat you take offence, my humble desire is, that your honors would be favorable and gracious to me, for it was not written in disobedience unto any of your laws; therefore, my humble request is for your mercy, not your judgment, and that you would be pleased to consider my poor estate and condition, and relieve me from my bonds and imprisonment, and I shall endeavor hereafter, to walk inoffensively unto your lordships, and shall ever remain your humble servant to command.

EDWARD HART.”

“Jan. 23d, 1658.”

The decision of the governor and council upon the subject of this petition, was made in the form following:

“ 1658, 23d January:—Being presented, and read, the petition of Edward Hart, clerk of Vlissengen, and considered his promises that he would conduct himself more prudently, and the intercessions of several of the inhabitants of said village, that he always was willing to serve his neighbors, and that, as one of the oldest inhabitants, he was thoroughly acquainted with their affairs; and further, that the sheriff, Tobias Feeke, advised him to draw the aforesaid remonstrance of the first of January, and then presented: and further, that he has a large family to maintain; so is it, that the director-general and council pardoned his fault for this time, provided that he pays the expenses and mises of justice.”

As an example of what was done in other cases, may be cited the instance of Robert Hodgson, who arrived from England at New Amsterdam August 1, 1657, but finding that his preaching would endanger his safety, if not his life, in that city, came to this town where he was well received; but on going to Hempstead he found no quarter, but was apprehended and transported to the city, where he was imprisoned and subjected to the most odious and disgusting inflictions. The inhabitants were at length so moved by his sufferings, that they offered to pay his fine of 600 guilders to obtain his release.

The vessel in which he arrived left for Rhode Island on the 3rd of August, 1657, with Humphrey Norton, Mary Clark, John Copeland, and Christopher Holden, Quakers, some of whom, on going to Boston, fared little better than Hodgson, and were finally banished from that colony.

Governor Stuyvesant continued to show his implacable hatred of this sect during the remainder of his official life. Henry Townsend who (in 1657) resided at Rusdorp (Jamaica) had interested himself in getting up a meeting for one of the persons who came in the vessel with Hodgson, for which, on the 15th of September, he was sentenced to pay a fine of £8; and a law was also promulgated by placard, fixing a fine of £50 for entertaining a Quaker a single night, one half of which was to be paid to the informer, whose name was to be kept secret; and the vessel which should bring any Quaker into the province was to be confiscated.

The character of the government and those concerned in its administration, from the highest dignitary to the lowest ministerial officer, was getting generally unpopular. It was in fact an union of church and state in its worst form; perhaps the former most prevailed, producing a sort of religious *ostracism*, which left the person accused no course but stern resistance, followed by almost certain suffering, or submission of the most degrading kind and yielding up the liberty of speaking and writing freely upon matters deemed of the highest importance relating to this world and the next: a mental slavery most degrading. Notwithstanding the want of firmness and moral courage in some, to meet the crisis with manly resolution, there were others, neither few in number, nor insignificant in influence, who breasted the flood of bigotry and intolerance like men conscious of their rights, and resolved to defend them at every hazard.

The spirit of disapprobation progressed *pari passu* with the unjust measures of the governor and council; and the ordinances passed to restrain the freedom of

religious worship, met with an opposition unsubdued and unsubduable, particularly in this town, where even those who were not Quakers made common cause with those who were, and by their union, in the end, proved an overmatch for their opponents. Among the most substantial, and not the least respectable of this class, was John Bowne, who, with his father, Thomas Bowne, came early to this town; the latter being born at Matlock in Derbyshire, England, May, 1595, and being consequently now near seventy years old. His will was executed October 20, 1675, and he died the next year during the absence of his son John in Europe. His daughter Truth remained in England, but his daughter Elizabeth, wife of Edward Farrington, accompanied him.

His son John was born at the same place, March 29, 1627. In 1661 he erected part of the old Bowne mansion, still standing, and the remainder in 1680, as a meeting-house for Friends. This venerable monument of antiquity is still in good preservation, and is now inhabited by some of his name of the seventh generation.

Most of the materials of this house which had a gallery in one end, were originally of oak, being covered with oak clap-boards, and the floors composed of the same, pinned down, instead of being fastened with nails. The windows were of small dimensions, set with minute panes in leaden sash. An oak table, with other ancient furniture, is still shown, as well as the staff used by the aged Thomas Bowne, while laboring under the infirmities of age. And as for ancient documents, autograph letters from George Fox and other persons of his day, we venture to say that no private residence upon the island can exhibit as much to please and gratify the lovers of olden times as are contained in this. In this house,



George Fox was entertained on his visit to Flushing in 1672; but as it was not large enough to accommodate all who attended upon his preaching, they assembled under the widely extended shade of two majestic oaks, nearby, now supposed to be more than 400 years old, and measuring in circumference at two feet from the ground, about sixteen feet. One of these is yet alive and vigorous, while the other was broken off several feet above the soil, by a violent gale September 25, 1841, in consequence of which the following poetical effusion appeared in many newspapers of the day:

#### THE FLUSHING OAK

The ancient Oak lies prostrate now,  
Its limbs embrace the sod,  
Where, in the Spirit's strength and might  
Our pious fathers trod;  
Where underneath its spreading arms,  
And by its shadows broad,  
Clad in simplicity and truth,  
They met to worship God.

No stately pillars round them rose,  
No dome was reared on high—  
The Oaks, their only columns were,  
Their roof, the arching sky.  
No organ's deep-toned notes arose,  
Or vocal songs were heard—  
Their music was the passing wind,  
Or song of forest bird.

And as His Spirit reached their hearts,  
By man's lips speaking now,  
A holy fire was in their eye,  
Pure thought upon their brow:  
And while in silence deep and still,  
Their souls all glowing were  
With heartfelt peace and joy and love,  
They felt that God was there.

Those free and simple-minded men  
Have now all pass'd away,  
And of the scenes in which they moved,  
These only relics lay;

And soon the last surviving oak,  
In its majestic pride,  
Will gather up its failing limbs,  
And wither at its side.

Then guard with care its last remains,  
Now that its race is run;  
No sacrilegious hand should touch  
The forest's noblest son;  
And when the question may be asked,  
Why that old trunk is there—  
" 'Tis but the place in olden time,  
God's holiest altars were."

In addition to the above poetical tribute, the following account was given in another publication about the same time, and is from the pen of that close observer of all that is valuable or curious in history, the late Colonel William L. Stone, editor of the *New York Commercial Advertiser*:

"A VETERAN GONE.—The oldest inhabitant of Flushing is no more! During the windy afternoon of the 25th inst. one of the venerable oaks, which for so many years have been a prominent object in Bowne Avenue, near the village of Flushing, was prostrated to the ground. To a stranger this conveys no higher occasion for regret than the removal of a noble tree by the operation of the inevitable laws of nature; but to those who have passed many a happy hour of childhood in gathering the acorns which fell from it, and have made it the scene of their youthful sports, it seems like the removal of a venerated relative—as if one of the few visible links, which in this utilitarian land connect us with the past, was severed.

"To the members of the society of Friends these trees possessed an historical interest, from the circumstance that beneath them, about the year 1672, the dauntless

founder of their sect, with that power and eloquence of truth which drew to his standard Penn and Barclay, and a host of men like them, preached the gospel of redemption to a mixed assemblage, among which might be seen many a son of that swarthy family whose wrongs and sufferings elicit to this day the active efforts of his followers on their behalf. Some seventy years since, these honored trees were threatened with demolition by the owner of the adjacent property, but for the sake of the venerable past were purchased by John Bowne, a lineal descendant of the old worthy of the same name, who listened to the preaching of Fox and embraced his doctrines, for which he was afterward sent to Holland in irons, where he was honorably liberated by the Dutch Government, and a severe reprimand administered to Stuyvesant. The time honored mansion in which he entertained Fox, and accommodated the regular meetings of the society for many years, is still standing near, and in good repair."

"Osgood Field of New York, a friend of Thompson, composed the following poem on the Fox Oaks in 1847, and transmitted it to the historian for publication in the present edition of this work, which he was then compiling. After a lapse of sixty-nine years the well-chosen words are before the reader, and turn his thoughts to old Flushing, and her stately memorial of bygone days."

EDITOR.

WRITTEN UNDER GEORGE FOX'S OAK AT FLUSHING

Long Island, on thy sea-girt shore is many a cherished spot,  
When I could fly from care and trial and envy no one's lot,  
But Flushing most of all I love, that land of fruits and flowers,  
Where Pan roams free, if yet he roams, and Flora builds her bowers;  
For my forefathers, when they reached these shores, did here abide,  
Here pitched their tents, here reared their homes, and called the place  
Bay-side.

No voice amid the forest gloom, no footstep echoed here,  
Save when the tawny Indian passed, and chased the flying deer;

Till then, no woodman's axe had made these lofty woods resound,  
Nor patient ox with guided plough upturned the fruitful ground;  
Now gardens blooming all around with perfume filled the air,  
The reddest rose at Flushing grows, the fairest lily there.

Beneath this oak where I now lie, George Fox the Quaker stood,  
And preached, as John the Baptist preached, beneath the spreading wood.  
For persecution sought to drive his followers from the land,  
And here around him, came by stealth a little Christian band;  
And one of these, for conscience sake, whose blood flows in my veins,  
To Holland, prisoner was sent, weighed down by heavy chains.

Imagination sways me now, dim fancies crowd my mind,  
As underneath the old oak's shade I lie at length reclined;  
I hear George Fox with earnest voice pour forth the words of peace,  
And pray the Lord that war and strife, throughout the world may cease.  
Beneath the spreading canopy his followers draw near,  
With holy zeal they forward press, the man of God to hear,  
And save the breeze amid the trees, no other sound is heard,  
Unless perchance the melody of some wild forest bird,—  
The savage Indian stops anear, against a tree he stands,  
He hears the messenger of peace, the bow drops from his hand,—  
'Tis past—George Fox—his followers,—the Indian—all are gone,  
And I, beneath the old oak's shade, am lying all alone.

I've seen Old England's oak, where once the Royal Martyr lay,  
And heard the Covenanter's words, while passing 'neath its shade,  
And dearer still the Hartford oak, in our own native land,  
Where once the Charter lay concealed, safe from a King's command;  
But this old tree which o'er me spreads, and throws its shade around  
Is sanctified, and I now lie on consecrated ground.  
A church it stands, whose sacrament is the turf on which I tread,  
Its trunk an altar, and for arch, the branches overhead,  
No splendid dome, though blessed by priest, where thousands bend their  
knee  
To worship God, is fitter place or holier than this tree.

A thousand years mayst thou, old oak, still flourish in the land,  
Thy bough still wave above, below thy trunk still firmly stand,  
Long ere the woodman's axe shall sing upon thy timbers staunch,  
Long ere the robin cease to sing upon thy topmost branch,  
Long ere the scathing lightning strike and send thy limbs apart;  
Long ere the gnawing worm shall come and penetrate thy heart;  
Long may the birds build nests in thee with oak twigs interlaid,  
Long may the young lovers breathe their vows beneath thy grateful  
shade,  
Long may the cherished name be carved upon thy rough-hewed bark;  
Long may'st thou hear above thee poised, at early dawn, the lark,



Long ere the mellow earth refuse the sap unto thy roots;  
Long may the ripened acorns fall, and rise again in shoots,  
Which watered by the showers above, and moistened by the ground,  
Shall grow till they become large oaks, and hemming thee around,  
Protect their parent from rude blasts, with more than filial love;  
Until thou find'st thyself at last the patriarch of a grove,—  
But if thou too, like other trees, must share the fate of all,  
And should in future years arrive the day when thou must fall,  
No mansion may thy timbers form, nor yet upon the seas,  
In wandering ships be tossed about, at mercy of the breeze,  
But carried in many a quaint device, as long as oak can last,  
Be treasured up, and handed down, as relics of the past.

The celebrated George Fox, a man equally distinguished for his moral character, intelligence, and courage, visited America in 1672, and, as has been above remarked, paid a visit to this town. For the gratification of the general reader, and as well as being a matter of curiosity, we here present a few extracts from the private journal of this extraordinary individual.

After spending a few days in the city of Philadelphia, and passing from thence through the province of New Jersey:

“ At length we came to Middletown, an English plantation in East Jersey, where there were some Friends; but we could not stay to have a meeting, being earnestly possessed in our spirits to get to the half yearly meeting of Friends at Oyster Bay in Long Island, which was near at hand. We got to Gravesend, where we tarried all night. Next day got to Flushing. The day following we reached Oyster Bay. Several from Flushing and Gravesend accompanied us. Thence to Shelter Island and Fisher's Island; but could not stay, for the mosquitoes, which abound there, and are very troublesome. We returned to Oyster Bay, where we had a very large meeting. From Oyster Bay we went about thirty miles, to Flushing, where we

had a meeting of *many hundred people*. Meantime Christopher Holden and some other Friends went to a town in Long Island, called Jamaica, and had a meeting there. We passed from Flushing to Gravesend, about twenty miles, and had three precious meetings there. While we were at Shrewsbury, John Jay, a Friend of Barbadoes, who came with us from Rhode Island, fell from his horse and *broke his neck*, as the people said. Those near him took him up for dead, carried him a good way, and laid him on a tree. I got to him as soon as I could, and concluded he was dead. Whereupon I took his head in both my hands, and setting my knees against the tree, raised his head two or three times with all my might, and *brought it in*. He soon began to rattle in his throat, and quickly after, to breathe. The people were amazed, but I told them to be of good faith, and carry him into the house. He began to speak, but did not know where he had been. The next day we passed away, and he with us, about sixteen miles, to a meeting at Middletown, through woods and bogs, and over a river, where we swam our horses. Many hundred miles did he travel with us after this."

In the council minutes of September 14, 1662, we find the following entry:

"Whereas, John Bowne, now a prisoner residing at Vlissengen, on Long Island, has dared, in contempt of our orders and placards, those of the director general and council in New Netherlands, not only to provide with lodgings some of that heretical and abominable sect named Quakers, and even permitted that they kept their forbidden meetings in his house, at which he not only, but his whole family has been present, by which the aforesaid abominable sect, who villify both the magistrates and the preachers of God's holy word, and who endeavor to undermine both the state and religion, are not only encour-

aged in their errors, but other persons are seduced and lured from the right path, all which are transactions of the most dangerous consequences, from which nothing else is to be expected, as calamities, heresies and schisms, directly contrary to the orders of the director general and council in New Netherlands; which, therefore, deserves to be punished for an example to others; so is it, that the director general and council in New Netherlands, having heard the conclusion of the matter, and the confession of the prisoner, doing justice, in the name of their high mightinesses the states general of the United Netherlands, and the lords directors of the privileged West India company, department of Amsterdam, condemn the aforesaid John Bowne in an amende of £25 Flanders, and to pay the costs and mises of justice, with the express warning to abstain himself, in future, of all such conventicals and meetings, on the penalty that, for the second time, he shall pay double amende, and, for the third time, to be banished out of this province of New Netherlands.

“Done and condemned, at a meeting of the director general and council in Fort Amsterdam, in New Netherlands, Sept. 14, 1662.”

The accused, however, declining to comply with the decision of the tribunal before which he was condemned, and the fine not being paid for about three months—during which time he remained incarcerated in the fort of New Amsterdam—the following additional sentence was pronounced:

“1662, 14th December.—Whereas, the prisoner, John Bowne, a Quaker, declined very obstinately, now during three months, in great contempt of the authority of the director general and council, to pay the amende, in which he was condemned on the 14th of September, by the director general and council, for procuring lodgings for,

and frequenting the conventicles of the heretical and obstinate sect of Quakers, so is it, that the director general and council, for the welfare of the community, and to crush, as far as it is possible, that abominable sect, who treat with contempt both the politick magistrates and the ministers of God's holy word, and endeavor to undermine the police and religion, resolved to transport from this province the aforesaid John Bowne, if he continues obstinate and pervicacious, in the first ship ready to sail, for an example to others."

Accordingly on the 8th of January, 1662, we find a further proceeding in the council, the record of which is as follows:

"Whereas, John Bowne obstinately declines to submit to the judgment of the Director General and council, so is it, in conformity to the resolution of the 14th of December last, commanded to depart from here in the ship the *Fox*, now ready to sail, while it is once more left to his choice either to obey and submit to the judgment, in paying the amende imposed upon him, or otherwise at sight of this, to depart in the aforesaid ship."

In a few days from the date of this definitive sentence, Bowne took passage in the ship "*Fox*" for Holland, and the account which has been preserved of this extraordinary adventure states that the wind being adverse for their arrival speedily in Holland, the ship put into Ireland, where Bowne was permitted to land, and pass through that country and England also, upon his personal engagement to make his appearance in due time before the authorities of Holland. This promise he most honorably fulfilled and arrived in Amsterdam, February 29, 1663, and was patiently heard before a committee of the *West India Company*; who, finding him



a discreet man and steadfast in his religion, set him at liberty—with the following severe reprimand in the form of an epistle, directed to Governor Stuyvesant:

“AMSTERDAM, April 6, 1663.”

“Sir:—We perceive from your last letter, that you had exiled and transported hither a certain Quaker, named John Bowne. Although it is our anxious desire that similar and other sectarians may not be found among you, yet we *doubt* extremely the policy of adopting rigorous measures against them. In the youth of your existence, you ought rather to encourage than check the population of the colony. The *consciences* of men ought to be *free* and *unshackled* so long as they continue moderate, peaceable, inoffensive, and not hostile to the government. Such have been the maxims of prudence and toleration by which the magistrates of this city (Amsterdam) have been governed; and the consequences have been, that the *oppressed* and *persecuted* from every country have found among us an *asylum* from distress. *Follow in the same steps, and you will be blessed.*”

On his return the colony was in the possession of the English, but upon calling on the puissant Stuyvesant, now a private citizen, this individual expressed his regret for having used so much severity toward him and his fellow Quakers, whom he frankly admitted to be among the most valuable citizens.

The case of Bowne is only one among many instances in which this bigoted governor presumed to interfere with the enjoyment of religious liberty in the province, as will be more fully shown in the article entitled “Quaker Persecutions,” to which the reader is respectfully referred for further particulars of this reign of terror.

What might have been the future conduct of the director general and his pliant council, but for the timely arrival of Colonel Nicoll, which stopped the swelling tide of resentment and persecution, is matter for conjecture only. But an instant and effectual change had taken place, and the people had abundant cause for the most heartfelt rejoicing.

By reference to the Dutch patent it will be seen that the patentees and their associates, successors, &c., were empowered to choose a schout or constable, and the people were assured of the fullest liberty of conscience, according to the manner and custom of Holland; yet it turned out that in direct violation of their chartered rights and privileges, the director general, on the 20th of March, 1658, as a pretended punishment for their remonstrance against his very arbitrary measures, abolished all municipal authority in the town, and substituted, without any color of law or precedent, a set of officers whom he denominated *tribunes*; at the same time imposing a tax of twelve styvers per morgan, upon all the lands of the inhabitants for the purpose, as he declared, of maintaining what he called an orthodox minister amongst them; and to make the matter more insulting to the freemen of the town, it was provided that such as disliked the imposition of the tax might within a given time dispose of their property and leave the place.

It happened as might be supposed that very few, if any, embraced the latter alternative, for most of the population being either Quakers or the friends of Quakers, resolved to brave the little brief authority of the Dutch autocrat, by remaining on the spot which they had chosen as their permanent home, and to wait patiently for some political change which might better

their condition and relieve them from the tyranny of their present rulers.

For the want of better accommodations, and to avoid the penalties announced by the governor's placards for holding conventicles in private houses, they convened in the woods and other secluded places; but even this precaution was found insufficient to guard them against the vigilance of persecution, for all meetings whatever held by Quakers for religious purposes, were by another placard strictly forbidden, under penalties still more exorbitant.

The same illiberal and oppressive course of conduct in the management of affairs, was pursued during the continuance of the Dutch Government, and ended only with the conquest of the province in 1664.

February 16, 1666, a patent of confirmation, drawn in the usual form, was obtained from Governor Nicoll, and made to the following persons, to wit:

“ John Lawrence, alderman of the city of New York; Richard Cornhill, justice of the peace;—Charles Bridges, William Lawrence, Robert Terry, William Noble, John fforbush, Elias Doughty, Robert ffield, Edmund ffarington, John Maston, Anthony ffield, Phillip Udall, Thomas Stiles, Benjamin ffield, William Pidgeon, John Adams, John Hinckman, Nicholas Parcell, Tobias ffeeks, and John Bowne, patentees for, and in behalf of themselves and their associates, the freeholders, inhabitants of the town of Flushing, their heirs, successors, and assigns forever, all that certain town in the north riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island, called by the name of *Flushing*, situate and lying and being on the north side of the said island; which said town hath a certain tract of land belonging thereunto, and bounded westward, beginning at the mouth of a creek upon the East River, known by

the name of Flushing Creek, and from thence including a certain neck of land called *Tews-Neck*, to run eastward as far as Mathew Garretson's Bay, from the head or middle whereof a line is to be run south-east, in length about three miles, and about two miles in breadth, as the land hath been surveyed and laid out by virtue of an order made at the general meeting held at Hempstead in the month of March, 1665; and that there be the same latitude in breadth on the south side as on the north, to run in two direct lines southward to the middle of the hills, to the bounds between the said towns of Flushing and Jamaica."

As it had not been customary for the settlers of the towns within the Dutch territory to obtain a conveyance for the soil directly from the natives, the inhabitants of this town, like many others, possessed their lands solely by virtue of the patent formerly executed by Governor Kieft; but it was afterwards judged most consonant with the principles of justice, as well as most prudent, to procure, from the original and legitimate proprietors of the soil, a deed of confirmation for the premises heretofore enjoyed by them, from the time of the organization of the settlement.

The conveyance executed for the purpose was made April 14, 1684, by *Tackapousha*, sachem of Massapeage, *Quassawasco*, *Succanemen* (alias *Runasuck*) *Werah*, *Cetharum*, *Nunham*, *Shunshewequanum*, and *Oposum*, chiefs, styling themselves the true owners and proprietors of all the lands included within the boundaries of Flushing, which they convey thereby, to Elias Doughty, Thomas Willet, John Bowne, Matthias Harvey, Thomas Hicks, Richard Cornhill, John Hinchman, Jonathan Wright, and Samuel Hoyt, as agents for the



freeholders of the said town, reserving to themselves and their heirs for ever, the right of cutting *bulrushes* in any part of the said territory.

A second confirmatory patent was issued by Governor Dongan, March 24, 1685, which was therein declared to be made for the purpose of securing to the inhabitants the peaceable enjoyment of the premises before granted, and especially for preventing all controversies that might otherwise afterwards arise, by reason of any claim to the said lands, from Tackapousha, Succanemen, Runasuck, or other Indian sachems, and from all persons whomsoever, who should assert any title to the said lands or any part thereof.

The persons named as patentees therein, were Elias Doughty, Thomas Willet, John Bowne, Mathias Harvey, Thomas Hicks, Richard Cornell, John Hinchman, Jonathan Wright, and Samuel Hoyt.

In 1681 and 1682, on the threatened repeal or revocation of the edict of Nantes (which took place October 22, 1685), originally enacted in 1598, for the protection of the Protestants of France, more than 500,000 people, it is supposed, left their native country, taking refuge in England, Holland, and other parts of Europe, where they were in general kindly received and entertained. Many thousands of these unfortunate individuals found their way to America, by some of whom the town of New Rochelle was founded, and a few families came some years after to this town, where, strange to say, few if any of their posterity can now be discovered. They, as well as the great majority of their fellow emigrants, were the most respectable and valuable accession ever made to the population of our country. A very great number of their descendants

have always ranked among the most intelligent and virtuous of our citizens. Indeed, it is doubtful if a more excellent race of men can be found in any part of the world than they who claim to be descended from those who have been designated by the general denomination of *Huguenots*, although less is known of their origin and subsequent history than of almost any other class of our inhabitants. Even the *name* by which they have so long been known, is involved in doubt and uncertainty, which it is perhaps, at this day, impossible to remove.\*

Fifty or more years since, the aged inhabitants of Flushing could point to the former residences of these venerable strangers, who have long since passed away like a vision of the night, leaving few or no memorials behind, if we except the much esteemed Lady Apple and Belle Pear trees. Some of the identical trees of this description, planted by them in different places, are still

\* In an old work, of deserved reputation, which we have examined, it is said that the name *Huguenot* is explained in many different ways. Some, says the author, derive the word from *huc nos venimus*, the beginning of the first protestation of the apologetical oration, made before Cardinal Lotharingus, in the time of Francis II. of France.

*Du Verdier* derives it from John Huss, whose opinions they embraced, and *guenon*, an *ape*, q. d. *John Huss' Apes*. Others from *Hugh Capet*, whose right of succession to the crown the Calvinists maintained, against the house of Guise. Again, it has been supposed to take its rise from *Huguenot*, a piece of money, a farthing in the time of Hugh Capet; others derive it from *Hugon*, a gate in the city of Tours, where they first assembled.

In Barclay's Dictionary, *Huguenot* is said to be a name of contempt given to the Protestants of France, and had its rise in 1560; for at Tours, the people had a notion that an apparition or hobgoblin, called King Hugon, strolled about the streets in the night time; from whence, as those of the reformed religion met in the night to pray, &c., they called them Huguenots, or disciples of Hugon.

Whoever wishes for more information may consult Jeurieu's *Pastoral Letters*, and Smedley's *History of the Reformed Religion*, Brande's *Encyclopedia*, and the second volume of Littell's *Living Age*, page 446.

found in various parts of the town, and, from their present vigorous appearance, they bid fair to flourish for a century yet to come.

The introduction of many choice fruits by these respectable people, and by others who were encouraged by their example, improved, as they have been, by a well adapted soil and climate, with the advantage of a convenient and ready market, has given rise to the establishment of more extensive nurseries and gardens in this town, than can be found in any other part of the United States; accordingly, it has long enjoyed a high and enviable reputation for the immense variety and excellence of its fruit, plants, and ornamental trees. One of the most noble, as well as valuable establishments of this sort then existing in the country, was that of the late William Prince, which was begun by his father William in 1750, the adjoining land having been since purchased of William Bayard and Herman Le Roy, sons-in-law of Samuel Cornwell, who had removed from here to South Carolina many years before. The grounds occupied previous to 1793 contained about eight acres, and were in that year increased to twenty-four, but, by gradual additions as became necessary, the quantity was in 1840 extended to about sixty acres.

So long ago as 1776, the soil then used for the purpose was filled with the finest well-grown fruit trees, among which were at least 30,000 grafted English cherry trees; but, as the enemy then took possession of Long Island as well as New York, there was, of course, no demand for so valuable an article for the purpose of propagation, and immense quantities were disposed of for hoop-poles, the only use which could then be made of them.

It is a fact honorable to the memory of General

Howe, and one which deserves to be mentioned, that when the British troops first entered this town, he, of his own accord, and from his high sense of propriety, on the 29th of August, 1776, stationed a guard for the protection of the garden and nurseries, which was continued so long as the same was required for safety and preservation.

The green-house alone of this large establishment contained, in 1840, more than 20,000 flowering plants, and the gardens were filled with an immense variety of fruit and ornamental trees, both indigenous and exotic, herbaceous, flowering, and medicinal plants, bulbous and tuberous roots, &c.

The gardens and nurseries were at that time owned by the said William Prince and his sons, who had conducted them for several years previous. The senior proprietor, one of the best and most amiable men, died at the age of seventy-six years, April 6, 1842; William Prince, his father, having died in 1802, leaving William, Benjamin, John, and Sarah, who married Charles McNeil. He was a lineal descendant of the celebrated Thomas Prince (or Prence), who arrived at Plymouth colony in 1621, and was governor there for a period of eighteen years.

The institution has long been known by the name of the "Linnæan Botanic Garden," which name it still retains.

Great attention has been given by the proprietors to the cultivation of the mulberry tree, which will probably hereafter become an object of much importance in this country, although at present it appears to attract comparatively little attention.

The first specimen of the *Morus multicaulis* plant, now



so well known in the culture of silk, was introduced for the first time into the United States, by the Messrs. Prince, in the spring of 1827. They imported it from Marseilles, where it had been brought the year before, from the Philippine Islands, with two other varieties, the *Morus ovalifolia* and *Alba lascinata*. It was then known as the *Morus sinensis*, and also as the *Morus* of the Philippine Islands; but it was not till some years after, when it had become more disseminated in France, that it received the name of *Morus multicaulis*, or many stalked mulberry.

The original plant was obtained from Tarascon, near Marseilles, and cost five francs, by which its merits may be judged of, considering that it came from the very land of mulberry nurseries.

In the fall of 1827, they received several other varieties to complete their assortment, and to give the public an opportunity of testing by experiment the superiority of any one; being led to this importation by a resolution of Congress of May, 1826, directing the secretary of the treasury to prepare a manual of the best practical information on the growth and manufacture of silk adapted to different parts of the Union.

The grounds occupied by this ancient nursery and garden were disposed of a few years since, and are now owned by Gabriel Winter, Esq., by whose agency the business is still carried on extensively, although some part of the grounds has been converted into streets and building lots; while William R. Prince and his brother Alfred Prince have already an extensive garden and nursery, a short distance south of the former, in which they have an almost infinite variety of valuable and choice trees, plants, &c., and which already nearly equals

the primitive establishment that formerly belonged to the family.

The old Bloodgood nursery, now or lately owned and conducted by Willcomb and King, has long been in high reputation, and is only inferior in quantity and variety to the Linnæan Garden.

The establishment of Parsons & Company, called the "Commercial Garden and Nursery," is also an extensive and valuable collection, and deserves like the others, the patronage of the public. Wiggin's "Floral and Pomological Nursery" covers a considerable extent of ground, and is filled with an extensive variety of trees, shrubs, and plants of the choicest kinds.

From this brief account, it will be seen that Flushing has not only led the way in this description of cultivation, but has obtained a rank in horticulture which is unrivalled by any other place on the American continent. It is true likewise that this species of commerce has added greatly to the wealth and prosperity of the town, and will, if continued, insure its pre-eminence for the future.

*Cadwallader Colden*, former lieutenant governor of the colony of New York, was for many years a resident of Flushing. He was the son of the Rev. Alexander Colden of Dunse, in Scotland, where he was born February 17, 1688; he graduated in Edinburgh in 1705, and devoted himself to medicine and mathematics till the year 1708. The fame of Penn's colony allured him to America in 1710, and he practised physic in Philadelphia till 1715, when he returned to England. Here he formed an acquaintance with many eminent men, with whom he maintained a correspondence ever after. From London he went to Scotland, where he married Alice

Christie, daughter of a clergyman of Kelso. In 1716 he came back to America with his wife, and practised medicine in Philadelphia for two years. In 1718 he removed to New York, where he relinquished his profession and became a public character. He soon distinguished himself as a philosopher and statesman. His writings in several departments of science attest his extraordinary industry and ability. His correspondence with most of the learned men of the age in which he lived, is an evidence of the estimation in which he was held by them. His character as a statesman will be found in his political writings, and in his correspondence with the ministry of Great Britain at the critical times in which he administered the colonial government. He held successively the offices of surveyor-general of the colony, master in chancery, member of the council under Governor Burnet, and lieutenant governor at several periods. He purchased a tract of land near Newburgh, which he named Coldenham, and to which he removed in 1756. Here he occupied himself with botanical and mathematical pursuits, carrying on at the same time a correspondence with Collinson, Linnæus, Gronovius, and others, in Europe; and with Franklin, Garden, Bartram, Alexander, and others in America. He wrote treatises upon Gravitation, on Matter, on Fluxions, and various other subjects of science. While holding the office of lieutenant governor, he resided most of the time at his farm in Flushing, called Spring Hill, where he built a spacious and substantial mansion. His death took place here on the 20th of September, 1776, at the age of eighty-eight years; and he was buried in a private cemetery on the farm attached to Spring Hill. He had five sons and five daughters, a part of whom only survived him, viz.:

Alexander, born August 13, 1716; David, born 1719, who died an infant; Cadwallader, born May 26, 1722; John, born May 28, 1729, died unmarried in August, 1750; David, born November 23, 1733; Elizabeth, born February 5, 1719; Jane, born March 27, 1724, who died without issue March 10, 1766; Alice, born September 27, 1725; Sarah, born July 6, 1727, who died an infant, and Catherine, born February 13, 1731, who died unmarried in June, 1762. His daughter Elizabeth married Peter De Lancey, Esq.; Jane married Dr. William Farquhar; and Alice married Colonel William Willet. Three of Governor Colden's sons, Alexander, Cadwallader, and David, were successively surveyor-generals and prominent men in the colony. His son David, to whom he devised the farm at Spring Hill (now the property of Charles J. Henshaw), becoming a warm and active loyalist in the Revolution, lost his estate by forfeiture and retired to England in 1784, where he died the 10th of July of the same year. He was bred to the profession of physic, which, however, he never practised. He was fond of retirement, was much devoted to scientific pursuits; and his correspondence with learned men in Europe and America is to be found in the publications of the time. His wife was Ann, daughter of John Willet, Esq. of Flushing. She was married February 27, 1767, and died in August, 1781, at Coldenham, Orange County. Mr. David Colden left one son and eight daughters, viz.: Cadwallader D., Alice Charity, Mary, Ann, Elizabeth, Catherine, Ann, 2d., Harriet, and Caroline. His daughter Mary, born April 7, 1770, married the late Josiah Ogden Hoffman, and was the mother of Ogden Hoffman, Esq. of New York; Elizabeth, born February 25, 1774, married Edward W.



Laight; and Catherine, born November 20, 1775, married the late Thomas Cooper.

The first building in the town expressly for religious purposes, next to the Bowne house before mentioned, was the present Friends' meeting-house in the village of Flushing, now probably the oldest church of any denomination upon the island. It was raised in 1690, and completed with a gallery upon three sides in 1694. It is sixty by forty feet, and was when erected probably the largest ecclesiastic edifice in the colony of New York. It was required to be of considerable dimensions to accommodate not only the people of the town, but the yearly meetings held in the province. It has been kept well covered and apparently is as sound now as when first raised, containing timber of such size and length as could not now, if at all, easily be procured upon this part of the island. The first Quaker meeting-house in New York was framed at Flushing and transported to the city. The Flushing meeting-house, being the best adapted for the purpose, was taken possession of by the British in 1776, and used as a hospital and storehouse during the war. A small meeting-house was built by the orthodox party of Friends, after the unhappy division among them in 1827, and stands in proximity to the old meeting-house.

The Episcopal Church was formed here in 1704, under the sanction of the Society for Propagating the Gospel, and meetings were held many years in the old town house, otherwise called the guard-house, near the site of the town pond, which has disappeared in the course of modern improvement.

In 1745 Captain Ralph Wentworth made a donation of half an acre of land on the west side of the said pond for the site of an Episcopal Church, and he gave like-

wise a considerable sum toward its erection, which took place a short time thereafter, probably before 1750. In 1761 a charter of incorporation was executed by Lieutenant Governor Colden, by the name and style of St. George's Church. In the year 1782, a legacy of £200 was given to the church by the Hon. Samuel Cornwell of North Carolina, a native of this place, whose father, Samuel Cornwell, occupied the dwelling lately owned by William Prince the elder.\*

In 1762 Mr. Kneeland was appointed catechist of the church at a salary of £10 a year. It was, of course, a collegiate institution, in connection with the other churches of the same denomination at Jamaica and Newtown, the same minister officiating alternately in each.

In 1770 the congregation raised the sum of £126 for repairing the church, and in 1803 united with those of Newtown in settling the Rev. Abraham L. Clarke, who had been rector of St. John's Church in Providence, R. I., from March, 1793, to March 14, 1800, when he resigned. He remained in the joint charge of the two churches

\* This gentleman, a descendant of the ancient Cornwells of Flushing, went in early life to the South and became a respectable and wealthy merchant at Newbern, N. C., previous to the commencement of hostilities with the mother country. He espoused the royal cause during the contest and forfeited his real estate in that province as a consequence. The time of his death is uncertain, but he left several daughters, one of whom became the wife of William Bayard and another of Herman Le Roy, of the late distinguished house of Le Roy, Bayard & McEvers. One of the daughters of Mr. Le Roy married Daniel S. Jones, Esq., of New York, and another the Hon. Daniel Webster of Massachusetts. A daughter of Mr. Bayard married the late Hon. Stephen Van Rensselaer of Albany.

"Arrived in N. Y. from Newbern Hon. Sam'l Cornhill Esq. with family, & slaves &c."—*Gaine's Mercury*, January 5, 1778.

"Died at Flushing of Small Pox, Susannah, wife of Hon. Sam'l Cornell Esq., aged 47. She was buried in the church yard."—*Gaine*, February 16, 1778.

united till 1809, when he confined his services exclusively to that of Newtown.

In the same year this church obtained as third rector, the Rev. Barzillai Buckley, and the corporation of Trinity Church in New York gave to the society three lots of ground, toward the future support of its minister. Mr. Buckley continued here till his death, March 29, 1820.

The following summary exhibits the rotation of ministers who have officiated in this church from 1705 to 1837, for the most part in connection with the churches of Jamaica and Newtown, as above stated:

Rev. William Urquhart .....	1705 to 1707
" Thomas Poyer .....	1709 to 1731
" Thomas Colgan .....	1731 to 1755
" Samuel Seabury .....	1756 to 1765
" Joshua Bloomer .....	1769 to 1790
" William Hammell .....	1790 to 1795
" Elijah D. Rattoone.....	1797 to 1802
" Abraham L. Clarke .....	1803 to 1809
" Barzillai Buckley .....	1809 to 1820
" John V. E. Thorn.....	1820 to 1826
" William Augustus Muhlenberg .....	1826 to 1828
" William H. Lewis.....	1829 to 1833
" J. Murray Forbes .....	1833 to 1834
" Samuel R. Johnson.....	1834 to 1835
" Robert B. Van Kleeck.....	1835 to 1837

In 1837 the Rev. Frederic J. Goodwin was engaged. He was a graduate of Bowdoin College, Me., in 1832, and was settled here December 8, 1837, where he married Catherine, daughter of James Bloodgood, deceased. His resignation took place in January, 1844, when he removed to Middletown, Conn., and was succeeded in March following by the Rev. George Burcker from Flatbush, L. I., whose death occurred June 7, 1847, at the age of thirty-two years, and that of Susan, his

widow, on the 5th of September of the same year. The Rev. John Carpenter Smith from Trinity Church, Far Rockaway, was settled as his successor in October, 1847.

“Rev. Mr. Smith officiated for fifty years, and was succeeded by the Rev. Henry D. Waller, the present rector in 1898. Mr. Waller is known as a historian, and in 1899 his *History of Flushing* was published.”

EDITOR.

The present church edifice was erected in 1812, consecrated June 25, 1821, enlarged in 1838, and is a handsome building with a bell, clock, and fine-toned organ.

A congregation of the Reformed Dutch Church was organized here in June, 1842, and the corner stone of a handsome edifice, built of granite from Blackwell's Island, was laid August 16, 1843. The building was completed soon after and dedicated September 10, 1844. The Rev. William R. Gordon, removed from Manhasset in the spring of 1842, is pastor of the church. A Methodist meeting-house has existed here for a good many years, and another of a larger size and more fashionable in appearance was erected in 1842 upon one of the main streets of the village. In the eastern portion of the village is a good-sized Roman Catholic Church, erected in 1840, and a meeting-house for the colored part of the population.

This town is not only remarkable for its proportionate number of wealthy citizens, but also for the number of highly cultivated farms and magnificent private residences. The most expensive of these is that erected by the late Chancellor Sanford, upon an elevated site in the southern part of the village, which after his death in 1838 was disposed of at a heavy loss, and purchased by



Dr. James Macdonald, who for several years past has conducted there with eminent success a private hospital for the insane.

A large educational establishment was incorporated April 16, 1827, called the "Flushing Institute," occupying a fine and spacious structure in a commanding situation and every way adapted to the noble purpose of its erection. The school was commenced in 1828, under the direction of the Rev. Dr. William Augustus Muhlenberg, of which he continued the superintendence for ten years, when he retired to the management of a new institution, St. Paul's College. After the departure of Dr. Muhlenberg, a female school of great excellence was commenced and continued till 1846, by the Rev. Dr. John F. Schroeder, who then removed his charge to the city of New York, and became rector of the Church of the Crucifixion. In May, 1845, Mr. Ezra Fairchild removed with his school from Morristown, N. J., to the Flushing Pavilion, where he continued to teach until the removal of Dr. Schroeder, when he took possession of the premises vacated by him as principal of the *Greenbrook School*.

*St. Paul's College* is located at College Point, which is the north-west part of Lawrence's Neck, adjoining the Sound. It is one of the most beautiful, healthy, and commanding situations which could have been selected. The corner stone was laid by Bishop Onderdonk, October 15, 1836; and although the main edifice has been abandoned, sufficient erections have been made for the accommodation of more than 100 students, which number it has long since obtained. This is likewise an Episcopal school, and from the high character of Dr. Muhlenberg, as an able and learned instructor, there was

every reason to anticipate its continued prosperity and usefulness, supplied as it was while under his control, with competent professors and teachers in the various departments of academical and collegiate education. Mr. John Graeff Barton assumed the rectorship of the institution in August, 1846, Dr. Muhlenberg having become rector of the Church of the Holy Communion, New York City.

*St. Thomas' Hall* is the title of another literary and scientific establishment in the village of Flushing, founded by the Rev. Dr. Francis L. Hawks, former rector of St. Thomas' Church, New York, one of the best scholars and most eloquent divines of the age. The buildings—some of which were erected in 1838—are of wood and in their architecture of the Gothic order, and sufficient for the accommodation of 120 pupils. Able and efficient teachers were engaged in all the departments, and the course of studies was most liberal and complete. It is a beautiful structure, and it being an Episcopal institution, the services of that church were observed. Indeed, it seemed with all its appliances and the completeness of its arrangements, to be one of the most extraordinary foundations for education in the state. Yet so much money had been launched upon it, that the proprietor found it impossible to proceed, and on the 12th of April, 1843, abandoned it to his creditors. Dr. Hawks removed to Holly Springs, Miss., and the next year accepted the rectorship of Christ Church, New Orleans, and in 1847 was appointed president of the University of Louisiana, in addition to his pastoral duties. In 1849 Dr. Hawks returned to the city of New York and organized a new church. It may be remarked that Dr. Hawks was formerly a distinguished member of

the bar of North Carolina, and published several volumes of reports of the supreme court of that state, but like his illustrious predecessor *St. Paul* he preferred rather to *preach* than *practise*. After the failure of this gentleman, the institution was purchased at a very reduced price by Gerardus B. Docharty, Esq., a veteran in the art of teaching, by whom the same course of liberal instruction was pursued. St. Thomas' Hall has since been purchased by the Rev. W. H. Gilder of Bordentown, who opened it as the Flushing Female Institute, November 1, 1848.

There are besides several minor schools which contribute to the literary character of this ancient and princely settlement, which in regard to healthfulness, convenience of situation, and facilities of intercourse with the city of New York, is equal, if not superior to any other village in the country. A Public Free School that cost about \$6,000, has been built mainly by the exertions of Thomas Legget, Jr. It opened November 27, 1848, with seven teachers and 331 scholars. In 1849 it had three departments,—the primary, the boys', and the girls'; eleven teachers, a library, lyceum, and had enrolled 559 scholars.

A mineral spring was discovered here, in the year 1816, upon land of Walter Roe, which for a time attracted some attention from the public. It was examined by Dr. Samuel L. Mitchill, and found to be of the class of waters called chalybeate, and in its medicinal properties nearly resembling that of Schooley's Mountain in New Jersey. The day of its excitement however soon passed away, and for many years little has been heard of this once famous sanative.

The village was incorporated April 15, 1837, the

streets first named November 21, 1838, and the charter amended March 13, 1838, since when much has been done for the appearance and permanent improvement of the village, as gratifying as it is creditable to the trustees.

In the autumn of 1841, while some persons were employed in excavating the ground in the grading of Linnæus Street, through a part of what was once the Linnæan Gardens, a dozen or more human skeletons were discovered and exhumed almost entire. From the fact of leaden bullets being found among the bones, it seems highly probable that the unfortunate individuals whose relics they were, had fallen by an enemy in battle—and from the circumstance that a very considerable British force was stationed here during the Revolutionary War, it is no more than reasonable to suppose that these bones may have been the remains of some of our countrymen or their opponents, who had perished in a contest with each other.

A press was for a time connected with St. Thomas' Hall, and a weekly paper was issued by Dr. Hawks, called the *Church Record*, mainly devoted to the history and polity of the Episcopal Church. The concern passed into the hands of Charles R. Lincoln, who, March 19, 1842, published the first number of the *Flushing Journal*, a well edited weekly newspaper, which has thus far been continued.

The surface of this town is either level or moderately undulating; the soil superior, and its agriculture, probably, far excels that of any other district upon Long Island; the farms, which rarely exceed in quantity 100 acres, being generally protected by a stone wall and highly cultivated. There are numerous sites for building,



of the most enchanting character, and very many have their fronts either upon the waters of the Sound, or the beautiful bays connected therewith. The residences at Whitestone, Bayside, and upon the east side of Flushing Bay, are perhaps the most eligible, while the soil at those places is equally fertile and well cultivated. The mansion of the late Samuel Legget, Esq., at the former location (who died January 5, 1847, aged sixty-five), is delightful, enjoying a rich and varied scenery. A place of religious worship, called *White Stone Chapel*, was erected mostly by his exertions at Clintonville in his immediate neighborhood in 1837, which has been free to all denominations.

The venerable Francis Lewis, of whom some account will be given in another place, was once the owner of a farm at Whitestone, late the property of Epenetus Smith.

*Little Neck*, upon the easterly side of the beautiful bay of the same name, is mostly in this town, and contains the valuable farm and superb mansion of the late Wynant Van Zandt, an eminent New York merchant, and many years alderman of the city. Since his death, it has been owned by George Douglass, Esq.

*Zion Church*, at the head of the Neck was erected by Mr. Van Zandt in 1830, of which the Rev. Eli Wheeler was rector for several years, who married Miss Clarence Underhill, February 14, 1815. Mr. Wheeler was rector of the church in Shrewsbury, N. J., from 1824 to 1830, when he returned here, but removed in 1841, became rector of the Episcopal Church at Waterloo, N. Y., and was succeeded by the Rev. Henry M. Bease in May, 1842. He married Charlotte E., daughter of Payson P. Grosvenor, June 8, 1842, and was called to

the rectorship of St. Thomas' Church, Brooklyn, in June, 1846. He was succeeded in the month of July, by the Rev. Marshall Whiting, former rector at Astoria, L. I. Mr. Bease was, however, recalled in June, 1848, and was again made rector.

*Ireland*, so called, and formerly owned by the Willet family, is a valuable tract of land, having upon its west side some thousand acres of salt meadow, and on the east a creek, by which it is nearly insulated. Here is the former residence of Lieutenant Governor Colden,\*

\* *Cadwallader D. Colden*, the only son of David Colden, was born at Spring Hill in Flushing, April 4, 1769; and received the first part of his education at a school in the town of Jamaica. In the spring of 1784 he accompanied his father to England, where he attended a classical school near London till the close of 1785, when he returned to New York, and entered upon the study of the law in the office of the late Richard Harrison, one of the most eminent barristers of New York. He completed it with Mr. Van Schaick of Kinderhook, and was admitted to the bar in 1791. He practised his profession at Poughkeepsie till 1796, when he removed to New York, where he was soon after made district attorney, and laid the foundation of his future fame. On the 8th of April, 1793, he married Maria, daughter of the Right Rev. Samuel Provoost, bishop of the diocese of New York. In 1803 he visited France and Switzerland for his health, and returned at the end of 1804. For a young man at that time to attain distinction at the bar, with such competitors as the elder *Jones*, *Harrison*, *Hamilton*, and *Livingston*, was no easy task. Mr. Colden made the effort, and by dint of talent and discipline succeeded. In a few years he stood, as a commercial lawyer, at the head of his profession; and in the other branches, among the first. In 1812 he commanded a regiment of volunteers, and was very active in assisting to raise fortifications for the defence of the city. In 1818 he was elected to the assembly, and in the same year was appointed mayor of New York, at a period when the mayor presided in the court of sessions. In 1822 he was chosen a representative in Congress, and proved a useful and distinguished member of that body. In 1824 he was elected to the senate of this state, which post he held for three years. The most untiring industry and patient research were peculiar traits in his professional character, and marked his proceedings in everything he undertook. He was among the earliest and most efficient promoters, in connection with De Witt Clinton, of the system of internal improvement, now the pride and boast of our state. At the completion of that splendid and herculean project, the Erie Canal, he

which he called *Spring Hill*, and where it is supposed his body and that of his wife repose. Its late owner, the Hon. Benjamin W. Strong, once first judge of the county, died here September 12, 1847, aged sixty-six, a gentleman of much intelligence and great private worth.

In the north-western part of the town adjoining the bay and extending to the Sound at College Point, is another fine tract of land, formerly known as *Tew's Neck*, Lawrence's Neck, and Willet's Neck. It contains about 700 acres, and is separated from the land on the east by 100 acres of salt meadow.

"On January 1, 1898, the town of Flushing became part of the Borough of Queens, city of New York, and the form of town government was abolished."

EDITOR.

composed and published the well known memoir upon the subject. He wrote also the life of Robert Fulton, the successful promoter of steam navigation, and one of the greatest benefactors of mankind. Mr. Colden died, universally esteemed and lamented, at his residence in Jersey City, on the 7th of February, 1834. He was, in every sense of the word, a great man, and one of whose nativity the people of Long Island may well be proud.

## NEWTOWN

EMBRACES the north-western part of Queens County, and is centrally distant from the city of New York about seven miles. It is bounded north by the middle of the East River, east by Flushing, south by Jamaica, and west by Kings County; including the islands in the Sound, called the North and South Brothers, Riker's (once Hewlett's) Island, and Berrien's Island, Luyster's Island, and Yonker's Island.

The eastern portion of the town was known to the natives by the name of *Wandowenock*, while the western was called *Mispat*, or *Maspeth*, the latter being probably the appellation applied to a family or tribe of Indians residing about the head of the creek now called the "English Kills."<sup>1</sup>

The first white inhabitants were enterprising English emigrants, who came here by the way of New England, and settled under the Dutch Government, by whom they were promised and allowed many of the privileges and advantages of an independent political community, the enjoyment of religion, and the choice of their own magistrates, subject only to the approbation of the governor.

The first patent for lands in this town is that embracing the western part including the territory about Maspeth or Mespath, from Governor Kieft to Francis

<sup>1</sup> Now Newtown Creek.—EDITOR.



Doughty and others, translated from the Dutch records by Dr. E. B. O'Callaghan, author of *The History of New Netherland*, from which we have copied the following:

“WE, WILLEM KIEFT, Director-general, and council of New Netherland, for and in behalf of the High and Mighty Lords, the Lords States General of the United Netherland Provinces, his Higness the Prince of Orange, as well as the Most Noble Lords the Lords Directors of the General Privileged West India Company, To all those who shall see these Letters, MAKE KNOWN, that We have given and granted, as by these Presents We do give and grant, unto Francis Doughty and associates, their heirs and assigns, in real, actual, and perpetual possession, all and every that certain parcel of land situate on Long Island, in this Province, with the pastures and whatever else it includes, containing in superficies six thousand six hundred and sixty-six Dutch acres, or thereabouts, comprehended within four right lines, each two thousand Dutch perches long, the first whereof extends from the east angle of Hans Hansson's meadow, dividing, according to the creek, the marsh into two unequal parts, unto the plantation of Richard Britnal, and thence proceeds towards the northeast, passing through the middle of the fresh marsh to the rivulet surrounding the south part of the lands of Henry the Farmer, [Henrici Agricolaë,] and following the same even to its mouth: the other line, taking its origin from thence, bends towards the southeast according to the main bank, going along the same unto the other creek, [fluviolum,] following the course of which from its mouth until it attains the eastern extremity of the said marsh, (from whence the aforesaid creek arises,) thence turns again towards the southeast, until it has gained the length of two thousand Dutch perches;

the third line taking its rise from the end of the latter, tends towards the west, of an equal length with the others; finally, the fourth running from the last-mentioned point towards the northwest, terminates at the above-mentioned eastern angle of Hans Hansson's meadow, at which angle a large stone is erected for the greater certainty of the boundaries;

“With power to establish, in the aforesaid tract, a town or towns; to erect a church or churches; to exercise the Reformed Christian Religion and church discipline, which they profess; also, to administer, of right, high, low, and middle jurisdiction; to decide civil suits not exceeding fifty Dutch florins; to impose definitively and without appeal in criminal matters, fines to an equal amount; to pronounce the first sentence in other civil and criminal actions of greater moment, and to execute the same, subject, however, to such execution being deferred, should an appeal be made to the supreme court of New Netherlands: Finally, to exercise all rights belonging to the aforesaid jurisdiction, with power, moreover, to nominate some of theirs, and to present them to the Director of New Netherland, that a sufficient number may be chosen from them for political and juridical government: together with the right of hunting, fowling, fishing, and of trading, according to the immunities granted, and to be granted, to the colonists of this province, without any exception:—

“Wherefore the aforesaid F. Doughty and his associates, their heirs and assigns, shall be obligated, so long as they are in possession of the above-mentioned lands, to acknowledge the aforesaid lords for their sovereign Lords and Patroons; to pay, after the lapse of ten years, the tenth part of the produce of the land, whether cultivated with the plough, hoe, or otherwise, orchards and kitchen-gardens, not exceeding one Dutch acre, excepted. Finally, to use no other standard than that of

Holland; and so as to avoid confusion, to use Dutch weights, the Dutch ell and all other Dutch measures.

"All which we promise, under the foregoing conditions inviolably to preserve, and bind our successors to the faithful observance of the same, by virtue of the commission and supreme authority granted us by the Most Mighty Prince of Orange, governor of the United Belgic Provinces. In testimony whereof, we have subscribed these presents with our hand, and caused them to be countersigned by the Secretary of New Netherland, and the seal of New Netherland, to be affixed thereto. Given at Fort Amsterdam, on the island of Manhattans, in New Netherland, in the year 1642, the 28th of March. By order of the Director and Council.

"CORNELIS VAN TIENHOVEN, Secy.  
WILLIAM KIEFT."

This Mr. Doughty who was in New England in 1642, came to Long Island during the same year and, although at first an Episcopalian minister, finally turned Quaker. Nothing was probably done by him or his associates immediately under the above grant, and there is reason to believe that for some reason or other, no advantage was ever obtained from it. Van der Donck, who married his daughter, says the lands were subsequently confiscated, and Doughty, if he settled there, left the place in a short time with his associates. He undoubtedly officiated as a minister in the town, as well as at the Manhattans, with a salary for some time at the rate of 600 guilders a year. He was in straitened circumstances, and therefore hindered the process of settling on the lands for which a charter had been given, by exacting from every comer a sum of money down for every morgan, and a certain amount annually also, by

way of quit-rent, thus materially, if not effectually, counteracting the interests of those connected with him in the grant. He finally took up his residence in Flushing, but left for Virginia in 1648.

The first permanent settlement in this town after that of Maspeth, was begun in 1652, and was called the "Newtown," by way of distinction from the grant to Doughty and his associates, although the general and legal appellation was Middleburgh. As was customary within the Dutch jurisdiction, the settlement was effected without any conveyance from the aborigines. The inhabitants at this time adopted the practice, which was usual in some of the New England towns, of electing certain officers, designated "*townsmen*," whose prerogative it was to superintend the more important interests of the town, and to adopt such prudential measures as the common good seemed to require, except as to the admission of new inhabitants and the division or allotment of lands, matters, it seems, which were only transacted in the primary assemblies of the people, called, as we have seen, the general court. Whether any preliminary title to the lands had been acquired by the Dutch Government from the Indians, is uncertain, although the most common sentiment of justice would, it should seem, have dictated a proceeding so entirely proper in all respects.

A patent or ground brief was obtained from Governor Stuyvesant in 1652, and another with more liberal provisions in 1655, both of which, with many other valuable papers essential to a knowledge of the early history of the town, were it is generally believed lost, taken away, or destroyed in the Revolution, the commanding officer of a British regiment having established his headquarters here, and his soldiers being in full pos-



session of the town for several years. The names of those who were residents, and probably freeholders of the town in 1686, are as follows:

Thomas Stephenson	William Hallett	Content Titus
Gershom Moore	Samuel Hallett	Lambert Woodward
Jonathan Hazard	Hendrick Martensen	Joseph Reeder
Daniel Bloomfield	Robert Blackwell	Jeremiah Reeder
Caleb Leverich	John Pearsall	Nathaniel Woodward
Joseph Sackett	Joris Stevensen	John Bull
Robert Field	Thomas Skillman	John Wood
Thomas Pettit	John Johnson	Thomas Morrell
John Gray	Richard Alsop	Theophilus Phillips
Robert Field, jun.	John Denman	Roeloff Petersen
John Smith	Henry Mayle	Benjamin Severens
Josiah Furman	John Reed	Jacob Leonardsen
George Wood	Joseph Phillips	Luke Depaw
Nathan Fish	Francis Way	Nathaniel Pettit
Edward Hunt	John Wilson	James Hayes
Jeremiah Burroughs	Moses Pettit	Richard Owen
Richard Betts	John Furman	Peter Bockhout
Thomas Betts	Samuel Ketcham	John Allen
John Alburtis	John Ramsden	John Rosell
James Way	Rynier Willemsen	Engeltie Burger
Cornelis Jansen	John Harrison	Stephen Jorissen
Jacob Reeder	John Coe	John Lawrence
John Morrell	Joseph Burroughs	Thomas Wandell
Elias Doughty	William Osborn	John Kirtshaw
Thomas Lawrence	Thomas Robertson	Jonathan Strickland
William Lawrence	Benjamin Cornish	Gershom Hazard
William Hallett, jun.	Francis Combs	Henry Sawtell

The settlement was begun on the site of the present village of Newtown, where the first straw-roof tenements were erected. In 1656 it was projected by a few individuals to lay out a village or town, as it was called, nearer to the water, and accordingly a place was selected at the head of Mispot Creek, which was distinguished by the name of *Arnham*, and the surveyor-general was ordered by the governor "to measure and lay off the lots and streets for building upon."

The design was, however, for some reason, never car-

ried into full execution, yet a few Englishmen, some of whom were Quakers, took up their residence there, by reason of which its first name fell into disuse and that of the English Kills<sup>1</sup> prevailed, to distinguish it from another settlement on the opposite side of the *fly* or creek made by the Dutch, which had obtained the appellation of the Dutch Kills. The Quakers before mentioned remained several years, and built a small meeting-house, which was standing not long since, although few persons of this denomination are now residents of the town.

Middleburgh was the name afterwards conferred upon the plantation by the Dutch, many of whom settled within the limits of the present town about the year 1654. It was so called probably after a town of that name in the Netherlands, adjoining Flushing, and continued to be so named in all the records and conveyances, to the time of the conquest in 1664. The records of the town which now exist, are chiefly occupied with details of trials before the town courts, and among them actions of slander and defamation hold a conspicuous place.

The following is a sample of others which might be quoted from these ancient chronicles:

*“Middleburgh, Aug. 21, 1659. At a cort held by the magestrates of the place aforesaid, John fforman, plaintive, enters an action against ffrancis Doughty, defent, an action of slander. John fforman declared that ffrancis Doughty charged him, that he had stolen his choes, and therefore he was satisfied which way his things went. The cort finds for the defent, too guilders for attendance and the charge of the cort, to be payd by*

<sup>1</sup> Now Newtown Creek.—EDITOR.

John fforman, because he doth not support his charge that he layd against the defen<sup>t</sup>."

Concerning a patent the following particulars are recorded:

"At a general town meeting, held October 6, 1666, voted that Thomas Lawrence, Ralph Hunt, and Jo. Burrows shall be employed to get a draft of the bounds of the town, and get a pattin for the same; also the town people to bear the charge according to their several proportions."

Upon this application a patent was issued by Governor Nicoll, March 6, 1667, in which was granted and assured unto:

"Capt. Richard Betts, Capt. Thomas Lawrence, Capt. John Coe, John Burroughs, Ralph Hunt, Daniel Whitehead, and Burger Joost, as patentees for and on behalf of themselves and their associates, the freeholders and inhabitants of Newtown, their heirs, successors, and assigns, as follows:

"All that the said tract of land herein menconed to have been purchased from the Indian natives, bounded on the east by Flushing Creek and a line to be drawne from the head thereof due south, extending to the south side of the hills; on the north by the Sound; on the west by the Maspeth Creeke or Kill, and a line to be drawne from the head thereof due south, extending to the south side of the hills; and on the south by a straight line to be drawne from the south points of the said west line, alongst the south side of the said hills, it meets with the said east line soe menconed, to extend from the head

of Flushing Creeke as aforesaid; as also all that one third part of a certaine neck of meadow called Cellars-Neck, scituate, lying, and being within the bounds of Jamaica, upon the south side of Long Island; as also liberty to cut what timber within the bounds of Jamaica aforesaid they should have occasion for, for the fencing the said neck, and to make and lay out to themselves what highway or highways they should think fit, for their free and convenient egresse and regresse to and from the aforesaid neck or parcell of meadow. And that the said patentees, their associates, heyres, successors, and assigns shall enjoy all the privileges belonging to any town within this government; and that the place of their habitation shall continue and retaine the name of Newton, and so be distinguished and known in all bargains, sailes, deeds, records, and writings.' "

This patent evidently includes Hell-Gate Neck, so called, Maspeth, Middleburgh, the Poor Bowery and out plantations appertaining to what is now called Newtown.

A difficulty after arose about the division of the lands or some of them included in this patent and a petition was presented to Lord Cornbury in May, 1703, signed by twenty-three of the freeholders for some relief, because they said they had not been allowed a voice in the disposal of the town lands, which from their patent they had expected to enjoy, and prayed an investigation. The matter was by his excellency referred to three members of the council by an order of the 13th of January, 1704, who on the 3d of February reported that they had inspected the books and papers of the town, and examined a report on the same subject made by Rip Van Dam, Gerard Beekman, and Caleb Heathcote, Esqs., members



of the council, and also the allegations of the petitioners and their opponents, and found that previous to the patent of Nicoll, a society of people had purchased and did occupy a parcel of land called and known as Middleburgh, which was confirmed by said patent, and to which was adjoined certain out plantations and made them all one township without any distinct reservation of said purchase to the purchasers themselves; and that the patent of Governor Dongan of November 25, 1686, makes the whole one town, but reserved to the original purchasers their distinct right to the said lands and to their heirs only; since which time the patentees had acted according thereto, without complaint until the exhibition of the said petition. Signed by Broughton, Wenham, and Ling. Whereupon the petition aforesaid was by the governor and council rejected.

Dec. 13, 1670.—“At a town meeting, voated that if Mr. Leverich shall continue in this town to preach the word of God, a rate of £40 shall be made for the building of a meeting-house, one-half to be payd in corn and the other half in cattle.”

“At a cort, held May 6, 1674, the order of the cort is, that Thomas Case shall not entertayne William Smith's wife, unknowne to her husband, as he will answer for the contrary at his peril.”

“Feb. 28, 1683-4, voated that Mr. Morgan Jones be schoolmaster of our town, to teach on the Sabbath days those that will come, allowing for him exercising on that day what any one pleases.”

Of this person we find the following entry made upon the records by himself:

"Whereas I, Morgan Jones, have officiated for some time as a minister in Newtown without any agreement for a salary, upon the promise of some particular persons of the town, to allow me some small recompense of their own accord, I do hereby acquit and discharge the town of all salary, moneys, goods, or wares, which I might claim. Aug. 28, 1686, Morgan Jones."

"At a cort, held April 4th, 1688, Ann Cleven did, in presents of the cort, own that she had spoken several tymes scandalous and reproachful speaches against William Francis, touching his good name; she doth now confess her fault, and says she had done the said William wrong, and is sorry she spoke such words against him; and hopes, for the time to come, she shall be more careful. She owns that she charged the plaintive with cheating her of a pound of flax, and told the people to take notice he had stole her yarn."

"On the 29th July, 1688, voated that Edward Stephenson and Joseph Sacket shall appear at the supream cort, held at Flatlands, to defend the town's right; and that they have full power to employ an attorney if they shall see fit, and what they do, we will ratify and confirm."

"June 11, 1689, it was voated and agreed that Capt. Richard Betts and Lieut. Samuel Moore go to the county-town to meet the deputys of other towns, to vote for too men out of the county to go to Yorke to act with the rest in the counsil as a committe of safety."

"These may certify all whom it may concern, that I, Francis Combs, being accused for speaking scandalous words and speeches, tending to the deffamacon of Marget, the wife of John fforman of Newtown; I doe publicly declare that I am hertily sorry that the said Marget is any wise by me defamed, not knowing any thing against her name, fame, or reputacon; but that she lives honestly and grately with her neighbors, and

all other their Majesty's subjects. As witness my hand, October 2, 1691, ffancis Combs."

"July 14, 1694, voted at town meeting, that the town will make a rate toward repairing the meeting-house and the town-house; also, for paying the messenger's expense, that is sent for a minister, and for making a pair of stocks."

On the 25th of November, 1686, a new patent was granted by Governor Dongan, which, after reciting the date of previous patents, and the boundaries of the town as before mentioned, states that the freeholders and inhabitants had made application to him by William Lawrence, Joseph Sackett, John Way, and Content Titus, persons deputed by them for a more full and ample confirmation of the tract or parcel of land contained in the patent of 1666 from Governor Nicoll; therefore he, the said Thomas Dongan, doth ratify, confirm, and grant all the said land and premises, with the houses, messuages, tenements, fencings, buildings, gardens, orchards, trees, woods, underwoods, pastures, feedings, common of pastures, meadows, marshes, lakes, ponds, creeks, harbors, rivers, rivulets, brooks, streams, easements, and highways, together with the islands, mines, minerals (royal mines only excepted), fishing, hawking, hunting, and fowling, in free and common soccage, according to the tenure of East Greenwich in the county of Kent, in his Majesty's kingdom of England (yielding and paying on the five and twentieth day of March, yearly forever, the chiefe or quit-rent of three pounds four shillings), unto the following named persons, then being the freeholders and inhabitants of the town, to wit:

Richard Betts	John Scudder, jun.	Joseph Phillips
Thomas Stephenson	Jonathan Stevenson	Gershom Hazard
Gershom Moore	Thomas Case	Francis Way
Jonathan Hazard	John Alburtis	Moses Pettit
Samuel Moore	James Way	John Ramsden
Daniel Bloomfield	John Johnson	Phillip Ketcham
Caleb Leverich	Richard Alsop	Josias Furman, jun.
Edward Stevenson	Hendrick Barent Smith	Lambert Woodward
Joseph Sackett	John Reeder	John Moore
Samuel Scudder	Benjamin Severens	Thomas Lawrence
Robert Field, sen.	Luke Depaw	William Lawrence
Thomas Wandell	Nathaniel Pettit	John Lawrence
John Ketcham	Samuel Ketcham	William Hallett, sen.
Thomas Pettit	Jan Harcksen	William Hallett, jun.
John Woolstoncrafts	Isaac Gray	Samuel Hallett
Johannes Lourensse	Content Titus	Hendrick Martensen
John Rosell	John Fish	Robert Blackwell
Joseph Reeder	Cornelis Jansen	John Parcell
Roeloff Peterson	Abraham Joris	William Parcell
Jacob Leonardsen Van De Grift	John Coe	Joris Stevensen
Stoffell Van Laer	Samuel Fish	Thomas Parcell
Abraham Rycke	Joseph Burroughs	Stephen Jorissen
Francis Combs	Thomas Robinson	John Bockhout
Thomas Etherington	James Hays	Engeltie Burger
Jeremiah Reeder	Jacob Reeder	Thomas Skillman
John Way	Joseph Reed	Peter Bockhout
Robert Field, jun.	John Reed	John Denman
Jonathan Strickland	Wouter Gysbertsen	Henry Mayle, jun.
John Smyth	John Pettit	Theophilus Phillips
Josias Furman, sen.	Thomas Morell	Anthony Gleane
George Wood	John Roberts	John Willson
Nathan Fish	Isaac Swinton	John Furman
Edward Hunt	Elias Doughty	Rynier Willemsen
Jeremiah Burroughs	Jane Rider	Benjamin Cornish
Thomas Betts	John Allene	Henry Sawtell
	Hen. Mayle, sen.	Thomas Morrell, jun.

The first church edifice of which anything is known, was built by the Independents in 1671, nearly upon the site of the present village church, but there is good reason for believing that a place of worship existed in which the Rev. Francis Doughty preached, and before the employment of the Rev. John Moore, who was here soon after the settlement of the town, and continued till his



death. He preached occasionally at Hempstead. He had sons Gershom, Samuel, Joseph, and John, who with his brother-in-law, Content Titus, came to an agreement concerning the property of their father, June 16, 1688. In 1661 the people petitioned the governor and council to aid them in procuring another minister in the place of Mr. Moore, "fearing that some of the inhabitants may be led away by the intrusion of *Quakers and other heretics*." It is, therefore, highly probable that a minister was furnished from New Amsterdam, who supplied the vacancy till the arrival of the *Rev. William Leverich* in 1670, from Huntington, where he was settled in 1658. He was the first ordained minister that preached within the limits of New Hampshire, having settled at Dover in 1633, from whence he went to Sandwich, on Cape Cod, and continued several years, and was employed afterwards in instructing the Indians in various places. He remained here till his death in 1677. He was an uncommonly intelligent, learned, and useful man, well versed in public business, and remarkable for his energy and perseverance.\*

In the oldest volume of the town records that has been preserved, are about 100 pages which purport to be a sort of running commentary upon the Old Testament, but in an abbreviated form and in the hand-writing of Mr. Leverich—a signal proof of his learning, patience, and industry. He left two sons, Caleb and Eleazer.†

*Rev. Morgan Jones* was the next pastor after Mr. Leverich, and served during 1680 and again from February, 1684 to April, 1686. He finally removed to

\* It is said that his son was killed in the expedition under General Abercrombie, at Sabbath Day Point on Lake George in 1756.

† Samuel Leverich and several others were frozen to death in Jamaica Bay, January, 1754.

Westchester and settled in the church at East Chester, where he probably died.

*Rev. John Morse* was a descendant of Edward, who was among the first settlers of Windsor, Conn. He was born March 31, 1674, came from the neighborhood of Braintree, and was a son of Ezra Morse, an early settler of Dedham. He graduated at Harvard in 1692 and came here 1695, and remained till his death in 1700. Whether he was buried here is not known, most of the grave stones having been destroyed in the Revolution by the troops of the enemy stationed at this place. That he left no issue is probable, for by his will of October 16, 1700, he gives his estate to his youngest brother, Seth Morse of Dedham, who removed hither where he died and left issue.

*Rev. Robert Breck* served as supply for two or three years after Mr. Morse's death and was followed by *Rev. Samuel Pomeroy*, son of Joseph and grandson of Medad, who was born at Northampton, Mass., September 16, 1687, graduated at Yale 1705, settled here in 1708, where he ended his days June 30, 1744, aged fifty-six. He married Lydia Taylor July 20, 1707, who died February 3, 1722, and February 10, 1725, he married Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev. Joseph Webb of Fairfield, Conn., who died November 12, 1768. He was an excellent scholar and prepared a number of youths for college. Of his children, Catherine, born May 4, 1708, married Jacob Riker May 25, 1729; Abigail, born July 8, 1710, married Jonathan Hazard February 13, 1740; Noah, born November 20, 1712, died August 5, 1714; Lemuel, born May 23, 1716, died in the West Indies, October 11, 1737; and Elizabeth, born November 16, 1717, married Phillip Edsall, December

11, 1734. His will bears date July 29, 1740, in which he bequeaths £10 to the use of the church. His mother's maiden name was Chauncey, and that of his grandmother, Lyman. Benjamin, son of his brother Ebenezer, born July 8, 1705, graduated at Yale, 1733, and was ordained at Hebron, 1735, where he died, December 21, 1784. The said Catherine Riker had issue Lydia, who married a Sheldon; Catherine, who married Dennis Caudy; and Elizabeth, who married George Collins. During Mr. Pomeroy's term the church became Presbyterian and ruling elders were appointed. *Rev. George MacNish* supplied the pulpit for about two years immediately following Mr. Pomeroy's death.

*Rev. Simon Horton* was born March 30, 1711, graduated at Yale, 1731, settled in East Jersey in 1735, and came here in 1746, where he continued as pastor for twenty-five years, and finally died at the age of seventy-five, May 8, 1786. It is shown by the records of the Presbyterian Church in the United States, that in 1738, the Presbytery of Long Island was united with that of East Jersey, and he probably in that way became acquainted with the people here, which led to his removal. Abigail, his wife, died May 5, 1752, and January 7, 1762, he married Elizabeth, daughter of John Fish of this town, who died January 13, 1767. His children were Abigail, Elizabeth, Mary, Grover, and Phebe (who married Benjamin Coe, November 14, 1762, and had Abigail, wife of the Hon. James Burt of Orange County). Mr. Horton was so infirm for many years before his decease as to require assistance in the church, and the *Rev. Andrew Bay*, an Irishman, was engaged in 1773, who remained till 1776. Mr. Horton left issue Andrew, William, John, Sarah, and Elizabeth;

but the names of Webb, Horton, and Pomeroy are not now found in the town.

During the Revolution the church and town were in the hands of the enemy. After the peace, signed September 3, 1783, *Rev. James Lyons* began his labors and served until the spring of 1785. He was followed in May of that year by *Rev. Peter Fish*, who served as supply until November, 1788. For six months of the year 1789, *Rev. Elihu Palmer* preached, but his efforts were unsatisfactory and his doctrines unsound. Soon after his removal from Newtown, he renounced the Presbyterian faith, preached against the divinity of Jesus Christ, and finally left the ministry entirely.

*Rev. Nathan Woodhull* was the immediate successor of Mr. Palmer. Mr. Woodhull was the son of Captain Nathan Woodhull of Setauket, where he was born April 28, 1756. He graduated at Yale 1775, was ordained at Huntington December 22, 1785, dismissed April 2, 1789, and installed in this church December 1, 1790, where he died at the age of fifty-three, March 13, 1810. He married, March 16, 1775, Hannah, daughter of Stephen Jagger of Westhampton, who died aged sixty-one, October 2, 1819. Issue, Martha, Sophia, Hannah Maria, Sarah Strong, Eleanor Wells, Julia Ann, Ezra Conkling, all of whom are deceased.

The character and qualifications of Mr. Woodhull as a preacher were of a high order, and perhaps no minister was ever more deservedly popular in the pulpit or among his fellow-citizens. His manners were bland and conciliatory, and his conversational powers quite uncommon. *Rev. Peter Fish* returned again after Mr. Woodhull's death and preached for six months during 1810, until his death on November 12 of that year.



*Rev. William Boardman*, born at Williamstown, Mass., October 12, 1781, educated at the college there, ordained pastor of the Presbyterian Church, Duanesburgh, N. Y., 1803, was installed here October 31, 1811, where he continued till his death, March 4, 1818, at the age of thirty-six. His wife was Rachel, daughter of Abraham Bloodgood, Esq., of Albany, whom he married in 1804. She died October 17, 1844, without issue, aged fifty-eight.

*Rev. John Goldsmith, D.D.*, son of the Rev. Benjamin Goldsmith, for forty-six years pastor of the united parishes of Aquebogue and Mattituck, L. I., was born April 10, 1794, graduated at Princeton, 1815, and installed over this church November 17, 1819. He married Eleanor Wells, daughter of the Rev. Nathan Woodhull, March 20, 1820, who died on the 17th of April, 1821. January 20, 1825, he married Eliza, daughter of Aaron Furman of this town, who died September 2, 1834, aged thirty-six, and October 15, 1835, he married Eliza Fish, daughter of the late Colonel Edward Leverich.

“Dr. Goldsmith officiated until 1854, and has been succeeded by the following pastors:

Rev. John P. Knox, L.L.D.....	1855 to 1882
“ Geo. H. Payson, D.D.....	1882 to 1889
“ Jacob E. Mallman.....	1890 to 1895
“ Wm. H. Hendrickson.....	1896 to 1906
Interim six months.	
“ David Yule .....	1907 to 1910
Interim six months.	
“ George Haws Feltus <sup>1</sup> .....	1911 to —”
—EDITOR.	

The church which had been erected in 1671, was

<sup>1</sup> List from 1855 kindly furnished by Rev. Mr. Feltus.—EDITOR.

taken possession of by the enemy in 1776, converted into a prison and guard-house, and finally torn down; consequently the people were compelled to attend religious services elsewhere, until the present church was finished in 1791, during the ministry of Mr. Woodhull, the Rev. Dr. Buell of Easthampton preaching the dedication sermon.

The *Episcopal Church* in this town was probably organized soon after the introduction of missionaries of that denomination, by the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. By the report in 1704, it appears there was a church or chapel at Newtown and a house for a minister, and the people were desirous of having a minister to themselves settled there, and would contribute largely to his maintenance.

The same game was, however, acted here as at Jamaica, the Episcopal party being supported by the same power that prompted the outrages there, to the great annoyance of Mr. Pomeroy and his people.\* April 19, 1733, the town gave to the Presbyterians a

\* Lord Cornbury, in his great zeal for the established church of England, took every opportunity to forward the interest of the churches of the same denomination here, and there is proof that he interfered with the dissenters in this town, as he did at Hempstead and Jamaica, in regard to their churches. The Rev. Mr. Vesey, in a letter to the parent society, October 5, 1704, says, "the parish of Jamaica consists of three towns, Jamaica, Newtown, and Flushing. In Newtown there is a church built, and lately repaired by a tax levied on the inhabitants. This church was formerly possessed by a dissenting minister, but he being gone, it is in possession of the present incumbent, (Mr. Urquhart,) by his *Excellency's* (Ld. Cornbury's) favor." The original proprietors afterwards got possession, but whether peaceably or by course of law, as at Jamaica, the records, which are very imperfect, do not inform us; but it is matter of historical notoriety that his Excellency forbade ministers to preach, even in the Dutch churches, without his license, and that he actually imprisoned the Rev. John Hampton in 1707 for preaching in this church contrary to the ordinance he had established, as he did the Rev. Francis McKemie in New York.

piece of ground for a burial place, and at the same time to the Episcopalians twenty square rods of ground, for which a conveyance was executed by ninety freeholders. Upon this a church was erected in 1734, and a charter granted by Lieutenant Governor Colden, September 9, 1761, under the name and style of St. James Episcopal Church, in which James Hazard and Richard Alsop were appointed wardens, and Samuel Moore, Jacob Hallett, Richard Alsop, 4th, and William Sackett, 3d, vestrymen.

The church edifice had been materially improved since it was built, and seemed yet good and substantial, but gave place to a new one commenced in the fall of 1847 and consecrated 1848.

This church, with those at Flushing and Jamaica, were associate churches, and considered as one parish, the same clergymen officiating alternately in each for a long series of years.

“ These clergymen and the dates of their labors here are as follows:

Rev. William Urquhart (founder of the church)	1704 to 1709
“ Thomas Poyer .....	1710 to 1731
“ Thomas Colgan .....	1733 to 1755
“ Samuel Seabury .....	1757 to 1765
“ Joshua Bloomer .....	1769 to 1790
“ William Hammel .....	1790 to 1795
“ Henry Van Dyke.....	1797 to 1803 ”
—EDITOR.	

The Rev. Henry Van Dyke was, it is believed, the first rector whose services were confined exclusively to this church. He was settled here in 1797, and removed in 1803.

*Rev. Abraham L. Clarke* graduated at Yale in 1785; and settled here in 1803, where he died December 31,

1810. The vacancy was supplied by the *Rev.* (now *Dr.*) *William Wyatt*. He graduated at Columbia College in 1809, and settled in this parish in 1812, but was soon after called to the rectorship of St. Paul's Church, Baltimore, and ranks among the ablest divines of the monumental city.

*Rev. Evan M. Johnson*, a native of Rhode Island, and a graduate of Brown University in 1812, settled here in 1814, and remained till 1827, when he removed to St. John's Church, Brooklyn, which he caused to be erected, and of which he was rector till 1847. His wife was a daughter of the Rev. John B. Johnson, who died in 1823.

*Rev. George A. Shelton* is the son of the Rev. Philo Shelton, who died rector of Trinity Church, Fairfield, Conn., February 27, 1825, where his son was born in 1800. He graduated at Yale 1820, settled here in 1827, and married Frances L., daughter of Jacob Bartow of Astoria, L. I., in November, 1833.

"Mr. Shelton officiated until 1863, and has been succeeded by the following clergymen:

Rev. N. W. Taylor Root.....	1864 to 1868
" Samuel Cox, D.D. ....	1868 to 1888
" W. Hudson Burr.....	1888 to 1889
" Edward Mansfield McGuffey came in 1890 and up to date has served for twenty-six years."	

—EDITOR.

A Reformed Dutch church has existed here from a remote period, although the records which have been preserved do not extend back beyond the year 1731. The society was organized in 1704, and for many years formed a collegiate church with those of Queens County;



it was associated with the church at Jamaica, and the respective ministers alternated with each other at both places till 1849. The first church edifice of which we have an account, was erected by voluntary donations from the Dutch inhabitants of the colony in 1732, and stood ninety-nine years, when the corner stone of the present church was laid November 16, 1831. The church was completed and dedicated the year following. "Dominie" Van Basten was the first preacher and he officiated during part of 1739 and 1740. He was followed by Rev. Johannes Henricus Goetschius in 1741, who left about 1747. For several years after Mr. Goetschius' departure, Rev. Henry Boel occasionally preached. Rev. Thomas Romeyn served from 1754 until 1760, when he removed to Minisink on the Delaware River. He was followed by Rev. Hermanus L. Boelen in 1766, who remained until 1772. After Mr. Boelen's departure, several pastors officiated occasionally, namely Messrs. Rubel, Van Sinderen, De Ronde, and Livingston. In 1775 the services of Rev. Samuel Froeligh were obtained. At the outbreak of the Revolution, Mr. Froeligh was forced to flee and during the war services were greatly interrupted and various pastors preached where the opportunity offered. After the conflict Rev. Rynier Van Nest was called in 1785, and continued to 1797, when he removed to Schoharie, N. Y. In 1794 Rev. Zachariah H. Kuypers became a co-laborer in the churches of Queens County, and after Mr. Van Nest's removal, officiated at Newtown until 1802. He was followed in 1802 by Rev. Dr. Jacob Schoonmaker. On January 1, 1835, Rev. Garret J. Garretson was obtained as co-laborer with Dr. Schoonmaker. He is the son of John Garretson of Hillsborough, N. J., where he was born

June 29, 1808; graduated at Rutgers College, 1829, where he studied divinity with Dr. Phillip Milledoller, and settled as first pastor of the Dutch Church at Stuyvesant, Columbia County, N. Y. in 1830, whence he came here in 1835, as colleague pastor with the Rev. Dr. Schoonmaker. His first wife was Ellen Van Liew. He married in 1839 Catherine, daughter of Daniel Rapelyea.

“He removed in June, 1849. Dr. Schoonmaker resigned in October, 1849. During his pastorate Newtown and Jamaica became a separate parish as distinguished from the other churches in the county and finally Newtown alone became a parish, which was the occasion of Dr. Schoonmaker’s resignation and withdrawal to Jamaica. On December 12, 1849, Rev. Thomas C. Strong was installed, who served until January 23, 1859. He was succeeded by the following pastors:

Rev. William Anderson.....October 2, 1859, to 1866

“ Charles I. Shepard, D.D.,

April 14, 1867, to September, 1891

“ Howard W. Ennis,

November 10, 1892, to February, 1894

“ Charles Knapp Clearwater, D.D.,<sup>1</sup>

November 14, 1894, to date.”

—EDITOR.

There are also in the village a Baptist and a Methodist meeting-house, the former having been erected several years ago and the latter in 1840.

The late Right Rev. Benjamin Moore, bishop of the diocese of New York, was the son of Samuel Moore, a respectable citizen of this town. He was born here October 5, 1748, and graduated at Kings (now Columbia) College in 1768. He began, soon after, to read

<sup>1</sup> List of pastors since 1894 has been kindly furnished by Dr. Clearwater.—EDITOR.

theology, under the direction of the Rev. Dr. Auchmuty, rector of Trinity Church, and was engaged a few years in teaching Latin and Greek to the sons of several gentlemen in the city of New York. He went to England in May, 1774, was ordained deacon June 24th, and priest June 29th of the same year, by the Right Rev. Richard Terrick, bishop of London. On his return, he officiated in Trinity Church and its chapels, and was appointed, with the Rev. Mr. Bowden, an assistant minister of Trinity Church, of which Dr. Auchmuty was rector. The church edifice was consumed by fire in 1776, and was not rebuilt till 1788. In 1775 he was chosen, *pro tempore*, president of Kings College, in the absence of Dr. Cooper, but the institution was closed during the Revolutionary War, although Mr. Moore, it is believed, during this period remained in the city. In 1784 he was appointed professor of rhetoric and logic in Columbia College, which office he sustained three years. In 1789 he was again assistant minister of Trinity Church, and the same year was created S.T.D. In 1800 he became rector and was elected bishop of the diocese September 5, 1801, as the successor of the Right Rev. Samuel Provoost, and the same year was elected to the presidency of the college, which he held till 1811, when he was succeeded by the Rev. Samuel Harris, S.T.D. He was unable, from bodily infirmity, to discharge the duties of the pastoral office for some years before his death, which occurred in February, 1816, and was assisted by the Rev. John Henry Hobart, who succeeded to the prelacy on his decease.

Dr. Moore was a man of distinguished ability, and rose to public confidence and respect and to general esteem, solely by the force of natural talents and great

private worth. His acquirements in Greek were not so extensive as in Latin, which he wrote and spoke with great facility, possessing at the same time a keen relish for the beauties of the best authors in that language. The refined taste which was exhibited in all his writings was imbibed at the pure classic fount.

His wife was Charity, daughter of Clement Clark of New York (a man of wealth and respectability), whom he married April 20, 1778. His son Clement C. Moore, has long been professor of Oriental and Greek literature in the seminary of the Episcopal Church, and the ground upon which it is built was a gift from him.

The following tragical occurrence is related in an old newspaper of 1708:

"On the 22d Dec. last, Mr. William Hallett of Newtown, L. I., his wife and five children, were all inhumanly murdered by an Indian man and Negro woman, their own slaves. They were apprehended and confessing the fact, they were all executed Feb. 10, 1708, at Jamaica, and were put to *all manner of torment possible*, for a terror to others. On Saturday following two other men were executed at Jamaica, as accessories, and several more are now in custody on suspicion." The man was hanged and the woman burnt.

In the winter of 1718, negro Sam and his wife murdered the Rapelye family, father, mother, and three sons. And so quick did punishment follow the crime, that he was hanged and she burned before the family were buried. The house of Colonel Hallett, near Hell Gate, was burned in March, 1770, loss over £1,600. Richard Hallett was killed in felling a tree, May 16, 1757.



*Maspeth* or *Mispat*, before mentioned, at the head of Newtown Creek or English Kills, is very pleasantly located, and from it fine roads extend to Brooklyn, Williamsburgh, Jamaica, and Flushing. Here was the country seat of his late excellency De Witt Clinton, subsequently the residence of David S. Jones, Esq., whose wife was the only surviving daughter of Mr. Clinton, and was born here February 8, 1809. The first Methodist meeting-house upon the island was probably erected a short distance from here in 1765, but has since been converted into a dwelling, and a new one built some distance from it in 1836. A Quaker meeting-house was built here at a very early period, and is still standing, though it has scarcely been occupied once in fifty years, most of that society having died or removed to other places. A monthly meeting of Friends formerly assembled here, of which one George Bowne was clerk so lately as October 5, 1774.

An Episcopal society was organized here in May, 1847, by the name of *St. Saviour's Church*, and a small edifice erected and consecrated, May 28, 1848, of which the Rev. William Walsh is rector.

*Astoria* (late Hallett's Cove) is by far the most important village in the town, being situated upon the East River, opposite Eighty-sixth Street, New York, and has a steam ferryboat connecting it with the city. It is certainly to be lamented, that in the unnatural rage for changing names, this place should also have come within its influence, its former appellation being a respectful and deserved memorial of its ancient owner, as the following document illustrates:

“Petrus Stuyvesant doth declare, that on the day of the date here underwritten, he hath granted and allowed,

unto William Hallett, a Plot of ground at Hell-Gate, upon Long Island, called Jark's Farm, beginning at a great Rock, that lays in the meadow, (or rather valley,) goes upward south-east to the end of a very small Cripple-Bush, two hundred and ten rods; from thence north-east two hundred and thirty rods; on the north it goes up to a running water, two hundred and ten rods; containing, in the whole, 80 Morgan, and 300 rods, (about 154 acres). This done 1, day of Dec., 1652, at New Amsterdam, by order of the Honorable Director-General, and the Honorable Council of New Netherlands.

“ P. STUYVESANT. [L. S.]



“ CAREL VAN BRUGGE, Sec'y.”

The premises were confirmed by the sachem, December 5, 1664, for the consideration of fifty-eight fathom of wampum, seven coats, one blanket, and four kettles. A patent of confirmation was also executed by Governor Nicoll, April 8, 1668, and a further patent by Colonel Dongan, April 1, 1688, for an annual quit-rent of two shillings.

A deed was executed August 1, 1664, to William Hallett, by Shawestsout and Erromohar, Indians of Shawkpoke (Staten Island), by command of Mattano, sagamore—for a tract of land described as follows:

“ Beginning at the first Crick, called *Sunwick*, westward below Hellgate upon Long Island, and from the mouth of s<sup>d</sup> Crick, south to a markt tree fast by a great Rock, and from the s<sup>d</sup> markt tree southward 15 score rods, to another markt tree, which stands from another Rock, a little westward, and from that markt tree, right to the Point, upon an Island, which belongs to the Poor's Bowery, and soe round by the River, through Hellgate to the fores<sup>d</sup> Crick westward, where it began, and which the s<sup>d</sup> Hallett did formerly live upon, to have and to

hold, &c. unto the fores<sup>d</sup> William Hallett, his Heirs, Exe<sup>trs</sup> adm<sup>trs</sup>. and assigns forever."

[L. s.] Sealed, &c. SHAWESTSOUT  his mark.  
 "JOHN COE." ERROMOHAR  his mark.

The above conveyance embraced most of what is called "Hellgate Neck," other portions of which were in 1665 the property of Thomas Lawrence; and an act was passed September 23, 1701, "for quieting, settling, and confirming the right of his sons Thomas, William, and John to the said tract, and vacating all under patents, if any, clandestinely obtained."

The village of Astoria, formerly Hallett's Cove, has greatly increased in business and population within a few years—indeed its extraordinary local advantages are quite sufficient to enhance its growth and importance to an almost unlimited extent. For manufacturing purposes its situation is unequalled, so far as steam power can be applied; and its easy access to the city adds greatly to its other facilities.

An instance of longevity occurred in this town in the person of Mrs. Deborah Smith, widow of Waters Smith, who died November 21, 1838, at the age of 108 years. He was a brother of Melancthon Smith, so distinguished in the convention that adopted the Constitution of the United States. Her daughter Elizabeth married John B. Scott, Esq., and was the mother of the Hon. John B. Scott, late justice of the Marine Court, a state senator, and for some years recorder of the city of New York, to which office he was appointed in February, 1846.

The Newtown Female Academy was erected in 1821, incorporated March 15, 1822, and was a flourishing institution for several years under the direction of two

daughters of the late Dr. Isaac Ledyard, but it finally failed, and the building is now a private residence.

St. George's Episcopal Church, in this village, was erected in 1828, and was at first under the pastoral charge of the Rev. Samuel Seabury, late editor of a weekly religious paper, called *The Churchman*, and rector of the Church of the Annunciation in the city of New York. The next rector was the Rev. John W. Brown, a graduate of Union College, who was inducted into this church October 1, 1837. The Rev. Henry W. Sweetser was assistant minister. The corporation of Trinity Church, New York, gave this church \$1,000 in 1836.

The corner stone of the *Dutch Reformed Church* was laid upon the site of the old one November 16, 1831, and the building finished in 1834, and the Rev. Alexander Hamilton Bishop was ordained pastor of the church November 10, 1840. He is the son of Timothy Bishop of New Haven, and married Susan, daughter of Obadiah Holmes of New York, who died August 29, 1847, aged thirty.

The Methodist Episcopal Church was built in 1843, and dedicated on the 21st of September of that year. The corner stone of the Presbyterian Church was laid November 30, 1846, the church finished in a few months, and the Rev. Frederick Gorham Clark, installed pastor, May 28, 1847, having the year before been ordained over the Central Presbyterian Church, New York City. Mr. Clark is the son of Rev. Daniel A. Clark, and was born at Waterbury, Conn., December 13, 1819, and graduated at the University, and Union Theological Seminary of New York. He married, August 16, 1847, Sarah, oldest daughter of Robert M. Blackwell of Astoria.



The Astoria Institute, a female school, formerly under the superintendence of the Rev. John W. Brown, was established in 1838, and incorporated February 13, 1844. Mr. Brown died at Malta, in May, 1849, while travelling for his health, and the institute was taken over by Mrs. H. R. Owen.<sup>1</sup> It is well conducted, and its location excellent, combining the most beautiful scenery with an animated water prospect. The institute enjoys, moreover, the advantage of retired rural walks and pleasant groves in its vicinity.

Mr. Brown was for some years engaged as editor of the religious newspaper entitled the *Protestant Churchman*, published in the city of New York, and was of a conservative character.

The celebrated pass or strait, called by the Dutch *Helle-gat* (or narrow passage), is on the northern border of the town, where those who love to witness the impetuous strife of angry currents, with cragged and zig-zag courses among hidden rocks, may find full gratification. Our estimable countryman, Washington Irving, Esq., speaking of this celebrated place, with which the idea of danger has in all ages been nearly associated, says, "Hell-gate is as pacific at low water as any other stream; as the tide rises, it begins to fret; at half tide it rages and roars, as if bellowing for more water; but when the tide is full, it relapses again into quiet, and for a time seems almost to sleep as soundly as an alderman after dinner. It may be compared to an inveterate drinker, who is a peaceful fellow enough when he has no liquor at all, or when he is skinfull; but when half seas over, plays the very devil."

<sup>1</sup> This sentence was added to the MS. after the author's death in 1849, by Henry Onderdonk, Jr.—EDITOR.

In the south part of the town, adjoining the Jamaica and Williamsburgh turnpike, is one of the most extensive milk establishments in the country. It is owned and managed by Mr. David Mills. In 1834 he purchased for \$8,000 the farm of the late Dr. Isaac Ledyard, containing 200 acres, the whole of which has since been subdivided into fields of five and ten acres each, by stone walls, the materials of which have been obtained from the land, thereby clearing it of the surface stone, and by a judicious course of husbandry the whole tract has been rendered productive in a high degree. The dairy edifice is constructed of stone, 150 feet long, forty wide, and divided into 100 stalls, of twelve by three feet, with a passage through the centre to pass with a loaded wagon from one end to the other. The number of cows is 100, which consume one ton of English hay and 800 quarts of Indian meal per day—producing on an average throughout the year, 800 quarts of milk daily, which at five cents a quart, amount to \$40 a day, or \$14,600 a year, leaving after deducting all expenses, a handsome annual profit.

*Ravenswood* is the name of a settlement a little southwest of Astoria, in which it has been attempted to build up a beautiful villa on the banks of the East River, where the site is sufficiently elevated to afford charming views of the surrounding landscape, and possesses charms almost rivalling the descriptions of romance. The scenery upon the Thames at Windsor scarcely compares with this, in all that can delight the eye or satisfy the most extravagant fancy.

Between this settlement and the Dutch Hills were lately located the *Poor House Farms*, belonging to the corporation of New York City, which were disposed of

in 1846 and the buildings destroyed by a conflagration in the summer of 1847.

The whole north shore of this town from Flushing Bay on the east to Kings County on the west, affords some of the richest and most varied scenery in the world—and upon it may be seen many noble residences, some of which have been erected by wealthy retired merchants from the neighboring city. Among the most magnificent of these is the seat of George M. Woolsey, Esq., a former London merchant and now conducting an extensive sugar refinery in New York. The mansion house and grounds are not exceeded by any in this part of the country, and the variety, softness, and beauty of the scenery are unsurpassed.

The general surface of the town is undulating, and in some places rough; the soil of a middling quality, but in the vicinity of the Sound and Flushing Bay of great fertility. There are considerable tracts of low, swampy ground, not very easily cultivated, yet abounding in turf or peat which is occasionally used as fuel. The islands called the North and South Brothers are peculiarly valuable for their position as may be said also of Berrien's Island, containing about twelve acres.

*Rikers Island* is, however, the largest and most important one appertaining to the town, containing more than fifty acres, and lies nearly in the middle of the East River opposite Flushing Bay. One Hulet, having early lived upon it, caused it formerly to be called *Hulet's Island*. The soil is of a medium quality, but susceptible of being made highly productive. A patent for this island was granted by Governor Stuyvesant to Abraham Riker, August 19, 1664 (this being one of his last official acts), and for it a patent of confirmation was obtained

from Governor Nicoll, December 24, 1667. Since which time the property has remained with the Riker family, and been known by the name of Rikers Island.

This section of the town including what has always been called the Poor Bowery was purchased at an early date by the trustees of the Dutch Church, by whom it was for many years leased out for the support of the poor, whence it took the name above mentioned.<sup>1</sup>

## LONG ISLAND CITY

BY THE EDITOR

Previous to 1870 there existed in the western part of the town of Newtown, a sentiment towards the unification of the several villages in this locality.

In spite of considerable opposition on the part of the incorporated village of Astoria, and certain individuals, a bill was introduced before the State Legislature at Albany, authorizing the organization of a city to be composed of the villages of Astoria, Ravenswood, Hunter's Point, Dutch Kills, Blissville, Middletown, and the locality later known as Steinway. The bill was signed on May 4, 1870, by Governor John T. Hoffman, and the news of the Governor's favorable action was generally received with enthusiasm throughout this territory.

The municipality was bounded on the north and northeast by Hell Gate and Bowery Bay, on the east by Newtown, on the south by the city of Brooklyn, and on the west by the East River.

The name of Long Island City was applied to the newborn municipality. The honor of first suggesting

<sup>1</sup> This sentence was added to the MS. in 1849, after the author's death, by James Riker, Jr.—EDITOR.



this name belongs to Captain Levy Hayden, superintendent of a marine railway formerly existing at Hunter's Point. As early as 1853, this individual prophesied that the locality would some day be a city and insisted that "Long Island City," should be the name applied to it. The name was perpetuated by Thomas H. Todd, who on Friday, October 20, 1865, issued the first number of a newspaper which he called the *Long Island City Star*.

The city was apportioned into five wards and a mayor and other officials elected.

The city as a separate municipality existed until January 1, 1898, when it was merged into the city of New York as part of the Borough of Queens.

On the same date, that part of Newtown not included in Long Island City, also was taken into the city of New York as part of the Borough of Queens and the form of town government abolished.

Rev. E. M. McGuffey's Historical Discourse on St. James' Church and Older Newtown, and James Riker's Annals of Newtown have been consulted in the editing of the Chapter on Newtown.

## BUSHWICK

OCCUPIES the north-eastern part of Kings County adjoining the East River and Newtown Creek, being bounded north and east by Newtown and the channel of the East River, west by Williamsburgh, and south by Brooklyn, and that part of Flatbush called New Lots. It is about one mile wide and five miles long. Anterior to March 16, 1840, Williamsburgh was included in this town, consequently the previous history of the former must necessarily be embraced in our account of the latter. It is, however, to be regretted that so much uncertainty and confusion exists in relation to the precise time and manner of its first settlement, the ancient records of which, being by time and accident greatly injured or entirely destroyed. What remains is mostly in Dutch, and so abbreviated or obscurely written as to be of little assistance to the historian.

It is highly probable that individuals had taken possession of various parts of the town at a very early period, without any view to a plantation and without any express authority so to do, for the first inhabitants appear to have been of a very mixed character: Dutch, English, French, &c. The settlement, under the sanction of the provincial government, took a more permanent form some years after that of Brooklyn, and a few dwellings were erected in the immediate neighborhood of the old Bushwick Church.

But it seems that the scattered condition of the

inhabitants was such as made it difficult, if not impracticable, for the authorities to render them efficient protection, liable as they were from local circumstances to be easily assailed by land or water. On which account the Hon. "Director General and Council," ordered the outside residents to remove from their places of abode in the outskirts of the place and *concentrate* themselves, because, say they, "we have war with the Indians, who have slain several of our Netherland people."

The records of 1660 contain the following entries relating to an original plantation here.

"Feb. 16.—As fourteen Frenchmen, with a Dutchman named Pieter Janse Wit, their interpreter, have arrived here, and as they do not understand the Dutch language, they have been with the Director General, and requested him to cause a town plot to be laid out at a proper place; whereupon his Honor fixed upon the 19th instant to visit the place, and fix upon a scite."

"Feb. 19.—On this day, the Director General, with the fiscal Nicasius de Sille, and the Honorable Secretary Van Ruyven, with the sworn Surveyor, Jacques Cortel-you, came to Mispat, and have fixed upon a place between Mispat kill and Norman's kill, to establish a village, and have laid out by survey twenty-two village lots, on which dwelling-houses are to be built."

And again:

"1661, March 14.—The Director General visited the new village, when the inhabitants requested his honor to give the place a name, whereupon he named the town Boswijck.—The citizens then applied for the following privileges:—

"Firstly. For pasture-land for their cattle, and hay-

land for their stock, which they requested to have on the east side of the village limits, extending southward to the hills, and along said hills westward to the heights of Merck's plantation, and from said heights northerly by Merck's plantation to Bushwick, being a four cornered plot of land.

"Secondly. To have meadows to mow hay for their stock, according to the landed rights.

"Thirdly. To have roads for the purpose of going to the river and kills, to wit: one road between the land of Hendrick Willemse, *Backer*, and Jan Cornelissen Seeuw, the second upon Dirck Volkerse Norman's land, which is named the hout (or wood) point, the third over Steendam's land to come to Mispot Kill, the fourth over Albert de Norman's land to get hay and other things.

"Fourthly. That all the citizens who dwell within the limits and jurisdiction of the town of Bushwick, and already have village lots, shall remove to the same, according to the order of the Director General.

"This is undersigned by the citizens, namely, by:

Pieter Janse Wit	Jan Cornelissen Seeuw	Jan Catiouw
Evert Hegeman	Barent Joosten	Jan Mailiaert
Jan Willemse Yselstyn	Franssooys de Puji	Hendrick Janse Greven
Jan Tilie	Johannes Casperse	Gysbert Thonisse
Ryck Leydecker	Francisco de neger	Joost Kasperse
Hendrick Willemse	Pieter Lamot	Willem Traphagen
Barent Gerretse	Siarel Fontyn	Dirck Volkerse *
Jan Hendrickse	Herry ———	

"Fifthly. That all persons whatsoever, who dwell outside of the village attend to the danger they may be in, by remaining where they be.

\* For this correction of the names inserted in our former edition we are indebted to the kindness of James Riker, jun., who has in his possession an ancient copy of the original record, in the identical handwriting of Cornelius Van Ruyven, Secretary of the Province.



“The Governor General has commanded that six men be chosen, from whom he will select three to be commissioners over the town of Bushwick.”

Six men were chosen, from whom the Director General selected Pieter Janse Wit, Jan Tilie, and Jan Cornelissen Seeuw, to whom he committed the provisional administration of the justice of the village.

It is difficult at this day to ascertain the precise spot where the said village was intended to be established and the greater probability is that the persons named among the applicants subsequently abandoned the design, as their descendants are not now found here, although there are families who can trace their ancestry 200 years back, many of them still possessing the same land once occupied by their progenitors.

The name by which the town is designated is of Dutch origin, and is said to be synonymous with *Big Woods*, the territory being doubtless, at that time, covered by a growth of heavy timber; and such was the case to a considerable extent down to the period of the Revolution.

A patent or ground brief was issued as early as 1648 for lands within the original town of Bushwick, but was confined to that portion of the soil adjacent to the Wal-labout Bay.

The year next succeeding the conquest of New Netherlands by the English, the following precept was directed to the principal executive officer of the town:

*“To the Constable of the Town of Bushwick:*

*“You are by this required personally to appear before His Majesty’s Court at Gravesend, on the 20th of July*

next, and you are required also to summon the Officers of your town to appear at said Court of Sessions, and not to leave the same during the term: And you are also required to summon as many of your inhabitants as understand the English language to attend the aforesaid Court, and not to leave the same during the term, on pain of fine. Dated the 16th of June, 1665, in the 18th year of his Majesty's reign.

JO: RIEDER, *Clerk of Sessions.*"

To prevent fraud and imposition by wicked and designing persons upon such of the inhabitants as did not understand the English language, it was required by the government that all *transports* or conveyances, and also hypothecations of land, should be *passed, signed, sealed, and registered* by the secretary or clerk of the town, without which formalities they were to be considered invalid.

A dispute about the meadows between this town and Middleburgh, which had existed for some time, was eventually decided in the assembly of deputies, which convened at Hempstead in March, 1665, in favor of Bushwick; which meadows are described as lying on the west side of the oldest Dutch fence, standing on the east side of the head of Mispot Hill.

It is worthy of note that one of the first steps taken by the new government was to oblige the inhabitants to provide for and maintain a minister, as is shown by the following order:

*"To the Constable of the Town of Bushwick:*

*"By these presents you are, in his Majesty's name, commanded, and ordered, to call a meeting of the Officers of your Town, who shall within four months after*

the first day of June, make out a correct list of all the male persons in the town, of the age of sixteen years and upwards; and also, a correct list or estimation of the estate of every inhabitant of the town that he holds in his own right, or for others, according to its true value, designating the same particularly, and to whom it belongs in the town, or elsewhere, as the same can be discovered, and the tenure under which the property is held. And also, an account, or list, of every acre of land in the town, and the true value of the same, and by whom owned, and further the tax each person has to pay, from a pound to a penny, for his land and personal property, and also a report of the situation of the inhabitants of the town: neatly written in the English language. Hereof fail not, as you will answer for the same. June 20, 1665. By me:

“WILHELM WELSH, *Chief Clerk.*”

The inhabitants being at this time unable wholly to support a minister, the other towns who had no settled clergyman were ordered to contribute a certain amount, and preachers from other places were directed to officiate here occasionally.

The following is a copy of an epistle addressed by the governor to the people of the town:

“Beloved Friends:

“As you have no minister to preach the gospel to the congregation of your town, nor are you able wholly to maintain a minister, therefore, it seems proper to us, that the neighboring towns which have no settled minister, should combine with you to maintain the gospel ministry, and that you should jointly contribute for that purpose, therefore, we deem it proper to order, and firmly and orderly to establish, according to the desire of many of your people, who have conferred with me, therefore, we

have ordered that three or four persons, duly authorized, appear, on Thursday or Friday next further to confer on that matter, for themselves and the timid, and the other inhabitants.

"Whereupon, we greet you cordially, as honored and respected friends, and as your friend.

"RICHARD NICOLL.

"Fort James, Oct. 17, 1665."

This order, it will appear, was made the year following the surrender of the province, and notwithstanding it was provided by the eighth article of the capitulation that the Dutch here should enjoy the liberty of conscience in religious matters, the civil authority began to interfere in the matter, and to prescribe for what it considered to be their religious necessities. Again, December 26, 1665, the governor addressed the inhabitants as follows:

*"Beloved and Honorable Good Friends:*

"Before this time our order has been made known to you, that the Honorable Ministers of this place, in turn, will preach to your people until you are able to maintain a Minister yourselves. By our order presented to you, you were required to raise the sum of 175 guilders as your proportion of the salary, but in consideration of the trouble in your town, we have deemed proper under present circumstances to reduce the sum of 175 guilders to the sum of 100 guilders, which we deem reasonable, and against which no well grounded complaint can exist, and ought to be satisfactory, which last sum we demand for the Ministers' salary; therefore, we expect that measures will be adopted to collect the same promptly, pursuant to this order, and to ensure the same, we have deemed it proper to appoint Evert

Hegeman and Peter Janse Wit, giving them full power and authority to assess and collect that sum, having regard to the condition and circumstances of the people and to decide what each of them shall pay, which the said persons shall collect or cause to be collected, that is, 100 guilders, in three instalments, and pay the same over to us, the first on the last day of December next, the second on the last day of April next, and the third on the last of August next ensuing. Whereupon, we remain your friend, greeting, RICHARD NICOLL."

"This will be delivered to Evert Hegeman and Peter Janse Wit, and read to the congregation. R. N."

Accordingly on the next day the minister, sent by the governor, preached his first sermon at the house of Guisbert Tonissen; and the next year Cornelius Van Ruyven made a demand of 100 guilders, as the amount of salary due the ministers sent to officiate in the town, but whose names are not mentioned. This sum, made up by a few persons only, was annually contributed till the recapture of the colony in 1673.

The patent heretofore granted by Stuyvesant having, it seems, been considered either defective or insufficient, the people of Bushwick, in 1666, at a town meeting assembled for the purpose, appointed a committee to wait upon Governor Nicoll, "to solicit him for a new patent, and to request that therein the boundaries of their plantation might be more expressly defined and set forth."

This patent was obtained the 25th of October, 1667, wherein the boundaries of the town are set forth in the words following:

"Bounded with the mouth of a certain creeke or kill, called Maspeth-Kill,<sup>1</sup> right over against Dominie-Hook,

<sup>1</sup> Now Newtown Creek.—EDITOR.



soe their bounds goe to David Jocham's Hook; then stretching upon a south-east line along the said Kill, they come to Smith's Island, including the same, together with all the meadow-ground or valley thereunto belonging; and continuing the same course, they pass along by the fence at the wood-side, soe to Thomas Wandall's meadow, from whence, stretching upon a south-east by south line, along the woodland to the Kills, taking in the meadow or valley there; then pass along near upon a south-east by south line six hundred rod into the woods: then running behind the lots as the woodland lyes, south-west by south; and out of the said woods they goe again north-west, to a certain small swamp; from thence they run behind the New Lotts, to John, the Sweede's-meadow; then over the Norman's Kill, to the west end of his old house, from whence they goe alongst the river, till you come to the mouth of Maspeth-Kill and David Jocham's Hook, whence they first began."

From the organization of the town till the year 1690, it was for certain purposes associated with the other towns in the county, except Gravesend, constituting a separate district under the appellation of the "*Five Dutch Towns*," for which a secretary or register was specially commissioned by the governor, whose duty it was to take the proof of wills, of marriage settlements, also the acknowledgment of "*Transcripts*," or conveyances, and many of the more important contracts and agreements; all which were required to be recorded. This office was, in 1674, held by Nicasius de Sille, who had once held the office of attorney general under the administration of Stuyvesant. These five towns likewise formed but one ecclesiastical congregation, and joined in the support of their ministers in common. The inhabi-

tants, with few exceptions, professed the doctrines promulgated at the synod of Dort in 1618, most of whose resolutions are still adhered to in the Reformed Dutch churches. The churches were at that period, and for a long time after, governed by the classis of Amsterdam, and so continued till about the year 1772, when the American churches became independent of the mother church, and established classes and synods of their own, after the model of the church of Holland.

In the year 1662, according to one authority, the dwellings in this town did not exceed twenty-five in number, and were located on the site of the present village of Bushwick, which, with the Hexagon Church, built in 1720, was enclosed by palisades, as most of the other settlements were. In the minutes of the court of sessions is the following entry:

“At a Court of Sessions, held at Flatbush for King’s County, May 10, 1699. Upon the desire of the inhabitants of Breucklyn, that according to use and order, every three yeare the limmits betweene towne and towne must be runn, that a warrant or order may be given, that upon the 17th day off May, the line and bounds betwixt said townes of Breucklyn and Boswyck shall be run according to their pattents or agrements. Ordered, That an order should be past according to their request.”

The inhabitants of this town were comparatively few in number, even at the commencement of the Revolutionary contest, yet they suffered abundantly from depredations upon their property in various ways. Their exposed situation made them liable to invasion from every quarter, and they were of course robbed and plundered, as caprice or malice dictated.

The nearness of its fine forests of wood to the gar-

risons and barracks of New York and Brooklyn, led to the entire waste of the valuable timber which abounded at the commencement of the contest. On the return of the owners to their homes at the close of the war, they found not only the woods and fences destroyed, but their dwellings, in many instances, greatly deteriorated in value.

On the 12th of May, 1664, the magistrates of this town sentenced one John Van Lyden, convicted of publishing a libel, to be fastened to a stake, with a bridle in his mouth, eight rods under his arm, and a label on his breast with the words, "*writer of lampoons, false accuser, and defamer of magistrates,*" upon it, and then to be banished from the colony. An instance also occurred, of a clergyman who had improperly married a couple, being sentenced to "*flogging and banishment,*" which sentence, on account of the *advanced age* of the delinquent, was mitigated by the governor to *banishment* only. Another person, convicted of theft, was compelled to stand for the space of three hours under a gallows, with a rope around his neck, and an empty scabbard in his hands.

In 1664 permission was given by the town to Abraham Jansen to erect a mill on Maspeth Kill,<sup>1</sup> which was probably the first water-mill built within the town; and for grinding of the *town's grain* he was to receive the "*customary duties.*" November 12, 1695, the court of sessions of Kings County made an order, "That *Mad James* should be kept at the expense of the county, and that the deacons of each towne within the same doe forthwith meet together and consider about their *proper-cons* for maintenance of said James."

<sup>1</sup> Now Newtown Creek.—EDITOR.

The records of the church, like those of the town, are so imperfect as scarcely to afford us any valuable information, and do not extend back anterior to 1689. The town early formed a part of the collegiate charge of the Dutch Church and of course the same ministers officiated here, as in the other four towns of the county, a more particular account of whom will be found in our account of Flatbush and Brooklyn. It is highly probable that a house for public worship existed here as early as 1710, at which time all the Reformed Dutch churches in the county were united, and constituted together one collegiate charge, under the care of the different ministers resident in the district, whose names, characters, &c., will be found more at large in our account of the town of Flatbush.

The church edifice was as usual at that day of an hexagon form, with a pyramidal roof and a cupola in the middle. Benches and chairs were used instead of pews or seats till 1790, when the building received a new roof, and in five years thereafter a gallery opposite the pulpit. This church was demolished in 1829, when the present one was built and dedicated in October of that year.

In 1787 the *Rev. Peter Lowe*, a native of Ulster County, N. Y., was installed here as collegiate pastor with the *Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker*, whose residence was at Flatbush. Having accepted a call to the associate churches of Flatbush and Flatlands, he closed his services in this place in the year 1808, and was succeeded in 1811 by the *Rev. John Basset*, who was descended of a Huguenot family residing in the city of New York, where he was born in 1764. His father, Captain John Basset, was a mariner, and was lost upon the ocean at

an early period of life, leaving his son an infant. He nevertheless obtained a thorough education and graduated at Columbia College, 1786. He first settled in Albany, married Miss Ann Hunn, and continued to officiate in the Reformed Dutch Church there till 1811, when he was dismissed and was installed here the same year. That he was a good scholar, as well as an able divine, possessing the confidence of the church, appears from his having been, in 1797, appointed Hebrew professor in Queens (now Rutgers) College, which chair he held for several years. His familiarity with the Dutch language led him to translate Adrian Vanderdonk's *History of New Netherland*, but the manuscript having been lost, the task was afterwards ably executed by the Hon. Jeremiah Johnson.

Dr. Basset died in November, 1824, and his body, buried in the yard attached to the church, was subsequently removed to the city of Albany. He left sons John and Hunn, and three daughters, whose posterity reside in the west.

The *Rev. Stephen H. Meeker* was ordained here February 27, 1826. He is the son of Benjamin Meeker and Esther Headly, born at Elizabethtown, N. J., October 17, 1799, graduated at Columbia College, 1821, and licensed to preach 1824. He was dismissed April 27, 1830, being called to the Dutch Church in Jersey City, where he remained about six months and was again installed here in November following. The *Rev. John W. Ward* was ordained pastor of this Church, September, 1849.<sup>1</sup>

There is a considerable settlement in the southerly

<sup>1</sup> This sentence was added to the MS. by Henry Onderdonk, Jr., after the author's death in March, 1849.—EDITOR.



part of the town, upon the turnpike leading from the English Kill<sup>1</sup> to the Wallabout, while the village called Green Point, situated between the ancient settlement and the East River, has grown up within a few years. Here an Episcopal church was erected in 1846, called the *Church of the Ascension*, of which the Rev. John W. Brown of Astoria is pastor,—as successor to the Rev. John C. Brown, first appointed. There is a large body of meadow on the easterly side of the town, adjoining Newtown, which is occasionally covered by water at high tide.

“On January 1, 1855, the town of Bushwick, together with the city of Williamsburgh, was consolidated with and became a part of the city of Brooklyn. Provision for this had been made in Chapter 577, Laws of 1853, and authorization for the consolidation was given in Chapter 384, Laws of 1854. When Brooklyn was taken into New York, in 1898, the old town of Bushwick, of course, became a part of New York City.” EDITOR.

<sup>1</sup> Now Newtown Creek.—EDITOR.

## WILLIAMSBURGH

WAS taken from Bushwick and organized into a separate town by an act of the legislature, passed March 16, 1840, which among other things provides that "all that part of the town of Bushwick, in the county of Kings, included within the chartered limits of the village of Williamsburgh, shall be erected into a separate town, by the name of Williamsburgh." The town was divided by the said act into three assessment and collection districts, and it was further declared, that all the remaining part of the town of Bushwick should be and remain a town by the same name.

The town at that time contained 5,094 inhabitants, but five years thereafter the number was 11,550, being an increase of more than 125 per cent. It has now probably nearly 20,000.

In the act incorporating the said village, passed April 4, 1827, which gave a new impulse to business and population, the boundaries are set forth and described as follows:

"Beginning at the Bay or River opposite the town of Brooklyn, and running easterly along the division line between the towns of Bushwick and Brooklyn to the land of Abraham A. Remsen; thence northerly by the same to a road or highway, at a place called Swede's Fly; thence by the said highway to the dwelling house, late of John Vandervoort, deceased; thence in a straight line

northerly, to a small ditch or creek, against the meadow of John Skillman; thence by said creek to Norman's Kill; thence by the centre or middle of Norman's Kill to the East River; thence by the same to the place of beginning."

In consequence of an application from the inhabitants, at a subsequent day, for an extension of the chartered limits of the village, an act was passed April 18, 1835, extending its boundaries, and making the territory what it now is, co-extensive with the town of Williamsburgh. The first trustees appointed by the act of 1827 were Noah Waterbury, John Miller, Abraham Meserole, Lewis Sandford, and Thomas T. Morrill, of whom the first named (a public spirited individual) was chosen president, and under whose energy and encouragement the board applied themselves immediately to the laying out of streets and building lots, which act proved the basis of its future growth. Everything else was done, which the state of things at that time seemed either to authorize or require, yet the expectations of the inhabitants were not realized, which induced the desire of enlarging the boundaries of the village, with powers and privileges more adequate to the objects in contemplation.

An act for the purpose was obtained in 1835, which among other things, confided the management of municipal concerns to a board of trustees, to be annually elected; of which Edmund Frost, deceased, was chosen president.

Within a few years, many improvements have taken place and measures devised to ensure the prosperity of the village, making it no mean rival of Brooklyn. Much is fairly attributable to its increasing avenues of trade and the establishment of ferries between it and New York.

So closely is it identified with those cities, that it may be reckoned an integral portion of both. The whole territory of the village, which is co-extensive with the town, comprises about 1,050 acres.

The Grand Street Ferry, 950 yards, was commenced in 1812, which has for several years been conducted by steam power. The Peck Slip Ferry was established in 1836, and that to Houston Street in 1840.

In consequence of these important accessories to the many local advantages here enjoyed, it has happened that where a few years ago only hills and naked fields were seen, the tide of success has produced numerous paved streets, upon which continuous blocks of stores, dwellings, and public buildings of great value have been erected, many of which are not only handsome but magnificent.

This town, having so recently formed a part of Bushwick, the following extracts from ancient records can hardly fail of interesting those who love to revel in the reminiscences of "*olden time*."

"September 8, 1664., N. S.

"Beloved Friends:

"It has happened that the New Netherlands is given up to the English, and that Peter Stuyvesant, Governor of the West India Company, has marched out of the Fort with his men, to *Beur's Paet*, to the Holland shipping, which lay there at the time: And that Gov. Richard Nicolls, in the name of the King of England, ordered a Corporal's guard to take possession of the Fort. Afterwards the Governor, with two companies of men, marched into the fort, accompanied by the Burgomasters of the City, who inducted the Governor and gave him a welcome reception. Governor Nicolls has altered the

name of the City of New Amsterdam, and named the same *New York*, and named the fort, *Fort James*.

“From your friend,  
“CORNELIUS VAN RUYVEN.”

To which may be added the following orders for the administration of justice:

“By these presents, beloved friends, you are authorised and required, by plurality of votes, to cause to be chosen by the freeholders of your town, eight men of good name and fame, for the purpose of administering Justice for the ensuing year, for which they will be held answerable in their individual capacities, together with the Constable which is elected, until the first day of April next, (old style). You will forward the names of the persons chosen, as is usual, to his Excellency Governor Nicolls, who sends these presents greeting, in the name of God. Dated in Fort James, March 23, 1665, old style.

By order of the Governor,

“C. V. RUYVEN.”

It seems a little remarkable that public attention was not sooner concentrated upon a place possessing, as Williamsburgh does, many superior advantages for the successful prosecution of almost every species of manufacture and commerce. Situated as it is, opposite the heart of the City of New York, it possesses a bold water front of a mile and a half in extent, of sufficient depth for all ordinary purposes, and the whole shore is under the control of its own local authorities.

There have already been constructed, under the act of the 22d of April, 1835, and other statutes before mentioned, several large and substantial wharves and docks, affording thereby a safe and convenient mooring for ves-



sels of the largest class. The ferry is, by two or three miles, the nearest approximation to the upper wards of the City of New York from the eastern towns of Long Island, and Williamsburgh is connected with the upper and lower parts of the city by double lines of steamboats of the best construction, and remarkable for speed and accommodations.

The ferry to Peck Slip unites the village with the Fulton and Catherine markets, and the ferry to Houston Street leads to the upper parts of the city and Harlem. Williamsburgh now contains seventy-five streets, permanently laid out, of which more than thirty have been opened and regulated, including one macadamized, and several paved streets.

The village also contains several extensive manufacturing establishments, a distillery, an iron foundry, a spice mill, hatteries, rope walks, and probably the largest glue factory in the United States.

Ship-building has also been introduced and is now prosecuted to a great and profitable extent.

The Lyceum was incorporated May 13, 1845, for the purpose of establishing and maintaining a library, reading room, and scientific lectures, and other means of promoting moral and intellectual improvement. It has about 300 members. There is likewise a Mechanics' Association, which will doubtless prove a useful institution.

A press was introduced in 1835, from which was issued the *Williamsburgh Gazette*, a weekly newspaper, by Francis G. Fish, who in 1836 transferred it to his brother Adrastus, and it was by him disposed of to Levi Darbee in 1838. The first number of the *Williamsburgh Democrat* was issued June 3, 1843, by Thomas

A. Devyr; but in October, 1844, it was sold to David and Robert McAdam, and the title changed to *Democratic Advocate*. The *Long Islander*, a daily paper begun November 5, 1845, by John A. F. Kelly, William G. Bishop, and Alpheus P. Ritter, was soon after discontinued. The first number of the *Morning Post*, a daily paper, was published December 18, 1846, by I. Anderson Smith, but the paper was discontinued in April, 1848. The first number of the *Williamsburgh Daily Times* was printed February 28, 1848, by Bennet Smith & Company.

The *Williamsburgh Fire Insurance Company* was incorporated April 28, 1836, for thirty years, with a capital of \$150,000.

The first Methodist Episcopal Church was organized in 1807, and the building erected the next year, upon North Second Street, which underwent some repairs in 1821, and was rebuilt of brick on South Second Street, near Sixth Street, 1837, and dedicated January 8, 1840.

The Methodist Protestant Church was organized in 1833, and its edifice of wood erected the same year on Grand, near Fifth Street.

The corner stone of the new second Methodist Episcopal Church, on the corner of Grand and Ewen streets, was laid November 25, 1845, and the building was dedicated November 26, 1846. It is a substantial brick building with a stone front and towers at the corners.

The corner stone of the German Methodist Episcopal Free Church was laid September 21, 1846, corner of Stagg and Lorimer streets, and the building has since been completed. Rev. Charles Behre is pastor.

Besides the above there are the Asbury Methodist Episcopal Church, North Seventh Street; the Bethel

Methodist Episcopal, Frost Street; Free Union Methodist Episcopal, South Third Street; Zion Methodist Episcopal Church, North Second Street, all for colored people. Two others are organized, one in the first and one in the second district.

The corner stone of the Reformed Dutch Church was laid on Fourth and South Second streets, August 28, 1828, the building dedicated July 26, 1829, and the congregation fully organized in November following. Its first pastor, the Rev. James Demarest, was ordained June 27, 1830, and dismissed July 2, 1839. The Rev. William Howard Van Doren was born at Hopewell, N. Y., March 4, 1810, the son of the Rev. Isaac Van Doren, pastor of the church at that place, and graduated at Columbia College, 1832. He married February 20, 1840, Matilda Ann, daughter of Tunis Johnson, Esq. of Brooklyn, and was ordained over this church on the 29th of January preceding. He resigned his charge in August, 1849.<sup>1</sup>

The Protestant Episcopal Church (St. Mark's), corner of Fourth and South Fifth streets, was erected in 1840, and consecrated April 27, 1841. It is built of hammered stone, and is a neat structure of the Gothic style. The interior is remarkably beautiful, presenting a fine specimen of *fresco* painting. The Rev. Samuel M. Haskins, rector, was born at Waterford, Me., graduated at Union College 1836, at the General Theological Seminary, N. Y., in June, 1839, and settled in this church in October following. He married Adelia, daughter of Isaac Peck of Flushing, who died aged thirty-two, January 19, 1848.

<sup>1</sup> This sentence was added to the MS. by Henry Onderdonk, Jr., after the author's death in March, 1849.—EDITOR.

The corner stone of Christ Church (Episcopal) was laid on South Sixth Street, October 1, 1846; the building was finished the same year, and the Rev. Charles Reynolds was made rector in August, 1846.

St. Paul's Free Episcopal Church, corner of Grand Street and Graham Avenue, Rev. G. W. Fash, rector, and Calvary Protestant Episcopal Free Church, Rev. R. J. Hall, rector, may also be enumerated.

The First Presbyterian Church, corner of Fourth and South Second streets, was organized May 26, 1842, over which the Rev. Joseph Rawson Johnson was installed pastor, June 13, 1843. He is the second son of the Rev. Gordon Johnson of Killingly, Conn., where he was born August 19, 1806, licensed to preach September 19, 1832, and married Sophia, daughter of Andrew Penniman of Mendon, Mass., November 26, 1832.

After preaching two years at Newfield, Tompkins County, N. Y., and one year to the Second Presbyterian Church, Cortlandville, Cortland County, N. Y., he was ordained and installed pastor of the Union Congregational Society of Cincinnatus and Solon, N. Y., in February, 1836. January 22, 1840, he was installed over the De Ruyter Religious Society, Madison County, N. Y., and was dismissed in May, 1843. He remained here till April, 1845, when he was succeeded by the Rev. James Woods McLane, a graduate of Yale, 1829, whose installation took place on the 2d of September following. All this time the congregation were without a house of worship and unhappily divided.

Another Presbyterian church was organized by the Presbytery of New York, April 19, 1844, who have erected a building of brick, 62 by 75 feet on South Third and Fifth streets, the corner stone of

which was laid August 18, 1845, and the building dedicated May 10, 1846. The ground was given by Grover Coe Furman, Esq., of New York. Of this church the Rev. Nathaniel S. Prime was stated supply during 1844; but the Rev. Paul E. Stevenson of Staunton, Va., was installed pastor February 20, 1845. He is a native of Cambridge, N. Y., and married Cornelia, daughter of the Rev. Mr. Prime, May 18, 1841.

The Baptist Church was organized in the spring of 1839, and the building dedicated June 29, 1843. It is located on South Fifth Street. Of this church the Rev. Lawson Mussey was the first pastor. He was born at Dublin, Cheshire County, N. H., and was educated at Hamilton Theological Seminary, where he graduated August 11, 1841, and was ordained the pastor of this church on the 16th day of September of the same year. His wife is a daughter of Daniel and Hester Reed of Brookfield, Madison County, N. Y. He was dismissed in the autumn of 1843, and was succeeded in May, 1844, by the Rev. Alanson P. Mason.

St. Mary's Church (Catholic) was erected in 1840, at the corner of First and North Eighth streets, of which the Rev. James O'Donnell is priest.

The German Catholic Church of the Holy Trinity, Montrose Avenue, was founded in 1841, and consecrated the same year. The priest is the Rev. John Raffener, at whose sole expense the ground was procured and the church edifice itself constructed. He was born at Mals, Tyrol, a province of Austria, in 1784, and graduated at Rome, Doctor of Medicine and Philosophy, May 4, 1813.

The corner stone of St. Peter and St. Paul's Church (Catholic) in Second Street, was laid by Bishop Hughes,



May 30, 1847. It is of brick, 63 by 104 feet, of the simple Gothic style. Rev. Sylvester Malone is priest. The edifice was consecrated May 7, 1848.

The First Congregational Church was organized May 28, 1843, in which year they erected a house of worship on the corner of South Third and Eleventh streets, and the Rev. Simeon S. Jocelyn is their pastor.

The corner stone of the Free Universalist Church on Fourth and South Third streets was laid June 23, 1847, the society having been incorporated in August, 1845, and the Rev. Henry Lyon installed pastor October 8, 1845. The building was dedicated March 15, 1848.

Mention may be made also of the German Evangelical Church, corner of Wyckoff Street and Graham Avenue, Rev. H. Beusset, pastor.

A society known as the Associate Reformed Church has lately been organized, but have as yet no house of worship.

“The identical town and village of Williamsburgh was incorporated as the city of Williamsburgh by an act passed April 7, 1851, which went into effect on January 1, 1852. By this act the new city was divided into three wards and provision made for public improvements, etc.

“The city had a short existence of three years, for on January 1, 1855, together with the town of Bushwick, it was consolidated with and became a part of the city of Brooklyn; provision and authorization for this having been made by Chapter 577, Laws of 1853, and Chapter 384, Laws of 1854, respectively.” EDITOR.

## GRAVESEND

Is the most southerly town of Kings County and includes Coney Island, bordering on the ocean. It is of a triangular form, two of its sides being straight lines proceeding from a point on the south line of Flatbush toward the sea, and being bounded north-west by New Utrecht, north-east by Flatlands, and south by the Atlantic. Its surface is generally low and flat, except near the sea, where a few sand hills are to be seen. A considerable portion of the town consists of marsh and salt meadows, not more than one-third being returned as improved land.

Unlike other parts of the county this town was settled mainly by English people from Massachusetts, where they had resided for different periods, but were compelled to remove in consequence of the intolerant spirit which characterized the administration of that colony. The precise period when the emigrants arrived here cannot be ascertained, but it is quite certain that a considerable number of very respectable individuals commenced the plantation previous to 1643, but why it was called by its present name is not so easily determined. Its being an English settlement has led some to suppose that the name is derived from a market town so called upon the south side of the Thames, from which some of the emigrants may have bid adieu to their native country, or from the circumstance of the settlers finding the shore where they landed composed of deep and heavy sand.

Edmund B. O'Callaghan, M.D., the learned and accurate historian of New Netherland, whose suggestions are of great value, speaking of the Lady Moody says, that by the express will and consent of the director-general and council of New Netherland the settlement was called "'s Gravenzande," after the picturesque village (originally a walled city) of that name at the mouth of the river Maas, where the ancient counts of Holland held their courts previous to their removal to The Hague. It was the fashion with all European powers who had possessions in the New World to transfer the names of towns in the mother country to their new settlements in America. The Dutch were as observant of this custom as any other nation, of which fact any person can satisfy himself by looking over a map of Holland.

Among the early settlers of this town was that extraordinary and heroic individual so famous among the people of Massachusetts Bay, Lady Deborah Moody, a woman of rank, education, and wealth, who, with several of her friends residing at Lynn, Sandwich, and other places, entertained some religious opinions at variance with the leading spirits of that colony, and became objects of disfavor and persecution, and therefore wisely concluded to withdraw from that settlement and seek another, presenting a better prospect of enjoying unmolested that religious freedom which was denied them. Having examined the country in the neighborhood of New Amsterdam, they finally located here, where they hoped not only to obtain the necessities of life but to lay a foundation for transmission to their posterity: the freedom and happiness of an independent community. Its proximity to the ocean and the advantages which presented themselves of making this a place of some commercial impor-

tance, were among the inducements for locating at this spot.

A committee appointed to fix upon the plan of a village having made a report which was approved, they proceeded to lay off a plot consisting of ten acres, centrally situated, into squares and streets intersecting each other at right angles, and so disposed as to allow of thirty-nine lots of competent size for houses, gardens, etc., fronting on the outer street, surrounding the whole.

The number of the lots was equal to that of the first settlers, and served as the rule of division in all subsequent allotments of land in the town. The village plot, thus designated, was next enclosed by a stockade or palisade defence, erected by the proprietors of the respective lots, composed of "half trees nine feet long and standing seven feet above the ground."

This chosen spot served as the nucleus of a more populous settlement, and the outlands were so laid off as to make the exterior lines of every plantation converge toward the common centre; which, it may be observed, is their condition at the present day to a very considerable extent. Although the want of a sufficient depth of water in the neighboring cove defeated the original project of making this a commercial town, yet the place grew into importance and became in a short space the capital or shire town of the county, the courts being appointed to be held here, and so continuing for more than forty years when they were removed to Flatbush. After the danger from enemies became less considerable, and the inhabitants more generally diffused, the idea of supporting the central establishment abated, and the larger squares were appropriated to other uses than as a place of habitation and defence. The court house was built

upon one of them, the church upon another, and a third was appropriated as a common cemetery. Here are a number of graves of the early settlers, but those of the Quakers have been levelled by the plough. According to the custom of these people there were no monuments to designate the place of their interment except that of Peter Sullivan and his wife, at the head of which is a large granite slab containing the names of the deceased only.

It is highly probable that the first proprietors procured a conveyance from the neighboring Indians as was the custom in the English towns, for only a very short patent was granted them during the Dutch Government. But a ground brief or patent was issued by Governor Kieft to Antoine Jansen Van Salee, May 27, 1643, "for 100 morgen \* of land lying on the bay of the North River on Long Island over against the Conyne Island, stretching along the strand 253 rods. North north-west from the strand, about north-east by east 236 rods, back again along an height 124 rods, about south-east, and south-west by west, 24 rods; south, 54 rods farther to the strand, south-west by west 174 rods, with some *out hoecks*, lying on the south side, amounting to 87 morgen, and  $49\frac{1}{2}$  rods, with yet an *hoeck* stretching from the house, surrounded on three sides with meadow, stretching south-west by west 72 rods, 90 rods south-east by south, being an *oblong*, with some out hoecks, bearing 12 morgen,  $550\frac{1}{2}$  rods, amounting together to the aforesaid 100 morgen."

This was probably a confirmation patent, as a grant

\* A *morgen* was a Dutch measure, little less than two English acres, and consisting of 600 square Dutch rods; a *shepel* (or Dutch bushel) was nearly three English pecks; a *guilder* was about the value of forty cents, and a *stiver* about that of two cents.



was made to him August 1, 1639, afterwards known as Antonie Jansen's Bowery (or farm), for which another patent of confirmation was issued by Governor Nicoll, June 11, 1667, but was made to Francis Bruyne (or Brown), specifying the same boundaries as aforesaid, and concerning which an agreement was made between the patentee and the people of Gravesend, April 29, 1670.\*

A patent was granted Guisbert Op-Dyck, May 24, 1644, for Coney Island, called by the Dutch Conynen Eylandt, probably from an individual of that name who first lived upon it. Pine Island, then called Conyne Hoeck, was separated from the former by a small creek which has since disappeared.

A general patent for the town, both in Dutch and English, was obtained from Governor Kieft, December 19, 1645, in which the patentees named were the Lady Deborah Moody, Sir Henry Moody, Bart., Ensign George Baxter, and Sergeant James Hubbard, their heirs and successors, for "a certain quantity of land being upon or about the westernmost part of Long Island, beginning at the mouth of a creek adjacent to Conyne Island, and bounded on the west part thereof with the lands belonging to Anthony Johnson and Robert Pennoyre; and to run as far as the westernmost part of a cer-

\* There is an existing tradition that this Antonie Jansen Van Salee was by birth a Moor, and came from a place called Salee on the coast of Africa, which caused the addition to his name, to distinguish him from another person of the same name. As there is no known reason why the Dutch governor should make so extensive a grant to a native of Africa, it is more probable that he may have been a Dutchman, who, for purposes of commerce had resided at Salee, and thus acquired the above addition by way of distinction. He is said to have been a man of prodigious strength; and William, a brother of his, is reported to have carried ten bushels of wheat from his barn to the house, a distance of fifty yards, and then upstairs to the garret.

tain pond in an old Indian field on the north side of the plantation of the said Robert Pennoyre; and from thence to run directly east as far as a valley, being at the head of a fly or marsh some time belonging to the land of Hugh Garretson; and being bounded on the south with the main ocean, with liberty to put what cattle they shall see fitting to feed or graze upon the aforesaid Conyne Island, and with liberty to build a town, with such necessary fortifications as to them shall seem expedient; and to have and enjoy the free liberty of conscience according to the customs and manners of Holland without molestation, and to establish courts and elect magistrates, to try all causes not exceeding fifty Holland guilders."

The fact of a female being included and first named also in the patent is, as far as we know, unprecedented in the colony, and exhibits the Lady Moody and her noble-hearted son in a very interesting position.

This circumstance very naturally excites a curiosity in the reader to be better informed of the character and standing of these distinguished strangers. This curiosity we shall endeavor to gratify to the fullest extent in our power.

In Burke's *Extinct and Dormant Baronetcies*, we find the following:

"1. *Henry Moody, Esquire*, of Garesdon, in Wiltshire, created baronet 1621-2, married Deborah, daughter of Walter Dunck, Esquire, of Avebury, in the same county, and dying about 1632 was succeeded by his son, viz.: 2. *Sir Henry Moody*, who sold the estate of Garesdon, and settled in New England, where he is presumed to have died sine prole, in 1662, and the baronetcy became extinct."

"In 1625 (says another), Lady Moody went to Lon-

don, where she remained in opposition to a statute directing that no person should reside beyond a limited time from their own homes. April 21, 1635, the court of star chamber ordered dame Deborah Mowdie and others to return to their hereditaments in 40 days. In 1640, she arrived at Lynn, Mass., and united with the church there, and on the 13th of May, 1640, the court granted her 400 acres of land. In 1641, she bought the farm called Swamscot, of Deputy Governor Humphrey, at the price of £1100. She after, says Winthrop, became imbued with the *erroneous doctrine*, that *infant baptism* was a *sinful ordinance*, for which she was excommunicated, and in 1643 removed to Long Island." Again it is recorded, "that in 1643, Lady Moody was in the colony of Mass., a wise and anciently religious woman, and being taken with the *error* of denying *baptism* to infants, was *dealt* with by many of the *elders*, and admonished by the church of Salem, but persisting still, and to avoid further trouble, she removed to the Dutch, against the advice of all her friends. Many others, infected with anabaptism, removed thither also." We shall see that in expecting entire toleration here, they were doomed to disappointment.

It was the religious intolerance which prevailed in the Plymouth and Massachusetts colonies toward heretics, that drove the Lady Moody, her son, Sir Henry Moody, Ensign Baxter, Sergeant Hubbard, William Goulding, John Tilton, Thomas Spicer, and their associates to seek an asylum in some part of this province where they might be allowed to exercise and enjoy freedom of opinion in matters of conscience. This, as experience showed, they vainly imagined to have been amply assured to them in the patent of 1645, which, however, in a little time, proved to be in great measure illusory. Even the Lady Moody

herself, whom Judge Benson designates as the "*Dido, leading the colony*," was arraigned with others before the authorities of New Amsterdam for merely asserting that "*infant baptism was no ordinance of God*."

This gifted heroine, however, sustained herself in the conflict, and rendered very essential service to her afflicted companions. Her wealth and extraordinary abilities commanded universal respect, to which her virtue and courage were fully equal.

The governor and council convened at her hospitable mansion on the 23d of November, 1654, for the purpose of endeavoring to allay an excitement, principally occasioned by a refusal on the part of the former to sanction the nominations which had been made for magistrates of the town, the names of Baxter and Hubbard having been sent up for confirmation. In this exigency, his Excellency was anxious to secure the influence of her Ladyship in his favor, and finally, it is recorded, left the matter of the said appointments to her discretion, which statement, however, may well be doubted.

June 18, 1655, the governor and council resolved that letters should be written to the sheriff, and to Lady Moody, "as eldest and first patentee, to make a nomination of magistrates for the town."

It was during this same year that her house was assaulted several times by a company of Indians from the North River, when she was protected by a guard sent for that purpose from the city. The invaders had, however, previously landed upon Staten Island, where they murdered sixty-seven persons.

The time of Lady Moody's death is unknown, but it was certainly before 1660, she having owned and occupied the farm of the late Van Brunt Magaw, Esq., a part of

which was lately in possession of his son-in-law, the Rev. Isaac P. Labagh.

In Felt's *Annals of Salem*, it is said that in 1651, Sir Henry Moody had an action there in regard to the farm owned by his mother, the Lady Moody, called Swamscot, which he obtained and afterwards sold to one Daniel King.

In the council minutes of June 24, 1660, is the following entry:

"Whereas Sir Henry Moody has informed us that he was arrived here as Ambassador of the Governor and Assembly of Virginia, it is resolved to compliment him in his lodgings, by two members of the Council, accompanied by *Halbediers*, and communicate to him, that the Director-General and Council were convened to hear his message."

"Sir Henry Moody, being complimented by the committee, appeared with them in council, and delivered a certain letter as his credentials," which, being read, was found to be sent by the governor and council of Virginia, soliciting a reciprocal arrangement for the encouragement of trade between the two provinces; and to say "they have sent their well beloved friend, Sir Harry Moody, Knight and Baronet, (a person whose honor and integrity, as you cannot doubt, so we have abundance of confidence,) as our interested agent, to receive from you a confirmation of our former agreement, and to whom our desire, is, you would give full credence, we having given him full power and authority to resolve any doubt that may occur in the articles agreed upon." This was accompanied by a private letter from Governor Berkley, desiring a loan of 4,000 pounds of tobacco, to be paid in "excellent tobacco," in the November following.

The records of this town, which were uniformly kept



in the English language, are still preserved nearly entire. They commence with the year 1645, and for a series of years are chiefly occupied with the records of wills, inventories, letters of administration, and a variety of private contracts, bargains, sales, &c.

A few extracts will exhibit the manner of conducting the public business at this remote period, particularly in the town meetings:

*Sept. 27, 1644*, it was voted that those who had Boweries (farms) should have fifty morgen of upland, with meadow proportionable to their stock; and it was further *ordered*, that any person who did not build a habitable house by the last of May (then) next, should be defaulted, and forfeit their land to the town.

In Jan. 1648, the town elected Sergeant James Hubbard, a man as has been seen of great respectability and influence, to execute the office of schout or constable, which was considered at that period of much importance.

On the 14th of April, 1649, John Furman agreed with the town to keep their calves three months for sixty guilders, "to be paid in *money, tobacco, or corn, and some bitters*, if desired." In March, 1650, it was required of every owner of a lot of ground, to pay one guilder toward the common charges of the town, to be collected and paid over by Mr. Stillwell and Jos. Tilton. In Dec. of the same year it was ordered that every man should fence the head of his lot, adjoining the town square, with a sufficiency of palisades, by the middle of April following. Within this palisade enclosure, which encircled the original town plot of ten acres, the inhabitants secured their cattle during the night, and themselves also, whenever they were apprehensive of danger from the natives; in which latter case an armed guard was also employed.

That wolves were both common and mischievous at that time appears from the fact that on the 8th of August, 1650, three guilders were offered for every wolf which should be killed in the town, and two guilders for every fox. It was ordered also that every man should be provided with a gun, a pound of powder, and two pounds of lead or bullets. Every owner of a house was likewise required to provide himself with a ladder, twenty feet or more in length. It was also voted and agreed in town meeting that whoever should transgress in word or deed in defaming, scandalizing, slandering, or falsely accusing any one *to the breach of the peace and the reproach of the place*, should suffer such condign punishment according to his demerit, as should be thought meet by the magistrates, either by *fine, imprisonment, stocking, or standing at a public post*.

In the year 1654 a question having been raised and agitated as to the validity of the title to Coney Island and Gravesend Neck, a release was obtained from the Indians therefor, which, after describing the premises, concludes as follows:

“The above quantity of land, being within the lymmits, graunted by a Pattent to certaine Patentees, Inhabit<sup>ts</sup> of Gravesend, by the late Gouvern<sup>r</sup> Kieft, the said Guttaquoh, acknowledges to have sould all his right and clayme to the said land called Narrioch, (the Island,) and Mannahaning, (the Neck,) unto the Honorable the Lords Bewint Hebbbers, of the West India Company of the Chamber of Amsterdam, for the use of the said Pattentees and Inhabitants of Gravesend, having received 15 fathom of Sewan, two guns, three pound of powder, together with all the meadow land and marsh land there-

unto appertaining. In confirmation, I have put my hand this seaventh day of May, 1654.

“GUTTAQUOH.”

Other conveyances for lands in different parts of the town were obtained at various times, from which no little confusion sometimes arose by the clashing of boundaries, the descriptions being not unfrequently both inconsistent and obscure.

April 10, 1656, the inhabitants of Gravesend having secured their village by a palisade defence, petitioned the governor and council for three or four *big guns* to be used in time of danger, which request was granted with a due allowance of powder and ball.

*Jan. 7, 1656.*—“Att a generall assemblie of y<sup>e</sup> Inhabitants, ordered, that all who *tapp* or *drawe* out stronge beare to sell, shall provide that y<sup>e</sup> s<sup>d</sup> beare bee as good y<sup>t</sup> w<sup>ch</sup> is usually sould att the manhattoes, and they are required to sell itt att y<sup>e</sup> prise of tenn guilders the halfe flatt.”

“And it is further agreed y<sup>t</sup> y<sup>e</sup> younge men shall bee grattified with soe much as might buye 2 half flatts of beare, out of the moneys recevd from Peter Simpson for the lott No. 37, and regard the sayd paye were in tobacco, that therefore Charles Morgan should receive £100, and the overplush when the beare is payd ffor.”

*Dec. 2, 1658.*—“Agreed that every inhabitant shall bring or cause to bee brought into y<sup>e</sup> commard yard, for ffencing y<sup>e</sup> buriall place 12 pallisadoes of oak, betwixt 9, 10 and 11 inches broad, and 7 foot long, on forfeitture of 10 shillings a man, to be distraynd.”

*Feb. 8, 1659.*—“The town agrees with Henry Brazier ffor the building of a mill, within the towne, ffor y<sup>e</sup> grinding y<sup>e</sup> corn of the inhabitants, and y<sup>e</sup> towne will give him

500 guilders; and every man has a team, to cart one day, and such as have none, to give 2 days apiece, in making the dam."

At a Court held at Gravesend on the first Wednesday of October, 1666, it was resolved that tax burthens might be collected in grain, beef, and pork, viz., in wheat at 5 shillings per bushel, rye at 4 shillings, corn at 3 shillings, and oats at 2 shillings per bushel; in pork at 4 pence per pound, and in beef at 3 pence.

The following named persons were inhabitants and probably freeholders of the town in 1656:

William Goulding	Jacob Spicer	William Nicolls
Jacob Swart	John Van Cleef	Edward Brown
Walter Wall	Thomas Spicer	John Thomas
Charles Morgan	Ralph Cardell	Lady Deborah Moody
Peter Simson	James Grover	Elizabeth Applegate
John Cock	Carson Johnson	John Peters
John Laus	Thomas Baxter	John Applegate
Lawrence Johnson	William Bowne	Lyman Law
John Broughman	Thomas Whitlock	Thomas Morrell
William Wilkins	Richard Gibson	James Curlear
John Tilton	Richard Stout	John Bowne
John Vaughan	Nicholas Stillwell	Thomas Applegate
Bar'w Applegate	Pieter Abell	William Stoothoff
George Baxter	Richard Gibbins	John Johnson
Edward Griffing	James Hubbard	Thomas Tilton
Thomas Greedy	Joseph Goulding	Richard Stillwell
Samuel Spicer	Thomas Marshall	John Emans
John Lake	Christian Jacobsen	Thomas Morgan
Laurens Wessell	Samuel Holmes	John Pollard
William Barnes	William Smith	David Arbuthnot
William Compton	Thomas Delaval	
Charles Bridges	Joachim Guylock	

It is a singular fact in the religious history of this town that from the appearance of the first Quakers in America, the most of the inhabitants embraced their sentiments, and here were established the first regular meetings of that sect. But they were no more permitted

to enjoy their opinions here than were their friends in Massachusetts. Governor Stuyvesant took every opportunity to manifest his abhorrence of their doctrines and discipline, and after long endurance and a visit from their great leader, George Fox, most of the Friends removed from the town and settled on the opposite shores of New Jersey, where their descendants may still be found. So that an almost total change took place in the character of the people; emigrants from New Amsterdam and the adjoining plantations supplied the vacancies made by removals, and the town which was at its first settlement entirely English, finally became the most purely Dutch of all in the county, and has with the most tenacity preserved the language of the Fatherland.

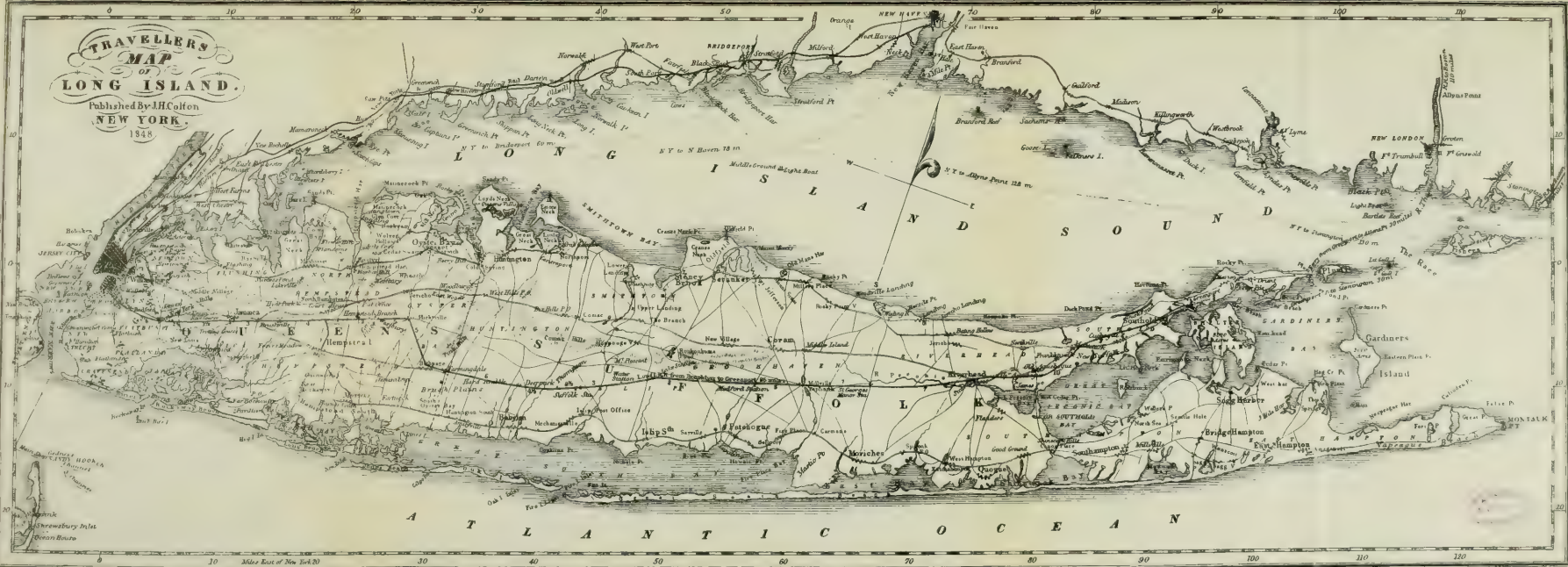
A general patent of confirmation was obtained from Governor Nicoll, August 13, 1667, in which the boundaries coincide with those of Kieft's patent of 1645 in substance. And July 1, 1670, an additional patent was executed by Governor Lovelace, which is as follows:

"Francis Lovelace, Esq'r, one of the Gentlemen of his Majesty's Honorable Privy Chamber, and Govenor General, under his Royal Highness, James, Duke of Yorke and Albany, &c., of all his Territories in America—To all to whom these Presents shall come, sendeth Greeting. WHEREAS, there is a certain Town in the West Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, commonly called and known by the name of Gravesend, situate, lying and being on or about the Westernmost part of the s<sup>d</sup> Island, containing a certain quantity or parcel of Land, beginning at the mouth of a creek adjacent to Coney Island, and being bounded on the Westward part thereof with the land heretofore appertaining to Anthony Johnson and Robert Pennoyer, and so to run as far as the Wester-



TRAVELLERS  
MAP  
OF  
LONG ISLAND.

Published By J.H. Colton  
NEW YORK.  
1848



Miles East of New York 20



most part of a certain Pond in an old Indian Field on the north side of the Plantation of the s<sup>d</sup> Robert Pennoyer, and from thence to run direct East as far as a valey, beginning at the Head of a Fly or marsh sometime belonging to the Land of Hugh Gerritsen, and being bounded on the south side with the main Ocean, for which s<sup>d</sup> quantity or parcel of Land, there was heretofore a Pattent or Ground-brief granted from the Dutch Govenor, William Keift, unto several Patentees, thier Associates, and Heirs, Executors, Administrators, Successors or Assigns, and all other appurtenances, as also to put what cattle they thought fitting to grase and feed upon the afforementioned Coney Island, with Liberty to them the s<sup>d</sup> Patentees to build one or more towns upon the s<sup>d</sup> Lands, with many other particulars and privileges, as in the s<sup>d</sup> Patent or Ground-brief, bearing date the 19th of Dec., 1645, relation being thereunto had, is at large set forth. Now for a Confirmation unto the present freeholders and Inhabitants of the s<sup>d</sup> Town, in thier Possession and enjoyment of the Premises. KNOW ye, that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given me by His Royal Highness, I have ratified, confirmed and granted, and by these presents do ratify, confirm and grant unto Thomas Delavall, Esq'r, Mr. James Hubbard, Ralph Carall, William Bowne, John Tilton, William Goulding and Samuel Spicer, as Patentees for, and on behalf of themselves and their associates, the Freeholders and Inhabitants of the s<sup>d</sup> town, their Heirs, Successors and assigns, all the forementioned quantity, tract and parcel of Land set forth and bounded as aforesaid, together with the Inheritance of all Coney Island, (reserving only the privilege of erecting Huts for fishing and drying of nets there, upon occasion for all persons who shall undertake that design for the public good,) including all the Land within a line stretching from the westernmost part of the s<sup>d</sup> Island unto the southermost part of the old

Bowery of Antony Jansen, thier East bounds being the Strome Kill which comes to the marsh or Fly of Mathew Gerritsen's Land aforementioned: as also the meadow ground and upland not specified in thier former Patents, concerning which there have been several disputes and differences between the Inhabitants of the said town and thier neighbor, Francis Brown, which, in part, was issued by my Predecessors and myself, but since fully concluded and determined between them by articles of agreements, the which articles I do hereby confirm and allow, with all Havens, Creeks, &c.,—and all other profits, commodities, emoluments and Hereditaments to the s<sup>d</sup> town, tract of land and premises within the limits and bounds aforementioned, described, belonging, or in any wise appertaining, and also to have freedom of commonage for range and feed of cattle and horses in the woods, as well without as within thier bounds and limits with the rest of thier neighbors, with liberty to cut timber there upon, for thier public or private occasions. *To have and to hold* all and singular, &c., unto the said patentees, and their associates, heirs, &c.,—and that the place of their present Habitation shall continue and retain the name of *Gravesend*, and by that name shall be known, &c., rendering and paying all dues and duties, according to the good and wholesome laws already made, or that hereafter shall be established in these, His Royall Highness, his territories.

“Given under my hand, and sealed with the seal of the Province at Fort James in New York, this first day of July, in the 22d year of his Majestie's Reign, Annoque Domini, 1670.

“Matthias Nicoll, *Sec'y*.

“FRANCIS LOVELACE.” [L. s.]

In a short period after the conquest of New Netherland, and the foundation of the *Ridings*, this town became

the seat of justice for the county, and a court house was erected in 1668, in which the sessions and oyer and terminer were held till their removal in 1686 to Flatbush.

On the 26th of March, 1677, an agreement was entered into between the towns of Gravesend and New Utrecht in relation to their boundaries, which was confirmed in the patent granted by Governor Dongan on the 10th of September, 1686. The boundaries mentioned in this instrument are as follows:

“Beginning at the westernmost part of a certain place called Coney Island, and from thence to the westernmost part of Anthony Jansen and Robert Pennoyer’s land; and so from thence by New Utrecht fence, according to agreement, to the bounds of Flatbush, and from thence along John Ditmas his land unto the bounds of Flatlands, upon a line agreed upon between Flatlands and Gravesend, which, from John Ditmas his land, runs to a certain bound stake, and from thence to a white oak tree, marked and standing near New Utrecht wagon path, and so to the north-west corner of Albert, the weaver’s field, and so going to a certain marked white oak tree that stands by the highway side in the Hollow, and from thence running along the Hollow to the head of a certain creek commonly called and known by the name of the Strome Kill, and along the said creek to the main Ocean, and so along the sea-side to the westernmost part of Coney Island.”

The patentees in this instrument are James Hubbard, John Tilton, jun., William Goulder, Nicholas Stillwell, and Jocham Guillock; and the quit-rent reserved was six bushels of good winter merchantable wheat, to be paid on the 20th day of March annually, for his Majesty’s use at the city of New York forever.



To exhibit the peculiarity of the times, we present a copy of an ancient document, or prohibition of certain pastimes on the first day of the week.

“Whereas thier is a prohibition expresse by an order from y<sup>e</sup> Govenor of all such exercises upon y<sup>e</sup> first day of y<sup>e</sup> weeke, as gunning, ball-playing, horse-races, nine-pins, excessive drinking, and royetting, with others y<sup>e</sup> like, which greatly tende to y<sup>e</sup> dishonour of God, y<sup>e</sup> hindrance of many from and in religious duties to y<sup>e</sup> reproach of y<sup>e</sup> Govern<sup>t</sup> and shame of the place; for y<sup>e</sup> prevention whereoff, the officers of this toune, according to their dutye, have given due notice, that what person soever shall in the like trangresse, shall pay 10s. and answer it before the Govenor. This act proclaimed y<sup>e</sup> 13th of 8th month, 1675.”

“At a court of Sessions held at Gravesend, June 21, 1676, John Cooke and John Tilton, being Quakers, and refusing to take the oath, were ordered to give their engagement to Justice Hubbard to perform their office as overseers, under the penalty of perjury.” “At the same court, holden Dec. 1679, Mr. Jos. Lee, deputy sheriff, presented Ferdinandus Van Strickland for refusing to give entertainment to a stranger who came from Huntington about business at this court; upon which the court do order, that if the said Ferdinandus does not make his submission to the sheriff and the justices to-morrow, that he be dismissed from *tapping*.”

*Coney Island*, whose shores are incessantly lashed by the ocean wave, has long been a favorite resort for visitors in the sultry season of the year. It is more than half encompassed by the sea, and is, of course, almost constantly fanned by cool and refreshing sea breezes, and affords an illimitable view upon the broad Atlantic. The

island is separated from the main land by a narrow creek, meandering through a body of salt meadow or marsh, which is crossed by a bridge erected by the Coney Island Turnpike and Bridge Company. On the island are about sixty acres of arable land, the remainder being a singular looking mass of sand-hills, drifted about in wild confusion by the action of high winds and severe ocean storms. The extent of the island, from east to west, is about five miles, including the points of the projecting beaches, and in width about one mile.

This sea-girt isle is probably the first land impressed by the feet of the venerable Hudson and his sailor companions on their approach to the harbor of New York in 1609, and their appearance, as well as that of the ship, must have produced surprise and consternation in the native inhabitants of the country. The accommodations here are upon a liberal scale, the Coney Island House being well kept by James B. Cropsey, and having been thus far duly supported by the public. Its distance from New York is eleven miles, and the road is almost unequalled. Regarding the loose materials of which this island is composed and its greatly exposed situation, it may be assumed that another century will nearly annihilate it.

We have not been able to find whether any other religious edifice ever existed in this town, except the Dutch Church, which was first built on one of the original squares in 1655. It was rebuilt in 1770, and in 1833 the present Reformed Dutch Church was erected. It was from the beginning associated with the other churches of the same denomination in the county, having the same ministers, and so remained until the settlement of Mr. Labagh in 1832. From 1763 to 1785 it was associated

with the church at Harlem under the charge of Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker.

*Rev. Isaac P. Labagh* was the son of the Rev. Peter Labagh, an aged and respected minister of the Reformed Dutch Church at Harlington, N. J. Mr. Labagh was born at Leeds, Greene County, N. Y., August 14, 1804, and graduated at Dickinson College, Pennsylvania, in 1823. He studied theology at New Brunswick, was ordained December 24, 1826, preached a while at Rhinebeck, and was settled at Waterford, N. Y., March 14, 1827. In 1832 he removed here, where he was installed November 4, 1832, and was the first pastor whose services were confined exclusively to this church. On July 5, 1833, he married Mary Elizabeth, daughter of Major Van Brunt Magaw, who died at the age of forty-seven in March, 1831 (being the son of the brave Colonel Robert Magaw of the Revolution, the noble defender of Fort Washington in November, 1776, who, while a prisoner here, married the daughter of Colonel Rutgert Van Brunt). Mr. Labagh was suspended by the Classis of the church in 1842, and subsequently joined the Episcopal Church. He was succeeded, January 22, 1843, by his cousin, the Rev. Abraham I. Labagh from the island of St. Thomas, West Indies.

*Contributed by the Editor*

"In 1859 the second Mr. Labagh was forced to resign on account of poor health and Rev. Maurice G. Hansen took his place. Mr. Hansen resigned in 1871 and was followed by Rev. A. P. Stockwell, installed 1872, who resigned in 1887. Rev. Peter V. Van Buskirk, D.D., was next called and began his labors during the same year that Mr. Stockwell resigned. Dr. Van Buskirk offi-

ciated until 1912, when the hand of the Lord took him from his labors on the eve of his twenty-fifth anniversary. He was followed on February 1, 1913, by Rev. Philip H. Clifford, the present pastor, who has kindly furnished the particulars of Dr. Van Buskirk's pastorate."

A Methodist church was erected at the *Cove* in 1844, and another in the south-west part of the town was incorporated August 14 of the same year.

Although the population of this town is less than 1,000, yet a very large proportion of the inhabitants are industrious and enterprising farmers, a character well deserved when it is considered that more than 40,000 bushels of grain are annually raised over and above their own consumption. Besides this the shad fishery upon its shores is a great and never-failing source of gain to those who engage in it, occupying as it does, at most, but a few weeks in the spring.

---

Sergeant James Hubbard, prominent in the early history of the town as we have seen, married December 31, 1664, Elizabeth, daughter of John Bailey of Jamaica, probably a second wife. He was a justice of the peace in 1665, and as late as 1680. His father was Henry, and his mother Margaret of Langham, County of Rutland, England. His brothers were William, John, and Henry, and his sister Margaret. This *William*, or his son, may have been the minister of Ipswich and historian of New England (see *Farmer's Register*, page 152). The children of James Hubbard were James, born December 10, 1665; Rebecca, born April 20, 1667; Elizabeth, born January 3, 1669; John, born March 20, 1670; Elias, born April 11, 1673, and Samuel, born May 1, 1675, all by his second wife.

This person seems for some reason to have incurred the displeasure of the governor, for which he was in the spring of 1656 ordered to depart the province, but it would appear that he was finally permitted to remain, probably in consequence of the interference of his neighbors and the following petition to the governor:

“To the Hono<sup>bl</sup> Govern<sup>r</sup> and Councell as followeth.

“Whereas it hath been the Governour’s noble good will and pleasure att the request of some Honoured ffriends, namely S<sup>r</sup> Henry Moody and the Magistrates of Gravesend to give mee the libertie for a certain tyme heare without molestation, for which favour I due acknowledge his love and tenderness, as for all others past, or that may bee. Honoured S<sup>rs</sup>, when that I were in prisson, you may please to understand that I delivered in to the honorable Courte a petition or requeste for my libertie; the substance thereof were that the honorable Courte would bee pleased to pass by what ever weakness they had seene in me, as being one not seene in state affaires, and further it were humblie requested to restore mee to my habitation under your goverment in tendernesse and love. And as I then desired, soe my humble request is the same now. But in regard occasionallie exceptions may bee taken by men, and that of such spiritts as may not bee well quallified with love towards mee, which I cannot att present charge any, but onely it is made my greate feare, by meanes of which may inconvenience. It is therefore my humble request that it may bee your good pleasure, and that I maye have your good will, to make the best of that small tittle of my Estate which is, and soe lovinglie in convenient tyme to depart in love; or otherwise it may please the Hon<sup>bl</sup> Gove<sup>r</sup> and Councell to bee meete that I maye enjoy and follow my occasione freely in libertie without molestation, myself desiring to attend the Rules of love and peace, and



humble requesting all former differences may bee buried and forgott, and that at your good pleasure herein shall bee, a favorable issue and end in this business with your Answer hereunto in regard my tyme is neare expiared, and I shall rest.

“Yours in all humble respecte and service,

“JAMES HUBBARD.

“Gravesend, July the 24th, 1656.”

---

John Tilton was one of the most worthy men among the first settlers, and probably came, as did Thomas Spicer also, with Lady Moody. His death took place in 1688, and that of his wife Mary five years before. He had a son Thomas, and daughter Esther, who married Samuel Spicer, son of Thomas, and removed to West Jersey in 1686, near Philadelphia. Their daughter Martha married the well-known Quaker preacher, Thomas Chalkley of that city. Their other children were Jacob, Mary, Sarah, Abigail, and Thomas. On the removal of Spicer and his wife, the quarterly meeting of Friends, held at Flushing the 29th of third month, 1686, gave a certificate of their good character to the meeting of Friends in West Jersey, a copy of which is in the possession of the compiler, as well as a letter from John Tilton to Governor Stuyvesant in a matter relating to his grandson Jacob Spicer.

---

“On January 1, 1894, the town of Gravesend became a part of the City of Brooklyn and was designated as the Thirty-first Ward. On January 1, 1898, this territory became a part of the City of New York, when Brooklyn was absorbed by that city.”—EDITOR.

## FLATLANDS

CALLED originally by the Dutch *New Amersfort*, is bounded northerly by Flatbush, easterly partly by that portion of Flatbush called New Lots, and partly by Jamaica Bay, southerly by said bay, and westerly by Gravesend, including Bergen Island lying in the bay, and Barren Island adjoining the ocean, the whole town containing about 9,000 acres, a large portion of which is salt marsh, producing abundance of grass of rather inferior quality, and with the exception of which there is little waste or unimproved land, the whole being divided into small farms which are well cultivated and highly productive.

“ Within the bounds of Flatlands the first known settlement by white men upon Long Island was made. It was formerly supposed that a company of Walloons<sup>1</sup> settled at the Wallabout in Brooklyn as early as 1624, but later investigations have shown this to be an error. Occasional trading posts or hunting lodges may have been temporarily erected at points on Long Island contiguous to the Fort at New Amsterdam, but for the first actual settlement and purchase from the Indians we must look to Flatlands.

“ On June 16, 1636, Wolfert Gerretse Van Kouwenhoven and Andries Huddie purchased jointly a tract of land containing 3,600 acres from the Indians, and on the same day Jacobus Van Corlear bought an adjoining tract. The

<sup>1</sup> From the southern Belgic provinces.

latter purchase was purely speculative and Van Corlear never occupied his land. The same is also true of Huddie, who later sold out his interest in the purchase to his partner.

"Kouwenhoven, on the other hand, immediately constructed a dwelling and laid out a plantation from which the settlement and town of Flatlands sprung. The pioneer called his estate 'Achterveldt,' and his dwelling stood near the junction of Kouwenhoven Place and Flatbush Avenue, very close to the store conducted some years ago by J. B. Hendrickson & Son.

"It is an interesting fact to note that his descendants still occupy parts of the original purchase, handed down from father to son and never outside of the family.

"As has been intimated, the settlement was started the year of Kouwenhoven's purchase, and the first dwellings were constructed near the pioneer's house, in which locality the church and school were later erected."—EDITOR.

As early as the year 1659, if not before, a list of magistrates was presented to the governor, out of which the requisite number were selected and commissioned by him.

The soil was found congenial to the raising of tobacco, and besides others, ex-Governor Van Twiller had a plantation here for the cultivation of an article deemed by the Dutch settlers almost a necessity of life. This farm or bowery of his excellency lay upon *Flatlands Neck*, adjoining to and partly included in Flatbush, and is still known as "*Twiller's Flats*."

It has not been satisfactorily ascertained that any general grant or patent was obtained for lands in this town till the province passed into the hands of the English, but the inhabitants who were not very numerous continued to maintain a good understanding with the Canarsie Indians, the former lords of the soil of the county, whose

sachem and head men resided it is supposed upon a part of Flatlands Neck, which still bears the name of this once powerful tribe.

By the Duke's Laws, passed in 1665 in relation to public officers, it was declared that the overseers should be eight in number, men of good fame and life, chosen by the plurality of freeholders in each town, whereof four were to remain in their office two years successively, and four to be changed for new ones every year; which election should precede the election of constables in point of time, and that the constable for the year ensuing should be chosen out of the number dismissed from the office of overseer. The following is a copy of the oath required to be administered to the overseers elect:

“Whereas you are chosen and appointed an Overseer for the town of Flatlands, you doe sweare by the Ever-Living-God, that you will faithfully and diligently discharge the trust reposed in you, in relation to the publique and towne affaires, accordinge to the present lawes established, without favoure, affection, or partiality to any person or cause which shall fall under your cognizance; and at times, when you shall bee required by your superiors to attend the private differences of neighbors, you will endeavor to reconcile them: and in all causes conscientiously, and according to the best of your judgment, deliver your voyce in the towne meetings of constable and overseers. So help you God.”

It was the duty of the overseers, assisted by the constable, to hold *Town Courts* for the trial of all causes under five pounds. They, with the constable, were likewise frequently to admonish the inhabitants “*to instruct their children and servants in matters of religion and the*

*lawes of the country*; also to appoint an officer to record every man's particular marke, and see each man's horse and colt branded." The constable and two overseers were authorized to pay the value of an Indian coat for each wolf that should be killed; and to "cause the wolf's head to be nayled over the door of the constable, there to remaine; also to cut off the ears in token that the head had been brought in and payd for."

Although, as has been previously remarked, no public document yet found affords us any certain evidence that a patent or ground brief was ever issued to the people of this town by the Dutch Government, yet judging by what took place in other and adjoining towns, it is but reasonable to conclude that such an instrument once existed.

The first English patent was granted by Governor Nicoll in October, 1667, and is in the words following:

"Richard Nicoll, Esq. &c. Whereas there is a certain towne w<sup>th</sup>in this Governm<sup>t</sup> situate and being in y<sup>e</sup> west Riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island commonly called or known by y<sup>e</sup> name of Amersford als Flatlands which said town is now in y<sup>e</sup> tenure or occupation of severall freehold<sup>rs</sup> and inhabitants who having heretofore been seated there by authority and likewise made lawfull purchase of y<sup>e</sup> greatest parte of y<sup>e</sup> lands there unto belonging have also improved a considerable proportion thereof and settled a competent number of Familyes thereupon. Now for a confirmation unto y<sup>e</sup> said Freehold<sup>rs</sup> and inhabitants in their possession and enjoyment of the p<sup>r</sup>emises. Know Yee, that by virtue of y<sup>e</sup> commission and authority unto me given by his Royal Highness, I have given, ratified, confirmed and graunted, and by these presents do give, ratifye, confirm and graunt unto Elbert Elberts, Govert Lockermans, Roeloffe Martens, Pieter Claes, Willem



Garrits, Tho: Hillebrants, Stephen Coertsen and Coert Stephens, as Patentees for and on behalfe of themselves and thier associates y<sup>e</sup> Freeholders and inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> said towne their heirs, successors and assigns. All that tract togethr w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> severall parcels of land w<sup>ch</sup> already have or hereaft<sup>r</sup> shall be purchased or procured for and on y<sup>e</sup> bbehalf<sup>e</sup> of y<sup>e</sup> said towne wheth<sup>r</sup> from y<sup>e</sup> native Indian proprietors or other<sup>s</sup> w<sup>th</sup>in y<sup>e</sup> bonds and lymits hereafter set forth and exprest (viz) that is to say, from thier western bounds w<sup>ch</sup> begins at a certain creek or kill commonly called y<sup>e</sup> stromme kill, they stretch to flkins or Varkens Hook which is also included w<sup>th</sup>in their limits neare whereunto comes a certain point of land out of y<sup>e</sup> town of New Utrecht and those belonging to this town w<sup>th</sup> this distinction—that Flattlands meadows or valley runs about y<sup>e</sup> end of y<sup>e</sup> said point as well as on y<sup>e</sup> one side of it, and New Utrecht meadows lye on y<sup>e</sup> North East side only, then from y<sup>e</sup> limits of Middewout als. Flattbush w<sup>ch</sup> lye about North West from y<sup>e</sup> said towne of Flattland, beginning at a certain tree standing upon y<sup>e</sup> little Flatts, markt by y<sup>e</sup> ord<sup>r</sup> and determination of severall arbitrators appointed by me to veiw and issue y<sup>e</sup> difference between y<sup>e</sup> two towns concerning y<sup>e</sup> same which accordingly they did upon y<sup>e</sup> 17th day of October 1666, A lyne stretching South East to *Canarise*, it includes w<sup>th</sup>in its bounds and lymitts severall other parcels of land, in particular that parcel or tract of land graunted by patent or groundbriefe from y<sup>e</sup> Dutch Governor Petrus Stuyvesant unto Jacob Steendam and Welkin Jans bearing date y<sup>e</sup> 12th day of Nov. 1652 and upon y<sup>e</sup> 30th day of Nov. 1662, transported and made over to y<sup>e</sup> town aforementioned; as also all those lands and Canarise, parte of which y<sup>e</sup> native Indian proprietors did heretofore permit and give their consent, that y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> said towne of Flattlands should manure and plant, and since have for a valuable consideration sould y<sup>e</sup> same unto them

w<sup>th</sup> its appurtenances, as by thier deed bearing date y<sup>e</sup> 16th day of April 1665, acknowledged by some of them before me, doth and may appear, togeth<sup>r</sup> with all that meadow ground or valley, lying and being at Canarise, divided between y<sup>e</sup> said town and the town of Flattbush aforementioned, by an East line, to run half a point northerly without variation of y<sup>e</sup> compass, and so to go to y<sup>e</sup> mouth of y<sup>e</sup> Creek or Kill; which said meadows were upon y<sup>e</sup> 20th day of April last by common consent staked out and by my approbation allowed; of all w<sup>ch</sup> said tract or parcels of land, meadow ground and premises within y<sup>e</sup> bounds and limits aforementioned described, and all or any plantation or plantations thereupon, from henceforth are to appertain and belong to y<sup>e</sup> said town of Amersfort als. Flatlands, together w<sup>th</sup> all Havens, Creeks, &c.—to the s<sup>d</sup> lands and premises w<sup>th</sup>in y<sup>e</sup> said bounds and limits set forth, or appertaining; and also freedom of commonage for range and feed of cattle and horses, into y<sup>e</sup> woods as well without as w<sup>th</sup>in their bounds, with y<sup>e</sup> rest of thier neighbors. To have and to hold all &c.—and that the place of thier present habitation shall continue and retain the name of Amersfort als Flatlands and by which name to be distinguished and known in all bargains &c. Given under my hand and seal at Fort James in New York y<sup>e</sup> 4th day of October in y<sup>e</sup> 19th year of his Ma<sup>ties</sup> Raigne, Annoque Domini, 1667.

“MATTHIAS NICOLL, *Secty.*

“RICHARD NICOLL.” [L. S.]

By desire of some of the inhabitants, expressed in their application dated January 19, 1668, alleging a mistake, omission, or defect in the former patent, another, intended as confirmatory of that, was issued by Governor Lovelace for the lands purchased at Canarsie (or Ca-

nausie), the boundaries of which it seems were not sufficiently definite and explicit in the patent of Nicoll. Of this paper the following is a copy:

“ Whereas the inhabitants of the town of Amesfort als. Flattlands did w<sup>th</sup> y<sup>e</sup> consent and approbation of y<sup>e</sup> late Governor Coll. Richard Nicolls, make purchase of a certain parcel of land from y<sup>e</sup> Indian native proprietors, or by y<sup>e</sup> deed of purchase bearing date y<sup>e</sup> 23d day of April 1665, doth and may appear, lying and being in y<sup>e</sup> West Ryding of Yorkshire upon Long Island, at Canarise, w<sup>ch</sup> in gen<sup>l</sup> terms is confirmed unto them in the grand patent of their town by y<sup>e</sup>, by the said Governor, but y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of the said town having requested me, that y<sup>e</sup> bounds of y<sup>e</sup> said purchase may be expressly confirmed, or set forth in the deed of purchase for an encouragem<sup>t</sup> to y<sup>e</sup> inhabitants of the said town in their further manuring and improving the said land; I have thought fit to ratify, confirm and grant and by these p<sup>r</sup>sents do hereby ratify, confirm and graunt unto Elbert Elbertse, Govert Lochermans, Roeloffe Martens, Pieter Cloes, William Gerrits, Thomas Hillebrants, Steven Coerten, Coert Stevens, as Patentees for and on y<sup>e</sup> behalf of themselves, and other associates, y<sup>e</sup> freeholders and inhabitants of y<sup>e</sup> said town, their heirs, successors and assigns, all that parcel of land lying and being at Canarise as aforesaid, neare unto y<sup>e</sup> town of Amesford, beginning from y<sup>e</sup> west side of y<sup>e</sup> Muskytehole from certain marked trees, and stretching from thence over y<sup>e</sup> end of y<sup>e</sup> Flattlands to certain other marked trees, and from thence to the vale of y<sup>e</sup> fresh creek, stopping at y<sup>e</sup> path w<sup>ch</sup> goes to y<sup>e</sup> great plaines, and y<sup>e</sup> vale of y<sup>e</sup> fresh creek, and then stretching along y<sup>e</sup> flatt ground by y<sup>e</sup> creek, by w<sup>ch</sup> it is there lockt up and bounded, together with all y<sup>e</sup> meadow ground or valley land, kills or creeks therein comprehended, w<sup>th</sup> all oth<sup>r</sup> profits, commodities, emoluments and hereditaments to y<sup>e</sup> said parcel of land

and p<sup>r</sup>misses belonging or in any way appertaining. To have, &c.

“ FRANCIS LOVELACE.

“ Feb<sup>ry</sup> 5th, 1668.”

Another very ample patent of confirmation was given by Governor Dongan, bearing date March 11, 1685, as follows:

“ Thomas Dongan, Lieutenant Governor and Vice Admiral of New York and its dependencies under his Majesty James the Second by the grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, defender of the faith &c Supreme Lord and Proprietor of the Colony and Province of New York &c To all to whom this shall come sendeth greeting Whereas there is a certain town in Kings County upon Long Island called and known by the name of Amesfort or Flattlands having a certain tract of land thereunto belonging whose bounds begin from the Beach called the Stormkill to the head of the said Creek or kill and from thence along the valley to Gravesend Path to a white oak brush and so from thence along the fence to Utrecht Path to a white oak tree and from thence with a straight line to the fence of Flattbush by the marked trees and then along the Flattbush fence up to a certain marked tree which was marked by Arbitrators appointed by the Honorable Collonell Richard Nicolls formerly Governor of this Province on the seventeenth day of October Anno. Dom. one thousand six hundred sixty and six and from the said marked tree Eastward by the North Side of a fresh swamp to a certain marked tree called Amusketahole and from thence with a straight line over the end of the little Flatts by two certain marked trees and so from thence with a straight line to a certain marked tree standing upon Hempstead Path and so along the lane until it comes to the Hollow



and so along the Hollow on the fresh creek up to the beach and so along the fence or ditch according to the patent granted to the inhabitants of Flattbush in this present year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and eighty five as by several writings or patents from the former Governors Richard Nichols and Francis Lovelace Esqrs. and the agreements made by the inhabitants of Flattlands with the towns of Flattbush and Gravesend relation to them being had doth fully and at large appear and the said town being now in the tenure or occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants seated there by authority and having by Mr. Roeloffe Martensen and Coert Stevensen persons deputed by them desired a confirmation from me of the aforesaid land. Now for a confirmation unto the said freeholders and inhabitants in their quiett possession and enjoyment of the premises. Know ye that by virtue of the commission and authority to me given for and in consideration of the quit rent herein after menconed and reserved I have granted ratified and confirmed and by these presents do grant ratify and confirm unto Elbert Elberts, Roeloffe Martens, Pieter Claessen, William Garretsen, Coert Stevensen, Lucas Stevensen and John Teunissen as pattentees for and on the behalf of themselves and their associates the present freeholders and inhabitants of the said town their heirs and successors and assigns all the afore recited tract and parcels of land and premises butted and bounded as aforesaid with their and every of their appurtenances together with all and all manner of edifices, buildings, havens, harbours, rivers, rivoletts, runs, streams, feedings, pastures, woods, underwoods, trees, waters, watercourses, ponds, pools, pitts, swamps, Moores, Marshes, Meadows, Redd land Valleys, Easements, profits, emoluments, commodities and hereditaments, fishing, fowling, hawking, hunting and other appurtenances whatsoever to the said tract and parcel of land within the bounds and limits aforesaid belonging or



in any wise appertaining. To have and to hold the said tract and parcels of land and all and singular other the premises with their and every of their appurtenances unto the said Elbert Elberts, Roeloffe Martensen, Pieter Claessen, William Garretsen, Coert Stevenson, Lucas Steven- sen and Jan Teunissen as Patentees and their associates the present freeholders and inhabitants of the said towne their heirs successors and assigns to the sole and only proper use benefit and behoof of them the said Patentees and their associates their heirs, successors and assigns forever to be holden in free and comon soccage accord- ing to the tenure of East Greenwich in his Majestyes Kingdom of England Yielding rendring and paying there- fore yearly and every year for the use of our Sovereign Lord James the Second by the grace of God over Eng- land, Scotland, France and Ireland King defender of the faith &c Supreme Lord and Proprietor of the Colony and province of New York &c his heirs successors and assigns or to such officer or officers as by him or them shall be appointed to receive the same fourteen bushels of good winter merchantable wheat yearly on the twenty fifth day of March at the City of New York and for the better preserving the title of the beforerecited land and premises I have caused these presents to be entered in the Secretarys office of this province. Given under my hand and sealed with the seal of the Province at Fortt James in New York this Eleventh day of March Anno. Dom. one thousand six hundred eighty and five and in the second year of his said Majestys Reign over England &c.

“THOMAS DONGAN.”

“May it Please your Honor.

“The Attorney General hath perused this Patent and finds nothing contained therein prejudicial to his Majestys interest.

“JA: GRAHAM.”

An interview of an extraordinary character took place at New York on the 2d of April, 1691, between Governor Slaughter and a sachem of Long Island, who was attended by his two sons and twenty other Indians. The sachem on being introduced congratulated Slaughter in an eloquent manner upon his arrival, and claimed his friendship and protection for himself and his people; observing also that he had fancied his Excellency as a *mighty tall tree*, with wide, *spreading branches*; and therefore prayed leave to *stoop* under the *shadow* thereof. Of old (said he) the Indians were a *great and mighty people*, but now they are reduced to a mere *handful*. He concluded his visit by presenting the governor with thirty fathoms of wampum, which he graciously accepted and ordered the sachem to attend him again in the afternoon.

On taking leave, the son of the sachem handed to the officer in attendance a bundle of brooms, saying, "that as Leisler and his party had left the house very foul, he had been advised to bring the brooms with him, for the purpose of making it clean again." In the afternoon the sachem and his party again attended the governor, who made a speech to them, and on receiving a few presents they departed.

In many Dutch patents or briefs, it was required that after the expiration of ten years from the issuing thereof, the patentees and their heirs should allow to the governor as his prerogative, and by way of quit-rent, one-tenth parts of all the produce of the lands cultivated by them. And as difficulties were sometimes the result of this extraordinary gubernatorial reservation, it may be remarked that the director general on the 6th of June, 1656, issued a peremptory order, thereby wholly prohibiting the people of this town, as well as those of Flat-

bush and Brooklyn, from removing their grain out of their fields, until the tithe reserved in their patents was taken by the officers or commuted for by the owners.

This proceeding was of course a right which the government had the legal power to enforce, if it saw cause so to do, but it is easy to conceive that the honest-hearted farmers of the country had not expected such a power would ever be asserted or put in execution by the noble-minded old soldier, the gallant Peter Stuyvesant.

In 1706 the negroes had so much increased in number, and become, by vice and intemperance, so disorderly and dangerous to the peace and safety of the inhabitants, that it was found necessary to call in the aid of the civil power to repress or punish their repeated depredations. On a representation of facts to the governor, he forthwith issued the following proclamation:

“Whereas, I am informed that several negroes in Kings county have assembled themselves in a riotous manner, which, if not prevented, may prove of ill consequence; You, the justices of the peace in the said county, are hereby required and commanded to take all proper methods for the seizing and apprehending, all such negroes as shall be found to be assembled in such manner, as aforesaid, or have run away or absconded from their masters or owners, whereby there may be reason to suspect them of ill practices or designs; and to secure them in safe custody; and if any of them refuse to submit, then to *fire* upon them, *kill* or *destroy* them, if they *cannot* otherwise be taken; and for so doing, this shall be your sufficient warrant. Given under my hand, at Fort Anne, the 22nd day of July, 1706.

“CORNBURY.”

To exhibit the relative value of some kinds of prop-

erty at that time, the following is extracted from an inventory of the effects of a deceased person, which was taken December 16, 1719: A negro wench and child, valued at £60; while five milch cows, five calves, three young bulls, and two heifers, were valued together at £20 only.

From the following publication in *Rivington's Gazette* of November 1, 1780, it will be seen that horse racing and other sports were celebrated here during the occupation of Long Island by his Britannic Majesty's forces, and of course, whatever odium may be attached to the custom, the people of this town were not responsible for it.

"It is recommended, that by *permission*, on Monday, the 13th inst., will be run for on Flatland Plains, five miles from Brooklyn ferry, a purse of £60; other prizes on the 2d day. There will be fox hunting, also, during the races; and on the 2d day, to be run for by *women, white or black, a Holland smock, and a chintz gown*, full trimmed, with white ribbons, to be run in *three* quarter mile heats: the *first* to have the *smock and gown*; the 2d best to have a *guinea*; and the 3d, half a guinea. *God save the King*, will be played every hour."

The surface of this town is so uniformly level and in other respects so like the adjoining territory, that any general description would be only a repetition, affording no valuable information. Barren Island, before mentioned, lies upon the most south-easterly part of the town and immediately on the ocean, being separated from the western termination of Rockaway Beach, by Rockaway Inlet, the main entrance from the sea to Jamaica Bay, and having on its western side Plumb Inlet, dividing it from

Coney Island. At the first arrival of the Dutch it was, as before mentioned, not only a great deal larger than it is now, but was well timbered. But the timber having long since been cut off, its surface, composed mainly of sand, was not only exposed to the violent action of the winds, as well as the waves of the adjacent ocean, but much of it was carried away. It is owned now by a few individuals, and appropriated chiefly for the pasture of sheep, for which purpose only, it seems to be any way calculated.

It was upon a part of this island that the notorious pirate Gibbs and his associates in crime secreted a portion of their ill-gotten plunder, which was mostly in Mexican dollars, the rest having been lost while attempting to land by the upsetting of their boat.

A large amount of the money buried by the pirates has since been found, in consequence of violent storms and a heavy sea having disturbed the sand of which the beach is composed, and some which was lost from the boats has probably been washed on shore also.

The names of this abandoned and plundering gang were Charles Gibbs, Thomas J. Wansley, Robert Dawes, and John Brownrig, who had been engaged as hands on board the Brig "Vineyard," and while upon the passage from the southern part of the United States contrived to murder William Thornby, the captain of the vessel, and his mate, William Roberts. The life of Brownrig was saved by his volunteering to give evidence against his companions in guilt, all of whom were convicted of piracy and murder and executed together upon Gibbet Island in the harbor of New York, April 22, 1831.

Bergen Island on the margin of that part of Jamaica Bay sometimes called Flatlands Bay, is of itself a fine,



well-cultivated and productive farm, but in consequence of a road constructed of shells and other materials between it and the main land, it is rarely surrounded entirely by water. It has long been in possession of the family whose name it bears, and is a highly valuable property.

The ancient settlement of Canarsie contains a considerable population, though probably far less in numbers than when its native tribe possessed the soil, as is incontestably evident from the immense shell banks which are scattered along the borders of the beautiful bay, fronting the town. The present inhabitants of this venerable spot are almost exclusively engaged in the adjacent fishery, a species of domestic commerce which is both extensive and profitable. There are here a large public house, schoolhouse, and Methodist Church, erected in 1844. The most eligible and pleasant part of the town is the village of Flatlands, in the centre of which a Dutch Reformed Church was built many years after the settlement of the town. For we find that on the 12th of September, 1662, the people applied to the governor for permission to raise money for the purpose and for aid from other quarters. The necessary authority was obtained and the first church erected in the following year. It was rebuilt about the year 1730, again in 1804, and remained till 1848. The last sermon in it was preached in Dutch by the Rev. Dr. Schoonmaker. The present handsome edifice was completed and dedicated in the latter year.

The ministers of the collegiate churches in the "*Five Dutch Towns*," mentioned in our account of Flatbush and Brooklyn, officiated here, the parish contributing its proportionate share toward their support. Some years since the desire became pretty general that each town should employ and maintain its own pastor, and accord-

ingly the *Rev. Peter Lowe*, who, from 1787 had been one of the associate clergy, was in 1808 induced to confine his labors to this church and that of Flatbush, which he continued to do till his decease. He was succeeded by the *Rev. Walter Monteith*, who was installed over the said churches in 1819, but removed to Schenectady the next year. The connection between this church and that of Flatbush was dissolved on the 1st of May, 1822; and the parish remained without a pastor being settled among them, till February 6, 1825, when the *Rev. William Cruikshank* was ordained over it. He was a native of Washington County, N. Y., and after remaining here till April 10, 1835, and becoming obnoxious to some of his people for advocating the temperance reform, he removed to Newburgh, where he was installed on the 23d, but resigned again December 28, 1837.

The *Rev. John Abeel Baldwin*, son of the late Jesse Baldwin of the City of New York, was born there April 25, 1810, graduated at Yale in 1829, at the Theological Seminary at Princeton in 1834, and was installed over this church and that at New Lots by the classis of Long Island March 22, 1836, as his immediate predecessor had been. He married in September, 1837, Elizabeth E., daughter of Lawrence Van Kleek, another of whose daughters was the wife of Colonel Truman Cross, killed by the Mexicans on the Rio Grande in the spring of 1846.

*Contributed by the Editor*

“Mr. Baldwin resigned in 1852 and at the end of his pastorate the connection with the church at New Lots was dissolved. Henceforth the church at Flatlands was a separate parish and its pastors have devoted their entire time to this church. Mr. Baldwin was succeeded by the

following pastors, the list of which has been kindly furnished by Rev. Mr. Roeder, the present incumbent:

" Rev. J. T. M. Davie.....	1853 to 1862
" T. Sanford Doolittle.....	1862 to 1864
" Cornelius Brett .....	1865 to 1870
" Anson Du Bois .....	1870 to 1882
" John S. Gardner .....	1883 to 1913
" Charles William Roeder.....	1914 to ———"

The very name of this town sufficiently indicates the nature of its surface and general appearance without anything more. The soil is of a texture easily cultivated, being entirely free from stone, a light sandy loam, warm and fertile, which from the skill and wonderful industry of its farming population yields a large surplus beyond the consumption of the inhabitants. The people as a whole are conspicuous for their economical habits, modern fashions not having extinguished their love of simplicity and substantial comfort. Indeed, the character of this people is not inaptly portrayed by the traveller *Stewart*, when he remarks that "some of the farmers of Long Island are wealthy, but are in general contented to live comfortably and hospitably, with all the ordinary necessities and conveniences of life without ostentation or parade, and without seeming to care so much as other classes of people in this country do, about money."

In order to show the universal prevalence of good order and morality in this as well as in the adjoining towns, the following facts may be considered as affording pretty satisfactory evidence. Elias Hubbard, Esq., a respectable magistrate of this town, states that he has held the office of justice of the peace for more than twelve years, and for that period has transacted most of the judicial business in Flatlands, Flatbush, New Utrecht, and Gravesend; during which time he has had scarcely a

dozen trials, and only two in which a jury was demanded. Another gentleman, who held the office of justice in Gravesend for eight years, had, during that period, but one jury trial, and even in that instance the difference was compromised by the parties before the jury were prepared to deliver their verdict into court. Such a pacific temper is highly honorable to the character of the people and creditable to the government under which they live.

The following form of a commission issued by Governor Stuyvesant, and another by Leisler, are inserted as matters of some curiosity.

“Fort Amsterdam, April 24, 1660.

“*Loving Friends.*

“Out of the nomination presented unto us we have maade choice, as you may know bee theese presents off Tunis Guisbert, the which wee for the yeare followinge doe confirme and establish ffor magistraate off the towne called New Amersforte, requiringe all and every one whome these may concerne to esteeme them as our elected and confirmed magestraate ffor the towne, so after mee respects, I rest, your lovinge friende and Governor.

“P. STUYVESANT.”

*Form of a Commission from Lieutenant Governor Leisler.*

“By the Lieut. Gov. and commander in chieffe, &c. By virtue off the authoritie unto mee, I do hereby authorise and empowwer you Jacobus Van De Water to be Clerk and Register ffor Kings County, giving you ffull power and authoritie to acte and officiate therein as a Clerk may and ought to doe, and this commission to continue till I receive further orders from his Majesty King William. Given under my hand and seal 20 off Dec. 1669.

“JACOB LEISLER.” [L. S.]

The population of this town in 1702 was 242; in 1840, 802, and in 1845, 936.

*Contributed by the Editor*

"On January 1, 1896, Flatlands became a part of the City of Brooklyn and was designated as the Thirty-second Ward. On January 1, 1898, Brooklyn was consolidated with New York, and this territory of course became a part of the Greater City.

"In spite of these facts, certain parts of the old town still retain their rural aspect. The Dutch Church, school, and old dwellings at Flatlands village are still there, and if one will walk or ride northeasterly along Kouwenhoven Place to Church Avenue he may imagine himself many miles from a large city, for farm lands and the old houses are met on every side and aged trees lend their shade to his path. When the editor last rode along this highway a plodding hay wagon brushed the fenders of his car and reminded him that 'hay' is still made in Brooklyn. Further on past residences of the Kouwenhoven family, into the locality known as Flatlands Neck, you will come to the oldest schoolhouse in Brooklyn, erected in 1836, and a little way on, to a house formerly a wayside tavern.

"Old manners and customs clung to the town for many years. Mr. Cornelius Kouwenhoven, a direct descendant of the pioneer and an uncle of the editor, states that his father, Cornelius B. Kouwenhoven conversed in Dutch with members of his family as late as 1865, and could speak no English at the time he started in school as a small boy.

"Mr. William H. Kouwenhoven also states that his father, grandparents, and other members of his family commonly conversed in Dutch at their homes and that a few other Dutch families did the same."



## NEW UTRECHT

CONTAINING about 5,200 acres, is bounded on the north by Brooklyn and Flatbush, on the east by Gravesend and on the south and west by Gravesend Bay and the Narrows opposite Staten Island. An earlier period has been assigned heretofore for the settlement of this town than subsequent investigations of ancient records will justify, and the compiler acknowledges himself as well as the public, to be under peculiar obligations to Tunis G. Bergen, Esq., late clerk of the town for aid in translating the scanty memorials of the original settlement from the Dutch language in which they were written by the Hon. Nicasius de Sille, first councillor of New Netherland under the administration of Governor Stuyvesant, and a person of learning and respectability. According to him the first regularly organized occupation of the lands in this town took place in 1657, although it is probable that some individuals may have intruded themselves upon detached portions of the territory a few years sooner, as has been asserted. As a means of defence against the native inhabitants, as well as the hordes of other Indians, robbers, and pirates, which at that time and for years after infested the country, a block house or building of a like kind was early erected. In short the protection of government was soon after invoked against these predatory aggressions. And it was doubtless in great measure owing to the exposed condition of the settlement and the constant apprehensions of

danger from enemies, that the increase of population was comparatively slow and gradual, for at the expiration of nearly fifty years the number of persons including slaves was less than 300.

A large part of the present town, if not the whole, was, according to de Silles, originally granted to the Heer *Cornelis Van Werekhoven* of Utrecht in Holland, who undertook to plant a colony here, but returned to Europe before he had made much progress, and died there. *Jaques Cortelliau*, his agent, on behalf of the heirs of his principal, addressed a petition to the director general for liberty to found a town on the bay of the North River. A favorable answer was given January 16, 1657, whereupon he laid out the land by survey, dividing it into twenty lots of twenty morgens each to *Jacques Cortelliau*, *Nicasius de Silles*, *Pieter Buys*, *Jacob Swart*, *Jacobus Corlaer*, *Johan Tomasse*, *Rutgert Joosten*, *Pieter Roeloffse*, *Cornelis Beeckman*, *Johan Zeelen*, *Albert Albertson*, *William Williamsen*, *Huybert Steeck*, *Pieter Jansen*, *Jan Jacobson*, *Jacobus Backer*, *Jacob Pietersen*, *Claes Claesen*, and *Teunis Jooster*.

Immediate measures were taken by the proprietor to have houses erected, the most considerable of which was that of the Hon. *Nicasius de Silles*, being forty-two feet long and covered with red tiles, doubtless brought from Holland, and enclosed about with high palisades set close together for safety as most of the others were. Those who declined to build found others to supply their places, or forfeited their lots. Difficulties, however, were experienced, and much damage sustained by individuals to their crops for want of fences around their fields, and the director general on the 12th of May, 1659, ordered the owners of lands to build on and cultivate them within

a given period or forfeit the same, that others who had taken up lands in the town should obtain patents therefor, and that Anthony Van Salee, who, it appears had made purchases from the Indians, should refrain from trespassing with his cattle or hogs upon his neighbor's lands. So great was the desire of the director general to protect the planters from wilful injuries that he issued a proclamation in which severe penalties were denounced against offenders, who for the first offence were to be whipped and branded, and for the second to be hung with a cord till death ensued, without favor to any person. This, it appears, was a mere repetition of what had been originally proclaimed October 9, 1655, in regard to other places.

An order that the inhabitants should draw their portions of meadow by lot was made August 27, 1657, which did not take place till May, 1659, at which the heirs of Lord Werekhoven drew two lots, Anthony Jansen Van Salee two lots, and twenty-two others drew each one lot.

In consequence of disagreements among the inhabitants, and constant disorders threatening the very existence as well as safety of the settlement, the governor, upon application and complaint, appointed a clerk and schout to preserve the peace, and also an assessor with authority to allot to individuals as he judged proper, some of the unappropriated lands in the town, to cause the same to be enclosed and cultivated, to lay out a street or highway through the town, to make arrangements for erecting a place of defence, which was ordered to be enclosed by a palisade, a horse-mill to be built within it, a well near by to be dug, and all to be at the common charge of the people. He was, moreover, authorized to decide differences between individuals, and, in general, to execute the

duties which the subaltern courts in other villages were accustomed to perform.

In 1662 the governor gave a patent to the town, which not only confirmed the several purchases and divisions of land already made, but invested its inhabitants with the pre-emptive right to all the lands not then purchased, and which were not embraced in the boundaries of any other town. By this charter the town was not only incorporated, but vested with power to appoint magistrates, subject to approval by the governor, also to hold courts for the trial of criminal cases not above the degree of petit larceny, and of civil causes likewise, not exceeding in amount five pounds.

The first patent for lands in this town was obtained by the said de Sille, as follows:

“Petrus Stuyvesant on the behalf of the Noble and High and Mighty Lords of the States General of the United Netherlands, and the Noble Lord and Director of the Privileged West India Company of the chamber of Amsterdam, Director General of New-Netherlands, Curaçoa, Bonayro, Aruba, with their appendages, with the consent of the Noble Lords of the Council witness and declare, that we on the date hereunto underwritten, have permitted and allowed to Nicasius de Sille, a parcel of land lying on Long Island in the Town of New Utrecht, known as number nine, in width 26 rods, bounded on the North-east by land of Jacob Backker, on the South-west by the village, and stretching South-east to the woods, containing 25 morgen (50 acres); also a piece of meadow land known as number 13 containing 3 morgen; also a building plot on the plain South-east of the shore or strand way, lying North-west of Ruth Joosten, in breath 12 rods, and in length 25 rods; on the express condition and terms that the said Nicasius de Sille,

or those who hereafter may obtain the same, acknowledge for his Lord and Patron, the Noble Lord Director above mentioned under the Sovereignty of the Noble, High and Mighty Lords of the States General, and in all things as a good inhabitant obey the Director General and Council, subject at the expiration of ten years after date, when required by the Lord Patrons, to the payment of the tenth, also to the other charges and services to which all the inhabitants of the land are liable when occasions arise to require the same; constituting over the same the before-named Nicasius De Sille in our place the actual possessor of the aforesaid parcel of land, giving him with the same, complet might, authority, and special charge of the aforesaid parcel of land for cultivation, dwelling, and use, the same as he might do with his other patrimonial lands and effects without our having any further claim thereon: But in behoof aforesaid desisting from all such from henceforth and forever, promising to keep firm, valid, and inviolable this conveyance, and to perform all its engagements justly, and to stand to the same without craft or subtlety, is this by us subscribed, sealed in red wax, and confirmed; At Amsterdam in New-Netherlands this 22d day of January 1660, signed

“PETRUS STUYVESANT.”

Other patents of like tenor were granted to de Sille and others at different times. The said de Sille, holding the appointment of Fiscal, or attorney-general, was vested with authority to make rules and regulations for the other planters, which were approved by the director general, and he furthermore authorized the noble Lord Nicasius de Sille, member of the council and Fiscal, to appoint a substitute to perform his duties as schout or sheriff in the town of New Utrecht, until the director general and council see fit to commit the same to some



other fit person. This was done at Fort Amsterdam, February 23, 1660. Stuyvesant about the same time visited the place, was well pleased with its apparent prosperity, and, having assembled the inhabitants, gave them his best advice and admonished them to exert themselves to make their dwellings secure from enemies. The flag of the Prince of Orange, presented to the town by the Fiscal, was displayed upon a high pole, and the director general and his attendants were entertained at a public dinner.

In October, 1660, the Fiscal, being informed of some evil doings in the place, and apprehending the effects of bad examples among the people, sent an half *dozen shackles*, with an *iron rod* and a *good lock in terrorem omnium*.

The practice of slaughtering cattle and hogs belonging to the Indians became so notorious, that a proclamation was issued to prevent the like in future, and forbid the killing of any cattle, calves, hogs, sheep, or goats, by any one without a permit for the purpose from a magistrate or other person appointed for that purpose.

Many rules and regulations were in force in this as well as in other towns for the preservation of morals, the prevention and punishment of crimes, and perpetuating good peace and good order. The selling or drinking of beer, wine, or strong drink on the Sabbath were forbidden, or selling the same to servants or to the Indians; yard sticks, measures, and weights were to be sealed and made alike according to the custom of Amsterdam in Holland; and all persons intending to marry were to wait one month after three publications to afford time and opportunity for legal objections to be made, and if none was made the party refusing to marry without lawful

reason was to pay ten guilders for the first week and twenty for each succeeding week till some lawful reason should be given therefor; and no man and woman were to live together as man and wife without marriage under penalty of one hundred guilders, or as much more or less as the quality or ability of the offender would warrant; and they liable to the like penalty for every month they continued so to offend. No person was surreptitiously to hold a meeting for public worship, or sing, read, or preach in the same on the penalty of one hundred pounds Flemish, and the hearers were each liable to a penalty of twenty-five pounds without regard to their religion or sect.

After the conquest of New Netherland, and in the year 1668 the following patent was issued to the town by Governor Nicoll:

“ Richard Nicoll Esq. Governor Generall under his Royall Highnesse James Duke of York and Albany &c. Whereas there is a certain towne within this Government, scituate in the West Riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island commonly called New Utrecht, now in the tenure and occupation of several Freeholders and inhabitants, who have heretofore been seated there by authority, have been at very considerable charge in manuring and planting the lands there, and settled a competent number of families thereupon: Know ye that by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given, I have given &c, and by these presents do give &c. unto *Nicasius De Sille, Jacques Cortilleau, Francis Browne, Robert Jacobson and Jacob Swaart*, as patentees &c. All that tract of land, together with the several parcells of land which already have, or hereafter shall be purchased or procured, for and on behalfe of the said towne, within the bounds hereafter set forth; that is to say; Begining from Nayack

Point, stretching alongst the bay to the land belonging to Francis Bruyne, and from thence run into the woods along the said Francis Bruyne's land to the land heretofore belonging to Robert Pennoyer neare upon a N. E. line 1200 Dutch Rods from which goe againe in a direct line to the North River, running 300 rods to the north of the whole Hooke or Neck of land; and then againe alongst the said North River to Nayack-Point, comprehending within the said bounds or lymitts, 20 lotts as they are now layd out, as also a parcell of valley or meadow land to the East of Varkens Hooke or Hogg-Necke, including both fresh and salt meadow and the reede-land thereunto belonging, and containing about 260 acres or 130 morgen—Together with all harbors &c.—*To have* &c. to the said patentees and thier associates &c.—and that the place of thier present habitation shall continue and retain the name of New Utrecht by which name &c.

“ Given under my hand and seal, at Fort James in New York on Manhattan's Island the 15<sup>th</sup> day of Aug. in the 2<sup>th</sup> yerr of the Reign of our Sovreigne Lord Charles 2<sup>d</sup> of England &c. Anno Domini 1668.

“ RICHARD NICOLL.” [L. S.]

The following additional patent was granted by Governor Dongan in 1686:

[L. S.] “ Thomas Dongan, Lieut. Governor and Vice Admirall of New Yorke and its dependencies under his Majesty James the Second, by the Grace of God of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, &c. Supreme Lord and proprietor of the Colony and Province of New-Yorke and its Dependencies in America, &c. To all whome this shall come, sendeth Greeting. Whereas there is a certaine Towne in King's County on Long-Island, commonly called and knowne by the name of New-Utrecht, Beginning at the North-East

corner of the land appurtaining to Mr. Paulus Vanderbeeck called Goanus to the Bounds of Flattbush Pattent, and soe along the said bounds of the said Pattent, and stretching from thence South-East and by South till they meete the Limitts of Flattlands, Gravesend, and the said Utrecht, and from thence along Gravesend Bounds to the Bay of the North River, and soe along the said Bay and River till it meets the Land of the said Paulus Vanderbeeke as according to severall agreements and writings and the pattent from Governor Richard Nicoll, dated in the yeare of our Lord one thousand six hundred, sixty eight, Reference being thereto had may more fully and att large appeare. And whereas applicacon hath to mee been made by persons deputed from the aforesaid Towne of New Utrecht for a Confirmation of the aforerecited Tract of Land and premissess: Now for a confirmacon unto the present Freeholders and Inhabitants of the said Towne, their Heires, Successors and assigns for ever, in the quiett and peaceable possession and enjoyment of the aforesaid Tract of Land and premissess. KNOW YEE, that by virtue of the Commission and authority unto mee given, and power in mee residing, I have given Granted, Ratified, and Confirmed, and by these presents Doe give grant, Ratifie and Confirm unto Jackues Corteljou, Rutger Joosten, John Verkerke, Hendrick Mathyse, John Kierson, John Vandyck, Giesbert Thyson, Carel Van Dyck, Jan Van Cleef, Cryn Jansen, Meyndert Coerten, John Hanson, Barent Joosten, Teunis Van Pelt, Hendrick Van Pelt, Lowrense Janse, Gerrit Cornelisson, Dirk Van Sutphen, Thomas Tierkson, Gerrit Stoffelson, Peter Thyson, Anthony Van Pelt, Anthony Duchaine, Jan Vandeventer and Cornelis Wynhart, on Behalfe of themselves and thiere associates, the present Freeholders and Inhabitants of the said Towne of New Utrecht, thier Heires, Successors and Assigns. All and singular the before recited tract and parcells of Land, meadow ground



and premissess, butted and bounded as in the pattent and agreements aforesaid, with all and singular the Messuages, Tenements, Houses, Buildings, Barnes, Stables, Orchards, Gardens, Pastures, Mills, Mill dams, Runs, Streams, Ponds, Woods, Underwoods, Trees, Trenches, Fencing, Fishing, Hawking, Hunting and fowling. Libertyes, privilidges, hereditaments and Improvements whatsoever, to the said Land and premises belonging or in any wise appertaining, or accepted, reputed, taken or knowne or used, occupied and enjoyed, as parte, parcell or member thereof, with thier and every of thier appurtenances. To Have and to Hold, the said Tract and parcell of Land, with thiere and every of thiere appurtenances, to them the said Jacques Cortiliau (and others above named), as Patentees for and on behalfe of themselves and thiere Present Associates, thiere Heires, Successors and assigns for ever, to the sole and only proper use and behoofe of the said Patentees and thier present associates, thier Heirs, Successors and Assigns for ever. And I doe hereby likewise Confirme and grant unto the said Patentees and thiere Associates, thiere heires, successors and assigns, all the Privilidges and Immunities belonging to a Towne within this Government, to bee holden of his said Majesty, his Heires and Successors in free and common Soccage. According to the Tenure of East Greenwich in the County of Kent, in his Majestyes Kingdom of England; Yielding, Rendering and paying therefore yearly and every yeare, on every five and twentyth day of March forever, in Lieu and Stead of all Services and Demands whatsoever, as a quitt Rent or acknowledgement to his said Majesty his Heirs and Successors or to such Officer or Officers as shall be appointed to Receive the same, six bushells of good Winter Merchantable Wheate att the Citty of New Yorke; and for the better preserving the title of the above recited Tract and parcells of Land, and Premisses and every of them, I



have caused these presents to be entered in the Secretaries Office of this Province.

"Given under my hand and sealed with the Seale of the Province att fortth James in New Yorke the thirteenth Day of May 1686, and in the Second Yeare of his Majestyes Reigne.

"THOMAS DONGAN."

"May it please your Honor:

"The Attorney Generall hath perused this Pattent and finds nothing contained therein prejudiciale to his Majestyes Interest. Exam May 13th, 1686.

"JAMES GRAHAM."

It does not appear that any separate ecclesiastical organization took place in this town till many years after its settlement, but its nearness to the church at Flatbush made it tolerably convenient for all who desired to attend public worship there, or at Flatlands, and accordingly the people of this place contributed to the maintenance of the Protestant Dutch Church in the county. Church officers were also chosen, who, as was the practice in other towns, acted *ex officio* as overseers of the poor, and assessors, being from their position in society evidently well qualified to execute the important trusts thus confided to them.

Indeed, the ecclesiastical and civil affairs of the town seem to have been managed in great measure by the same individuals, and the practice was continued to a comparatively recent period. The records, although very defective, began to be kept in the English language in the year 1763, while in some towns they were continued in Dutch down to the American Revolution. About that period, *church masters* (so called), were elected at town meetings in the manner of other town officers, and were *ex officio* overseers of the poor.

In 1686 the deacons of the church were chosen as overseers, being thereby enabled to afford both spiritual and temporal assistance as circumstances might require. The union of these offices in the same hands was frequently repeated, the duties of both having their foundation equally in the principles of human kindness. It was also common to confer the offices of constable, collector, and pound master on the same individual, for the plausible reason that neither alone was of much value, and might be considered a burden rather than a favor to the incumbent. There was so little inducement for any one to hold the place of constable that it was found necessary to institute a practice for the married men of the town to take the office annually in rotation, beginning with the eldest; and in case of the inability of any one to execute the office, he was permitted to name a substitute, for whose fidelity the person excused was willing to be responsible.

To induce any to accept the place of collector of taxes, the person was allowed for his compensation a sum in gross, which was at first £5, but afterwards increased to £10.

In 1799 the elders of the church were chosen commissioners, and the deacons trustees of common schools, which regulation continued till 1812 when the present state common school system was adopted.

It is a fact honorable to the inhabitants of this town, and one which speaks volumes in favor of their good sense and honesty of purpose, that *political* or *party* distinctions have rarely, if ever, interposed in the choice of their public officers. The same independent conduct has in a good degree characterized the proceedings of the adjoining towns.

The towns in this county having for almost a century

and a half constituted but one ecclesiastical congregation or charge, each of course contributed to the common fund, which for some years prior to 1795 amounted to £300, of which sum Flatbush raised £68, 14s.; Brooklyn, £58, 16s.; and each of the other towns £43, 2s., 6d. annually.

In the year 1663 a minister in this town was accused before the sessions of having performed the ceremony of his *own marriage*, and that, too, while he had *another wife* living. The reverend gentleman alleged, by way of excuse for so novel a procedure, that his first wife had eloped from him without cause; and being minded to take another, he conceived he had the same right to perform the ceremony for himself as for any other person. This specious reasoning did not, however, satisfy the court, which declared the marriage void, and the delinquent was fined in two hundred guilders and forty beaver skins; besides forty guilders more for his insolence and impertinence to the court.

In 1690 a Reformed Dutch Church was built upon the site now enclosed in the old burial ground of the village of New Utrecht. It was built of stone and of the shape then prevalent, an octagon. The British soldiers took possession of it in September, 1776, and made of it a hospital, storehouse, or prison, as best suited their purpose. It was repaired in 1783 at an expense of £500, which was raised by voluntary subscription in the county. In 1828 it was taken down and its materials used in the construction of the present church, built also of stone, and dedicated August 26, 1829.

A few rods easterly of the place where the old church stood is an antique stone dwelling covered with tiles, imported from Holland, which has now stood nearly 150

years. It was the property and residence of the late Rutgert Van Brunt, being the identical house in which the lamented General Woodhull lay after he was wounded, and where he breathed his last, September 20, 1776.

In 1787 this church united with the other collegiate churches of the county in calling the *Rev. Peter Lowe*. He continued to officiate in the said churches till the year 1808, when the county organization was dissolved, and the settlement of separate pastors over the particular churches took place. The *Rev. John Beatie* became the minister here in 1809. He was a native of Salem, N. Y., and a graduate of Union College. He continued here till October 14, 1834, when his pastoral relation was dissolved at his own request and he removed to Buffalo.

*Rev. Robert Ormiston Currie*, the present esteemed pastor, is the son of James Currie, Esq., a native of Scotland, and his wife, whose maiden name was Sarah Van Hoeson. Mr. Currie was born at Clavarack, New York, October 1, 1805, graduated at Rutgers College, New Jersey, in 1829, and was engaged as rector of the grammar school there for nearly three years. He was licensed to preach by the classis of New Brunswick, July 23, 1834, and was ordained and installed in this parish by the classis of Long Island, February 15, 1835. He married Elizabeth T. Voorhees of New Brunswick, N. J., January, 1835.

*Contributed by the Editor*

"Mr. Currie officiated until his death in March, 1866, having been pastor for thirty-one years. Rev. David Sutphen, the next pastor, came in June, 1867, and preached until 1880. He was followed in that year by Rev. Alfred Hamilton Brush. On June 1, 1905, Mr.

Brush celebrated his twenty-fifth anniversary as pastor of this church, and died on Sunday, April 30, 1911. For two years previous to his death Mr. Brush's health had been poor, whereupon he was made pastor emeritus, being succeeded by the Rev. Orville E. Fisher, the present pastor."<sup>1</sup>

*New Utrecht Bay*, or as it is more commonly called, the Lower Bay (that above the Narrows being named the Upper Bay), is formed by the coast of New Jersey on the west and Coney Island beach on the east, and covers a surface of about twenty square miles, being among the finest as well as the safest harbors in the world. On the northern margin of the bay is the celebrated *Bath House*, possessing one of the pleasantest sea-side views in this country. It is besides the oldest bathing establishment on Long Island, and the nearest to the city of New York.

The site of this capacious establishment was selected by the late Drs. Bailey, Bard, Rogers, Tillary, and others, their medical associates, as a place of retreat for their invalid patients whose cases required the invigorating influence of pure air and sea bathing. Here the physicians and those under their care enjoyed the luxury of the scene, far removed from the heat and bustle of a great city. But the building which had been erected by these gentlemen in 1794 was destroyed by fire May 13, 1802, being then the property of Timothy Titus. It having since been rebuilt on an extensive scale as a hotel and boarding house by the Messrs. Brown, they have it in their power to accommodate with every regard to comfort more than 150 visitors.

The Atlantic Ocean and the bay, its fleets of ships,

<sup>1</sup> Mrs. Bleecker Bang's *Old New Utrecht* has been consulted for list of pastors since 1866.—EDITOR.



steamboats, and other vessels, the lighthouses of Sandy Hook, Neversink, and Prince's Bay, with the distant points, altogether form a panorama of natural scenery rarely equalled in beauty by any other part of the world.

Another, and the most interesting locality in the town, is Fort Hamilton, situated on the east bank of the Narrows, which is the name given to the strait connecting the upper and lower bays, and through which all vessels must pass to and from the city of New York. The strait is 1,836 yards wide, and of sufficient depth to admit vessels of any draught.

The fortifications are so skilfully arranged as to prevent, or render imminently dangerous, any hostile attempt to reach the upper bay from the ocean.

This place was called by the Indians *Nyack*, and it was while lying on board his ship the "Guernsey," at this spot, that Colonel Richard Nicoll, afterwards governor of New York, addressed to Governor Stuyvesant his first communication of August 20, 1664, demanding the surrender of New Netherlands. This historical fact is intimately associated in the mind with another of equal importance, that a considerable portion of the British army landed at the same place on the 22d of August, 1776, for the like purpose of capturing the country, just 112 years and two days from the landing of Governor Nicoll.

The state ceded to the general government in 1812 thirty acres of land covered by water, called Hendrick's Reef, for the purpose of defence, and the government subsequently purchased from the individual owners, one hundred acres more of upland, which is occupied as appurtenant to the military establishment.

In this vicinity are three extensive works of defence,

so placed in reference to each other and the position of the bay as to appear almost impregnable to any of the ordinary forces common to most maritime nations.

*Fort Richmond* is upon the west or *Staten Island* side of the Narrows at its entrance into the lower bay. *Fort La Fayette*—sometimes, from its shape, called *Fort Diamond*—is situated in the stream, and *Fort Hamilton* is on the Long Island shore, in a line nearly with the former. These fortifications were located and planned by General Bernard, an eminent French engineer, employed by the United States, some years since, to make a reconnaissance of our coast, with a view to the selection of sites for its defence. Fort Hamilton is of permanent granite masonry, quadrangular in form, one face of which is for water defence, and the other for the land. The part commanding the channel mounts 14 casemate and 26 barbette, 32 pounders; and 32 casemate guns of large calibre; 32 and 26 pounders are distributed along the land sides, which also admit of musketry defence. In addition to which there are 18 guns of similar calibre for the defence of the ditches, which are dry and well flanked with musketry. A redoubt 200 yards in advance, on the land side, is designed to prevent a landing of the enemy on the beach between the fort and Bath, and also to oblige him to establish his batteries at a greater distance, in case of a siege. It is completely defiled from the neighboring hills, which might otherwise be occupied by an enemy to advantage.

Fort La Fayette is a dependency of Fort Hamilton, and is constructed of solid free stone masonry, mounting 73 guns, in 3 tiers; the lower, 42; the 2d, 32, and the upper, 24 pounders. Several of the newly invented and very effective Paixham guns of large calibre have

lately been added, which must render this one of the strongest defences in the country. For some years past these works had become much deteriorated by the neglect of the government, which remark would equally apply to every fort from the coast of Maine to the Gulf of Mexico. Since 1841 much has been done to place these defences upon a respectable footing.

Here is also a splendid hotel and boarding establishment, called the Hamilton House, which, for its magnitude, beauty of location, and elegance of accommodations will not suffer by comparison with any other in the vicinity. In 1836 a company was incorporated for the construction of a railroad from Brooklyn to Fort Hamilton, Bath, and Coney Island, which, if executed, would doubtless add very greatly to the numbers visiting these places.

A few years ago some workmen employed in excavating the earth at the Narrows, discovered, a few feet below the surface, a large quantity of Indian stone arrow heads lying together, which induces the belief that here was either a manufactory of the article or place of deposit. They were of all sizes—from one to six inches in length—finished and unfinished, together with blocks of the stone of which they were made, in the same state as when taken from the quarry. How the savages, without the use of iron instruments, could make and polish axes and other implements of stone of flinty hardness, is to us, at this day, a matter of utter admiration and astonishment.

*St. John's Church*, at Fort Hamilton, was erected principally by the government in 1835, of which the Rev. James Dixon Carder, chaplain to the fort and forces stationed there, was for several years rector, his chief

parochial care consisting of the troops in garrison here, the church being considered as a chapel of the fort. Mr. Carder is a graduate of Hamilton College of the year 1827, and being now confined to his duties as chaplain to the garrison, the Rev. Sylvester Nash was in 1846 made rector of St. John's. At Yellow Hook, the extreme north-west corner of the town, a Methodist Church was built in 1844.

The soil of this town is in general of an excellent quality and is highly cultivated, some farms yielding, besides other crops, more than one hundred tons of English hay. On the south side of the hills, the surface is smooth and level, but in the vicinity of the Narrows, stony and somewhat hilly. The woody ridge upon the north-west, is the western terminus of that singular range of highlands, extending throughout the island, having its eastern termination near Oyster Ponds Point,<sup>1</sup> a distance of 120 miles, and is very appropriately denominated the "Spine of Long Island."

The shad fishery in this town, at the proper season, is unequalled in any other part of the country, it being not uncommon to take at least 10,000 of these fish at a single haul.

The following Dutch epitaphs are inserted as a curiosity to those unaccustomed to that language, and they will be more so when the inscriptions themselves shall have become obliterated by time and the elements.

Hier Legt het Ligham  
Van Anne Vorhes de  
huys vrou, Van Barnardus  
Vorhes is ge Storven  
Nov'r 4<sup>d</sup> 1768.

Hier legt 't Lighaam  
Van Jacobus Emans  
Soon Van Abraham  
Emans, en Sara Schenck  
Over leeden de 6d Oct'r  
1770 In't 23<sup>ste</sup> jaar  
Syn Levins.

<sup>1</sup> Now Orient Point.—EDITOR.

Hier Legt  
den Lighhaam Van Femetie Schenck  
huys vrouw van Pieter Stryker  
Gebooren den 29 July 1740,  
Over leeden den 14, December  
1814.  
Oud Zynde 75, Yaaren,  
4 Maanden en 16 Daagen.

The custom of putting Dutch inscriptions upon tombstones was continued till about the year 1770, and some may be seen even of a much later date in the burying grounds of this county. But for the last fifty years the English language has been generally adopted. There are, however, a few Dutch families who still use the language in their intercourse with one another.

The following, from the pen of David Stephenson, Esq., a distinguished engineer of Scotland, who visited this country a few years since for professional purposes, is sufficiently valuable to be here preserved.

“The Bay of New York, which extends about nine miles in length, and five in breadth, has a communication with the Atlantic Ocean through a strait of about two miles between Staten Island and Long Island. This is called ‘the Narrows’; and on either shore stands a fort for protecting the entrance to the harbor. This magnificent bay is completely sheltered from the stormy Atlantic by Long Island, forms a noble deep water basin, and offers a spacious and safe anchorage for shipping to almost any extent. The shipping in the harbor of New York, therefore, without the erection of breakwaters or covering piers, is, in all states of the wind, protected from the roll of the Atlantic. Without the aid of docks, or even dredging, vessels of the largest class lie afloat during low water of spring-tides, moored to the quays which bound the seaward sides of the city.



“ The perpendicular rise of tide in the harbor of New York is only about five feet. The tidal wave, however, increases in its progress northwards along the coast, till at length, in the Bay of Fundy, it attains the maximum height of ninety feet. Towards the south, on the contrary, its rise is very much decreased; and, in the Gulf of Mexico, is reduced to eighteen inches, while, on the shores of some of the West India Islands, it is quite imperceptible. Although a bar extends from Sandy Hook to the Long Island shore, across the mouth of the harbor, yet there is a depth of twenty-one feet at low water, which is sufficient for the largest class of merchant vessels.”

*Contributed by the Editor*

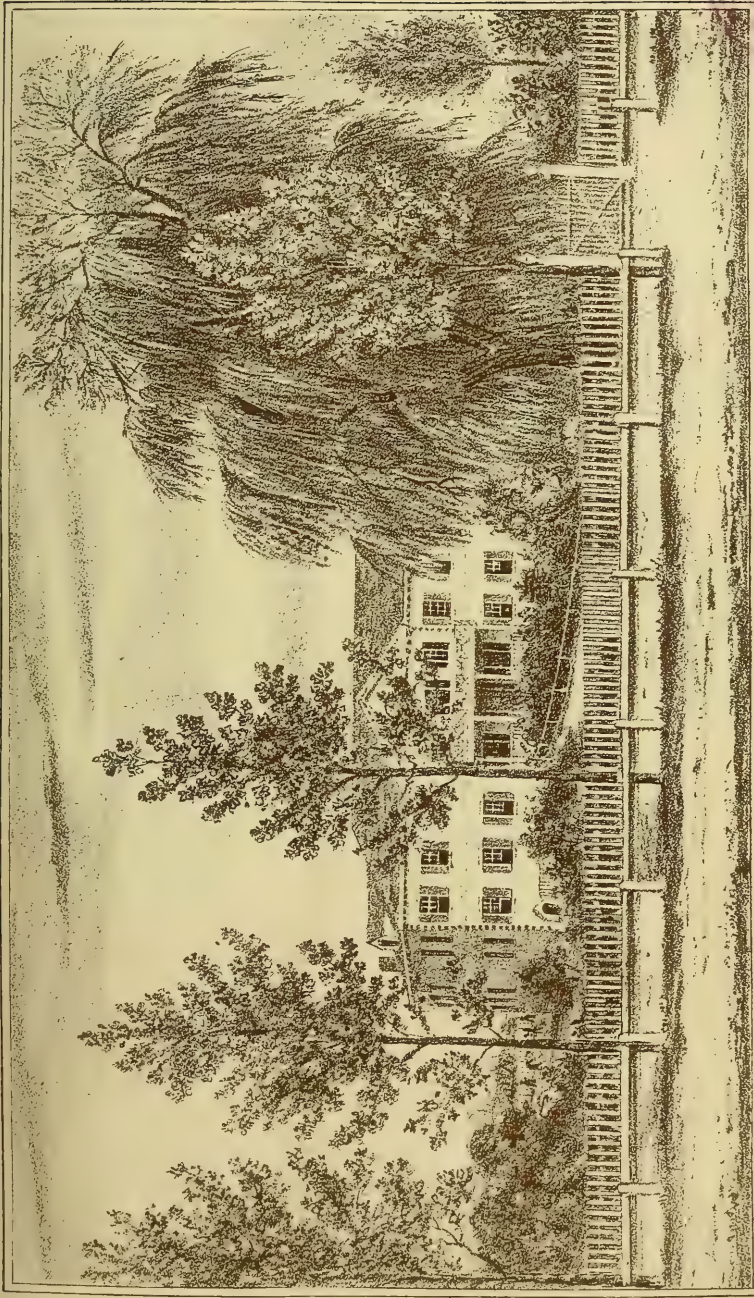
“ Governor Levi P. Morton, on May 3, 1894, signed the bill making New Utrecht part of the City of Brooklyn. On July 3, 1894, the act went into effect and the form of town government was abolished. On January 1, 1898, Brooklyn became part of the City of New York, and this territory of course became part of the Greater City.”

## FLATBUSH

THIS ancient settlement of the Dutch was begun by them in 1651, and upon it they conferred the name of Midwout (or Middle Woods). It is probable that isolated portions of the soil had been taken up before, but without an intention of founding a town or even village. It is bounded north by Brooklyn, south by Jamaica and the Bay, Flatlands and Gravesend, and west by Gravesend, and has an area of about 7,000 acres. From the pleasantness of its situation and the excellence of its soil, it soon grew into importance, and dwellings were erected on the site of the present village, and upon the road or path leading to Gravesend, the settlement of which latter place preceded this by about ten years.

In 1652 Governor Stuyvesant gave the inhabitants a patent for a portion of the present town, including the village. The patentees therein named are, Jan Snedecor, Arent Van Hatten, one of the burgomasters of the city, Johannes Megapolensis, a minister at New Amsterdam, and some few others. By this instrument, they were not only empowered to erect a town or plantation, but were invested also with the usual privileges of other Dutch corporations within the province. In 1656 another patent was granted to the "indwellers and inhabitants of Midwout," for the Canarsie Meadows, lying east north-east of the Canarsie Indian planting ground. Patents of confirmation were in like manner obtained by individuals who had made particular purchases

LIBRARY  
OF THE  
MUSEUM  
OF  
COMPARATIVE  
ZOOLOGY  
JUN 10 1891



ERASMUS HALL    FLATBUSH



from the natives beyond the bounds of the original patent.

October 11, 1667, a general patent was issued by Governor Nicoll, in which the patentees were the Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, Cornelius Van Ruyven, justice of the peace, Adrien Hegeman, and Jan Snedeger, Jan Stryker, Frans Barents (pastor), Jacob Stryker, and Cornelius Janse Bougaert, as patentees for and on behalf of themselves and associates, the freeholders, and inhabitants of the said town, their heirs, successors, and assigns, for the premises described therein, as follows:

"All yt tract wt ye severall parcells of land wh already have or hereafter shall be purchased or procured for and on ye behalf of ye sd town; whether from ye native Indian proprietors or others, wt in the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and expresst; That is to say, bounded to ye south by ye hills, and to the north by ye fence lately sett between them and the town of Amsfort, alias Flatlands, beginning at a certain tree standing upon ye Little-Flats, marked by ye order and determination of severall arbitrators appointed by me, to view and issue ye difference between ye two towns concerning the same, wh accordingly they did upon the 17th of October, 1666, and to ye east and west by the common woodlands, including two tracts heretofore called by ye names of Curler's and Twillers flatts wh lye to ye East of ye town; As also a parcell of meadow ground or valley on ye East-north-east side of Canaresse planting land, and having to ye South ye meadow ground belonging to Amsfort als Flatlands, according to ye division made by an East line running half a point northerly between them without variation of ye Compass, and so to go to ye mouth of ye creek or Kill, which said meadows were on ye 20th of April last by common consent staked out and by my approbation allowed of."



On the 12th of November, 1685, a further confirmatory patent was executed by Governor Thomas Dongan, to the following persons named therein as patentees:

Cornelius Vanderwyck	John Stryker	John Johnson
John Okie	John Remsen	Ditmars Lewis Jansen
Joseph Hegeman	Jacob Hendricks	Okie Johnson
Art Jansen Vanderbilt	Direck Vandervleet	Jan Jansen
Lafford Peiterson	Hendrick Ryck	William Jacobs
William Guilliamson	Peter Lott	Hendrick Hegeman
Hendrick Williamse	Daniel Polhemus	Garret Lubbertse
Peter Guillamse	Cornelius Vanderveere	Hans Bogaert
Arien Ryers	Direck Johnson Hoogland	
Peter Stryker	Denise Teunis	

*“ The premises are in this patent described, as ‘A certain town in King’s County known by the name of Middwout, alias Flatbush, the bounds whereof begin att the mouth of ye fress Kill, and soe along by a certain ditch which lyes betwixt Armsford and Flatbush meadows, and soe running amongst the ditch and fence to a certain white oake markt tree; and from thence upon a straight line to the westernmost point of a small island of woodland lying before John Striker’s bridge; and from thence with a straight line to the north-west hooke or corner of the ditch of John Okie’s meadow; and from thence amongst the said ditch and fence to the swamp of the Fresh-Kill, and soe amongst the swamp and hollow of the aforesaid Kill to the land of Krewier’s hooke; then amongst the same to a markt white oak tree; from thence with a straight line to a black-oake markt tree standing uppon the north-east side of Twiller’s Flatts, having a small snip of flatts upon the south-east side of the line, and soe from thence to a white-oak tree standing to the west side of Mustahole upon a small island, leaving a snip of flatts in the Flattlands bounds; and from thence to a certain markt tree or stump standing by the highway which goes to Flattlands upon the Little Flatts, about twenty rod from Flattbush Lotts, and soe amongst the fence six hundred Dutch rodd to the*

corner of Flattbush fence, and soe alongst by the rear of the Lotts to a sassafras stump standing in Cornelius Jansen's Bowery lott of land; and from thence with straight line to a certain old marked tree or stump standing by the rush-pond under the hills, and so along upon the south side of the hill till it comes to the west end of the long hill, and soe along upon the south side of the said hill till itt comes to the east end of the long hill; and then with a straight line from the east end of the said long hill to a mark'd white-oak tree standing to the west side of the roade near the place called the gale or porte of hills, and so from the east side of the porte or gale along upon the south side of the maine hills as far as Browklin pattent doth extend, and soe along the said hills to the bounds of Jamaica pattent; and from thence with a southerly line to the Kill or creeke by the east of the Plunder's Neck, and soe alongst the said Kill to the sea (Jamaica Bay), as according to the several deeds or purchases from the Indian owners, the patent from Governor Nicolls, and the award between Browkline and the town of Flattbush, as by reference thereto will fully and at large appear.' "

December 17, 1654, Governor Stuyvesant, who was equally officious in ecclesiastical, as in civil and military affairs, ordered the erection of a church in this plantation, to be sixty or sixty-five feet long, twenty-eight wide, and from twelve to fourteen feet in height under the beams, the rear of the building to be for the minister's dwelling. And February 9, 1655, he again ordered the people of Amersfort and Brooklyn to assist those of Midwout in procuring timber for the house.

Those who had charge of the work reported in September 1660, that the building had cost 4,637 guilders (about \$1,800), of which sum, 3,437 guilders had been

collected in New Amsterdam, Fort Orange, and on Long Island; whereupon, the governor gave 400 guilders more out of the public funds, leaving the balance of 800 guilders against the church.

This edifice, built wholly of wood, was not entirely finished till 1665, but was occupied some years sooner, and was the first Dutch Church upon Long Island. The commissioners appointed to direct the building were the Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, Jan Snedeger, and Jan Stryker. Lands were at different times set apart by the town for the use of the church, amounting in the whole to about 200 acres near the village, all of which is still possessed by it and is of great value, although leased at a comparatively moderate rent.

In June, 1656, the governor ordered the people of Midwout and Flatlands to enclose a place in each of them with palisades for their common defence. In 1660 the Rev. Mr. Polhemus petitioned the governor to have a window placed in the church, which request was granted; and it being reported that the church was indebted to the amount of 624 guilders, it was ordered to be satisfied out of the treasury as soon as funds should be received.

Complaint was made that the minister was inattentive to his calling, holding service but once a *fortnight*, and then only for a *quarter of an hour*, giving the people a *prayer* instead of a *sermon*, upon which the governor gave orders "*that he should attend more diligently to his work.*"

October 1, 1673, an ordinance of the governor and council was published, enjoining it upon the sheriff and constables to take special care that the reformed religion be maintained to the exclusion of all other sects.

The first Dutch Church erected in this country was doubtless the one built in the city of New Amsterdam in 1642, although a society had been organized as early as 1629. And the inhabitants of Kings County attended religious worship in the city until the church was built in Flatbush, as above mentioned.

The Rev. Everardus Bogardus \* was the first minister, and officiated in the city from 1638 to 1647, when he obtained permission to return to his Fatherland, which he, however, never reached, being with ex-director Kieft, and about eighty others persons, lost by ship-wreck on the coast of Wales in September, 1647, as before stated. He was succeeded by the Rev. Johannes Megapolensis, who continued till the conquest in 1664.

The church at Flatbush was directed to be built in the form of a cross; and the rear part of the edifice was reserved and fitted up for the accommodation of the minister and his family. The original subscription list of this building is still preserved among the records of the church, and exhibits the names of the principal male inhabitants of full age in the Dutch towns at that period.

A church was also ordered to be built at Flatlands in 1662, which was completed the following year, and another was erected in Brooklyn in 1666, all of which constituted one general charge under the pastoral care of the same minister.

*Rev. Johannes Theodorus Polhemus*, who had been in the country some years, was engaged as minister soon after the completion of the church here, at a salary of 1,440 guilders, or \$416 a year, and the same was raised

\* It was for slandering this worthy minister that in 1638 a woman was obliged to appear at the fort in the city. She confessed that she knew he was honest and pious, and that she had spoken falsely.

by an assessment or tax upon the estates of those who resided in the towns where he officiated.

He was required by an order from the governor in March, 1656, to preach every Sunday morning at Midwout, and in the afternoon alternately at Amersfort and Brooklyn. He died June 9, 1676. His wife, Catherine, arrived here in 1656. From his sons Theodorus and Daniel have descended all of the name in this country.

*Rev. Henricus Solinus, Solyns, or Selyns*, was installed here September 3, 1660, at a salary of 600 guilders, one-half of which was to be paid by the inhabitants, and the other half by the Fatherland. In 1662 the people of Brooklyn requested that he might reside there; and the governor agreed to it, and also to pay a part of his salary, provided he should preach every Sunday evening in the church erected upon his farm or bowery. In 1664 he returned to Holland, having sustained a high reputation in the ministry. He was a distinguished man, possessed of a good education and no inconsiderable degree of literary enterprise.\* He was moreover very respectably connected, having married Margareta, the widow of the Hon. Cornelis Steenwyck of New Amsterdam, and July 25, 1662, again married Machtelima Specht, of Utrecht in Holland. Some time after his arrival in America, he addressed to Cotton Mather, on the appearance of his great work, the *Magnalia*, a

\* It has been mentioned that the Rev. Mr. Solinus left the church in 1664 and returned to Holland. At the earnest solicitation of the people of New York, he was induced to revisit America in 1682, and continued the pastor of the Dutch Church in that city till his decease in 1701. He was, as above mentioned, a man of classical taste and learning, and was highly esteemed in his day. He also cultivated a love for poetry, of which a few specimens in Latin and Dutch are preserved. He left a complete list of the members of his congregation in 1686, which is contained in the New York Historical Society's Collections.



Latin poem, which is still extant in some editions of that singular work. This may be called the second period of the Dutch Church in America, extending from 1664 to the year 1693. At this era the Dutch churches in New York, though under the civil government of Great Britain, still acknowledged the authority of that classis and that synod in Holland to which they had formerly submitted, and still received ministers from them as before. And that classis and synod also continued to watch over these American churches and to cherish them with paternal care and affection. During this period the Dutch Church in America was somewhat extended. Two or three more congregations were organized on Long Island, near the city of New York. Another was formed in the city of Schenectady; one on Staten Island, or Richmond County; three or four in different towns on the Hudson; and several, it is believed, in the colony of New Jersey. The precise dates, however, of these establishments, it is now difficult to determine.

Such was the situation of the Dutch Church from 1664 to 1693; not, indeed, established by law, but greatly predominant in numbers and decidedly pre-eminent in wealth and respectability. This pre-eminence, however, was in a considerable degree surrendered in the year last mentioned. In that year Colonel Benjamin Fletcher, who had been appointed governor the year before, a man of great ardor and boldness, and one who was inordinately devoted to the Episcopal Church, urged a kind of religious establishment in favor of that church. It assumed the air of bigotry. The Episcopalians were not the dominant sect. There were at that time, indeed, but few Episcopalians in the colony. These chiefly resided in the city of New York, and in the counties immedi-

ately adjacent. They consisted, for the most part, of the officers of government and their dependents, and a portion of the military force. To establish the Episcopal Church under these circumstances was so evidently unreasonable and unjust, that scarcely any one would have proposed it but a person of Governor Fletcher's bigoted character. He met, and justly, too, with no small difficulties in the attainment of his object. The house of assembly, when it was first proposed to them, were decidedly hostile to the measure. But, being partly hoodwinked, and partly threatened and bullied into the measure by the governor, they at last reluctantly agreed to the plan and passed an act on the 21st of September, 1693, *establishing* the Episcopal Church in the city and county of *New York*, and in the counties of *Westchester*, *Queens*, and *Richmond*. The act was drawn and the whole business conducted in a most artful and cunning manner. The inhabitants of each of the counties above mentioned were directed by this act to choose annually ten vestrymen and two church wardens. These vestrymen and church wardens were empowered to make choice of the minister or ministers for each district. And for the support of these ministers, a certain sum was directed to be assessed on the inhabitants at large of all denominations and raised in each county. The act, indeed, did not explicitly enjoin that the ministers thus chosen should be of the Episcopal Church; and by an explanatory act passed several years afterwards, it was even declared that *dissenting ministers might be chosen*. But by *lodging the right of choice with the vestrymen and church wardens alone*, it was well known that Episcopal ministers would be always, of course, elected.

It has been seen that the right of soil was early obtained by the first Dutch settlers from the neighboring tribe inhabiting the place called Canarsie (or Canausee), and that to confirm the same several patents had been issued by the governor; notwithstanding which, in the year 1670, a claim was interposed to the said lands by *Eskemoppas*, sachem of Rockaway and his brothers, as being the true owners thereof; and the inhabitants, to prevent the consequences of perpetual hostility with the new claimants, preferred, for the preservation of peace, and to establish more firmly their title to the lands in dispute, to agree to the payment of a certain consideration which was mutually fixed upon between the parties. The deed or release executed by the said Indians on this occasion is as follows:

“To all christian people to whom this present writing shall come: *Eskemoppas* Sachem of Rockaway upon Long Island, *Kinnarimas* and *Ahawaham*, his brothers, send greeting; Whereas they the said Sachem *Eske-moppas* and his two brothers aforementioned do lay claim to the land now in the tenure and occupation of the inhabitants of Midwout, alias Flatbush, as well as to other lands thereto adjacent as the right born Indian owners and proprietors thereof: know ye, that for, and in consideration of certain sums of seewant, a certain sum of wampum and divers other goods, unto the Sachem, and his brothers, in hand paid, and received from Adrian Hegeman, Jacob Stryker, Hendrick Jorise and Jan Hansen, for and on behalf of themselves and the rest of the inhabitants of Midwout, alias Flatbush, the receipt whereof they do hereby acknowledge, and themselves to be fully satisfied and paid: Have given, granted, contracted and sold, and by these presents, freely and absolutely do, give, grant, bargain, and sell unto the said Adrian Hegeman,

Jacob Stryker, Hendrick Jorise and Jan Hansen, for and in behalf of themselves and the inhabitants aforesaid, their heirs and successors: All that parcel and tract of land where the said town of Midwout stands, together with all the lands lying therein, stretching on the east side to the limits of Newtown and Jamaica, on the south side to the meadow ground and limits of Amersfort; on the west side to the bounds of Gravesend and New Utrecht, and on the north side along the Hills; that is to say, all those lands within the limits aforementioned, that have not been already purchased by any of the inhabitants of the town aforementioned, nor is granted to any in their respective Patents. And also excepting such meadow or valley in the possession of the said inhabitants and in thier patent particularly set forth. To have and to hold, all the said parcel and tract of land and premises, together with all and singular, every thing thereunto belonging, together with the said valley or meadow ground, unto the said Adrian Hegeman, Jacob Stryker, Hendrick Joris and Jan Hansen, for and on behalf of the inhabitants aforesaid, their heirs and successors, to the proper use and behalf of the said inhabitants, their heirs and successors forever. In witness whereof, the parties to these presents have hereunto set their hands and seals, this 20<sup>th</sup> day of April, in the 22<sup>d</sup> year of his Majesty's Reign, in the year of our Lord, 1670.

“ESKEMOPPAS, *F*, mark. [L. S.]

KINNARIMAS *ℰ*, mark. [L. S.]

AHAWAHAM *C*, mark.” [L. S.]

“In the presence of

“THOMAS LOVELACE,

“CORNELIUS VAN RUYVEN.

“The consideration 10 fathoms of black seewant—10 of white—5 match coats—4 blankets—2 guns—2 pistols—5 double handfulls of powder—5 bars of lead—10

knives—2 aprons of Duffels—I half fat (or barrel) of strong beer—2 cans of brandy and 6 shirts.

"Acknowledged before me to have been received.

"FRANCIS LOVELACE."

That part of the town now called *New Lots*, was by the Dutch called *Ostwout*, or *East Woods*, and was situated eastward of the old settlement of *Midwout* or *Flatbush* (and connected therewith by a tract of land lying on the northern part of the town, known by the name of *Kenter's Hoeck*,) but whether purchased, if at all, before the execution of the deed last recited, has not been fully discovered; yet the inhabitants obtained a patent for it from Governor Andros, March 25, 1677, in which about forty of the principal inhabitants are named as patentees.

On the 7th of November, 1685, an act was passed by the assembly, to remove the court of sessions from *Gravesend* to this town, it being nearer the centre of the county and of more easy communication with the city. A court house was accordingly erected here in 1686, and remained until another was built in 1758, in which the court room and jail were contained under the same roof, they having previously been separate buildings, one of which was burnt down in the winter of 1757-8. The British officers during the Revolution ordered the seats to be ripped up and converted the hall of justice into a ball-room. The original cost of this building was £448 and having undergone some necessary alterations and repairs, it remained till 1792, when a new and larger edifice was erected in its place. The superintendents of this building were John Vanderbilt, Johannes E. Lott, and Charles Doughty. Here the county courts continued to be held, till the destruction of the court house and jail by fire, November 30, 1832, from which time Brooklyn has



been, and is now, established as the shire town of the county.

In the minutes of the court of sessions it appears that in 1682, some persons having refused payment to the minister, a complaint was made thereof by the constable, whereupon the court ordered that the amount due from such persons should be taken by distress. In 1685, one Theodorus Polhemus, having been elected to the office of constable and refusing to serve, was fined £5 to the public.

In 1677 the churches engaged the *Rev. Casparus Van Zuren*, who, in about ten years, being called to his former church in Holland, returned there in 1685. He married Louisa Hellenius.

He was succeeded by the *Rev. James Clark*, who soon left and was followed the same year by the *Rev. Rudolphus Varick*. He continued till 1694, when the *Rev. Wilhelmus Lupardus* was called, and officiated till his death in 1701.

During the ministry of Mr. Varick, and in the year 1699, a new church was erected. It was of stone, and had a pyramidal roof, sixty-five feet by fifty, and occupied the site of the first one. In 1702 the churches called the *Rev. Bernardus Freeman*, then pastor of the Reformed Dutch Church of Schenectady, who after some delay accepted, but was not installed till November, 1705. In the meantime the *Rev. Vincentius Antonides* had been sent out by the classis of Amsterdam, and was installed as associate pastor of the Dutch churches the same year. The former was a man of fine talents, well educated, and possessed a good store of general literature.

He published, among other things, a volume of sermons, and a work entitled *De Spiegel der Selfkennis*, (or Mirror of Self Knowledge), being a collection (in

Dutch) of ancient moral and philosophical maxims. The work has been recently translated by the Hon. Jeremiah Johnson for publication.

Mr. Freeman married Margretie Van Schaick in 1705, and died in 1741. After which the *Rev. Johannes Arondeus* was installed in 1742, and died in 1754, Mr. Antonides having deceased in July, 1744. The *Rev. Anthony Curtenius* \* was settled in 1745, and continued till his death October 19, 1756. The *Rev. Ulpianus Van Sinderen* was called from Holland and entered upon his pastoral duties here in 1757.

At this time existed the great and disturbing controversy among the Dutch churches, concerning the necessity of foreign ordination. The *coetus party*, as we have seen, warmly insisting on establishing an independent judicatory in America; and the classis of Amsterdam in the end assenting to it, Mr. Van Sinderen was made the happy messenger of their letter of approbation. Perfect harmony was not, however, fully restored to the churches till many years after.

\* The following notice of this gentleman is extracted from a newspaper published in 1756:—"On Tuesday the 19th ultimo, the Reverend Mr. ANTHONY CURTENIUS departed this transitory Life at Flat-Bush, Long Island, in the fifty-ninth Year of his Age, after an Illness of about four Weeks, being Pastor of the five Dutch Reformed Churches in Kings County on Long Island: He was a gentleman regularly educated, and remarkable for his indefatigable Diligence in the Ministration of his Function; his Actions in all the Affairs of Life have ever been accompanied with the strictest Rules of Justice, so that none could with more Propriety claim the Title of Preacher and a sincere Christian, which not only his Morals manifested, but his glorious Resolutions to launch into endless Eternity, saying with *St. Paul, O Death! where is thy Sting? O Grave, where is thy Victory?* His Remains were decently interred on Thursday following in the Church of the above-mentioned Place; his Death is universally lamented by his Relations, and all those that knew him, particularly his Congregation, who are highly sensible of the Loss of so inestimable a Shepherd, whose every Action displayed the Christian."

Mr. Van Sinderen was reputed a man of good acquirements, yet at the same time he was eccentric and often injudicious.

The *Rev. Johannes Casparus Rubel* was established here in August, 1759, as the colleague of Mr. Van Sinderen, but was deposed for intemperance in 1784. In the same year Mr. Van Sinderen resigned his charge, and died July 23, 1796. Mr. Rubel died in 1799.

In 1785 an invitation was given to the *Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker*, then preaching at Gravesend and Harlem, which he accepted, and remained here till the close of his life, at the age of eighty-seven, May 20, 1824. With this venerable pastor ended the custom of preaching in the Dutch language, a practice to which he was so much attached that only once (1788) did he attempt to officiate in English.

He was the second son of Joachim and Lydia Schoonmaker, and was born at Rochester, Ulster County, N. Y., March 1, 1737. He commenced classical studies with the Rev. Mr. Goetschius of Schraalenburgh, N. J., 1753, and his theological with the Rev. Mr. Marenus of Aquaknock in 1759, and June 27, 1761, he married Mary, daughter of Stephen and Ann Bassett of that place. He was licensed to preach in 1763, and first received a call from the congregation of Harlem and Gravesend, which he accepted. In 1781 he received a call from the particular churches of Gravesend, Success, and Wolver Hollow, in which he served till 1784, when he was elected to preside over the six collegiate churches of Kings County at a salary of £150 a year. He took up his residence at this time in Flatbush, where he spent his days. His wife died in 1819, aged eighty. He left issue six sons and five daughters; nine of whom arrived to full

age, and seven survived their father. He had at the time of his death, fifty-nine grandchildren and twenty-one great-grandchildren.

In his eightieth year he was heard to declare that he could not complain of a single bodily infirmity, even his sight and hearing being perfect; yet that his age admonished him he had not long to live. "His labors in the ministry (says his successor) for sixty-one years, were arduous, yet was he never known to faint in his Master's cause, and few men have gone to the grave with a character more unblemished, or one more universally respected and beloved."

The *Rev. Peter Lowe*, of Ulster County, was installed colleague pastor with Mr. Schoonmaker, October 28, 1787, and continued to preach in the old church till it was taken down in 1794. The new structure commenced the year before was not completed till December, 1796. It is also of stone, fifty by sixty-five feet, the materials of the former church being used in the new structure, which has a fine bell presented by John Vanderbilt, Esq., who also imported some Dutch bricks from Holland, which were inserted around the windows and doors of the church.

Mr. Lowe died greatly beloved, June 10, 1818, aged fifty-four, and in the fall of that year the churches of Flatbush and Flatlands called the *Rev. Walter Monteith*, who was installed in 1819, but resigned April 13, 1820, and removed to Schenectady, from which time till May, 1822, the church remained vacant. The *Rev. Thomas Morris Strong, D.D.*, son of Joseph Strong, Esq., of New York, was born April 18, 1797, graduated at Columbia College in 1816, and settled in the associate Reformed Dutch churches of Chambersburgh and Shippensborough,

Penn., in 1819. He was installed here November 17, 1822, and married Ellen, daughter of William Campbell of Baltimore in 1822, who died at the age of thirty-six years, August 14, 1832. November 26, 1835, he married Elizabeth C., daughter of the Rev. Isaac Grier of Pennsylvania, and maternal granddaughter of the Rev. Dr. Robert Cooper, Cumberland County, Pennsylvania.

“ Dr. Strong officiated until his death on June 14, 1861. During Dr. Strong's last sickness the pulpit was supplied by his son, Rev. Robert G. Strong, as assistant. Rev. William W. Howard supplied for about two years after Dr. Strong's death. Rev. Cornelius L. Wells was called in April, 1863, and officiated until his death in 1904. For a year the church was vacant, but in the spring of 1906 Rev. John E. Lloyd began to preach and continued to do so until the spring of 1916, when he resigned. Since then the church has had no regular pastor.”—EDITOR.

In 1833 a Reformed Dutch Church was begun in that part of the town called New Lots, and was dedicated in July, 1824. It was soon after connected with the church at Flatlands under the Rev. William Cruikshank, before mentioned, and after his removal became part of the charge, as it now is, of the Rev. John A. Baldwin.

A small Methodist Episcopal Church was erected in the eastern part of the village in 1843, which is used only occasionally and will probably soon be abandoned for lack of zeal as well as members to support it.

*St. Paul's Episcopal Church*, the only one of that denomination in the town, was begun in 1836, the corner stone being laid by the bishop of the diocese, August 13, 1836. It is a beautiful edifice, the cost of which, including the organ, &c., was \$8,480, about two-thirds of which sum was contributed by Matthew Clarkson, Esq., a resi-



dent of the village. Trinity Church, New York, gave \$1,000 in 1842. Of this church, on the 23d of December, 1836, the *Rev. Thomas S. Brittain* was chosen rector, and the *Rev. John F. Messenger* assistant. The latter resigned September 1, 1837, and the *Rev. James Cogan* officiated in his place. Mr. Brittain resigned the rectorship March 29, 1838, and *Mr. Cogan* succeeded as rector on the 6th of April following, but resigned October 21, 1839, and set out for Europe. The *Rev. William Barlow* was inducted March 30, 1840, who resigned in April, 1842, on becoming an instructor at St. Thomas' Hall, Flushing. The *Rev. George Burcker* was instituted rector in 1842, but removed to St. George's Church, Flushing, in 1844, where he died in June, 1847, and was succeeded in this church by the *Rev. William H. Newman* from Rhode Island.

*Erasmus Hall*, which has always been among the most popular institutions of learning, was projected by the *Rev. John H. Livingston* and the *Hon. John Vanderbilt*, soon after the declaration of peace in 1783. In 1786 the sum of \$2,287 was raised toward the object, of which Mr. Vanderbilt gave \$250. The building, one hundred feet by thirty-six, was erected the same year, the whole expense of which was \$6,250. The school was incorporated by the regents of the university, November 17, 1787, and the first trustees were:

Comfort Sands	John Vanderbilt	George Martense
Phillip Nagel	Walter Minto	Jacob Lefferts
Peter Cornell	Peter Lefferts	William B. Gifford
John H. Livingston	Johannes E. Lott	Hendrick Suydam
James Wilson	Aquilla Giles	John J. Vanderbilt
Samuel Provost	Cornelius Vanderveer	Martinus Schoonmaker
	John Mason	

Among the list of contributors to the building are the

names of George Clinton, John Jay, Robert R. Livingston, Aaron Burr, John Sloss Hobart, Richard Platt, Brockholst Livingston, Alexander Hamilton, Edward Livingston, and thirty-two others.

The Rev. John H. Livingston, D.D., was appointed principal in 1787, but resigned in 1792. His successors were Peter Wilson, LL.D.; Rev. Peter Lowe, Rev. Joseph Penny, Rev. Timothy Clowes, LL.D.; Jonathan W. Kellogg, Rev. William H. Campbell, Rev. Dr. Penny, Mr. James Ferguson, and the present incumbent, the Rev. R. D. Van Kleeck.

The edifice is large, spacious, and airy, and is a very complete establishment in all respects; having sufficient grounds, filled with forest and ornamental trees, shrubbery, and flowering plants. It has also a library of more than 1,500 volumes, besides a philosophical apparatus and mineralogical cabinet.

Among the number who have received a classical education at this seminary, may be mentioned the following: William A. Duer, late president of Columbia College; his brother, John Duer; John McPherson Berrien, late Attorney General of the United States; George M. Troup, governor of Georgia; Rev. John Blair Linn, late minister of the Dutch Church, New York; Rev. John H. Meyers, Rev. Jacob Schoonmaker, D.D.; Rev. Peter Labagh, Rev. Peter Van Pelt, Rev. Phillip Duryee, and the Hon. John A. Lott.

In the year 1807, one of the most extensive printing establishments in the United States was established here by the late Isaac Riley, who married the sister of Richard Alsop, Esq. It continued in operation about seven years, and was then broken up, not answering the expectations of its projector.

The Rev. Dr. Strong, in his excellent account of this town, mentions the establishment of a public brewery, besides private ones. The former consisting of fourteen shares, subdivided into smaller portions, and belonged to the several farms as appurtenant thereto, which were sold or devised therewith, as some old deeds and wills testify. This public brew-house was standing up at the close of the Revolution, when it was disposed of and the proceeds divided among the shareholders. The principle of total abstinence from all that can intoxicate, observes the writer, was not then known, and beer or malt liquor was the common beverage of the inhabitants.

The *Poor House* of the county of Kings is located at a short distance from the village; the farm appertaining to which contains sixty acres of excellent land, the cost of which was \$3,000. The main building, the corner stone of which was laid July 9, 1831, is forty-four feet square, with wings, each sixty by thirty-five feet. The whole is two stories in height. There is also a detached building which is appropriated to patients laboring under infectious diseases, and another intended for deranged persons, where the unfortunate individuals are treated with all the attention that humanity requires.

A part of the same benevolent plan for the relief of suffering humanity is the Kings County Lunatic Asylum, situated near the poor house, which is ninety feet by thirty-six, three stories high, and was finished in the spring of 1845. The apartments are eighty in number, and warmed with hot water circulating through iron tubes; whole cost \$16,000.

*East New York*,<sup>1</sup> is already a village of some impor-

<sup>1</sup> Later included in the town of New Lots.—EDITOR.

tance in the north-east part of the town, and owes its existence to the enterprise and untiring exertions of John R. Pitkin, Esq., a gentleman not more distinguished for his intelligence than for his singular industry and indefatigable perseverance in whatever he undertakes. With him a failure is not considered a defeat; and instead of relaxing, adds additional stimulus to exertion. The place will doubtless become an important location for manufactures and mechanical industry, being advantageously situated on the line of the Long Island Railroad, and only six miles from the ferry. Several streets and avenues are partially built up, and a good deal of manufacturing has already been accomplished. A Reformed Dutch Church was erected in 1838, and dedicated the following spring, when the *Rev. William H. Campbell* was installed pastor, who removed in the fall of 1841 to the Third Reformed Dutch Church in the city of Albany, and the Rev. Martinus V. Schoonmaker was installed September 25, 1842. He is the son of Jacobus, and grandson of the Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker, former pastor of Flatbush. He graduated at Union College 1839, and married Catherine Colwell of Allegheny City, Penn., January 29, 1846.

A small German Lutheran Church was also erected here in 1847.

The following persons have held the office of town clerk at various periods from 1650:

Adrien Hegeman  
Jacob Joosten  
Francays De Bruynne  
Michael Hainell  
Jan Gerrit Van Marckje  
Derick Storm  
Johannes Van Eklen  
Johannes Schenck

Abraham Lott  
John Gancell  
Adrian Hegeman  
Jeremiah Vanderbilt  
Petrus Van Steenberg  
John Lefferts  
Phillip Nagle  
John Vanderbilt

John C. Vanderveer  
Garret Stryker  
Abraham Vanderveer  
Adrian Hegeman  
William Ellsworth  
William Hegeman  
John A. Lott  
James V. B. Wyckoff

The number of acres of land in this town is about 10,500, and the number of inhabitants in 1845, was 2,225, being an increase of 136 in five years.

---

“The *Cypress Hills*<sup>1</sup> has become, it is believed, *the largest Cemetery in the Country*, and artists and workmen have been employed to lay out the grounds and embellish them with taste and beauty. The location of the Cypress Hills is on the north side of the Brooklyn and Jamaica turnpike—less than two miles beyond the limits of the city of Brooklyn. A high range of beautiful hills runs through it, commanding the most extensive views of the Ocean, Brooklyn, Williamsburgh and New York. A more picturesque or beautiful tract of land can hardly be found. There are 150 acres of heavy forests, 100 of shrubbery, and a large lawn planted with trees and flowers. There is a great number of cold Spring Lakes on the grounds—there will be about sixty miles of fine carriage roads through the Cemetery, and the grounds will be richly embellished in the style of a Landscape Garden. The Long Island Railroad passes within about eighty rods of the Cemetery, and all the trains have their regular stopping place there. An extra train can be procured to go to Cypress Hills at *any hour of any day*, carrying out and bringing back sixty persons or less, with a body for interment, for the low price of TEN DOLLARS. There is a Sexton on the grounds with a hearse ready to meet all processions at the Railway, and carry the body to the grave.

For the use of hearse, opening and closing grave	
and attendance of Sexton.....	\$2 50
(For children, 50 cents less.)	
Same services without hearse.....	2 00

<sup>1</sup> Cypress Hills was later included in the town of New Lots.—EDITOR.



For children .....	1 50
For ground for a single grave (32 square feet) with a warrantee certificate of same, opening and closing of grave, use of hearse, and at- tendance of Sexton.....	6 00
Same for children .....	4 00

“ On any of the grounds now laid out, all Ecclesiastical, Benevolent, Social and Humane Societies and Associations, who take not less than TEN lots together (half on the avenues and half on the paths), will have them for the low price of \$30. For four lots \$32.50; each and all lots contain 400 square feet, large enough for any family. For a lot \$35, for those on the paths, and \$50 for those on the roads and avenues. The Cemetery was dedicated Nov. 21, 1848, when an address was delivered by C. Edward Lester.”

---

The compiler is indebted for most of the facts contained in this article to the *History of the Town of Flatbush*, published by the Rev. Dr. Strong in 1842, in which he has exhibited industry, talent, and antiquarian research. Should his example be followed by clergymen in other towns, important advantages would be afforded to a large class of readers, and to the lovers of history in general.

---

Died in this village, August 20, 1815, Richard Alsop, Esq., in the fifty-fourth year of his age, leaving a widow, who died at Middletown, her native place, in October, 1829. Mr. Alsop was born at Middletown, Conn., 1761, and was bred a merchant, but devoted himself chiefly to literature, for which he had an unusual fondness, and became familiarly acquainted with the literature not only of his own country, but with that of the principal Eu-

ropean nations. His love of poetry was enthusiastic. Numerous pieces issued from his pen, and were received by the public as evidence of his genius and industry. All his compositions are characterized by great purity of expression, and indicate the peculiar delicacy of thought which appeared in his private life. As a man, a scholar, and a writer, he will be remembered with affection and regret by his acquaintance, and by men of letters. His pieces met with considerable success, besides several translations from the Italian and French. The principal one is the *Natural and Civil History of Chili*, from the Italian of *Molina*, in 2 vols. 8vo. In 1800 he published a Monody in heroic verse on the death of Washington. He wrote principally for amusement, and made little effort at literary distinction; yet his intellectual powers were much above the common level. With a luxurious fancy, he united a great facility of expression and a keenness of wit. In 1791 the *Echo* was set on foot at Hartford, being a series of burlesque pieces, designed to ridicule the inflated style adopted by the Boston editors in describing common events. The writers were Alsop, Hopkins, Dwight, Cogswell, Trumbull, and others, called, by way of distinction, the *Hartford Wits*. From the pen of the first is the following burlesque imitation of a piece in one of the public papers, giving in prose a bombastic account of the burning of a barn by lightning, and is a fair sample of others.

“ At Cambridge town, the self same day,  
A barn was burnt, well fill'd with hay;  
Some say, the lightning turn'd it red,  
Some, that the thunder struck it dead;  
Some say, it made the cattle stare,  
Some, that it killed an aged *mare*,  
But we expect the truth to learn  
From Mr. Rythe, who own'd the barn.”

"An unsuccessful attempt was made in 1873 to include Flatbush within the City of Brooklyn, together with Flatlands, New Utrecht, and Gravesend. The proposition was put before the voters of the respective towns and Brooklyn to be decided. Although Brooklyn gave a heavy vote for consolidation, it was turned down in the towns by a large majority and the project abandoned.

"In 1894 a more successful attempt was made, and on April 28th of that year Governor Levi P. Morton signed the bill for the annexation of Flatbush to Brooklyn. The territory became the Twenty-ninth Ward of the city.

"On January 1, 1898, Brooklyn was consolidated with the City of New York, and Flatbush of course became part of the Greater City."—EDITOR.

## NEW LOTS

BY THE EDITOR

THE locality known as New Lots was erected as a town on February 12, 1852. Previous to this date it had been the eastern part of the town of Flatbush, called the "New Lots," in distinction to the "Old Lots," near the village of Flatbush. In area it was the smallest of the Kings County towns, but the largest in population, owing to the rapid growth of East New York. The town contained 13,681 people, according to the census of 1880, which was the last enumeration before consolidation with Brooklyn City.

The town was bounded on the north by Newtown and the City of Brooklyn, on the east by Jamaica, on the south and south-west by Jamaica Bay and Flatlands, and on the west by Flatbush.

The town had four villages: New Lots, East New York, Brownsville, and Cypress Hills. New Lots village was situated on the old road leading from Flatbush and familiarly known as the "old New Lots road." Many substantial residences were located here, also a Dutch Reformed Church and a schoolhouse. Most of the original Dutch settlers lived in this locality.

Particulars of the founding of East New York can be found in the chapter on Flatbush. In spite of the panic of 1837, the founder, John R. Pitkin, persevered and the

village weathered the storm and gradually increased. In 1853 Horace A. Miller and James Butler started developments which added greatly to the growth of the village. Their purchase was a tract of about fifty acres east of Wyckoff Avenue, which they divided into building lots that were eagerly bought and populated. The village also was a junction point of the Long Island Railroad, and the Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad—also the terminal for four horse-car roads, all of which had their part in the growth of the village. Population was 8,000 in 1880, which tremendously increased after consolidation with Brooklyn in 1886.

Brownsville, in the extreme western part of the town, owed its existence to Charles S. Brown, who bought a tract of land about 1865, and divided it into business and residential lots. In 1883 the village contained about 350 dwellings and several fine stores with a total population of about 2,000. Of late years this locality has become the residence of thousands of Hebrews, and is today one of the most densely populated spots in the Borough of Brooklyn, if not in the Greater City of New York.

The settlement or village of Cypress Hills grew up around the cemeteries there located. For details of the Cypress Hills Cemetery we would refer the reader to the chapter on Flatbush. The erection of the Brooklyn Water Works also contributed materially to the advancement of the village. The population in 1833 was about 3,000.

On May 13, 1886, an act which had passed the Legislature making the town of New Lots part of the City of Brooklyn, became a law and the form of town government ceased. After consolidation the population increased



as if by magic, and in 1900 there were nearly 80,000 inhabitants as compared with 13,681 in 1880. When Brooklyn became part of the City of New York, New Lots was of course included.

## BROOKLYN

THIS ancient town, the whole of which is now included in the city of Brooklyn, lies upon the western end of Long Island, opposite the southern portion of the city of New York, and separated from it by the East River which is about one mile in width. The length of the town, from north-east to south-west, is six miles, and its greatest breadth four, giving an area of 9,200 acres, a very considerable part of which is laid out into streets, avenues, and building lots. The general surface is quite elevated, and was originally hilly and stony, hence the ancient name of *Breuckland* or *broken land*.

The soil, in common with the residue of the country, was a part of the territory claimed by the *Canarsie* or *Canausie Indians*, inhabiting the north-eastern portion of it, from whom it is presumed some sort of title was obtained by the Dutch authorities.

The position of this tribe, so near to the bay and at the confluence of the North and East rivers, rendered them obnoxious to invasion from other more numerous and warlike tribes, and they were, therefore, probably tributary to them. They were, likewise, compelled to conciliate the forbearance of their enemies, and thus preserve themselves from extermination by repeated contributions of dried clams, and wampum also, both which

articles their local advantages enabled them to supply in great abundance. At an early period of the settlement by the white people, the natives were advised by them to withhold the accustomed tribute to the other Indians, being promised by their new neighbors full protection, on account of what they considered a most unjust exaction. But it seems, that in consequence of adopting this advice, they were afterwards unexpectedly assailed by a hostile force from different points, and great numbers of them either destroyed on the spot or carried away captives.

The Indian name of this town was *Mareck-ke-wick*, but it was called by the Dutch *Breucklen*, or broken land (Breukelen from an ancient Dutch village, says O'Callaghan), and in the act for dividing the province into counties and towns, passed November 1, 1685, it is called *Breucklyn*; the present manner of spelling the name not appearing to have been adopted until after the Revolution. Many changes have doubtless taken place upon the shores of the town, and it is believed that Governor's Island was once connected with Red Hook Point.

It is well known that, at no long period anterior to the war of our Independence, cattle were driven across what is now called Buttermilk Channel, which at this time is of sufficient depth to afford a passage to vessels of the largest class. The alteration is no doubt attributable to the vast extension of the wharves on both sides of the river, thereby diverting the course and increasing the force of the currents.

The first step towards the settlement of the territory, which later became the town and city of Brooklyn, was the purchase towards the end of 1636, of a tract of land in the Gowanus section by William Adriaense Bennet and

Jacques Bentyu. This purchase was made some months after the Flatlands purchases, although in the same year.

The second step was a purchase made by Joris Jansen de Rapelye at the Wallabout on June 16, 1637. During the same year Nutten or Governor's Island was purchased by Governor Wouter Van Twiller.

On August 1, 1638, Governor Kieft purchased for the West India Company a tract of land now included within the general bounds of the old town of Bushwick and the eastern district of Brooklyn. November 28, of the same year, Thomas Bescher purchased land at Gowanus adjoining the Bennet and Bentyu lands. Frederick Lubbertsen was next with a large tract north of Gowanus Cove, and extending northward along the river; bought May 27, 1640.

Two or three years later other settlers took up their abode along the Brooklyn water front, and from these early pioneers grew the settlement of Brooklyn.

In general there were three settlements spread over this territory, namely, a collection of houses clustering around Gowanus Cove, the ferry to New Amsterdam, and Wallabout Bay.

It was formerly supposed that Sarah, daughter of Joris Jansen de Rapelye, was the first white child born on Long Island. Later investigations proved this to be an error. Sarah was born at Albany, from whence her parents moved to New Amsterdam, and finally, after 1637, to the Wallabout.

She was twice married; first to Hans Hansen Bergen, by whom she had six children, namely, Michael Hansen, Joris Hansen, Jan Hansen, Jacob Hansen, Breckje Hansen, and Marytje Hansen. Her second husband was Teunis Guisbert Bogaert, by whom also she had six chil-

dren, namely, Aurtie, Antje, Neelje, Aultje, Catalyntje, and Guysbert. The account of this remarkable woman in the archives of the New York Historical Society contains the names of the persons to whom eleven of her children were married, and the places also where they settled. The fifth child, Breckje Hansen, it seems, went to Holland.

In the journal of the Dutch council, 1656, it is related that "the widow of Hans Hansen, burdened with seven children, petitions for a grant of a piece of meadow, in addition to the twenty morgan granted to her at the Waale-Boght."

The other children of Joris Jansen de Rapelje were as follows:

2. Marretie, born March 11, 1627; married Michael Van De Voert.
3. Jannetie, born August 18, 1629; married Rem Jansen Van De Beeck.
4. Judick, born July 5, 1635; married Peter Van Nest.
5. Jan, born August 28, 1637; married Mary, a daughter of Frederick Meyer, and left no issue.
6. Jacob, born May 28, 1639; killed by the Indians.
7. Catalyntje, born March 28, 1641; married Jeremiah Westerhout.
8. Jeronemus, born January 27, 1643; married Annetie, daughter of Teunis Denis.
9. Annetie, born February 8, 1646; married Marte Ryerse.
10. Elizabeth, born March 8, 1648; married Derrick Hogelandt.
11. Daniel, born December 29, 1650; married Sara Clock.

A few of the associates of de Rapelje were Le Escuyer (now Luqueer), Duryee, La Sillier, Cershow, Conscilaer, Musserol; these names, with some changes in the mode of spelling, are still found among us.

An early deed for land was given by Governor Kieft to Abraham Rycken (or Riker) in 1638. He was the common ancestor of the Riker family upon Long Island. The land mentioned in this deed was situated near the



head of the bay formed by the projections of Red and Yellow Hook, and described as "a certain piece of land situated upon Long Island, over against Rennegaconck, extending from the creeke into the woods, E. N. E., and W. S. W.; in size the length of the creeke, and in right breadth 500 rods, to which is added a third part of the Hay-Vly, situated behind the land of George Rapelje and Guisbert Ryken, upon the express condition and agreement that he, Abraham Ryken, or those who hereafter by virtue of his deed, shall acknowledge the noble Lords-Managers as his Lords and Patrons, and shall recognize the sovereignty of the High and Mighty Lords, the States General: and their Director and Council here in all things obey as good citizens are bound to do: and also submit to all such taxes and regulations as have been appointed or hereafter shall be appointed by the noble Lords—giving to the said Abraham Ryken, by these presents, full and irrevocable right, authority and special command, to enjoy the aforesaid piece of land, to own, inherit, and use as he would his other patrimonial lands and effects."

This conveyance was further confirmed August 8, 1640.\*

In 1641 the governor and council, in order to strengthen their claim to Long Island, consented that English emigrants should settle under their jurisdiction also, on taking the oath of allegiance to the States General, and the Dutch West India Company. The following grant for land in 1642, is given as a specimen of the mode of conveyances at that remote period:

\* The original of this patent, written on parchment, and in the Dutch language, is now in possession of James Riker, Jr., a descendant of said Abraham Riker of the seventh generation—J. R. Jr.

“ By William Kieft, Director General and Counsellor, about the high and mighty Lords, the States General of the United Low Country, and his highness of Orange, and the Lords Commanders of the privileged West India Company, residing in the New Netherland, do ratify and declare by these presents, that we, upon the date herein-after written, did give and grant to Jan Manje, a piece of land, greatly twenty morgan, stretching about south-east one hundred and ninety rods inward the woods, towards to Sassians maise land—long is the limits of the said maise land fifty rod, and then again to the water side, two hundred and twenty rod, about north north-west, well so northerly and along the strand or water side, seventy rod. Which above said land is lying upon Long Island, between Andries Hudde and Claes Janse Ruyter. With express conditions, &c. Dated at Fort Amsterdam, in the New Netherland, the 11th day of September, 1642.

“ WILLIAM KIEFT.”

“ By order of the Lord the Director General, and Counsellor of New Netherland.

“ CORNELIUS VANTIENHOVEN, *Sec'ry.*”

Between the years 1642 and 1647, grants were made by Governor Kieft to different individuals, for all the lands lying near the Brooklyn shore from Red Hook Point to the Wallabout Bay, which were generally in the above form.

In 1646 the inhabitants were authorized to elect two schepens, or magistrates, with power to decide all cases within their jurisdiction, according to their charter; and to adjoin others to their number, should the duties of their office become too onerous. These privileges were subsequently enlarged, and a schout, or sheriff, appointed (Jan Teunissen), to aid the magistrates in the execution of their office.

January 29, 1652, Pieter Linde, having married the widow of Jan Manje, transported (sold and conveyed) Manje's tract of land to Barent Janse. August 23, 1674, before Nicasius de Sille, admitted secretary of the Dutch towns, appeared Jan Barentse,\* and Auke Janse, with Simon Hansen, as guardian of the other children of Barent Janse, deceased, "procured by his wife Styntie Pieterse, deceased, all living within the town of Midwout Fflackbush," and declared that they transported the above tract of land to Dirck Janse Woertman.

September 12, 1645, William Kieft, director general, &c., patented to Andries Huddie, "a piece of land lying upon Long Island, over against the fort, to the south-west of Jan Manje," containing thirty-seven morgen. September 10, 1650, Pieter Cornelissen, by virtue of a procuratie of Andries Huddie, and for the consideration of 400 guilders, transported to Lodewyck Jongh the above tract. July 19, 1676, the widow of Lodewyck Jongh transported to Jeronemus de Rapelje eight morgen of the above tract. February 12, 1679, Harmatie Jansen, relict of Lodewyck Jongh, transported to Dirck Janse Woertman twelve morgen of the same tract. May 3, 1685, Dirck Janse Woertman transported to the heirs of Jooris Dirckse "a small stroke off land lying at the east side off the highway, being all the claime they can pretende by virtue off the abovesaid Pattend."

September 30, 1645, William Kieft, director general &c., patented to Claes Jansen Van Naerden, or Claes Jansen Ruyter, a piece of land, containing twenty morgen, lying south-east, a little easterly, just over against

\* The custom of changing the names of sons, or rather substituting the surnames for the Christian name, prevailed at this period; as in the above instance, the father's name was Barent Janse, and the son was called Jan Barentse, i.e., John, son of Barent.

the Fort, upon Long Island. March 11, 1660, the above tract of land was transported by Claes Jansen Ruyter to Machiell Tadens, who transported the same to Machiell Hainielle.

The three patents to Manje, Huddie, and Jansen Van Naerden were located near the ferry in this town, and all subsequently were purchased by Derick Woertman, alias Dirck Janse Woertman, and were sold by him to Joris Remsen, on the 10th day of October, 1706, for the sum of £612, 10s. current money of New York.

That a general and prior patent had been granted to the town is certain, from the circumstance that such a patent is particularly referred to in the one subsequently executed by Governor Nicoll, and also in conveyances between individuals at a period still more remote, as the following extract from the records evinces:

*"Aug. 10th, 1695.*—The patentees and freeholders of the town sold unto Stephanus Van Cortlandt the neck of land called Red Hook, containing, by estimation, fifty acres; which they state in their deed was formerly given and granted to the town of Broocklyn in the year 1657, by Governor Stuyvesant, the Dutch governor, then, at that time, and since confirmed by the English governors, Nicolls and Dongan."

October 18, 1667, his Excellency, Richard Nicoll, first English governor of New York, granted to the inhabitants of Brooklyn the following full and ample patent, thereby confirming them fully in their most important rights and privileges.

"Richard Nicolls, Esq. Governor General  
[L. s.] under his Royal Highness James Duke of  
Yorke and Albany, &c. of all his Terretorys  
in America, To all to whom these presents shall come,

sendeth Greeting. Whereas there is a certain town within this government, situate, lying and being in the West Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, commonly called and known by the name of Breukelen, which said town is in the tenure and occupation of several freeholders and inhabitants, who, having heretofore been seated there by authority, and planting a considerable part of the land belonging thereunto and settled a competent number of families thereupon.

“ Now for a confirmation unto the said freeholders and inhabitants in their possessions and enjoyment of the premises, Know ye, That by virtue of the commission and authority unto me given by his Royal Highness, I have given, ratified, confirmed and granted, and by these presents do give, ratify, confirm and grant, unto Jan Everts, Jan Damen, Albert Cornelissen, Paulus Veerbeek, Michael Eney, Thomas Lamberts, Tuenis Guysbert Bogart and Joris Jacobsen, as patentees, for and on the behalf of themselves and their associates, the freeholders and inhabitants of the said town their heirs, successors and assigns, all that tract together with the several parcels of land which already have or hereafter shall be purchased or procured for and on behalf of the said town, whether from the native Indian proprietors, or in the bounds and limits hereafter set forth and exprest—viz. that is to say, the town is bounded westward on the farther side of Mr. Paulus Veerbeek, from whence, stretching southeast, they goe over the hills, and to the eastward along the said hills to a southeast point which takes in all the lotts behind the swamp; from which said lotts they run northwest to the river and extend to the farm on the t’other side of the hill heretofore belonging to Hans Hansen, over against the Kicke or Looke-out, including within the said bounds and limits all the lots and plantations lying and being at the Gowanis, Bedford, Wallabought, and the Ferry.



“ All which said parcels and tracts of land and premises within the bounds and limits aforementioned, described, and all or any plantation or plantations thereupon, from henceforth are to bee, appertaine and belong to the said town of Breucklen; together with all havens, harbors, creeks, quarryes, woodland, meadow-ground, reed-land, or valley of all sorts, pastures, marshes, runs, rivers, lakes, hunting, fishing, hawking, and fowling, and all other profitts, commodities, emoluments, and hereditaments, to the said lands and premises within the bounds and limits aforesaid belonging, or in any wise appertaining.

“ And withal to have freedome of commonage for range and feed of cattle and horse into the woods, as well without as within these bounds and limits, with the rest of their neighbors; as also one-third part of a certain neck of meadow-ground or valley called Seller's Neck, lying and being within the limits of the town of Jamaica, purchased by the said town of Jamaica from the Indians, and sold by them unto inhabitants of Breucklen aforesaid, as it has lately been laid out and divided by their mutual consent and my order, whereunto and from which they are likewise to have free egress and regress as their occasions may require.

“ To have and to hold all and singular the said tract and parcell of land, meadow ground or valley, commonage, hereditaments, and premises with thier and every of thier appurtenances and every part and parcel thereof to the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assigns, to the proper use and behoof of the said patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assigns forever. Moreover, I do hereby give, ratify, confirm and grant unto the said Patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assigns, all the rights and privileges belonging to a town within this government, and that the place of their present habitation shall

continue and retain the name of Breuckelen, by which name and stile it shall be distinguished and known in all bargains and sales made by them the said Patentees and their associates, their heirs, successors and assigns, rendering and paying such duties and acknowledgments as now are, or hereafter shall be constituted and established by the laws of this government under the obedience of his Royal highness, his heirs and successors.

“ Given under my hand and seal at Fort James, in New York, on the Island of Manhattan, this 18th day of October, in the nineteenth year of the reign of our Sovereign Lord, Charles the second, by the grace of God, of England, Scotland, France and Ireland, King, Defender of the faith, &c. Annoque Domini, 1667.

“ RICHARD NICOLL.”

In 1670 the inhabitants, being desirous of increasing the quantity of their common lands by extinguishing the Indian claim to lands not yet purchased, made application to Governor Lovelace, and obtained from him the following license :

“ Whereas, the inhabitants of Breucklyn, in the [L. s.] West Riding of Yorkshire, upon Long Island, who were seated there in a township by the authority then in being; and having bin at considerable charges in clearing, ffencing, and manuring their land, as well as building ffor their conveniency; have requested my lycense for their further security, to make purchase of the said land of some Indians, who lay claim and interest therein. These are to certify all whom it may concerne, that I have and doe hereby give the said inhabitants lycense to purchase their land according to their request, the said Indians concerned appearing before me, as in the law is required, and making their acknowledgments as to fully satisfied and payd for the same. Given under my

hand and seal at ffort James, in New-Yorke, this ffirst of May, in the 22d year of his Majestyes reigne, Anno Dom. 1670.

“ FRANCIS LOVELACE.”

The above purchase had been agreed upon on the 14th of May, 1670, between the town and five Indian chiefs, from whom the following conveyance was procured:

“ To all people to whom this present writing shall come, Peter, Elmohar, Job, Makagaquos and Shameese, late of Staten Island, send greeting: Whereas, they the said Peter, Elmohar, Job, Makagaquos and Shameese, aforementioned, doe lay claim to the land now in the tenure and occupation of the inhabitants of Breucklyn as well as other lands there adjacent, as the true Indian owners and proprietors thereof, Know Yee, that for and in consideration of a certaine sum of wampum and diverse other goods, the which in the Schedule annext are exprest unto the said Sachems in hand payd by Monsieur Machiell Hainelle, Thomas Lambertse, John Lewis, and Peter Darmantier, on the behalf of themselves and the inhabitants of Breucklyn, the receipt whereof they doe hereby acknowledge, and themselves to be fully satisfyed and paid therefore; have given, granted, bargained and sold, and by these presents doe fully, freely and absolutely give, grant, bargain and sell, unto the said Monsieur Machiell Hainelle, Thomas Lambertse, John Lewis and Peter Darmantier, ffor and on behalf of themselves, and the inhabitants aforesaid, their heys and successors; all that parcell of land and tract of land, in and about Bedford, within the jurisdiction of Brucklyn, beginning ffrom Hendrick Van Arnheims land by a swamp of water and stretching to the hills, then going along the hills to the port or entrance thereof, and soe to Rockaway ffoot path as their purchase is more particularly sett fforth.

“ To have and to hold all the said parcell and tract of

land and premises within the limits before described unto the said Monsieur Machiell Hainelle, Thomas Lambertse, John Lewis, and Peter Darmantier, ffor and on the behalf of the inhabitants aforesaid, their heyres and successors, to the proper use and behooff of the said inhabitants, their heyres and successors forever: In witness whereof the partyes to these presents have hereunto sett their hands and seales, this 14th day of May, in the 22nd yeare of his Majestyes reigne, Annoque Dom. 1670."

"Sealed and delivered in the presence of Matthias Nicoll, R. Lough, Samuel Davis and John Garland." It was the same day acknowledged before the Governor. The consideration paid was "100 guilders, *seawant*; half a ton of strong beer; two half tons of *good beer*; 3 guns, long barrels; with each a pound of powder, and lead proportionable, 2 bars to a gun, and 4 match coats."

In addition to the several patents obtained as aforesaid by the inhabitants of the town, Governor Dongan insisted that a confirmatory patent was necessary to be executed by him, which was made accordingly. This patent after reciting the boundaries existing in former grants, and referring in particular to that issued by Governor Nicoll in 1667 (the powers and privileges of which are allowed to the fullest extent), concludes as follows:

"Now know ye, that I, the said Thomas Dongan, by virtue of the commission and authority derived from me, and power in me residing, have granted, ratified and confirmed, and by these presents do grant, ratifie and confirm, unto Teunis Gysberts, Thomas Lamberts, Peter Jansen, Jacobus Vander Water, Jan Dame, Joris Jacobs, Jeronimus Rapalle, Daniel Rapelle, Jan Jansen, Adrian Bennet, and Michael Hanse, for and on the behalf of themselves and the rest of the present freeholders and inhabitants of the said town of Breucklin, their heirs and

assigns for ever, all and singular the afore-recited tract and parcels of land set forth, limited and bounded as aforesaid; together with all and singular the houses, messuages, tenements, fencings, buildings, gardens, orchards, trees, woods, underwoods, pastures, feedings, common of pasture, meadows, marshes, lakes, ponds, creeks, harbors, rivers, rivulets, brooks, streams, highways and easements whatsoever, belonging or in any wise appertaining to any of the afore-recited tract or parcells of land and divisions, allotments, settlements made and appropriated before the day and date hereof."

"To Have and To Hold, all and singular, the said tract or parcels of land and premises, with their, and every of their appurtenances, unto the said Teunis Gysberts, Thomas Lamberts, Peter Jansen, Jacobus Vander Water, Joris Jacobs, Jeronimus Rappalle, Daniel Rappalle, Jan Jansen, Adrian Bennet, and Michael Hanse, for and on behalf of themselves and the present freeholders and inhabitants of the town of Breucklen, their and every of their heirs and assigns for ever, as tenants in common without any let, hindrance, molestation, right of survivorship or otherwise, to be holden in free and common socage according to the tenure of East Greenwich, in the county of Kent, in his Majesty's kingdom of England. Yielding, rendering, and paying therefor yearly, and every year, on the five and twentyeth day of March, for ever, in lieu of all services and demands whatsoever, as a quit rent to his most sacred Majesty aforesaid, his heirs and successors, at the city of New York, twenty bushels of good merchantable wheat. In testimony whereof, I have caused these presents to be entered and recorded in the Secretary's office, and the seal of the Province to be hereunto affixed this thirteenth day of May, Anno Domini, one thousand six hundred and eighty-six, and in the second year of his Majesty's reign."

"THOMAS DONGAN."



Under this and other patents, considerable sums have been paid at different times as quit-rents, for which receipts have been preserved. June 8, 1713, there was paid to Benjamin Vanderwater, treasurer, the sum of £96, 7s., 1d., for upwards of sixteen years quit-rent. April 6, 1775, Charles Debevoise, collector of the town, paid to the receiver general of the colony, twenty bushels of wheat for one year's quit-rent; and, November 9, 1786, Fernandus Sydam and Charles C. Doughty, two of the trustees of the town, paid to the treasurer of this state, £105, 10s. in full for arrears of quit-rent due from the town.

During the early years of the colony, the ferry then in use went from near the foot of Joralemon Street to the Breede Graft, now Broad Street, in the city of New York; but it is difficult, says Judge Furman, to ascertain the exact period when the ferry was first established at its present situation, on the Brooklyn side. It appears that, in 1693, John Areson, then lessee of the ferry, complained of his inability to pay the rent of £147, and it was in consequence thereof, reduced to £140.

At this time the ferriage for a *single* person was eight stivers in wampum, or a silver two-pence; each person in company, half that sum; and if after sunset, double price; for each horse or beast, one shilling if single, or nine pence if in company. In 1698 Rip Van Dam took a lease of the ferry for seven years at £165 per annum. During the Revolution the old ferry was kept by Van Winkle and Bukett, when the usual charge for crossing was six pence.

The town having acquired so great an extent of common land, by the purchase made in 1670, as above mentioned, the inhabitants thought proper to make a division

of it, as well as of their other lands; accordingly, "At a town meeting held on the 25th day of February, 1692-93, at Breuklyn, they Resolved to divide the common lands and woods into three parts, as follows, to witt:

"1. All the lands and woods after Bedford and Cripplebush, over the hills to the path of Newlots, shall belong to the inhabitants and freeholders of the town of Gowanus, beginning from Jacob Brewer and soe to the uttermost bounds of the limits of New Utrecht.

"2. And all the lands and woods that lyes betwixt the abovesaid path and the highway from the ferry towards Flatbush, shall belong to the freeholders and inhabitants of Bedford and Cripplebush.

"3. And all the lands that lyes in common after the Gowanus, betwix the limits and bounds of Flatbush and New Utrecht, shall belong to the freeholders and inhabitants of Brooklyn, fred. neck, the ferry and the Wall-ebocht."

This proceeding of the town meeting was allowed of by the court of sessions, held at Flatbush on the 10th of May, 1693.

The following will serve to show the manner in which the inhabitants of the town elected trustees of common lands, and the duties of such trustees:

"Att a towne meeting held this 29th day off April, 1699, at Breucklyn, by order off Justice Machiel Hansseen, ffor to chose townsmen ffor to order all townes business and to deffend theire limitts and bounds, and to dispose and lay out sum part thereof in lotts, to make lawes and orders ffor the best off the inhabitants, and to raise a small tax ffor to defray the towne charges, now being or

hereafter to come, to receive townes revenues, and to pay townes debts; and that with the advice off the Justices off this said towne standing the space and time off two years. Chosen ffor that purpose by pluralitie off votes. Benjamin Van de Water, Joores Hanssen, Jan Garretse Dorlant. By order of the inhabitants aforesaid. I. Vande Water, Clarke."

In consequence of the very great deficiency of records in this town, it has been found impossible to give so connected a history of ancient events, as is on many accounts desirable. That full and interesting records once existed is undoubted, and it is believed they were either destroyed or carried away by the person in possession of them during the Revolution. It was to be expected that, in a state of hostility, every measure would be adopted by either party to afflict its enemies, yet it may be questioned whether destroying or abstracting the records of a country was strictly justifiable by the customs and usages of civilized warfare.

The hope is by some still entertained that these important documents may yet exist, and that by proper exertions they may yet be found deposited in some one of the public offices in England. Some facts of recent occurrence seem to corroborate this opinion; and a correspondence was set on foot a few years since, between General Jeremiah Johnson, supervisor of the town, and Governor Clinton, which led to an imperfect examination in one or more places in London, where it was supposed the said records might chance to be deposited; but, as might have been expected, nothing satisfactory was elicited. The subject matter of this correspondence is sufficiently important to justify its insertion in this place.

*General Johnson to Governor Clinton*

*"Albany, April 11, 1827.*

"SIR:

"I visited this city, in December last, for the purpose of examining the Dutch records and public papers in the secretary's office, particularly the Dutch patents of the towns of Brooklyn, Flatbush, Flatlands, and Jamaica; and not finding them, the search was continued among the English records to the year 1684, wherein I found that in that year the governor and council of the colony issued an order commanding all the inhabitants of the Dutch towns in the provinces of New York and New Jersey to bring their Dutch patents and Indian deeds into the secretary's office in New York. This measure, in my opinion, accounts for the absence of many papers supposed to be lost. Subsequent to my search in the office in 1826, I had been informed that many old papers relating to this state are in the colonial office in London. And, as the records of the town of Brooklyn were removed during the Revolutionary war, I entertain a hope that we may regain them. This information is presented to your Excellency in the expectation that inquiry may be made in London whether the papers alluded to, or authenticated copies, cannot be obtained. The recovery of the records of the town would be of great importance, and the patents and Indian deeds serve to improve the history of the town.

"Yours, respectfully,

"JEREMIAH JOHNSON, *Supervisor.*

"His Excellency, Governor Clinton."

*Governor Clinton to Albert Gallatin, Esq.*

*"Albany, 12th May, 1827*

"SIR:

"I take the liberty of transmitting to you a letter from

General Johnson, a respectable citizen of this state, and of requesting your attention to it. According to a report made at the last session of congress, there will be no difficulty on the part of the British government. The papers wanted may be found in the former plantation office.

“Yours, &c.

“DE WITT CLINTON.

“Albert Gallatin, Esq.”

*Mr. Gallatin to Governor Clinton*

*“London, 25th August, 1827.*

“SIR:

“I had the honor to receive your Excellency’s letter 12th May last, enclosing one from General Johnson, and requesting that application might be made to this government for certain town records, and other papers therein mentioned as having been carried away, and being now either in the colonial office, or that of trade and plantations in London. I regret to say, that after diligent inquiry, and although the various departments here were anxious for the restoration of the papers if they could be found, there is no trace of them whatever. There are two deposits for records and documents connected with the colonies; the office of the Board of Trade and Plantations, and the State Paper office, where the records and papers of the colonial, as well as the home and foreign departments, are kept. There is nothing in the colonial office; and you will perceive by the enclosed letters, that nothing was found in the others; and that it is believed the papers in question were carried away by individuals who never deposited them in my office. Mr. Charles Grant, the writer of two of the notes, is the vice-president of the board of trade, one of the commissioners appointed to treat with me, a gentleman of distinguished merit and obliging disposition. Another search may, nevertheless be



made, if Gen. Johnson will state the time when the records were carried away, and other circumstances, which may afford a cue to the inquiry.

“ I have the honor to be, &c.

“ ALBERT GALLATIN.

“ His Excellency, De Witt Clinton.”

*Charles Grant, Esq., to Albert Gallatin*

“ *London, August 14, 1827.*

“ DEAR SIR:

“ I have only this morning received the enclosed from Mr. Rice, whose absence from town prevented his sooner transmitting it to me. I regret much the result. As a last hope, I have sent Governor Clinton’s letter to the colonial office, that inquiries may be made; but I fear there is little probability of success.

“ I am, Sir, &c.

“ C. GRANT.

“ A. Gallatin, Esq.”

*Spring Rice, Esq., to Charles Grant, Esq.*

“ MY DEAR GRANT:

“ On coming down to the office this morning, I find the enclosed, which relates to your communication with me. I enclose it as the best means of answering Mr. Gallatin’s request, regretting that we cannot do more to furnish you with the information requested.

“ Ever and most truly yours,

“ SPRING RICE.”

Soon after the settlement of the town, a public officer called *Superintendent* was appointed, whose duty it was especially to preserve the public peace of the plantation, and in general to regulate whatever appertained to the

police of the town. But a few years after, this office was abolished, and those of schout, secretary, and assessor, created.

These latter officers, like most others, received their appointment immediately from the executive, either upon the recommendation of the people, or without, as the case might be.

In 1646, as has been seen, the inhabitants were authorized to choose from among themselves, to be approved by the governor, magistrates duly authorized, "*to give judgment in all events as they should deem proper, not contrary to the charter of New Netherlands;*" and to give complete effect to their authority, the governor ordered that if any one disobeyed the decision of the magistrates, he should forfeit his right to the lands within the village. This privilege seems not to have been extended to any other town, probably because no other was, at that time, so populous as to require it.

The people suffered much from the despotism of the government and frequently remonstrated against such acts, but generally without effect. It happened, nevertheless, that a convention of delegates from this and the neighboring towns, or settlements, assembled at New Amsterdam, November 26, 1663, by invitation from the governor himself, yet so unsatisfactory was the result, that on the 11th of December following, they drew up and signed a remonstrance against the unjust and tyrannical exclusion of the people from any share in legislation, and generally against the mode in which the government was administered.

The governor and his self-created council did not condescend to reply to the remonstrance formally, but nevertheless, entered a decision upon their minutes, in which

they fully denied the right of the towns of Brooklyn, Flatbush, and Flatlands, to send deputies to the convention, and protested against the meeting also, notwithstanding it was held at the governor's own special request. Entertaining a proper sense of their responsibility, both to the government and their fellow-citizens, the deputies made another, but it seems ineffectual attempt to obtain a recognition of their lawful rights and privileges. They presented on the 13th of the said month another remonstrance, in which they declared in the most spirited and resolute manner, that unless they could obtain justice from the governor and council, they should be even under the necessity of appealing to their superiors in Holland. At this crisis, the worthy governor, in a paroxysm of passion, dissolved the meeting, and sent the delegates, without further satisfaction, to their homes.

In order more effectually to secure the inhabitants against Indian depredations, the governor had, in 1660, required them to fortify themselves. This was to be done by erecting palisades, set close to each other, made sharp at the top, and not less than eight feet above the ground. Within the enclosure thus made, it was ordered that the whole number of families should be removed during the night, and in other seasons of special danger.

This regulation was probably made in consequence of threatened hostilities from the North River Indians, who had, in 1665, made a descent upon Staten Island and murdered a great number of persons, at which time the settlement of Gravesend, as has been seen, was only saved by the timely arrival of soldiers sent from the city. There was, therefore, good reason for believing that the opportunity was only wanting for them to renew their depredations in this quarter.

In May, 1661, Governor Stuyvesant recommended Charles De Bevoice as a suitable person for school-master of the town, and also as clerk and sexton of the church, for all which he was to be allowed a fair compensation.

It was particularly enjoined upon the overseers of the poor and the constables likewise, occasionally to admonish the people, to cause their children and servants to be well instructed in matters of religion, and in the laws of the country. They appointed, besides, an officer to record every man's particular mark for cattle, and to see that horses and colts were properly branded. They were, moreover, required to pay the value of an Indian coat for the killing of every wolf, and its head was ordered to be nailed over the door of the constable's house, as evidence that the reward had been paid.

In October, 1675, an order was made by the court of assize, that a fair or market should be held yearly near the ferry, for the sale and exchange of commodities, especially cattle and other produce of the farmer; to be kept on the first Monday in November, and be continued for three days in succession.

Although it appears that the population of the town was augmented more or less during every year from the beginning of the settlement, yet previous to the incorporation of the village of Brooklyn in 1816, the increase was generally much less than after that event; indeed within the last twenty years the accession of population, business, and wealth, has been greater in amount, than during the period of one hundred years preceding. In the year 1706 the real and personal estate in the town was estimated at the sum of £3,122, 12s., the taxes upon which amounted to the inconsiderable sum of £41; whereas in the year 1824, the valuation of real and per-

sonal property exceeded \$2,600,000, and the taxes thereupon to between six and seven thousand dollars.

In 1706 the number of freeholders in the town was sixty-four, and 1802 they amounted to eighty-six, an addition of twenty-two only in ninety-six years. The population in 1814 was 3,805; in 1816, 4,402; in 1820, 7,475; in 1825, 10,791; in 1830, 15,295; in 1835, 24,310; in 1840, 36,233, and in 1845, 59,574. Number of acres of land about 9,000. In 1834 the real and personal estate was valued for taxation as follows: real, \$13,391,734; personal, \$2,250,556; total, \$15,642,290. In 1840, real \$22,546,675; personal, \$2,900,471; total, \$25,447,146. At the close of the Revolution, the number of dwellings was fifty-six; in 1821 the number of buildings was 867; in 1834, 279; 798 square feet of streets were paved, and 289 lamps placed therein. In 1835 the valuation of real and personal estate was \$26,067,329, an increase of more than \$10,000,000 in a single year. In the same year there were built or in progress 321 houses, outhouses, and churches.\*

The oldest building supposed to be now standing in the town is situated at Gowanus, in the southern part of the city, owned, for several generations, by the Cortelyou family, which was doubtless considered a very fine and substantial edifice at the period of its erection in 1699. It was built of stone, by Nicolas Vechte.

Another still more ancient house, built by the Remsen family, occupied a few years ago what is now a part of Market Street, and was owned by the late eccentric *Jacob Patchen*, who will long be remembered for his long and untiring resistance to every effort of the corporation for

\* In 1660 the number of householders was thirty-one, and the inhabitants 134, and the Dutch Church consisted of twenty-five members.



getting possession of the ground on which his dwelling stood.

For the following items, collected from ancient records, as well as for many other particulars, we are indebted to an interesting sketch of Brooklyn, by Gabriel Furman, Esq.:

“For the first two or three years under the English government, the magistrates of this town were but temporary officers. Nearly all that we know about the government, previous to 1669, is, that town courts were established in the colony. The inference would be, that as this town was granted ‘all the rights and privileges belonging to a town within the government,’ a town court was also organized here.

“The town clerk, it seems, was appointed by the governor, and confirmed by the court of sessions, as will appear by the following record. At a court of sessions held at Gravesend for the West Riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island, December 15, 1669. ‘Whereas Derick Storm presented an order from his Hon. the Governor, for the approbation of the Court of Sessions, to allow him to be towne clerk of Breucklen, taking his oath, the clerk being allowed thereof, and doe hereby confirme him as Clerke of the said towne.’

“In the year 1669 mention is made in the records of the ‘Constable of Breucklen’; which office at that period was held by Michael Lenell. The duties of constable, as laid down in the Duke’s laws were, holding town courts with the overseers, and with them making assessments, &c., whipping, or punishing offenders, raising the hue and cry after murderers, manslaughterers, thieves, robbers, burglarers; and also to apprehend, without warrant, such as were overtaken with drink, swearing, Sabbath breaking, vagrant persons, or night walkers; ‘provided they bee taken in the manner, either by the sighte of the constable,

or by present informacon from others; as also to make searche for all such persons either on y<sup>e</sup> Sabbath daye, or other, when there shall bee occasion, in all houses licensed to sell beere or wine, or any other suspected or disordered places, and those to apprehend and keepe in safe custody till opportunity serves to bring them before the next Justice of y<sup>e</sup> peace for further examinacon.' The constable was chosen out of the number of overseers, whose term of service had expired.

"August 30, 1701. John Bybon sold to Cornelius Vanderhove, for £37 10s. the one equal half part of a brewhouse, situate at Bedford, in the town of Brookland, fronting the highway leading from Bedford to Cripplebush; together with one equal half part of all the brewing vessels, &c.

"In 1685, a Windmill was erected in this town by John Vannise and Peter Hendricks, for Michael Hainell. There is great reason to believe that this was the first mill erected in this town. August 19, 1689, an agreement was entered into between Cornelius Sebering, of Brookland, and John Marsh of East Jersey, relative to building a water mill on Graver's kill in this town."

A few years since there were seven water mills and two wind mills.

"Feb. 16, 1823, to Feb. 15, 1824, 5825 barrels of superfine flour, 260 barrels of fine flour, and 124 hogsheads of corn meal were inspected in this county. The most, if not all of which, was manufactured at the mills in this town.

"1671, This town, with five others in the West Riding of Yorkshire upon Long Island, petitioned the Court of Sessions 'for liberty to transport wheate,' which was referred to the Governor.

"1687. The Clerk's office of King's County was kept

in this town, by the Deputy Register, Jacob Vandewater, who was also a Notary Public at the same period. The Register, Samuel Bayard, resided in the city of New York."

About the year 1691, there was a custom prevalent in this town of calling a widow the "last wife" of her deceased husband; and a widower the "last man" of his deceased wife.

An interesting controversy has long existed, and is still unsettled between this town and the corporation of New York, in relation to the exclusive right, claimed by the latter to establish ferries across the East River, and its claim to the right of soil upon the Brooklyn side, below the ancient high-water mark; but a statement and discussion of them would require more space than we can devote to that purpose. It seems but just, however, that the people of this city should have some control at least over so important a franchise, and of such an indispensable necessity to her prosperity; the intercourse between the two places being so immense.

It is known that a ferry between them was deemed worthy of regulation as early as July, 1654, and an ordinance of the governor and council declared that no person should act as ferryman without a license; that he should provide proper boats and hands, as well as a lodge on both sides of the river to protect passengers from the weather; to carry over free the director general, court messengers, and other persons invested with authority or despatched by the executive. And October 14, 1732, an act was passed to regulate this ferry and establish the rates of ferriage. Some of these rates were for a horse or beast, one shilling; a calf or hog, 4 pence; a sheep or lamb, 3 pence; a wagon or cart, 5 shillings; and for

every person, 10 grains of sevil pillar, or Mexican plate, or 2 pence in bills of credit. "Although, provided that a sucking child or some remnant of goods, or other small goods which a woman carries in her apron, or a man or boy under his arm, shall be free." The ferry under this act went into operation November 5, 1733.

In 1774 there was a ferry from Coenties Market to the landing place of Philip Livingston, and Henry Remsen on Long Island (St. George's ferry?); another from Fly Market to the present ferryhouse at Fulton Street, Brooklyn; a third from Pecks Slip to the last place. *Gaine's New York Mercury*, February 21, 1774.

August 1, 1795, a ferry was established from the foot of Main Street, across the river, by the Hon. William Furman and the late Theodosius Hunt, on a lease from the corporation of New York; and January 24, 1814, a lease for the ferry from Beekman (now Fulton) Slip to the foot of the present Fulton Street, Brooklyn, was granted for a term of twenty-five years, to the late Robert Fulton and William Cutting, at the rent of \$4,000 a year. The ferry at the foot of Atlantic Street was established in connection with the Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad. The last two ferries are now united in one lease to the Union Ferry Company, at a rent of \$30,500 per annum. The ferry from the foot of Main Street was established at a far later period by Rodman and Samuel Bowne, whose boats were impelled by horse power, long after steam was substituted on the Fulton Ferry.

The steamboat "Nassau," which cost \$33,000, commenced running on the Fulton Ferry, May 10, 1814—the first time steam was ever used for propelling boats between the two places. On this occasion Lewis Rhodes, an engineer upon the ferry, was horribly mangled and

killed by accidentally getting entangled among the machinery of the boat. Old Ferry Street (so called) was changed to Fulton, June, 1817.

An act to vest power in commissioners to license ferries was passed May 12, 1845.

April 2, 1801, an act was passed vesting certain powers in the freeholders and inhabitants of a part of the town of Brooklyn, the sixth section of which authenticates the copies of old records of roads, which had recently been transferred from the town clerk's office to the city clerk's office. The limits of the fire district were first established in 1807.

In 1811, the only dry-goods store in Brooklyn was kept by Abraham Remsen, at the corner of Front and Fulton streets, at which time a mail was carried through the island only once a week, on horseback or in a sulky.

The most compact part of the town was incorporated into a village on the 12th of April, 1816. This action, although violently opposed by some of the inhabitants, as well from ignorance, as from the most deep-rooted prejudice, gave, nevertheless, a new impetus to the spirit of improvement which animated the minds of others, and has resulted in raising Brooklyn from the condition of an insignificant hamlet, to the second in rank among the cities of the state.

The village charter authorized the election, thereafter, of five trustees; and those named in the act of incorporation were Andrew Mercein, John Garrison, John Doughty, John Seaman, and John Dean, all of whom are now deceased. This charter was subsequently amended, and the powers of the corporation repeatedly enlarged, till it became, in a manner, indispensable to confer upon the place the name and privileges of a city.



April 8, 1834, the entire territory of the town was incorporated as the "*City of Brooklyn*," and its inhabitants were constituted a body corporate and politic, by the style of "The Mayor and Common Council of the city of Brooklyn."

The city is divided into nine wards, and the powers of the corporation are vested in the mayor and a board of aldermen, composed of two freeholders, elected by the voters of each ward.

The fire department, under the control of the common council, with chief engineer and a number of assistants, comprising twenty engine and hook and ladder companies, constitutes a very efficient corps of officers and men.

The county clerk's office was removed here from Flatbush in March, 1818, but the county courts were not held here till 1827, alternately with Flatbush.

The ancient village of *Bedford*, in the eastern part of the town, has gradually lost its identity, being swallowed up by the extension of the city.

*Gowanus*, on the confines of Flatbush, and beyond the high ground called by the Dutch *Ponkiesberg*, and since *Fort Swift*, is fast increasing in population, and the salt marsh on its border will in a few years become solid ground, and the site of streets and houses.

The *Wallabout* or *Waale-Boght*, lately called East Brooklyn, is now hardly distinguishable as a separate settlement from the city proper; and that which a few years ago was a pond and marsh, is now the site of a park, streets, and buildings. The old Wallabout toll bridge, for which a company was incorporated April 6, 1805, has long since disappeared, and the site of it is now within the walls of the navy yard.

On the easterly side of the Wallabout Bay, upon an

elevated site, is the *United States Naval Hospital*, built of marble, and truly a magnificent building. Here is an asylum where the aged, sick, or crippled sailor, who has devoted his youth and vigor to exalting and preserving the honor of the American Navy, may find a home where every comfort is afforded which his situation requires.

The *United States Navy Yard* is established in this part of the city. The government purchased, in 1801, about forty acres, including the old mill pond (Remsen's), where they have erected a spacious yard, enclosed on the land side by a high brick wall. There are here two large ship houses, seven timber sheds, two ranges of public stores and shops, for the different mechanical departments connected with the building and equipping of vessels of war.

Here have been built the "Fulton," intended as a floating steam battery, which cost \$300,000, the "Ohio," seventy-four, and several smaller vessels. Besides, about two-thirds of the vessels of the American Navy have been either built, equipped, armed, or fitted for service at this place. The amount of naval stores here is at least a million and a half dollars. After the war in 1815, the "Fulton 1st," was used as a receiving ship, and was moored within 200 yards of the shore. On the 4th of June, 1829, her magazine exploded, by which accident the vessel was entirely destroyed, and thirty-three individuals, including Lieutenant Breckenridge and three females, were killed, and as many wounded.

The Dry Dock at this place, the corner stone of which was laid May 12, 1847, is a wonderful structure, and when finished will be of great public utility in repairing large ships belonging to the navy. The pit of the dock

is 500 by 200, and 42 feet deep; finished it will be 258 feet long at the bottom and 308 at top; 38 feet wide at bottom and 88 feet at top; between 6,000 and 7,000 piles, from 40 to 50 feet long, form the foundation, on which are laid timbers and granite, from which the granite walls rise by steps 38 feet high.

The *Naval Lyceum* was founded at the navy yard in 1833, and includes, among its members, most of the officers of the American navy, many prominent citizens, and some distinguished foreigners. The library and museum are valued at more than \$20,000, and are constantly receiving additions from every part of the world. The society has published two interesting volumes, and possesses many rare curiosities from distant quarters of the globe.

The jail of Kings County, located on the south side of Fort Green, once Fort Putnam, is a dark looking castellated Gothic stone edifice, having little beauty, but well adapted to the purposes of its erection. The cost of this building was about \$100,000, and in one of its large rooms are now held the county courts and the court of oyer and terminer. Its corner stone was laid August 27, 1836. The act for building it in Brooklyn was passed February 27, 1834.

The *Brooklyn Apprentices' Library Association* was incorporated in 1822, the corner stone of the building was laid July 4, 1825, by the Marquis La Fayette, on his last visit to the United States, on which occasion an address was delivered by Clarence D. Sackett. The edifice was purchased by the city August 4, 1836, and an adjoining building was first occupied for a clerk's office July 20, 1837. They are now called the "City Buildings," in which the corporation business is usually trans-

acted, the city courts held, and in which its officers are accommodated.

The books belonging to the library are deposited in the building originally erected by the Brooklyn Lyceum Company, which was incorporated the same year as the City of Brooklyn. This superb edifice, which is now the property of the Brooklyn Institute, is situated upon Washington Street, and is used by several other corporate bodies. The institution itself is an extension of the charter of the Brooklyn Apprentices' Library Association, renewed April 13, 1843, when the name was changed to its present designation. The building has also been secured to it by the liberality of Augustus Graham, Esq. The collection now consists of about 3,000 volumes.

In the same edifice is contained the *City Library*, incorporated under the general acts in February, 1839, and comprises a capital collection of more than 2,700 volumes.

The *Brooklyn Lyceum*, before named, was organized October 10, 1833, and the corner stone of the building laid October 31, 1835. The object was intellectual and moral improvement by gratuitous public lectures, a course of which was commenced November 7, 1833, varied occasionally by essays, principally from the pens of ladies. But unforeseen difficulties defeated the objects of the institution, and the building passed to the corporation of the Institute as aforesaid.

There are in the city two orphan asylums, a Protestant and Roman Catholic, both of which are large, well conducted, and of very great utility.

The *Brooklyn Collegiate Institute* for young ladies, must, we are sorry to say, be named among the things

that were. It was incorporated in 1829 with a capital of \$30,000, the whole of which was expended in the completion of the splendid brick building on the east side of Hicks Street, one of the most eligible locations in the city. The institution was abandoned in a few years for want of patronage, and in the spring of 1842 was occupied as a hotel, called *The Mansion House*.

The *City Hall* was commenced upon a magnificent plan in 1836, the corner stone of which was laid on the 28th of April in that year, by the Hon. Jonathan Trotter, Mayor, at the corner of Joralemon and Fulton streets. It was constituted of white marble, and having reached one story in height, its further progress was arrested. In 1845 it was recommenced upon a much smaller scale, and better adapted to the wants of the city, the old foundation being removed, and its materials used in the present structure, which is one of the most imposing of modern municipal structures in the United States. It occupies an area of 162 by 102 feet, with an elevation of 156 feet from the base to the summit of the cupola, which is surmounted by a colossal figure, intended to represent Justice holding the balances. This noble edifice comprises over fifty rooms, devoted to the several departments of civic government, including the hall of the mayor and common council, which is elegantly and most commodiously constructed, the seats and desks of the members of the common council being arranged in semi-circular form, so as to allow all to face the chair, at the back of which is an elegant entablature, richly moulded, and supported by Corinthian columns, all which is executed in a delicate gray tint, which imparts a pleasing effect by its contrast with the other portion of the walls. This chamber measures about fifty feet square by thirty feet in height,



the ceiling being ornamented with cornices and compartments, in the centre of which is a dome.

On the opposite, or eastern side, is the Supreme Court Room, the general arrangements of which are of a somewhat similiar description. Adjoining it is the reception room, or audience chamber, the lofty walls of which are ornamented with finely executed portraits of the former mayors, while at the upper end is a splendid full-length picture, life size, of Washington, painted by Frothingham of Brooklyn, who received for it \$1,000. In these apartments, which are models of their kind, improved contrivances have been introduced for free ventilation, so essential to the comfort of all parties concerned in the administration of public business. These rooms are situated on the second story and are reached by two light ærial looking iron stair-cases, which are placed on each side of the spacious and lofty hall of entrance. The principal entrance is beneath a massive portico, the architrave of which is supported by six immense Ionic columns, which rest upon an elevation, the ascent to which is by a number of steps.

The entire edifice, which is five stories high, including the basement, presents a most symmetrical and commanding aspect, standing as it does on the highest ground in that vicinity, and in a location that admits of a distant view from the several avenues and streets that converge to its centre. A triangular park, measuring some 1,300 feet, enclosed by iron railings, is now nearly completed. The marble of which the edifice is built, and which is of a superior order, was brought from Westchester; and the architect is Mr. G. King of Brooklyn, to whose professional skill, we may add, this beautiful city owes much of its architectural embellishment. The entire cost of this

splendid edifice, including the fire alarm bell, which weighs some 9,000 pounds, is stated at \$200,000. A magnificent panoramic view, extending twenty-five miles over sea and land, including the adjacent cities and villages, will well repay a visit to the cupola.

The *Brooklyn Female Academy*, upon the southerly side of Joralemon Street, is a noble edifice of brick, eighty feet by sixty, and four stories high above the basement. It was incorporated May 8, 1845, and opened on the 4th of May following, under the auspices of Mr. Alonzo Crittenden, with about 300 young ladies, whose numbers have since increased to 500. Adjoining the institution is a large and convenient dwelling for the principal.

The only considerable place of amusement of long standing for the accommodation of the public, is that known as the *Military Garden*, once owned and conducted by John F. Duflon, a native of Switzerland. It is still a place of some resort in the summer season. The grounds at the intersection of the Jamaica and Flatbush roads, were once the site of an extensive horticultural establishment, founded by Andre Parmentier, but discontinued soon after his death. The premises, comprising twenty-four acres, were sold in the fall of 1833 for \$57,000, and resold in building lots for nearly \$70,000.

Mr. Parmentier was born at Enghein, department of Jemmapes, province of Hainault in Belgium, July 3, 1780. His family was highly respectable, and he enjoyed the advantages of a liberal education. His relative, Anthony Augustin Parmentier, born in 1737, was the individual that introduced the potato into France.

Pecuniary losses led Mr. Parmentier to this country, where he allowed his love of botany and gardening to be

useful, both to himself and others. He purchased twenty-five acres at the place above named October 4, 1825, for \$4,000. The surface was a bed of rocks, some of which were used in enclosing the ground with a wall. In a short time a dwelling and green house were erected, and the land stocked with a great variety of trees and plants, useful and ornamental, indigenous and exotic. The garden grew into importance, and visitors from all quarters flocked to see it.

He was the next person, after the Messrs. Prince, at Flushing, in introducing the *Morus Multicaulis*<sup>1</sup> plant into America, which is probably destined to be of great and enduring importance to our country. Mr. Parmentier died in the prime of life after a short illness, and greatly regretted, November 27, 1830.

His widow strove hard to continue the business, and to preserve the garden and its contents; but failing in her endeavors, the trees and plants were disposed of, and the grounds occupied by them converted into streets and building lots.

One of the most magnificent undertakings in the whole compass of the city, and that which must eventually contribute greatly to its prosperity in a commercial view, is the *Atlantic Basin*, now nearly completed under the direction of a company incorporated for the purpose, May 6, 1840, with a capital of \$1,000,000.

The object of this great work is the construction of extensive piers and bulkheads, forming a noble basin, with a water surface of forty-two acres, surrounded by spacious warehouses, built of granite, and completely fire proof, to which ships of any class may approach on either side to receive or discharge freight, and go in or out at

<sup>1</sup> Mulberry plant used in rearing silk-worms.—EDITOR.

any stage of tide, remain in perfect security in all states of weather, and during every season of the year. Its location is upon the Long Island shore, between Governor's Island and Red Hook. The piers, 150 feet wide, forming the front, are divided by an entrance 200 feet wide, the depth of water at low tide being twenty-five feet. The excavation by means of steam power and dredging was begun soon after the company was incorporated, and such progress was made that the corner stone of the first warehouse was laid with much ceremony, on the 22d of May, 1844, by James D. P. Ogden, Esq., president of the incorporation, who pronounced an eloquent and appropriate address upon the auspicious occasion.

The first stores were completed during the year, and a revenue began to accrue to the company, even while the work was in progress. The site cost \$158,000, payable in the stock of the company, and the contractors were to be paid for the greater portion of their labor in the lots surrounding the basin.

While excavating for this basin in 1842, roots of trees were found twenty feet beneath the surface of the mud, where they appeared to have grown, and beneath them a substance like peat.

The United States have become lessees of several stores here for warehouses, and others are occupied by the first commercial firms in New York. By digging down the hills, and filling up the low ground adjacent to the basin, more than 500 valuable building lots have been made, so that the value of the whole work when finished will greatly exceed the original purchase money and cost of construction.

*Greenwood Cemetery*, comprising about 250 acres, is situated on the southern border of the city, and upon the

high grounds above Gowanus. It was incorporated April 18, 1838, with a capital of \$300,000, in shares of \$100 each. It is a place of exceeding beauty and loveliness, and admirably adapted to the solemn and holy purpose for which it is designed. The surface has great variety, and is shaded by forest trees of different kinds and sizes. Here the eye surveys from various points the silver surface of the waters beneath, with its numerous islands, the green hills of Staten Island and New Jersey, the cities of Brooklyn and New York, with their vast number of spires, spread out as on a map, and the adjacent bay pictured with a multitude of vessels of all descriptions, from the tiny skiff and fishing boat, to the largest merchant ships, vessels of war, and steamboats.

A winding path for carriages leads from the gate at the entrance to the highest eminence, called by way of distinction, *Mount Washington*, traversing a distance of many miles, with every variety of scenery, and a lake of four or five acres. The general plan resembles that of Mount Auburn, near Boston; already many graves are discerned, and many beautiful monuments have been reared by the hand of affection to the memory of the dead.

It has been said by persons who have visited the different cemeteries in our own country, and even *Pere la Chaise*, near Paris, that they have nowhere seen such combined beauties and such natural advantages for a rural cemetery, as in the grounds we have attempted to describe. And what will they be one hundred years hence, when art shall have done its best to ornament the place and a larger population shall be ensepulchred here than the living mass of beings now inhabiting the two cities, whose tall spires and various public edifices are in full view from this



sublime spot, thickly strewn with the memorials of the dead.

A part of the grounds here enclosed was probably the scene of the disastrous battle of Long Island, in August, 1776, to commemorate which, one of the elevations has received the name of *Battle Hill*.

An intelligent and eloquent stranger thus describes this rural repository of the dead:

“As we proceeded, says he, every turn of the carriage wheel brought to view some new development of striking sylvan beauty, or opened upon us some new feature of loveliness or grandeur, in the surrounding prospect. At one point we were completely embosomed in trees, where all was stillness and deep repose, then again we emerged into smiling plains, and sunny fields, and smooth lawns of deepest green. Again our path conducted us into a dense forest, and we found ourselves upon the wooded brow of a steep declivity, sweeping off down to the margin of a silent lake, whose dark shaded waters gave back with more than pictorial beauty, every tree, and limb and leaf whose shadows fell upon the surface. The winding avenue brought us, every few rods, to a point of observation where the surrounding scenery, made up of bays and islands, rivers and mountains, cities and villages, farms and country houses, and forests, put on a new phase, and, like the turn of a kaleidoscope, presented a new and still more beautiful picture to the eye. From the elevated point of Mount Washington, a panoramic view of surpassing beauty, in almost illimitable perspective, opens upon the eye. Turning around and the whole bay of New York, with its beauteous islands, and the two magnificent rivers, together with the great metropolis itself, burst upon the sight.”

The first printing press in this town was set up by

Thomas Kirk, who issued the first number of a daily newspaper, the *Courier, and New York and Long Island Advertiser*, June 26, 1799, which was continued four years. He also commenced the *Long Island Star*, June 8, 1809, which he transferred to Alden Spooner, May 30, 1811, and which has been conducted by him and his son now for more than thirty-six years.

The first number of the *Long Island Weekly Intelligencer*, by William C. Robinson and William Little, was issued May 26, 1806, and continued one year. The latter named gentleman began the *Brooklyn Minerva and Long Island Advertiser*, October 1, 1807, which he discontinued a short time thereafter.

The *Long Island Patriot* was commenced by George L. Birch, May 7, 1821, and continued by a succession of editors for several years.

The *Brooklyn Evening Star* was issued daily, by Alden Spooner from April 2, 1827, to October following, when it was given up; but it was recommenced March 1, 1841, and is still published.

The *Daily Evening Advertiser* was begun in 1834; from April, 1835, to October, 1835, it was edited by Francis G. Fish, who then changed the title to the *Native American Citizen*, which he continued to April, 1838.

The *Brooklyn Daily News*, by William K. Northall and Samuel G. Arnold, was issued from March 2, 1841, to some time in the year following, when it was transferred to John C. S. Noble, by whom it was continued till November 11, 1843.

The *Brooklyn Eagle and Kings County Democrat* was first issued by Isaac Van Anden, as a daily, October 26, 1841, and the weekly *Eagle* was begun by him March 10, 1842.

The *American Champion* was issued by Frederick G. Fish, February 11, 1845, but soon discontinued.

The *Saturday Evening Bee*, a weekly paper, was commenced by Edwin B. Spooner, June 19, 1847, but at the close of the first year was merged in the weekly *Star*.

The first number of *The Freeman*, a weekly newspaper (since a daily), was issued by Walter Whitman, September 9, 1848. On the following night the office was destroyed by fire and the second number was not published till November 11, 1848.

The first number of the *Brooklyn Whig*, a weekly newspaper, was published May 20, 1848, by George W. Thurber, but the paper expired in a short time.

The first directory for Brooklyn was published by Alden Spooner May 23, 1822, who continued the publication for several years; after which it was published successively by William Bigelow, Thomas Leslie, Henry R. Hearne, and William J. Hearne.

The city has now five ferries connecting it with New York, viz. *South Ferry*, from the foot of Atlantic Street to Whitehall Slip, 1,300 yards; *the ferry* from the foot of Montague Street to Wall Street; *Fulton Ferry*, from the foot of Fulton Street to Fulton Slip, 731 yards; *Main* or *Catharine Street Ferry*, from the foot of Main Street to Catharine Street, 736 yards; and *Jackson Ferry*, from the foot of Jackson Street, near the navy yard, to Walnut Street, 706 yards. Upon all these ferries are first-class steamboats, some of which continue to run through the whole night.

In the war of 1812 with England, this town was the scene of considerable preparation for defence against an invasion, which was almost daily expected. At this time, General Jonas Mapes was stationed at Bath with one regi-

ment of militia, and a detachment of his command on the present site of Fort Hamilton. In the spring of 1814, a line of entrenchment and fortification was constructed by volunteer labor, extending from Fort Swift, near the head of Gowanus Cove, to the foot of Fort Green, on which a fort and barracks were erected. Here was encamped, September 3, 1814, the twenty-second brigade of infantry, consisting of 1,750 men, under the command of General Jeremiah Johnson.\* General Samuel

\* This gentleman is descended from Anthony Johnson, who settled at Gravesend in 1639, and there married a Quakeress, by whom he had five sons, one of whom was Henry, who remained upon a part of his father's plantation in Gravesend, as did his brother Barnet also. The latter married a Stillwell, and had sons John, William, Nicholas, and Barnet; William remained at Gravesend and John settled at Jamaica, where many of his descendants reside. He married the widow Catalina Schenck, and had sons Barnet, born April 2, 1740; Martin, and John, the last being the father of George and John Johnson, now living upon the paternal estate in Jamaica.

The last named Barnet married Anne Remsen of Newtown, September 8, 1774, by whom he had six sons and two daughters. He was an active friend of the Revolution, and, as an officer of the Kings County militia, encamped with them at Harlem in 1776. He was taken prisoner in 1777, but obtained his parole through the interposition of a masonic brother, with General Howe. His eldest son, Jeremiah, the subject of this memoir, was born January 23, 1766, and at the death of his father in 1782, inherited the valuable estate at the Wallabout, upon which he has ever since resided. His mother was a descendant of Jeremiah Remsen Vanderbeck, who came from Holland in 1640, and married Jane, second daughter of George Jansen de Rapelje in 1645. Her father obtained a patent in 1649 for the farm which is now owned by his great-great-grandson, and which has remained in the family nearly 200 years. The name of Remsen has been retained, while that of Vanderbeck has been discontinued. General Johnson has enjoyed unusual health and vigor for upwards of eighty years, and an uncommon share of the public confidence for more than half a century. He has held the office of supervisor of the town more than forty years in succession; has several times represented the county in the legislature, and has risen from a private to the rank of major-general in the militia. He has been a judge of the common pleas, and was mayor of the city in 1837, 1838, and 1839. He is a man of indefatigable industry, of business habits, and his excellent translation of Van der Donk's *History of New Netherlands* evinces his knowledge of the Dutch language.

Haight also commanded a corps, consisting of 1,500 men, stationed near the heights, most of which was then vacant ground; he had also 150 dragoons. About 1,000 troops were stationed at New Utrecht, making in all nearly 5,000 effective men.

The *Long Island Bank*, the first institution of the kind in this town, was incorporated April 1, 1824, with a capital of \$300,000, in shares of \$50. This has always been considered a sound and well managed institution, Leffert Lefferts having been president, from its commencement to his death, March 22, 1847, in his seventy-fourth year. The charter having expired July 1, 1845, its business was continued by the same name, under the free banking law of the state.

The *Brooklyn Bank* was incorporated February 21, 1832, with a capital of \$200,000, in shares of \$10 each, to continue till 1860. The presidents have been Samuel A. Willoughby, Richard V. W. Thorne, Robert T. Hicks, and Whitehead J. Cornell.

The *Atlantic Bank* was incorporated May 10, 1836, for thirty years, with a capital of \$500,000, in shares of \$50 each, and Jonathan Trotter, John S. Schenck, and Daniel Embury have been its presidents.

The *Brooklyn Savings Bank* was incorporated April 7, 1827, capital \$102,000. The office of business for many years was in the Lyceum building, now the Brooklyn Institute; but in 1847 a chaste and beautiful edifice was erected for its use on Fulton Street, designed by and erected under the supervision of Lafevre, the architect of the church of the Holy Trinity, and excepting the City Hall, it is the most tastefully classic edifice in the city.

The *Brooklyn Fire Insurance Company* was incorporated April 3, 1824, for twenty-one years, capital



\$150,000. It stopped business in consequence of losses by the fire of September 9, 1848. The *Long Island Fire Insurance Company* was incorporated for thirty years, on April 26, 1833, with a capital of \$200,000, and the *Kings County Mutual Insurance Company* was incorporated on April 15, 1844, and commenced operations in February, 1845, but wound up after the fire of September 9, 1848. The Brooklyn City Hospital was completed May 1, 1845.

The Brooklyn and Jamaica Railroad was chartered April 25, 1832, for fifty years, capital \$300,000, in shares of \$50 each, and subsequently leased to the Long Island Railroad Company for forty-five years. The tunnel under Atlantic Street, an herculean enterprise, was constructed in 1844, at an expense of more than \$60,000, and opened for use December 3, of that year. The length of the cutting is 2,600 feet, and that of the arch 1,813 feet, width 21 feet, and 17 feet high.

Since its incorporation as a city in 1834, Brooklyn has advanced in population, business, and wealth, with a rapidity almost without example, and is now the second city in the state. The growth of what is called South Brooklyn has been still more astonishing, and that quarter contains a large number of stores and dwellings of an elegant and substantial character.

The following named gentlemen have held the office of mayor of the city for the periods mentioned:

1834 to 1835..George Hall  
 1835 to 1837..Jonathan Trotter  
 1837 to 1839..Jeremiah Johnson  
 1839 to 1842..Cyrus P. Smith  
 1842 to 1843..Henry C. Murphy  
 1843 to 1845..Joseph Sprague  
 1845 to 1846..Thomas G. Talmage  
 1846 to 1848..Francis B. Stryker

*Contributed by the Editor*  
 " 1848 to 1850..Edward Copland  
       1850..Samuel Smith  
 1851 to 1852..Conklin Brush  
 1853 to 1854..Edward A. Lambert  
 1855 to 1856..George Hall  
 1857 to 1860..Samuel S. Powell  
 1861 to 1863..Martin Kalbfleisch

1864 to 1865.. Alfred M. Wood  
 1866 to 1867.. Samuel Booth  
 1868 to 1871.. Martin Kalbfleisch  
 1872 to 1873.. Samuel S. Powell  
 1874 to 1875.. John W. Hunter  
 1876 to 1877.. F. A. Schroeder  
 1878 to 1881.. James Howell

1882 to 1885.. Seth Low  
 1886 to 1887.. Daniel D. Whitney  
 1888 to 1891.. Alfred C. Chapin  
 1892 to 1893.. David A. Boody  
 1894 to 1895.. Charles A. Schieren  
 1896 to 1897.. F. W. Wurster "

" On January 1, 1898, Brooklyn became a part of New York City."—EDITOR.

Adjoining the southern wall of the navy yard, upon Jackson Street, and opposite the termination of Front Street, is a small triangular piece of ground, where are entombed the remains of many that suffered martyrdom during the war of American independence. The entrance to this sacred spot is marked with the following inscription: " Portal, to the tomb of 11,500 patriotic prisoners, who died in dungeons and prison ships in and about the city of New York during the war of the Revolution." It is an obscure and wretched place for the purpose, and it is hoped one more appropriate will soon be selected.

The ecclesiastical concerns of Brooklyn have become so extensive and its institutions have multiplied with such unexampled rapidity, that it has with entire propriety been denominated the *city of churches*. These are not only in general large and substantial edifices, but many of them are quite equal to almost any in her sister city of New York. The compiler has spared no pains to obtain full and accurate information on this subject, and as most of the churches are of recent origin, their history must necessarily be proportionately brief.

The early history of the *Dutch Church* in the county has been so fully detailed under our account of Flatbush, that little remains to be said concerning it.

There is no reason to believe that for the space of

forty years after the arrival of Hudson, any house for religious worship existed within the limits of this city. In 1659 the inhabitants applied to Governor Stuyvesant for leave to call a minister to reside among them, assigning as a reason for their application the difficulties of attending divine worship in New Amsterdam, the badness of the roads to Flatbush, and the extreme age and consequent inability of Dominie Polhemus to perform ministerial labors here. The governor was pleased to consider the request as reasonable, and sent Nicasius de Sille, fiscal of New Netherlands, and Martin Kregier, burgomaster of New Amsterdam, as a committee of inquiry, who reported in favor of the application. A call was thereupon prepared for the *Rev. Henry Selyns* (or Selwyn), who, being approved of by the classis of Amsterdam February 16, 1660, was granted a dismissal from his charge in Holland, with their wish for a safe and prosperous journey by land and water to his congregation in New Netherlands. The approbation of the West India Company bears date March 27, 1660. The time of his arrival is not known, but he was installed September 3, 1660, in presence of the fiscal and burgomaster Kregier, by order of the governor. His salary was fixed at 600 guilders, but the marriage fees received by him were to be paid over to the church; and it appears that October 29, 1662, he paid over to the consistory seventy-eight guilders and ten stivers, for fourteen marriages performed by him. July 6, 1661, the number of communicants was fifty-two; many of whom were admitted on certificates from Holland and New Amsterdam. September 21, 1662, it was ordered that the inhabitants pay Mr. Solyns (as he is called), 300 guilders, who had preached since August 30, 1660, instead of the Rev. Mr. Polhemus, and that the book-

keeper make the deduction in favor of Brooklyn. The situation seems not to have been agreeable to Mr. Selyns, as he took leave of his people July 22, 1664, when he surrendered his call, and next day, on board the ship "Beaver," set out upon his return to Holland, whereupon Charles Debevoise, schoolmaster and sexton, was directed to read prayers in the church till another minister should be called. It appears that Mr. Selyns afterwards returned to America. In 1660 the first Dutch Church was built of stone in the middle of the highway, on a part of what is now Fulton Street, a little south-east of the City Hall. It stood till 1766, when another was erected in its place, which remained till 1807, when it was demolished and a church built on Joralemon Street, which was dedicated December 23, 1807, but not being of sufficient dimensions, gave place to the present fine and substantial edifice in 1834, which was dedicated May 7, 1835.

The *Rev. Wilhelmus Van Niewenhuysen, D.D.*, officiated here from some time in 1676 to 1680, when he died. The pulpit was, however, at other times occupied by the ministers of the collegiate churches mentioned under the chapter on Flatbush, and other towns.

The trustees of this church were incorporated December 18, 1814, at which period the *Rev. Peter Lowe* and the *Rev. Martinus Schoonmaker* were pastors of the collegiate churches in the county.

*Rev. John B. Johnson*, son of Barent Johnson and Maria Seymesen, was born March 3, 1769; married Elizabeth, daughter of William Lupton, May 11, 1797, and died at Newtown, L. I., August 29, 1803, aged thirty-four, leaving Maria Laidlie, William Lupton, and Samuel Roosevelt. He became assistant minister of the

Dutch Church, at Albany, in August, 1796, and remained till September, 1802, when he accepted the pastoral charge of the Dutch Reformed Church of Brooklyn, and continued till his decease as above mentioned. His wife, born December 23, 1777, died March 31, 1803. Mr. Johnson was distinguished by abilities which marked him for extensive usefulness. His mind was improved by a liberal education and indefatigable study; and in the last stages of his ministry he became peculiarly instructive and acceptable to discerning and experienced believers. The meekness of his temper and a cheerful unassuming deportment, gained him universal esteem. The pious loved him; he had no enemies, but those of religion. His character was without stain. He died in the faith of those doctrines which he had preached to others. Looking unto Jesus, he continued in the exercise of a lively hope and triumphant assurance, until he closed his labors and sufferings, and ascended where joy and peace and love forever reign. The early removal of such a treasure, such superior talents, so much zeal and fortitude, blended with such amiable manners, and all consecrated to the service of the Divine Redeemer, is among the unsearchable dispensations of Providence; which it becomes us with silent adoration humbly to obey.

The next pastor of this church, *Rev. Selah Strong Woodhull*, only son of James and Ketura Woodhull, was born in New York, August 4, 1786. He lost his mother at the age of four years and his father at twelve in 1798, in which year he entered Yale College, and graduated in 1802. He commenced his theological studies with his uncle, the Rev. Dr. John Woodhull of Freehold, N. J., and was licensed by the presbytery of New Brunswick in



1805; in December of which year he was settled at Bound Brook, but November following was called here, where he was installed and remained for twenty years. Having been elected to the professorship of ecclesiastical history, church government, and pastoral theology, in the seminary of the Reformed Dutch Church at New Brunswick, and of metaphysics and the philosophy of the human mind in Rutgers College, he removed thither in November, 1825, where he died February 27, 1826, in the fortieth year of his age, leaving a widow and five daughters. He married Cornelia Van Cleve of Princeton, N. J., who died January 3, 1841. Their daughter, Eliza Woodhull, married the Rev. Jonathan B. Condit of Long Meadow, Mass., July 20, 1831, and died, aged twenty-three, January 7, 1835.

The *Rev. Ebenezer Mason* succeeded Dr. Woodhull, and was installed here June 25, 1826. He resigned April 16, 1828, and the *Rev. Peter P. Rouse* was installed the 13th of October following, who died June 4, 1832, in the thirty-third year of his age. He had been previously settled at Florida, N. Y., where he continued till his removal to this church.

The *Rev. Maurice W. Dwight, D.D.*, is the son of Dr. Maurice W. Dwight of Kempsville, Va. (brother of the late president Dwight), and grandson of the celebrated president Edwards of Northampton, Mass. He was born at the place first named, May 4, 1796; graduated at Columbia College in 1816, and was settled at Waterford, N. Y., in 1823, where he continued till 1826, when he removed to, and settled in the parish of New Hackensack, Dutchess County, N. Y. In 1833 he resigned, and was settled in this church the same year. His first wife was a Miss Van Schaack, and his second

was Catherine, daughter of Major John C. Ten Broeck of Hudson, N. Y., whom he married May 9, 1825.

*The Second (or Central) Reformed Dutch Church* on Henry, near Clark Street, was erected in 1839, the corner stone being laid the 16th of September in that year, and the building dedicated June 3, 1840. It is a stately building of brick, sixty by eighty-four feet, plain but substantial. The congregation was organized March 3, 1837.

The *Rev. Henry P. Tappen* and the *Rev. Cornelius C. Van Arsdale* were successively called to this church, but neither of them was settled, and it remained without a pastor till the installation of the *Rev. Dr. Jacob Broadhead* in 1841. He is descended from English ancestors, who came from Yorkshire in 1666, and settled in Ulster County, New York. His father was a farmer there, and the son was born at Marbletown, May 14, 1782. He graduated at Union College in 1802, was afterwards a tutor there, and was licensed to preach by the classis of Albany in April, 1804. He was first settled at Rhinebeck, Dutchess County, N. Y. In 1809 he accepted a call from the Collegiate Reformed Dutch Church in the City of New York, as associate with the venerable Dr. Livingston, and Drs. Kuypers, Abeel, and Shureman.

In 1813 he settled in the Reformed Dutch Church, Crown Street, Philadelphia, the first church of that denomination established in that city. He remained there till April, 1826, and on May 14 of the same year was installed in the Reformed Dutch Church in Broome Street, New York, where he continued till October, 1837, when he accepted an invitation to the Reformed Dutch Church in Flatbush, Saugerties, Ulster County, N. Y., and remained there more than three years, when he received and accepted a call to this church, where he continued to labor

till the spring of 1847, when he retired. His second wife was Fanny, widow of Harvey Spencer, deceased, and daughter of the late Peter Sharpe of Brooklyn, whom he married in 1845. He was succeeded by the *Rev. Malcolm McLaren* of Rochester, who had been installed in the Reformed Dutch Church at Neelytown, Orange County, N. Y., October 1, 1832, and at the church in Franklin Street, New York City, September 1, 1836. His installation here took place April 5, 1847.

The *South (or Third) Reformed Dutch Church* at Gowanus was completed also in 1839, and was for a time served by the *Rev. Mr. Van Arsdale*. He was succeeded by the *Rev. Samuel M. Woodbridge*, son of the *Rev. Sylvester Woodbridge* of Westhampton, L. I., who was born at Greenfield, Mass., in 1818, educated at the New York University, and the seminary of the Reformed Dutch Church at New Brunswick. He was ordained here December 12, 1841, and February 4, 1845, married Caroline, daughter of Theodorus Bergen, one of his parishioners.

The *Middle (or Fourth) Reformed Dutch Church* was organized in 1847, and the corner stone of the edifice to be erected by it was laid on the corner of Court and Butler streets, October 26, of the same year. Of this church the *Rev. Peter D. Oakey*, formerly of Wolver Hollow,<sup>1</sup> L. I., is pastor.

The parish of *St. Ann's Episcopal Church* is the oldest of this denomination in the city, and had its origin during the Revolutionary War, while the town was in possession of the King's troops and the services in the only other church then existing were in great measure interrupted if not suspended.

<sup>1</sup> Now Brookville.—EDITOR.

According to an account of this church published by Mr. F. G. Fish in 1845, the *Rev. James Sayre*, a native of New York, but ordained in England, who had been a missionary at Fairfield, Conn., came here in 1779; but his preaching must have been mostly attended by the British troops, and whether he continued till the peace is not known; he, however, visited England in 1783 and probably returned. His brother John, it is also supposed, labored here during the war, and died at Fairfield, February 18, 1798, at the age of fifty-three.

The *Rev. George Wright*, who was born and ordained in Ireland, was employed here in 1784, and preached in a dwelling on Fulton Street (pulled down March 12, 1834), and afterwards in a barn of John Middagh, which was standing in 1844 on Henry Street, near Fulton. He left here some time in the year 1789.

A small frame house had before this been put up on a part of the present Episcopal burial ground in Fulton Street, and occupied for a short time by the *Rev. John Matlock*, an Englishman. It was consecrated by Bishop Provost in 1787, and April 23, 1787, the society was incorporated by the name of "The Episcopal Church of Brooklyn."

The *Rev. Elijah D. Rattoone*, a graduate of Nassau Hall, New Jersey, 1787, was engaged here in 1789, and remained till March, 1792, when he was chosen to succeed Dr. Peter Wilson in Columbia College, New York, as professor of Grecian and Roman antiquities; which office he resigned June 9, 1797, having accepted the rectorship of the parish of Jamaica and Flushing, from whence he removed to Baltimore in 1802. He married a daughter of the *Rev. S. Beach* of New York.

June 22, 1795, the church was reorganized and incorpo-

rated anew under the present name of St. Ann's. After the departure of Mr. Rattoone, religious services were performed for short periods by the Rev. Mr. Lisbin, Mr. Doty, Mr. Fowler, and *Samuel Nesbit*, who, it seems, became rector in 1793, and removed in 1798, in which year the *Rev. John Ireland* became rector and remained till May, 1807, after which he officiated a short time at Jamaica, when he was appointed chaplain at the United States Navy Yard here, which post he retained till his death, at the age of sixty-two, March 26, 1823. He married Mrs. Hannah Tucker.

The corner stone of a new edifice was laid on the southeast corner of the present church lot (presented by Joshua Sands and his wife) in 1804, which was completed and consecrated by Bishop Moore, May 30, 1805. It was constructed of stone and stood till 1824, when, having received some injury to its walls by the explosion of a powder magazine in the vicinity, it was thought unsafe. The corner stone of the present building was laid March 20, 1824, the materials of the old church having been used in the construction of the new one, which was consecrated July 30, 1825. It is ninety by sixty-eight feet; height to the eaves, thirty-four, and to the top of the tower, eighty feet.

The *Rev. Henry James Feltus*, born in Ireland 1775, married Martha Ryan in 1794, and arrived in New York July 4, 1795. He was for some time employed as a teacher of youth, and was admitted to the ministry by Bishop White in 1799, and after officiating a while at Easton, became rector of Trinity Church, Swedesboro, N. J., where he remained till 1807, when he was settled in this church. His resignation took place June 15, 1814, and he became rector of St. Stephen's Church, New York,



and died August 24, 1828, aged fifty-three, having lost his wife in 1816.

The *Rev. John Prentiss Kewley Henshaw*, born in Middletown, Conn., was graduated at Middlebury College in 1808, and instituted rector of this church in 1816, which he resigned the year after, and removed to St. Peter's Church, Baltimore, where he remained till June, 1843, when he was elected bishop of Rhode Island and rector of Grace Church, Providence. His consecration took place August 11, 1843. He married Mary Gorham of Bristol, R. I.

The *Rev. Hugh Smith, D.D.*, a native of New Utrecht, L. I., was chosen rector in 1817, and married the same year Ellen, daughter of the late James B. Clarke, Esq. In 1819 he removed to St. Paul's Church, Augusta, Ga., where he continued till 1831, when he went to Christ Church, Hartford, Conn.; in 1833 to the city of New York, where in 1837 he was made rector of St. Peter's Church, and where he died 1849.

The *Rev. Henry Ustick Onderdonk, D.D.*, was instituted rector here November 30, 1819. He is the son of the late Dr. John Onderdonk of New York, was born 1789, and graduated at Columbia College 1805. At first he applied himself to the study of medicine and received the degree of M.D. in 1810, but relinquished it for theology in 1815, and was employed at Canandaigua soon after, from whence he removed to this church. He married Eliza Ann Carter of this city, and has several children. In 1827 he was elected and afterwards consecrated assistant bishop of Pennsylvania, and on the decease of Bishop White in 1836, was promoted to the office of bishop, which he resigned in October, 1844. His brother, Benjamin Tredwell Onderdonk, bishop of the diocese of

New York, was also soon after suspended from his office.

The *Rev. Charles Pettit McIlvaine, D.D.*, was born at Burlington, N. J., 1797, graduated at Princeton 1816, and ordained by Bishop White in July, 1820. Soon after he had charge of Christ Church, Georgetown, D. C., and was chosen chaplain to the senate of the United States at its sessions of 1824 and 1825, and in the latter year was appointed chaplain and professor of moral philosophy to the military academy at West Point. His wife was Miss Emily Cox of Burlington. In 1827 he accepted the rectorship of this church and retained the same till June, 1833, although elected bishop of Ohio in September, 1832, and was consecrated on the 31st of October following. He published a volume of lectures upon the evidences of Christianity, which presents a fair exhibition of his talents, learning, and industry.

The *Rev. Benjamin Clarke Cutler, D.D.*, was born at Roxbury, Mass., 1800, and graduated at Brown University 1822. His father is Benjamin C. Cutler, Esq. of Boston, and his mother, Sarah Mitchell, a native of Georgetown, S. C., and niece of General Francis Marion. He married, October 30, 1822, Harriet Bancroft, daughter of James Bancroft of Boston. Of his sisters, Julia Ruth married the late Samuel Ward of New York. Another sister, Maria Eliza, married Dr. John W. Francis, and the third, Matthew Hale McAllister of Savannah. His first charge was that of Christ Church, Quincy, Mass., where he remained till June, 1829. From December 8, 1831, to February, 1833, he labored in the church of the Holy Evangelists in New York. February 11, 1833, he was called to this church, and was instituted rector on the 21st of April following.

*St. John's Church* in Johnson Street, near Washington (the corner stone laid May 9, 1826), was erected by the *Rev. Evan Malbone Johnson*, upon his own ground in 1826, and consecrated by Bishop Hobart July 10, 1827, of which the founder was instituted first rector. He was born at Newport, R. I., June 6, 1792, and completed his classical education at Brown University in 1812. In 1814 he became rector of the churches at Newtown and Flushing, which he left in 1827. His wife is Maria Laidlie, daughter of the late Rev. John B. Johnson, former minister of the Reformed Dutch Church in this city, and sister to the Rev. Dr. William L. Johnson, and the Rev. Dr. Samuel Roosevelt Johnson, who succeeded him as rector of this church July 11, 1847. The church edifice has been enlarged and improved, and the whole, with the ground, purchased by the congregation.

The *Rev. Samuel Roosevelt Johnson* was ordained by Bishop Croes 1824, settled at Hyde Park eight years, and one at Flushing. He was for eleven years a missionary at La Fayette, Ind., and became rector of St. John's in Brooklyn, July 11, 1847. He married Elizabeth Johnson of Hyde Park, New York, and was made D.D. in July, 1848, at Columbia College.

*St. Luke's Church*, Clinton Avenue, was erected in 1835, the corner stone being laid in the summer of that year. The edifice is of stone, forty-five by sixty feet, and was consecrated in April, 1836, under the name of Trinity Church, of which the *Rev. Daniel V. M. Johnson* was made rector. He remained here till 1838, when he removed to Michigan City, Ind., and was succeeded by the *Rev. Dr. Thomas W. Coit*, who left in about a year, and became rector of Trinity Church, New Rochelle, N. Y., and was followed by the *Rev. Richard C. Shimeal*, who

married Catherine Augusta, daughter of John Leggett, 20th of March, 1828. This gentleman was educated at Rutgers College, N. J., was ordained a minister of the Reformed Dutch Church, and installed over the church of that denomination at Pompton, N. J., October 7, 1828. He continued here about two years and removed to St. Jude's Church, Sixth Avenue, New York, where he still labors. In consequence of pecuniary embarrassment the property changed hands, and the church was in 1842 reorganized under the style of St. Luke's, of which the *Rev. Jacob W. Diller* became rector June 29, 1842. He was born at Groverstown, Penn., September 25, 1810, and acquired his classical and theological education under the direction of the Rev. Dr. Muhlenberg, former pastor of the Episcopal Church in Lancaster, Penn., and since rector of St. Paul's College, Flushing, L. I. Mr. Diller was engaged in teaching about eight years, in the employ of Dr. Muhlenberg, and in 1835 removed to Brooklyn, having accepted the place of assistant minister in St. John's Church. He was admitted to the priesthood June 28 of that year. In 1842 he assumed the office of rector of this church, as above mentioned. He married, November 15, 1836, Angelina, daughter of Losee Van Nostrand, Esq., of this city.

*Calvary Free Church* in Pearl Street, founded in September, 1833, was originally occupied by the Baptist Society now worshipping in Nassau Street. It passed to the Episcopalians, and under the rectorship of the *Rev. Thomas Pyne* was called St. Paul's Church. He resigned in November, 1834, and the *Rev. Thomas S. Brittan* became rector, who removed in 1844 to the diocese of Illinois. The premises were purchased by Edgar J. Bartow, after which the *Rev. William H. Lewis* became

rector, and so continued till his removal to the *Church of the Holy Trinity* in 1847. A new vestry being formed after the change of property, the church was reorganized, the building enlarged and incorporated by the present name of Calvary Free Church in 1841. Mr. Lewis is a native of Litchfield, Conn.; he preached a while in Bridgeport, and afterwards at Walden, Orange County, N. Y. In 1827 he settled in Huntington, Conn.; from thence he went to Flushing, L. I., in 1828; in 1833 to Marblehead, Mass., and came to this church in 1840. He was created D.D. in 1847. The present rector is *Rev. John F. Fish*.

*Grace Emmanuel Church*, Sydney Place, Brooklyn Heights, was organized in 1841, and the edifice was consecrated March 3, 1842. It is constructed of brick, is both large and convenient, and its interior is not only well, but elegantly finished. The *Rev. Kingston Goddard*, rector, was born in the city of Philadelphia, April 20, 1814, graduated at the University of Pennsylvania in 1834, and pursued divinity studies in the General Theological Seminary, New York. He received orders in June, 1836, and settled soon after in St. Ann's Church at Fishkill Landing, Dutchess County, N. Y. He next took charge of St. Peter's Church in the city of New York, in the absence of the Rev. Hugh Smith, then on a tour in Europe; and became the rector of this church in 1842. His wife is Susan, daughter of William Seaman, Esq., of the City of New York.

Mr. Goddard resigned in 1843, and became rector of St. John's Church, Clifton, Staten Island, from whence he removed to Philadelphia in 1847.

The *Rev. Francis Vinton*, former rector of Trinity Church, Newport, R. I., was the successor of Mr. God-



dard, and was instituted rector of Grace Emmanuel Church July 14, 1844. His wife is Elizabeth, daughter of the hero of Lake Erie, the lamented Oliver Hazard Perry. He was created D.D. at Columbia College, July, 1848.

*Christ Church* on Clinton and Harrison streets, the corner stone of which was laid June 26, 1841, is constructed of fine Jersey free stone, and was consecrated July 28, 1843. It is a beautiful and purely Gothic building, 155 feet long, including the tower and chapel, by sixty feet wide, and cost, independent of the land and furniture \$33,000. It is lighted with stained glass of German manufacture, and has a ceiling of heavy spandrels. It is embellished with corbels, altar screen, and screen for the orchestra; it has seven windows on each side, separated from each other externally by heavy buttresses. The tower also is flanked with four octagonal buttresses, terminating in pinnacles 117 feet from the ground, and is intended to be surmounted by a spire 180 feet high. In short this is probably one of the most splendid and magnificent public edifices in the United States. It was designed by and executed under the direction of Richard Upjohn, Esq., since employed as the architect of Trinity Church, New York.

The rector of this church is the *Rev. John Seely Stone, D.D.* He was born at West Stockbridge, Mass., October 7, 1795, and is the son of Ezekiel and Mary Stone. His first wife was Sophia Morrison, daughter of the late Dr. William Adams of Schenectady, N. Y. For his second wife he married Mary, daughter of the Hon. James Kent, late chief justice and chancellor of the state of New York.

He graduated at Union College in 1823, first settled

in St. Michael's Church, Litchfield, Conn., and subsequently in All Saints Church at Fredericktown, Md.; Trinity Church, New Haven; and St. Paul's in Boston, June 19, 1832, from which he was dismissed June 7, 1841. His settlement, as rector of this church, took place July 11, 1841.

*St. Mary's Church*, Classon, near Myrtle Avenue, was erected in 1837, and consecrated February 1, 1840, of which the *Rev. Joseph Hunter* was rector. He married Miss Isabella Ross in September, 1847. *Rev. John Alden Spooner* is the present rector.

The *Church of the Holy Trinity*, Clinton Street, was commenced in 1844, the individual enterprise of Edgar J. Bartow, whose wife Harriet C. is the daughter of the late Hezekiah B. Pierrepont. It is constructed of the same material as Trinity Church, New York, and its style of a rich and florid Gothic. One of its stained windows is of great size and magnificence, and the whole edifice exceeds any other religious structure upon the island. It was so far completed as to be open for divine service April 25, 1847. The *Rev. William H. Lewis*, formerly of Calvary Free Church, is rector.

*St. Thomas' Free Church* on Willoughby and Bridge Streets, is a small building and of singular architecture, the corner stone of which was laid June 6, 1847. It was completed during the year and consecrated. The congregation was organized in 1843, under the charge of the *Rev. John F. Messenger*, who resigned the rectorship in three years after, and the *Rev. Henry M. Beare* of Zion Church, Flushing, was called here in June, 1846, but returned again to Zion Church in May, 1848. *Rev. Rowland H. Bourne* is the present rector.

*Grace Church* on Hicks and Joralemon streets, con-

structed of stone, 177 by 97 feet, was commenced in 1847, the corner stone laid by Bishop De Lancey May 29, and the house consecrated soon after, of which the *Rev. Francis Vinton* of Emmanuel Church was instituted rector. *St. Peter's Church* was organized May 18, 1848.

The *First Methodist Episcopal Church* in the city was erected in 1794, upon the easterly side of Sands Street, but was afterwards rebuilt and enlarged in 1810. In August, 1843, it was again taken down, and a more capacious edifice of brick was commenced on the same spot, the corner stone being laid September 12, 1843, and the building dedicated December 29, 1843. It was destroyed in the great fire September 10, 1848, but soon rebuilt.

The *second church* of this denomination, on the corner of York and Gold streets, was built in 1823. The *third* was built in Washington Street in 1831, which is of brick, and may be considered a very noble edifice, far exceeding any other Methodist Church in the city.

The fourth, called the *Centenary Church*, on the corner of Johnson and Jay streets, was erected in 1839, that being the expiration of one hundred years since the origin of that sect by the celebrated John Wesley in England. A *new church* of this denomination has been erected upon Franklin Avenue. The *African Methodist Episcopal Church* in High Street was erected in 1817. The corner stone of *another* for colored persons on Navy Street was laid September 18, 1844, and the building finished in 1845.

The *Methodist Episcopal Church* in Dean Street, near Powers, was organized October 27, 1846, and the corner stone laid August 17, 1847.

The *first Congregational Methodist Church* in Brook-

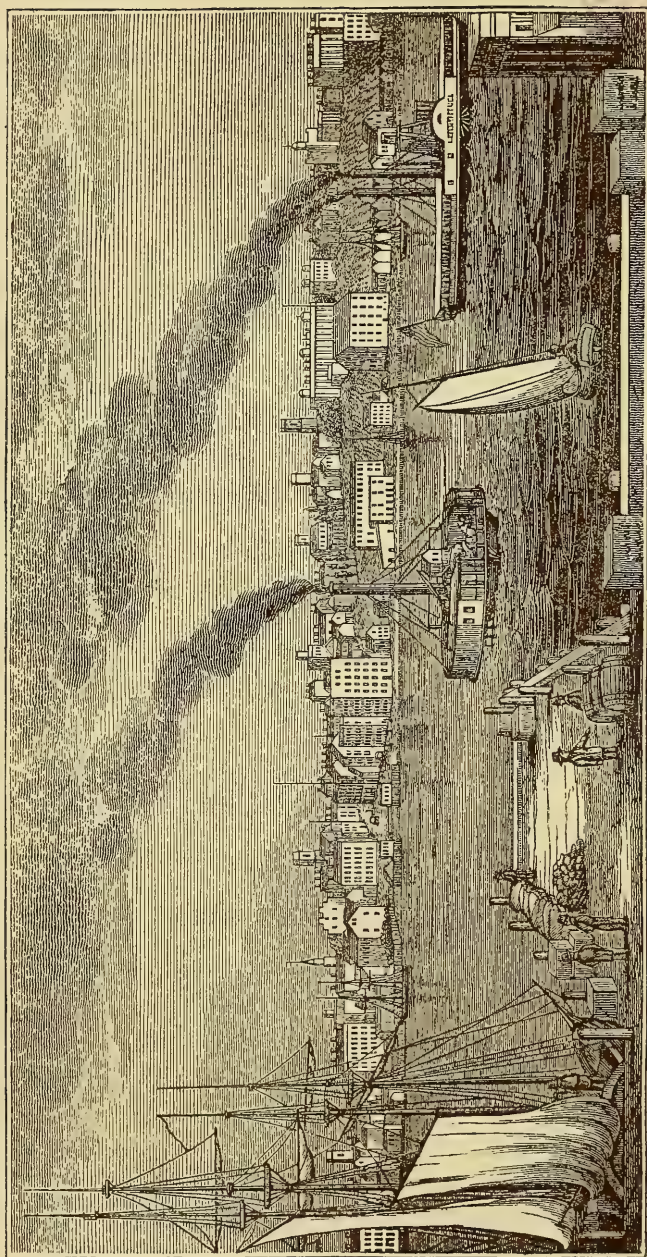
lyn was organized in May, 1848. *Rev. John C. Green*, pastor, corner of Tillary and Barbarine streets.

*The First Presbyterian Church* was organized March 10, 1822, in connection with the presbytery of New York; and the edifice, which is of brick and situated in Cranberry Street, was completed in that year, opened for public worship September 1, 1822, and dedicated April 20, 1823. The *Rev. Joseph Sanford* was installed the first pastor October 16, 1823, and continued till January 11, 1829, when he removed to the Second Presbyterian Church in Philadelphia, where he died at the age of thirty-three, December 25, 1831. His wife was a daughter of the *Rev. William Boardman* of Newtown. The *Rev. Daniel Lynn Carroll*, previously pastor of a church in Litchfield, Conn., and now the *Rev. Dr. Carroll* of Philadelphia, was installed March 18, 1829, and continued till July 9, 1835.

The *Rev. Dr. Samuel Hanson Cox*, third pastor of this church, was born near Rahway, N. J., August 25, 1793. His parents belonged to the Society of Friends, who carefully educated their son in the principles of the Quakers. He first devoted himself to the study of the law, but, turning his attention to divinity, was licensed by the presbytery of New York in October, 1816, and was ordained by the presbytery of New Jersey at Mendham, July 1, 1817. He not only renounced the principles in which he was nurtured, but published, in 1833, a volume of nearly 700 pages, to prove that Quakerism is not Christianity, with what success, must be left to the decision of those better skilled in polemics than ourselves. Dr. Cox was early appointed a professor in the theological seminary at Auburn; was for fifteen years pastor of the Laight Street Presbyterian Church in the city of







NORTH WESTERN VIEW OF BROOKLYN, N. Y. FROM NEAR PECK SLIP, NEW YORK CITY.

The view shows the appearance of the most compact part of Brooklyn, as seen from New York city, opposite Fulton street, Brooklyn. The Collomade buildings on Brooklyn heights, appear on the right.

New York; and was installed in this church May 8, 1837. The presbytery of Brooklyn was erected October 17, 1838, to which this church was immediately attached. This edifice was disposed of to a newly formed *Congregational Society* and possession delivered May 9, 1847, another building having been erected on Henry Street, as hereafter mentioned.

*The Presbyterian Church* in Clinton Street, near Fulton, was organized October 25, 1831; the church edifice was erected in 1833, and dedicated May 4, 1834. It is 65 feet wide by 110 deep, and is built of brick in the Grecian Doric order.

The *Rev. Ichabod S. Spencer, D.D.*, has been the only pastor of this church. He is the son of Phineas and Olive Spencer of Rupert, Vt., where he was born February 24, 1798. He graduated at Union College, Schenectady, N. Y., in 1822, and was ordained over one of the churches in Northampton, Mass., September 11, 1828; he was dismissed from thence March 12, 1832, and installed in this church on the 22d day of the same month. He married Hannah, daughter of Joseph and Catharine Magoffin of Schenectady May 28, 1827.

*The Third Presbyterian Church*, Jay Street, near High, was built in 1839, and dedicated December 15 of that year. The society was first organized on the 22d of April, 1834, and the *Rev. Rollin Sidney Stone*, who graduated at Yale in 1832, was ordained and installed the first pastor April 29, 1835. He was dismissed April 4, 1837, and soon after became, and still is, pastor of the First Congregational Church in Danbury, Conn., where he was installed March 31, 1838.

The *Rev. William Beale Lewis*, the present pastor, is the son of the late Zachariah Lewis (many years editor

of the *New York Commercial Advertiser*, who died November 14, 1840), and grandson of the late Rev. Dr. Isaac Lewis of Greenwich, Conn. He was born in New York City, July 29, 1812, graduated at Yale in 1831, and was ordained and installed pastor of the High Street Congregational Church at Providence, R. I., April 16, 1835. He began his pastoral labors in this church in August, 1837. He married, December, 1834, Charlotte Lansing, eldest daughter of Arthur Tappen of New York. He was dismissed at his own request on account of ill health in October, 1848, and was succeeded by *Rev. Daniel P. Noyes*.

*The Presbyterian Church*, at the corner of Fulton and Pineapple streets, is constructed of brick, in the Gothic style, and is among the finest church edifices in the city. The corner stone was laid September 3, 1839, by the Rev. Dr. Samuel Miller of Princeton, and the edifice was finished during the ensuing year. A large portion of the congregation belonging to this church was formerly attached to the church in Cranberry Street, of which the Rev. Dr. Cox is pastor, and they claim to be the legitimate representatives of those who erected the latter (in their religious opinions and sentiments), as belonging to the same ecclesiastical judicatory under which the society was formed, and remaining so until the great rupture that took place in the Presbyterian Church, the circumstances of which are now familiar to all, constrained them to separate from those adopting the sentiments of the new school. The *Rev. Melancthon Williams Jacobus* is the pastor of this church. He is the son of Peter Jacobus, merchant of Newark, N.J., where he was born in 1816; graduated at Princeton College in 1834, and at the theological seminary there in 1838, where he remained as



assistant in the department of Hebrew instruction, and fellow of the institution, till the fall of 1839, when he was installed here September 15. His wife is a daughter of the late Dr. Samuel Hays of Newark, N. J.

*The Central Presbyterian Church*, at the junction of Willoughby and Pearl streets, was erected in 1838, and dedicated May 30, 1839. It is a wooden structure, but handsome and well proportioned. It was erected by the private liberality of Samuel A. Willoughby, Esq. The first pastor was the *Rev. Henry P. Tappan*, professor in the New York University; having resigned on account of his health, he was succeeded by the *Rev. Absalom Peters, D.D.*, who transferred the congregation to South Brooklyn, where, in a very short time, it became totally extinct. The present church was organized by the presbytery of Brooklyn in November, 1840, and called the *Rev. George Duffield, Jr.*, to be their pastor, since when the congregation has steadily increased in numbers. This gentleman was born at Carlisle, Penn., September 12, 1818, and is the son of the *Rev. George Duffield, D.D.*, now pastor of a church at Detroit, Mich., and grandson of the *Rev. George Duffield, D.D.*, pastor of Pine Street Church, Philadelphia, and chaplain to the congress of the United Colonies in 1776, who died February 2, 1790. The mother of Mr. Duffield was Isabella, daughter of Divie Bethune of New York, and granddaughter of Mrs. Isabella Graham, the well-known and benevolent founder of the Widows' Society, &c. He graduated at Yale in 1837, and at the New York Union Theological Seminary in 1840. On the 22d of October, 1840, he married Anna Augusta, daughter of Samuel A. Willoughby of Brooklyn, and was ordained over this church on the 27th of December fol-

lowing, where he continued till 1846, when he removed, and was installed pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Bloomfield, N. J., November 4, 1847. The building had, however, ceased to be private property, having been purchased by the congregation, and the Rev. Nathaniel C. Locke, born at Salem, N. J., June 1, 1815, but called from Northampton, Va., was installed December 22, 1848.

*A Presbyterian Church* was organized at the Wallabout, December 20, 1842, of which the *Rev. Jonathan Greenleaf* was installed pastor March 8, 1843. A building was soon after begun, which was dedicated March 27, 1845. This gentleman is the son of Moses and Lydia Greenleaf of Newburyport, Mass., where he was born September 4, 1785, and was educated in Maine. He was ordained and installed pastor of the Congregational Church in Wells, Me., March 8, 1815; was dismissed and settled as pastor of the Mariners' Church in Boston in September, 1828; removed to New York and became corresponding secretary of the Seamen's Friend Society in December, 1833, which position he resigned in November, 1841, and came here in September, 1842. He has obtained a good reputation as a writer and is distinguished for his industry. Among other productions of his pen are memoirs of his maternal grandfather, the Rev. Jonathan Parsons; *Sketches of the Ecclesiastical History of Maine*, and an account of all the churches in the city of New York which had existed up to 1846.

*The Presbyterian Free Church*, upon the corner of Tillary and Barbarine streets, was organized March 22, 1841, and possessed the building erected about six years since, by the Baptists. The house had then no pews, and the seats throughout were free to all who chose to occupy



them. This building was in 1847 purchased by those styling themselves *Congregational* or *Independent Methodists*, and their pastor is the *Rev. John C. Green*. Most, if not all the members of this church, have become *Congregational*, and have erected a more spacious and substantial brick church upon Bridge Street. The *Rev. Russell J. Judd* was chosen pastor, and assumed his duties on the 1st of May, 1841. He is the second son of Stephen and Pamela Judd, and was born at Cairo, Green County, N. Y., December 7, 1812. His theological studies were completed under the *Rev. Dr. Beecher* at Lane Seminary, Ohio, April 7, 1836, when he assumed the charge of an academy at Ravenna, Ohio. Here his wife, a daughter of Abel Hemenway, Esq., of Ogdensburg, N. Y., died. He married secondly Mary Jane, daughter of the late Talcott Woolsey of Hartford, Conn. Mr. Judd was one of the passengers on board the steamer "Washington," on Lake Erie, which took fire near Silver Creek June 16, 1838, and burned to the water's edge. Of 150 souls who were on board, more than one-third perished, and Mr. Judd was only, after great suffering, saved from a watery grave. From October, 1838, to May, 1841, he was settled over the Free Presbyterian Church, Paterson, N. J., when he took up his residence in this city. He relinquished his charge in November, 1843, and for immoral conduct was deposed from the ministry. The *Rev. J. N. Sprague*, from Hartford, Conn., became pastor of this church October 19, 1845. *Rev. Edward Weed* is now pastor.

The *South Presbyterian Church* was organized September 18, 1842, and first occupied a chapel in Pacific Street. The *Rev. Samuel T. Spear* was installed pastor May 14, 1843. Their present large and handsome edifice on the

corner of Clinton and Amity streets was begun in August, 1844, and dedicated September 6, 1846. It is of brick, in the Grecian style, 70 feet by 115, including the lecture room, and has a steeple 170 feet high, nor is it excelled in beauty by any other in the city. Mr. Spear was born at Balston Spa, N. Y., March 4, 1812, and is the son of Elihu and Jemima Spear. He was settled over the Second Presbyterian Church in Lansingburgh, N. Y., in October, 1837, from whence he came to this church.

*The new Presbyterian Church edifice* on Henry Street was erected in 1846-47, by the congregation formerly worshipping in the church at Cranberry Street, of which the Rev. Dr. Cox was pastor. Its corner stone was laid July 28, 1846, and the building which is of rough free stone, 70 feet by 100, was completed and dedicated June 6, 1847.

The *First Baptist Church* was incorporated October 15, 1823, and the next year erected a building sixty by forty feet, which, after an occupation of about ten years, was sold to an Episcopal Congregation, and in 1834 a brick edifice eighty by sixty feet was completed on Nassau Street, in a style chaste and simple. The *Rev. William C. Hawley*, first pastor, was ordained soon after the organization of the church. He was succeeded by several others, who remained only for short periods, among whom was the *Rev. Silas Ilsley*, who removed in the year 1841. The present pastor is the *Rev. James L. Hodge*, son of the Rev. James Hodge who labored some years in Suffolk County, and died at Riverhead, at the age of fifty-three years, January 17, 1843.

Mr. Hodge was born in Aberdeen, Scotland, came to the United States about the age of fourteen years, and

graduated at the Literary Institution, Suffield, Conn., in 1835. He settled the same year as pastor of the first church in that place, where he remained four years, when he accepted a call from the Sixteenth Baptist Church in the city of New York; from thence he removed to the First Baptist Church in the city of Albany, and in the fall of 1841 assumed the charge of this church. His wife died August 4, 1846, and September, 1847, he married Sophronia Phipps of Albion, N. Y.

The *Second Baptist Church* was organized in 1840, under the name of the East Baptist Church, and soon after held their meetings in the Classical Hall, Washington Street, the building in which several newly formed societies have successively met, till their churches were completed. The congregation having purchased a lot on Pierrepont Street, corner of Clinton, erected a splendid Gothic edifice of brick, sixty by seventy-seven feet, the corner stone of which was laid July 9, 1843, and the building finished during that year, and dedicated 28th of March, 1844. The pastor of this church, the *Rev. Elisha Ephraim Leech Taylor*, is the son of Richard Taylor of Pompey, Onondaga County, N. Y., grandson of the Hon. John Taylor, many years judge of Saratoga County, and nephew to the Hon. John W. Taylor, who for twenty successive years was a member of congress from his district, and twice speaker of the house. He was born in 1816, graduated at Hamilton College, in 1835, and came here in 1839. He married, October 5, 1840, Mary Jane, daughter of the Rev. Aaron Perkins, pastor of the Berean Baptist Church in the City of New York. Rev. Mr. Taylor resigned January 1, 1848, and accepted a call to the Strong Place Baptist Church, who contemplated erecting a Gothic structure of Jersey free

stone, 133 by 64 feet. The lecture room was completed in June, 1848, thirty-three by seventy-two feet.

His successor, the *Rev. Dr. Bartholomew T. Welch*, was born in 1794 in Boston. He first went to Philadelphia, then to Baltimore, where he commenced preaching; thence to the church at Catskill, N. Y., where he remained two or three years, and married. In 1827 he settled in the Pearl Street Baptist Church, Albany, whence he removed to Brooklyn January 1, 1849.

*The East Brooklyn, or Wallabout Baptist Church*, was organized in 1847. They have a church edifice at Franklin, near Myrtle Avenue. The *Rev. A. Haynes*, a graduate of Brown University, is the pastor. During the same year a (colored) *Baptist Congregation* was founded, and they have a small church in Concord Street, near Gold Street, dedicated January 9, 1848. Their pastor is the *Rev. Sampson White*.

*The Central Baptist Church* was constituted October 4, 1847, and a commodious lecture room in Bridge Street, near Myrtle, has been erected. The congregation is a branch from the Pierrepont Street or East Baptist Church. *Rev. John Westly Sarles* is pastor. He removed in September, 1847.

*The South Baptist Church*, on the north side of Schermerhorn Street, was organized April, 1845, the congregation worshipping in a small building on Livingston Street, until the erection of the present edifice.

*St. Paul's Roman Catholic Church* in Court Street, corner of Congress, was founded in 1836, and is built upon a lot of ground presented for the purpose by Cornelius Heney, Esq. The edifice is of brick and is one of the largest in the city, being seventy-two feet by one hundred, exclusive of the vestry, a semi-circular building attached

to the rear of the church. The interior is tastefully finished, but the style of architecture is not confined to any order.

The present pastor is the *Rev. Nicholas O'Donnell*, a native of Ireland, but educated at Rome, in one of the colleges of that city. He was settled here in 1839, having been previously attached to the church of St. Augustine in Philadelphia. His assistant is the *Rev. James O'Donnell*, both of whom belong to the order of St. Augustine.

*St. James Roman Catholic Church*, on Jay Street, corner of Chapel Street, was erected and consecrated September 20, 1846.

*The Church of the Assumption*, corner of York and Jay streets, was erected in 1822, the corner stone being laid on July 25 of that year. *Rev. David W. Bacon* is pastor.

*St. Mary's Catholic Church* is on Kent Avenue. *Rev. Hugh McGuire* is pastor.

The *First Universalist Society* of Brooklyn was organized in October, 1842. The meeting-house, corner of Fulton and Pineapple streets, was commenced in December, 1842, and dedicated June 22, 1843. The building of brick, of a good size, and neatly, but plainly finished, was consumed in the great fire of September 10, 1848.

The *Rev. Abel C. Thomas*, pastor of the society, was born in Berks County, Penn., July 11, 1807. He is of Quaker parentage, and his grandfather, Abel Thomas, was, for many years, an eminent public speaker among the Friends. Mr. Thomas commenced the gospel ministry in December, 1828, and for a few months labored in the city of New York, when he removed to Philadelphia and took charge of the First Universalist Society



there, in which he continued for ten years, then went to Lowell, Mass., where he remained three years, and in September, 1842, commenced his ministerial labors in this city. His wife, whom he married during the present year, is Maria Louisa, daughter of Judge Palmer of Pottsville, Penn. Mr. Thomas removed in October, 1844, to Cincinnati, Ohio, and thence to Pottsville, Penn., and was succeeded by the *Rev. Thomas B. Thayer*, who was installed November 16, 1845. He is the son of Benjamin and Catherine Thayer of Boston, where he was born September 10, 1812. December 5, 1832, he was ordained by the Boston Association of Universalists, and settled in April following in Lowell, where he continued till April, 1845, when he came to this city, where he still remains.

*Deutsche Evangelische Kirche* is the title of a handsome brick church on Schermerhorn, near Court Street, founded in 1845 by a congregation of Germans, of which the *Rev. F. T. Winkelman* is pastor.

The *First Unitarian Congregational Church*, or *Church of the Saviour*, on the corner of Pierrepont Street and Monroe Place, was built in 1843, the corner stone being laid on the second of July, and the dedication took place April 24, 1844. Its style is the perpendicular Gothic and the building is of red sand-stone. The entire length, exclusive of the towers, which project eight feet, is eighty feet, and its width, without the buttresses on the corners, which are four feet, is sixty-five feet. The front central towers rise 118 feet, terminated by pinnacles. The walls are crowned by a battlement of hammered stone. The whole cost including land, &c., was about \$35,000.

The *Rev. Frederick Augustus Farley* was installed in this church April 25, 1844. He is the son of Ebenezer

and Lydia Farley, and was born in Boston June 25, 1800. He entered college in 1814, and graduated in 1818. He first studied law with the Hon. William Sullivan of Boston, but turning his attention to theology was admitted to the ministry, and ordained over the Congregational Church, Providence, R. I., September 10, 1828. He resigned May 31, 1842, and came to this church. He married Jane Carter Sigourney, daughter of Charles and Mary Sigourney of Boston, May 27, 1830.

The *Church of the Pilgrims* (Congregational), on the corner of Henry and Remsen Streets, is a very large building, 135 feet long, including the lecture room in the rear, and eighty feet wide. The corner stone was laid July 2, 1844, and the church dedicated May 12, 1846. It is built of hewn granite, having a tower at each front corner upon Henry Street, and in the centre of the southern one, a few feet from the ground is inserted a piece of "*forefather's rock*," from Plymouth, which projects a few inches from the surface, reminding the spectator of that ever memorable event, the arrival of our Puritan ancestors in the winter of 1620.

The *Rev. Richard Salter Storrs, Jr.*, pastor of this church, is the son of the *Rev. Richard S. Storrs, D.D.* of Braintree, Mass., where he was born August 21, 1821. He graduated at Amherst College 1839, and the theological seminary, Andover, 1845. He was ordained over the Harvard Church in Brookline, Mass., October 22, 1845, dismissed the next year, and was installed in this church November 19, 1846. He married, October 1, 1845, Mary Elwell, only daughter of the late *Rev. Francis Jenks* of Boston. The grandfather of Mr. Storrs, of the same name, graduated at Yale 1783, and died 1819. His father was the *Rev. John Storrs*, an ancient minister of

Southold, L. I., whose wife was Eunice, daughter of the Hon. Shubal Conant of Mansfield, Conn.; she died March 27, 1767.

The *Second Congregational Church* on Bridge Street, was erected in 1846-47, at a cost of nearly \$14,000, and dedicated June 13, 1847. *Rev. Isaac N. Sprague*, pastor, is a graduate of Middlebury College, 1822, who preached at Sherburn, N. Y., nine years, then in the city of New York, and finally at Hartford, Conn.

The *Plymouth Church* (Third Congregational), situated in Cranberry Street, was purchased from the congregation of the First Presbyterian Church, of which the Rev. Dr. Cox is pastor, for \$20,000. A new organization took place of course, and a call was given to the Rev. Henry Ward Beecher of Ohio to become its pastor. He is the son of the Rev. Dr. Lyman Beecher, formerly of Easthampton, L. I., and now of Lane Seminary, Ohio. His mother was Roxana Foote of Guilford, Conn. He was born at Litchfield, Conn., June 24, 1813, graduated at Amherst College 1834, studied theology under his father, was licensed in 1836, and ordained over a church in Lawrenceburgh, Ind., in 1837. In 1839 he took charge of the Second Presbyterian Church, Indianapolis, removed here October, 1847, and was installed in this church November 11, 1847. He married Eunice White, daughter of Dr. Artemas Bullard of West Sutton, Mass., August 3, 1837. This church was burned January 13, 1849, owing to a fault in one of the flues. A new church is now building on Orange Street, between Hicks and Henry streets.

The *Fourth Congregational Church*, on Clinton Avenue, was built in 1847, and dedicated November 22, 1847. The *Rev. Dr. Derrick C. Lansing* was chosen

pastor in January, 1848, and installed on the 14th of March following.

Among other churches of miscellaneous denomination may be mentioned: Sailor's Union Bethel, Main, near Water Street, Rev. William Burnet, pastor; Friends' Meeting House, Clark Street; American Primitive Church, Bridge, near Tillary Street; Protestant Methodist Church, Graham Street, near Flushing Avenue.

"On account of the great number of Brooklyn churches, it has been thought best not to include the names of pastors after 1849. Many of the churches have published histories which give in detail lists of pastors and other information which is of too specific a character to be included in a history of the entire Island."—EDITOR.

---

At 11 o'clock on the night of September 9, 1848, commenced one of the most extensive and destructive fires that ever afflicted Brooklyn, commencing at the corner of Henry and Fulton streets and destroying more than 200 buildings, the value of which, including goods and furniture, amounted to little less than a million and a half of dollars. Owing to a scarcity of water, occasioned by a protracted drought, it was impossible to arrest the flames otherwise than by the blowing up of houses, which happily proved successful. Among the most important structures which fell a sacrifice to the devouring element, were three large churches, recently erected, viz., the Methodist Church on Sands Street; the First Universalist Church, corner of Fulton and Pineapple streets; and the First Baptist Church, corner of Nassau and Liberty streets. The post office, 147 Fulton Street, with a portion of the mail, was consumed, also

the office of the *Long Island Star*, occupied by Edwin B. Spooner, with much of his type and fixtures.

---

In concluding our account of this city, equal in beauty and advantageousness of position, as well as of commercial resources to any other in the world, a city whose increase and prosperity is without a parallel in modern times, we cannot help indulging a confident hope of her future growth and magnificence; for surely in this wonderful country, and in this utilitarian age, there has been nothing like it, and every Long Islander whose heart is *in the right place* is justly proud of the eminent distinction she holds among the American cities. That she is destined at some future period to become the political, as she is now the business capital of the island, is more than probable, and this will tend still more to her advancement and greatness. The extraordinary number, variety, and elegance of her churches, seminaries of learning, hospitals, and other charitable institutions, with an increasing desire for extending the blessings of liberty and competence to every citizen, by encouraging honesty and industry among all classes, point to a state of eminence and glory not yet attained, a consummation, however, most devoutly to be wished for. To do even common justice to what might be considered a fair history of Brooklyn, would require a volume of no mean size and more than ordinary ability and application in him that shall undertake the task. The compiler of the preceding account has sought information from every quarter, and while he flatters himself he has done much for his contemporaries, he is sensible that much remains to be done, ere the history of the last 200 years shall have been even imperfectly accomplished.



*Contributed by the Editor*

“ During the first half of the ‘ nineties ’ there was a certain amount of sentiment for consolidation with the City of New York. In March, 1896, such a bill was passed in the State Senate by a vote of 38 to 8 and in the Assembly by 91 to 56. When submitted, as required, to the mayors of the several cities concerned, it was not so fortunate, being vetoed by Mayors Strong of New York and Wurster of Brooklyn, and approved by Mayor Gleason of Long Island City. The bill was returned to the Legislature and repassed over the vetoes and became a law subject to the Governor’s signature. A mass meeting was held in New York against the bill, but Governor Levi P. Morton annexed his signature on May 11, 1896. By the terms of the act, consolidation was not to go into effect until January 1, 1898, when Brooklyn finally lost her identity as a separate city and became the Borough of Brooklyn, City of New York.”

## CONCLUDING REMARKS ON THE PRESENT CONDITION AND FUTURE PROSPECTS OF LONG ISLAND

THE late learned and venerable Dr. Dwight, who traversed Long Island about 1796, makes the following observations in relation to this portion of the United States :

“ The insular situation of these counties has a very perceptible influence upon the inhabitants as a body. Their own internal concerns must always exist upon a small scale. Their views, affections and pursuits, must of course be always limited. Few objects can be presented to them, and few events can occur of sufficient magnitude to expand thought, or of sufficient importance to awaken energy. Almost all their concerns are absolutely confined to the house or to the neighborhood; and the neighborhood rarely extends beyond the confines of the small hamlet.

“ Habitually bounded by these, the mind is neither very much inclined, nor very able to look beyond them. Its views, in most cases will, after a little time, be of choice occupied with these small circles, its affections will all centre here; and its pursuits will break through, only to reach the market. The tenor of life will therefore be uniform, undisturbed on the one hand and tame on the other. What the mind may have been cannot be known, because it has never been stimulated to any attempt for the expansion of its views, or the exertion of its powers; what it is, may from one instance, be readily conjectured in a thousand.

“ The inhabitants of this island are destitute of other advantages, which contribute not a little to diffuse information and awaken energy. There is very little travelling here, besides their own. The attention excited, the curiosity awakened, and the animation produced by the frequent arrival of strangers, are here in great measure unknown. At the same time, comparatively few persons of talents and information reside here. There is nothing sufficiently inviting in the circumstances of the island itself to allure persons of this character from the continent, and the allurements of the continent are such, as commonly to entice men of this description, who are natives of the island, to remove from it for the sake of obtaining them.

“ A considerable number of such men, born here, are found in New York and elsewhere. The advantages derived from the conversation and examples of persons distinguished for superiority, are therefore enjoyed in a very imperfect degree; and that luminous spirit, and those improvements in the state of society, which they every where shed upon the circle around them, are very imperfectly realized. Such, it would seem, must, through an indefinite period, be the situation of Long Island.”

Notwithstanding the acuteness of observation and felicity of expression, as well as aptness of description, for which the learned president was so distinguished, a very slight acquaintance with the people of Long Island, only, is required to perceive that many of his conclusions were rather the result of previously formed opinions, than of any thorough examination of facts as they really existed. At the period referred to, the agriculture of the island was but little advanced, domestic manufactures scarcely attended to, and not a foot of turnpike road constructed in either of the counties. Of course the

facilities of intercourse and travel were very limited, and Long Island was probably less known than almost any other district of the same extent within 200 miles of New York. And it may be likewise affirmed that the people of different parts of the island knew little of each other, and made little effort toward a more intimate acquaintance. The inhabitants of Kings County had a very limited knowledge of their neighbors in Queens, nor had either of them any considerable information of those who were scattered over the many thousand square miles of Suffolk County; nay, a large majority of those who lived in the western towns had never stepped foot in those at the east.

It may be true, as has been supposed, that islanders possess stronger local attachments than most others, yet it is equally susceptible of proof, that they frequently exhibit quite as much activity and enterprise, as those who seemingly possess superior natural advantages, as witness the inhabitants of Nantucket and other islands along our extended maritime coast; and even of Sag Harbor, whose energies and perseverance have invested nearly \$2,000,000 in the whaling business alone, and thus afford constant and profitable employment to about 2,000 persons, directly or remotely connected with this species of commerce.

To those whose means enable them to travel either for health or amusement, Long Island presents many solid attractions. The almost level surface of its southern, and the agreeable inundations of its northern border; its extensive inland plains, woods, and forests, abounding in game for the hunter; the numerous streams, ponds, and bays, teeming with scale and shellfish of every kind; its fine air, with an illimitable water prospect

in every direction, all hold out strong inducements to tempt and gratify the stranger. Since the introduction of turnpike roads in various parts of the island, with a very general improvement of common roads, agriculture has steadily advanced, till it has attained to a condition which equally surprises and delights the heart of the traveller and the patriot. Some towns, which a few years since scarcely raised a sufficiency for home consumption, now produce immense quantities of grain and other articles, which, by the present improved modes of conveyance, now find a ready and ample market.

In short, while other parts of the state have felt the impulse of progress, Long Island has been equally animated, and now that she is better known is more properly appreciated. Accordingly persons of wealth and taste are constantly seeking locations for country residences in different places, and by their liberality, intelligence, and refinement, impart also a tone and respectability to the population around them. Our villages are among the pleasantest, the scenery luxurious and varied, and the great south bay ensures employment and a competent support to many thousands. Besides the ocean views on the south, the shores of the Sound and its promontories and beautiful indentations afford sites for building of surpassing beauty, with an atmosphere of great salubrity. Such have been the improvements in the means of intercommunication with other parts of the country, that the social, commercial, and ordinary business relations of the people of the island have become closely identified with those of the neighboring cities, whereby the prosperity of one section of country must lead necessarily to that of every other.

Long Island contains at this time (1849) more than



150,000 inhabitants, of whom more than three-eighths are inhabitants of Brooklyn alone, a city now holding the second rank in the state; it is therefore, the commercial, as well as the natural business capital of the island. Our excess of population over that of Rhode Island, Delaware, Arkansas, and Wisconsin, gives us in this respect, all the rights of an independent state, should we assert our claim thereto.

That divisions will ere long take place in the immense territory of this empire state is highly probable, while the insular position of Long Island, her increasing population, and growing importance, exhibit in a strong light her invincible right to a separate and distinct political existence, with the aspiring and wealthy city of Brooklyn as the appropriate seat of her legislature, the inhabitants of which already equal in numbers those of the whole state of Delaware. This is a matter of grave importance, and is deserving of serious consideration, and that it will eventually take place, many circumstances serve to evince, but when and how it can best be accomplished, must be left to future determination.

The inhabitants of Suffolk County are, to a great extent, situated over 200 miles from the seat of government, and the distance will probably soon be increased by its removal from Albany. The state is, moreover, far too large, under the present expansion of the right of suffrage, for the electors to possess any proper acquaintance with candidates for office of every grade, and they must, therefore, in most cases, either fail to vote, or give their suffrage for those of whose character or fitness they know little or nothing.

Moreover, the experience of all ages, and of our own country especially, has shown that small states are more

easily and better managed than large ones, and government more wisely and economically administered. The main cause of this is obvious; the candidates and voters have a personal knowledge of each other, more confidence exists, greater watchfulness is preserved, every aberration from virtue and honesty is known, and fraud and speculation more surely defeated, or sooner detected and punished. Under any aspect, therefore, it is certain that Long Island, as a separate state, would partake of a greater share of prosperity and happiness than her people have ever experienced before.

Many causes which have assisted to advance the interests of other parts of the state, have thus far retarded our own; among these not the least important is the emigration of so large a portion of her ambitious and enterprising citizens to the city of New York and other places. Scarcely a settlement exists in the northern and western portions of the state, in which Long Island people may not be found, amongst the most prosperous of their inhabitants. This is the case also in the states of New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Illinois, Michigan, and several others. Long Island, has, therefore, been constantly drained of a part of her population, who, had they remained, might have done much for her advancement in every respect, provided they had exerted the same powers of mind and body in promoting the welfare of their native island.

In addition to many improvements made in agriculture, horticulture also has attracted the attention of those whose local position gives them the opportunity of engaging in it. To the facilities afforded by steam ferries at Brooklyn, and by steam communication between New York City and more distant parts of the island, she

is indebted for no small share of the advancement which we have experienced within a few years.

Besides Brooklyn, with her rapidly increasing population and wealth, Williamsburgh, her natural rival, is advancing with corresponding zeal, while the flourishing and pleasant villages of Flatbush, East New York, Gowanus, Astoria, Jamaica, Flushing, Glen Cove, Hempstead, Babylon, Huntington, Northport, Patchogue, Greenport, Orient, and Sag Harbor are following on with an energy that presages success and prosperity as yet unknown to them.

Among other aids to advancement, the facilities for travel and conveyance by the railroad are probably destined to work greater benefits to Long Island than have yet been realized. To a trading and commercial people as we are, expedition and cheapness of communication are all important; and they best comport with the character of those whose motto is *onward* and that *forever*.

Other, and equally important results will follow this, to us, great project of internal improvement, among which, we may anticipate still greater advances in agriculture—the thousands of acres of unimproved land in Suffolk and Queens counties will be brought into profitable cultivation, and the great Hempstead Plains, now a standing reproach to the town, will be converted into fertile fields, yielding a rich reward to industry and enterprise.

Before closing this interesting subject, we cannot help expressing our sincere regret at the disposition so prevalent in the present day, for changing the names of places; many of those adopted being remarkable for little else than their singularity and inappropriateness. From a historical and economical viewpoint, this passion for change is much to be lamented, as leading in the end

to confusion and uncertainty. Old names, like old friends, should not be changed for light and transient causes, much less from mere whim and caprice; the consequences of change may at a future period be attended with more serious evils than are now contemplated, by those concerned in this useless not to say mischievous innovation. It is also equally to be regretted that the original Indian, Dutch, and other names, have not been more religiously preserved, as they were generally distinguished for their propriety and fitness, when fully understood.

Thus *Hallett's Cove*, named in honor of the first proprietor, has given place to the unmeaning designation of *Astoria*; *Cow Neck*, celebrated for its fine pasture lands, has become, by some strange metamorphosis, *Manhasset* (the name of an Indian tribe once inhabiting Shelter Island); *Success*, which ought, one might think, to have satisfied the most fastidious, has been changed to what was probably considered a more charming designation of *Lakeville*; *Hempstead Harbor* has yielded to the very effeminate word *Roslyn*; *Musketo Cove*, likely from some fancied local feeling, has given way to the more romantic appellation of *Glen Cove*; *Cow Harbor*, which was possibly considered humiliating, has become *Northport*, and *Drown Meadow*, a name particularly applicable, has acquired the more patriotic cognomen of *Port Jefferson*. The people of *Old Man's* went all the way to the Holy Land for the name of *Mount Sinai*; the pleasant village of *Oysterponds* has assumed the poetical title of *Orient*; *Near Rockaway* is hereafter to be known as *Rockville*; even *Rum-Point* is repudiated after nearly two centuries, for *Greenwich*, and *Hungry Harbor* has become *Brookfield*.

## THE BIRDS OF LONG ISLAND

BY L. NELSON NICHOLS

DR. JAMES E. DEKAY wrote the article entitled "A Catalogue of the Birds of Long Island," that was published in the second edition of Thompson's *Long Island*, and was dated June 1, 1843. Dr. Dekay was one of the few scientific ornithologists of his day, and probably the only person who could have compiled as good a list of Long Island birds at that time. In 1917 there are probably more than twenty persons who could compile an intelligent list according to modern scientific standards.

No branch of nature is more widely known and studied on Long Island today than birds. This is due to three causes. The first cause is the knowledge of the economic value of birds due to a better understanding of agricultural science, the inspiration of government publications, and the instruction in the schools. The second cause is the increase in nature study, due not only to a great interest in the wonders of nature and the artistic appreciation of nature, but also in the greatly increased outdoor activity that indoor workers have learned to put to some use or study. The third cause is the unusually favorable geographic position of the island. Located as it is where many migrating birds from the north are inclined to come down the Hudson to the shore, and most birds from New England and further north-east must follow



southwesterly along the shore, it is apparent that great waves of bird migration will concentrate on Long Island and vicinity. The island is located in the overlapping zones of Alleghanian and Carolinian fauna, so that birds of both zones breed here. There are also such varied conditions of forest, farmland, parks, villages, streams, marshes, lakes, inland bays, rocky shores, mud flats, and long sandy beaches, that a remarkable variety of birds live for many weeks of each year on Long Island.

One of the most attractive of the smaller migrants, the Blackburnian Warbler, takes its name, not from the burnished orange and black of its plumage, but from the naturalist Blackburn who lived in revolutionary days at Hempstead, and had a large collection of specimens. Dr. Dekay has his name preserved in Dekay's snake, one of our most common little reptiles, often called a garden snake. Dr. Dekay compiled a list of birds of New York State that was published in 1844 by the State Museum. In the same year J. P. Giraud, Jr., brought out a book entitled *Birds of Long Island*. William Dutcher has collected four large volumes of *Long Island Notes* from which Dr. Frank M. Chapman drew freely in his *Handbook* published in 1898, and which were included by Elon H. Eaton in his *Birds of New York*, published in 1910-14. Dr. William C. Braislin compiled a *List of the Birds of Long Island, New York*, which was published in the Proceedings of the Linnæan Society of New York, for the year ending March, 1907.

Of the 404 known United States species in 1843, Dr. Dekay named 293 as known on Long Island. Today (1917), of the 1,115 varieties recorded by the American Ornithologist's Union, 372 are included in the following

Long Island list. Birds that breed on Long Island are marked by an asterisk.

Western grebe. <i>Æchmophorus occidentalis</i> .....	once
Holbøll's grebe. <i>Colymbus holbøelli</i> .....	fairly common
Horned grebe. <i>Colymbus auritus</i> .....	common
Pied-billed grebe. <i>Podilymbus podiceps</i> *.....	fairly common
Loon. <i>Gavia immer</i> .....	common
Pacific loon. <i>Gavia pacifica</i> .....	once
Red-throated loon. <i>Gavia stellata</i> .....	fairly common
Puffin. <i>Fratercula arctica</i> .....	rare
Black guillemot. <i>Cephus grylle</i> .....	once
Brünnich's murre. <i>Uria lomvia</i> .....	irregular
Razor-billed auk. <i>Alca torda</i> .....	irregular
Dovekie. <i>Alle alle</i> .....	uncommon
Skua. <i>Megalestris skua</i> .....	twice
Pomarine jaeger. <i>Stercorarius pomarinus</i> .....	uncommon
Parasitic jaeger. <i>Stercorarius parasiticus</i> .....	rare
Long-tailed jaeger. <i>Stercorarius longicaudus</i> .....	rare
Ivory gull. <i>Pagophila alba</i> .....	accidental
Kittiwake. <i>Rissa tridactyla</i> .....	uncommon
Glaucous gull. <i>Larus hyperboreus</i> .....	rare
Iceland gull. <i>Larus leucopterus</i> .....	very rare
Kumlien's gull. <i>Larus kumlieni</i> .....	very rare
Great black-backed gull. <i>Larus marinus</i> .....	common
Herring gull. <i>Larus argentatus</i> .....	abundant
Ring-billed gull. <i>Larus delawarensis</i> .....	common
Laughing gull. <i>Larus atricilla</i> .....	fairly common
Bonaparte's gull. <i>Larus philadelphia</i> .....	fairly common
Little gull. <i>Larus minutus</i> .....	twice
Sabine's gull. <i>Xema sabini</i> .....	twice
Gull-billed tern. <i>Gelochelidon nilotica</i> .....	accidental
Caspian tern. <i>Sterna caspia</i> .....	uncommon
Royal tern. <i>Sterna maxima</i> .....	once
Cabot's tern. <i>Sterna sandvicensis aculflavida</i> .....	accidental
Trudeau's tern. <i>Sterna trudeaui</i> .....	once
Forster's tern. <i>Sterna forsteri</i> .....	rare
Common tern. <i>Sterna hirundo</i> *.....	common
Arctic tern. <i>Sterna paradisæa</i> .....	rare
Roseate tern. <i>Sterna dougalli</i> *.....	uncommon
Least tern. <i>Sterna antillarum</i> .....	rare
Sooty tern. <i>Sterna fuscata</i> .....	once
Black tern. <i>Hydrochelidon nigra surinamensis</i> .....	common
Black skimmer. <i>Rhynchops nigra</i> .....	rare
Cory's shearwater. <i>Puffinus borealis</i> .....	uncommon
Greater shearwater. <i>Puffinus gravis</i> .....	uncommon
Audubon's shearwater. <i>Puffinus lherminieri</i> .....	once

Sooty shearwater. <i>Puffinus griseus</i> .....	rare
Black-capped petrel. <i>Æstrelata hasitata</i> .....	once
Leach's petrel. <i>Oceanodroma leucorhoa</i> .....	rare
Wilson's petrel. <i>Oceanites oceanicus</i> .....	common
Booby. <i>Sula leucogastra</i> .....	once
Gannet. <i>Sula bassana</i> .....	uncommon
Cormorant. <i>Phalacrocorax carbo</i> .....	rare
Double-crested cormorant. <i>Phalacrocorax auritus</i> .....	common
White pelican. <i>Pelecanus erythrorhynchos</i> .....	twice
Brown pelican. <i>Pelecanus occidentalis</i> .....	once
Man-o'-war-bird. <i>Fregata aquila</i> .....	twice
Merganser. <i>Mergus americanus</i> .....	common
Red-breasted merganser. <i>Mergus serrator</i> .....	abundant
Hooded merganser. <i>Lophodytes cucullatus</i> .....	rare
Mallard. <i>Anas platyrhynchos</i> .....	uncommon
Black duck. <i>Anas rubripes</i> *.....	common
Gadwall. <i>Chaulelasmus streperus</i> .....	rare
European wigeon. <i>Mareca penelope</i> .....	accidental
Baldpate. <i>Mareca americana</i> .....	fairly common
European teal. <i>Nettion crecca</i> .....	three times
Green-winged teal. <i>Nettion carolinense</i> .....	uncommon
Blue-winged teal. <i>Querquedula discors</i> *.....	uncommon
Shoveler. <i>Spatula clypeata</i> .....	rare
Pintail. <i>Dafila acuta</i> .....	rare
Wood duck. <i>Aix sponsa</i> *.....	rare
Rufous-crested duck. <i>Netta rufina</i> .....	once
Redhead. <i>Marila americana</i> .....	uncommon
Canvasback. <i>Marila valisneria</i> .....	rare
Scaup duck. <i>Marila marila</i> .....	abundant
Lesser scaup duck. <i>Marila affinis</i> .....	common
Ring-necked duck. <i>Marila collaris</i> .....	three times
Goldeneye. <i>Clangula clangula americana</i> .....	common
Barrow's goldeneye. <i>Clangula islandica</i> .....	once
Bufflehead. <i>Charitonetta albeola</i> .....	fairly common
Old-squaw. <i>Harelda hyemalis</i> .....	abundant
Harlequin duck. <i>Histrionicus histrionicus</i> .....	very rare
Labrador duck. <i>Camptorhynchus labradorius</i> .....	extinct
Eider. <i>Somateria dresseri</i> .....	rare
King eider. <i>Somateria spectabilis</i> .....	uncommon
Scoter. <i>Oidemia americana</i> .....	common
White-winged scoter. <i>Oidemia deglandi</i> .....	common
Surf scoter. <i>Oidemia perspicillata</i> .....	common
Ruddy duck. <i>Erismatura jamaicensis</i> .....	uncommon
Snow goose. <i>Chen hyperboreus hyperboreus</i> .....	twice
Greater snow goose. <i>Chen hyperboreus nivalis</i> .....	rare
Blue goose. <i>Chen cærulescens</i> .....	accidental
White-fronted goose. <i>Anser albifrons gambeli</i> .....	accidental
Canada goose. <i>Branta canadensis canadensis</i> .....	common

Hutchins's goose. <i>Branta canadensis hutchinsi</i> .....	accidental
Brant. <i>Branta bernicla glaucogastra</i> .....	common
Black brant. <i>Branta nigricans</i> .....	very rare
Barnacle goose. <i>Branta leucopsis</i> .....	once
Whistling swan. <i>Olor columbianus</i> .....	rare
White ibis. <i>Guara alba</i> .....	twice
Glossy ibis. <i>Plegadis autumnalis</i> .....	twice
Wood ibis. <i>Mycteria americana</i> .....	once
Bittern. <i>Botaurus lentiginosus</i> *.....	fairly common
Least bittern. <i>Ixobrychus exilis</i> *.....	uncommon
Great blue heron. <i>Ardea herodias</i> *.....	common
Egret. <i>Herodias egretta</i> .....	rare
Snowy egret. <i>Egretta candidissima</i> .....	rare
Louisiana heron. <i>Hydranassa tricolor ruficollis</i> .....	once
Little blue heron. <i>Florida cærulea</i> .....	rare
Green heron. <i>Butorides virescens</i> *.....	common
Black-crowned night heron. <i>Nycticorax nycticorax næ-</i> <i>vius</i> * .....	common
Yellow-crowned night heron. <i>Nyctanassa violacea</i> .....	accidental
King rail. <i>Rallus elegans</i> *.....	rare
Clapper rail. <i>Rallus crepitans</i> *.....	uncommon
Virginia rail. <i>Rallus virginianus</i> *.....	uncommon
Sora. <i>Porzana carolina</i> *.....	rare
Yellow rail. <i>Coturnicops noveboracensis</i> .....	rare
Black rail. <i>Creciscus jamaicensis</i> .....	rare
Corn crane. <i>Crex crex</i> .....	three times
Purple gallinule. <i>Ionornis martinicus</i> .....	rare
Florida gallinule. <i>Gallinula galeata</i> *.....	uncommon
Coot. <i>Fulica americana</i> .....	fairly common
Red phalarope. <i>Phalaropus fulcarius</i> .....	rare
Northern phalarope. <i>Lobipes lobatus</i> .....	uncommon
Wilson's phalarope. <i>Steganopus tricolor</i> .....	very rare
Avocet. <i>Recurvirostra americana</i> .....	very rare
Black-necked stilt. <i>Himantopus mexicanus</i> .....	twice
Woodcock. <i>Philohela minor</i> *.....	uncommon
Wilson's snipe. <i>Gallinago delicata</i> .....	uncommon
Dowitcher. <i>Macrorhamphus griseus griseus</i> .....	common
Long-billed dowitcher. <i>Macrohamphus griseus scol-</i> <i>paceus</i> .....	rare
Stilt sandpiper. <i>Macropalama himantopus</i> .....	fairly common
Knot. <i>Tringa canutus</i> .....	fairly common
Purple sandpiper. <i>Arquatella maritima</i> .....	uncommon
Pectoral sandpiper. <i>Pisobia maculata</i> .....	fairly common
White-rumped sandpiper. <i>Pisobia fuscicollis</i> .....	fairly common
Baird's sandpiper. <i>Pisobia bairdi</i> .....	rare
Least sandpiper. <i>Pisobia minutilla</i> .....	abundant
Dunlin. <i>Pelidna alpina alpina</i> .....	once
Red-backed sandpiper. <i>Pelidna alpina sakhalina</i> .....	uncommon



Curlew sandpiper. <i>Erolia ferruginea</i> .....	once
Semipalmated sandpiper. <i>Ereunetes pusilla</i> .....	abundant
Western sandpiper. <i>Ereunetes mauri</i> .....	uncommon
Sanderling. <i>Calidris leucophæa</i> .....	abundant
Marbled godwit. <i>Limosa fedoa</i> .....	very rare
Hudsonian godwit. <i>Limosa hæmastica</i> .....	rare
Greater yellowlegs. <i>Totanus melanoleucus</i> .....	common
Yellowlegs. <i>Totanus flavipes</i> .....	fairly common
Solitary sandpiper. <i>Helodromas solitarius</i> .....	fairly common
Willet. <i>Catoptrophorus semipalmatus</i> .....	rare
Ruff. <i>Machetes pugnax</i> .....	accidental
Upland plover. <i>Bartamia longicauda</i> *.....	rare
Buff-breasted sandpiper. <i>Tryngites subruficollis</i> .....	very rare
Spotted sandpiper. <i>Actitis macularius</i> *.....	common
Long-billed curlew. <i>Numenius americanus</i> .....	very rare
Hudsonian curlew. <i>Numenius hudsonicus</i> .....	uncommon
Eskimo curlew. <i>Numenius borealis</i> .....	extinct
Whimbrel. <i>Numenius phæopus</i> .....	accidental
Lapwing. <i>Vanellus vanellus</i> .....	accidental
Black-bellied plover. <i>Squatarola squatarola</i> .....	common
Golden plover. <i>Charadrius dominicus</i> .....	fairly common
Killdeer. <i>Oxyechus vociferus</i> *.....	uncommon
Semipalmated plover. <i>Ægialitis semipalmata</i> .....	abundant
Piping plover. <i>Ægialitis meloda</i> *.....	fairly common
Wilson's plover. <i>Ochthodromus wilsonius</i> .....	rare
Ruddy turnstone. <i>Arenaria interpres morinella</i> .....	fairly common
Oyster-catcher. <i>Hæmatopus palliatus</i> .....	very rare
Bob-white. <i>Colinus virginianus</i> *.....	fairly common
Ruffed grouse. <i>Bonasa umbellus</i> *.....	fairly common
Heath hen. <i>Tympanuchus cupido</i> .....	extinct
Wild turkey. <i>Meleagris gallopavo silvestris</i> .....	extinct
Passenger pigeon. <i>Ectopistes migratorius</i> .....	extinct
Mourning dove. <i>Zenaidura macroura carolinensis</i> *.....	fairly common
Turkey vulture. <i>Cathartes aura septentrionalis</i> .....	very rare
Black vulture. <i>Catharista urubu</i> .....	once
Swallow-tailed kite. <i>Elanoides forficatus</i> .....	twice
Marsh hawk. <i>Circus hudsonius</i> *.....	fairly common
Sharp-shinned hawk. <i>Accipiter velox</i> *.....	uncommon
Cooper's hawk. <i>Accipiter cooperi</i> *.....	uncommon
Goshawk. <i>Astur atricapillus</i> .....	rare
Red-tailed hawk. <i>Buteo borealis</i> *.....	common
Red-shouldered hawk. <i>Buteo lineatus</i> *.....	common
Broad-winged hawk. <i>Buteo platypterus</i> *.....	rare
Rough-legged hawk. <i>Archibuteo lagopus sancti-johannis</i> .....	uncommon
Golden eagle. <i>Aquila chrysaëtos</i> .....	very rare
Bald eagle. <i>Haliaëtus leucocephalus</i> .....	rare
White gyrfalcon. <i>Falco islandus</i> .....	once
Gyrfalcon. <i>Falco rusticolus gyrfalco</i> .....	twice



Black gyrfalcon. <i>Falco rusticolus obsoletus</i> .....	accidental
Duck hawk. <i>Falco peregrinus anatum</i> .....	uncommon
Pigeon hawk. <i>Falco columbarius</i> .....	fairly common
Sparrow hawk. <i>Falco sparverius</i> *.....	fairly common
Osprey. <i>Pandion haliaëtus carolinensis</i> *.....	common
Barn owl. <i>Aluco pratincola</i> *.....	uncommon
Long-eared owl. <i>Asio wilsonianus</i> *.....	rare
Short-eared owl. <i>Asio flammeus</i> *.....	fairly common
Barred owl. <i>Strix varia</i> *.....	rare
Great gray owl. <i>Scotiapex nebulosa</i> .....	once
Saw-whet owl. <i>Cryptoglaux acadica</i> *.....	rare
Screech owl. <i>Otus asio</i> *.....	fairly common
Great horned owl. <i>Bubo virginianus</i> *.....	uncommon
Snowy owl. <i>Nyctea nyctea</i> .....	irregular
Hawk owl. <i>Surnia ulula caparoch</i> .....	once
Yellow-billed cuckoo. <i>Coccyzus americanus</i> *.....	common
Black-billed cuckoo. <i>Coccyzus erythrophthalmus</i> *.....	common
Belted kingfisher. <i>Ceryle alcyon</i> *.....	common
Hairy woodpecker. <i>Dryobates villosus</i> *.....	fairly common
Downy woodpecker. <i>Dryobates pubescens medianus</i> *.....	common
Arctic three-toed woodpecker. <i>Picoides arcticus</i> .....	once
Yellow-bellied sapsucker. <i>Sphyrapicus varius</i> .....	common
Northern pileated woodpecker. <i>Phlœotomus pileatus abieticola</i> .....	accidental
Red-headed woodpecker. <i>Melanerpes erythrocephalus</i> *.....	rare
Red-bellied woodpecker. <i>Centurus carolinus</i> .....	three times
Northern flicker. <i>Colaptes auratus luteus</i> *.....	common
Whip-poor-will. <i>Antrostomus vociferus</i> *.....	fairly common
Nighthawk. <i>Chordeiles virginianus</i> *.....	fairly common
Chimney swift. <i>Chætura pelagica</i> *.....	abundant
Ruby-throated hummingbird. <i>Archilochus colubris</i> *.....	fairly common
Kingbird. <i>Tyrannus tyrannus</i> *.....	common
Gray kingbird. <i>Tyrannus dominicensis</i> .....	once
Crested flycatcher. <i>Myiarchus crinitus</i> *.....	common
Phœbe. <i>Sayornis phœbe</i> *.....	common
Olive-sided flycatcher. <i>Nuttallornis borealis</i> .....	uncommon
Wood pewee. <i>Myiochanes virens</i> *.....	common
Yellow-bellied flycatcher. <i>Empidonax flaviventris</i> .....	rare
Acadian flycatcher. <i>Empidonax virescens</i> *.....	uncommon
Alder flycatcher. <i>Empidonax traillii alnorum</i> *.....	uncommon
Least flycatcher. <i>Empidonax minimus</i> *.....	common
Skylark. <i>Alauda arvensis</i> *.....	extinct
Horned lark. <i>Otocoris alpestris alpestris</i> .....	common
Prairie horned lark. <i>Otocoris alpestris praticola</i> .....	rare
Hoyt's horned lark. <i>Otocoris alpestris hoyti</i> .....	rare
Blue jay. <i>Cyanocitta cristata</i> *.....	common
Northern raven. <i>Corvus corax principalis</i> .....	once
Crow. <i>Corvus brachyrhynchos</i> *.....	abundant

Fish crow. <i>Corvus ossifragus</i> *.....	common
Starling. <i>Sturnus vulgaris</i> *.....	abundant
Bobolink. <i>Dolichonyx oryzivorus</i> *.....	common
Cowbird. <i>Molothus ater</i> *.....	common
Red-winged blackbird. <i>Agelaius phœniceus</i> *.....	abundant
Meadowlark. <i>Sturnella magna</i> *.....	common
Orchard oriole. <i>Icterus spurius</i> *.....	fairly common
Baltimore oriole. <i>Icterus galbula</i> *.....	common
Rusty blackbird. <i>Euphagus carolinus</i> .....	common
Purple grackle. <i>Quiscalus quiscula quiscula</i> .....	abundant
Bronzed grackle. <i>Quiscalus quiscula aeneus</i> .....	rare
Evening grosbeak. <i>Hesperiphona vespertina</i> .....	once
Pine grosbeak. <i>Pinicola enucleator leucura</i> .....	very rare
House sparrow. <i>Passer domesticus</i> *.....	abundant
Purple finch. <i>Carpodacus purpureus</i> *.....	fairly common
Crossbill. <i>Loxia curvirostra minor</i> .....	irregular
White-winged crossbill. <i>Loxia leucoptera</i> .....	rare
Redpoll. <i>Acanthis linaria linaria</i> .....	irregular
Greater redpoll. <i>Acanthis linaria rostrata</i> .....	very rare
Goldfinch. <i>Astragalinus tristis</i> *.....	common
Pine siskin. <i>Spinus pinus</i> .....	fairly common
Snow bunting. <i>Plectrophenax nivalis</i> .....	fairly common
Lapland longspur. <i>Calcarius lapponicus</i> .....	rare
Chestnut-collared longspur. <i>Calcarius ornatus</i> .....	twice
Vesper sparrow. <i>Poœcetes gramineus</i> *.....	common
Ipswich sparrow. <i>Passerculus princeps</i> .....	fairly common
Savannah sparrow. <i>Passerculus sandwichensis savanna</i> *..	common
Baird's sparrow. <i>Ammodramus bairdi</i> .....	once
Grasshopper sparrow. <i>Ammodramus savannarum australis</i> * .....	common
Henslow's sparrow. <i>Passerherbulus henslowi</i> *.....	rare
Sharp-tailed sparrow. <i>Passerherbulus caudacutus</i> *....	common
Nelson's sparrow. <i>Passerherbulus nelsoni nelsoni</i> .....	very rare
Acadian sharp-tailed sparrow. <i>Passerherbulus nelsoni subvirgatus</i> .....	rare
Seaside sparrow. <i>Passerherbulus maritimus</i> *.....	common
Lark sparrow. <i>Chondestes grammacus</i> .....	accidental
White-crowned sparrow. <i>Zonotrichia leucophrys</i> .....	common
White-throated sparrow. <i>Zonotrichia albicollis</i> .....	abundant
Tree sparrow. <i>Spizella monticola</i> .....	abundant
Chipping sparrow. <i>Spizella passerina</i> *.....	abundant
Field sparrow. <i>Spizella pusilla</i> *.....	common
Slate-colored junco. <i>Junco hyemalis</i> .....	abundant
Song sparrow. <i>Melospiza melodia</i> *.....	abundant
Lincoln's sparrow. <i>Melospiza lincolni</i> .....	rare
Swamp sparrow. <i>Melospiza georgiana</i> *.....	uncommon
Fox sparrow. <i>Passerella iliaca</i> .....	common
Towhee. <i>Pipilo erythrophthalmus</i> *.....	abundant

Cardinal.	<i>Cardinalis cardinalis</i> *	.....	rare
Rose-breasted grosbeak.	<i>Zamelodia ludoviciana</i> *	.....	uncommon
Blue grosbeak.	<i>Guiraca cærulea</i> .....		accidental
Indigo bunting.	<i>Passerina cyanea</i> *	.....	common
Painted bunting.	<i>Passerina ciris</i> .....		accidental
Dickcissel.	<i>Spiza americana</i> .....		accidental
Lark bunting.	<i>Calamospiza melanocorys</i> .....		accidental
Scarlet tanager.	<i>Piranga erythromelas</i> *	.....	common
Summer tanager.	<i>Piranga rubra</i> .....		accidental
Purple martin.	<i>Progne subis</i> *	.....	local
Cliff swallow.	<i>Petrochelidon lunifrons</i> *	.....	fairly common
Barn swallow.	<i>Hirundo erythrogastra</i> *	.....	abundant
Tree swallow.	<i>Iridoprocne bicolor</i> *	.....	abundant
Bank swallow.	<i>Riparia riparia</i> *	.....	abundant
Rough-winged swallow.	<i>Stelgidopteryx serripennis</i> *	....	rare
Bohemian waxwing.	<i>Bombycilla garrula</i> .....		rare
Cedar waxwing.	<i>Bombycilla cedrorum</i> *	.....	common
Northern shrike.	<i>Lanius borealis</i> .....		uncommon
Migrant shrike.	<i>Lanius ludovicianus migrans</i> .....		rare
Red-eyed vireo.	<i>Vireosylva olivacea</i> *	.....	abundant
Philadelphia vireo.	<i>Vireosylva philadelphica</i> .....		rare
Warbling vireo.	<i>Vireosylva gilva</i> *	.....	uncommon
Yellow-throated vireo.	<i>Lanivireo flavifrons</i> *	.....	fairly common
Blue-headed vireo.	<i>Lanivireo solitarius</i> .....		fairly common
White-eyed vireo.	<i>Vireo griseus</i> *	.....	fairly common
Black and white warbler.	<i>Mniotilta varia</i> *	.....	common
Prothonotary warbler.	<i>Protonotaria citrea</i> .....		accidental
Worm-eating warbler.	<i>Helmitheros vermivorus</i> *	.....	rare
Blue-winged warbler.	<i>Vermivora pinus</i> *	.....	uncommon
Golden-winged warbler.	<i>Vermivora chrysoptera</i> .....		rare
Nashville warbler.	<i>Vermivora rubricapilla</i> .....		uncommon
Orange-crowned warbler.	<i>Vermivora celata</i> .....		rare
Tennessee warbler.	<i>Vermivora peregrina</i> .....		uncommon
Parula warbler.	<i>Compsothlypis americana americana</i> ..		rare
Northern parula warbler.	<i>Compsothlypis americana</i> <i>usneæ</i> *	.....	common
Cape May warbler.	<i>Dendroica tigrina</i> .....		uncommon
Yellow warbler.	<i>Dendroica æstiva</i> *	.....	common
Black-throated blue warbler.	<i>Dendroica cærulescens</i> ..		common
Myrtle warbler.	<i>Dendroica coronata</i> .....		abundant
Magnolia warbler.	<i>Dendroica magnolia</i> .....		fairly common
Cerulean warbler.	<i>Dendroica cerulea</i> .....		accidental
Chestnut-sided warbler.	<i>Dendroica pennsylvanica</i> *	....	common
Bay-breasted warbler.	<i>Dendroica castanea</i> .....		fairly common
Black-poll warbler.	<i>Dendroica striata</i> .....		abundant
Blackburnian warbler.	<i>Dendroica fusca</i> .....		uncommon
Yellow-throated warbler.	<i>Dendroica dominica</i> .....		twice
Black-throated green warbler.	<i>Dendroica virens</i> *	.....	common

Pine warbler. <i>Dendroica vigorsi</i> *.....	fairly common
Palm warbler. <i>Dendroica palmarum</i> .....	uncommon
Yellow palm warbler. <i>Dendroica palmarum hypochrysea</i> .....	fairly common
Prairie warbler. <i>Dendroica discolor</i> *.....	common
Ovenbird. <i>Seiurus aurocapillus</i> *.....	common
Water-thrust. <i>Seiurus noveboracensis noveboracensis</i> .....	common
Grinnell's water-thrush. <i>Seiurus noveboracensis notabilis</i> .....	once
Louisiana water-thrush. <i>Seiurus motacilla</i> .....	rare
Kentucky warbler. <i>Oporornis formosus</i> .....	rare
Connecticut warbler. <i>Oporornis agilis</i> .....	rare
Mourning warbler. <i>Oporornis philadelphia</i> .....	rare
Northern yellowthroat. <i>Geothlypis trichas</i> *.....	abundant
Yellow-breasted chat. <i>Icteria virens</i> *.....	common
Hooded warbler. <i>Wilsonia citrina</i> .....	rare
Wilson's warbler. <i>Wilsonia pusilla</i> .....	uncommon
Canada warbler. <i>Wilsonia canadensis</i> .....	fairly common
Redstart. <i>Setophaga ruticilla</i> *.....	common
Pipit. <i>Anthus rubescens</i> .....	fairly common
Mockingbird. <i>Mimus polyglottos</i> *.....	very rare
Catbird. <i>Dumetella carolinensis</i> *.....	common
Brown thrasher. <i>Toxostoma rufum</i> *.....	fairly common
Carolina wren. <i>Thryothorus ludovicianus</i> *.....	rare
House wren. <i>Troglodytes ædon</i> *.....	common
Winter wren. <i>Nannus hiemalis</i> .....	fairly common
Short-billed marsh wren. <i>Cistothorus stellaris</i> .....	once
Long-billed marsh wren. <i>Telmatodytes palustris</i> *.....	fairly common
Brown creeper. <i>Certhia familiaris americana</i> .....	common
White-breasted nuthatch. <i>Sitta carolinensis</i> *.....	common
Red-breasted nuthatch. <i>Sitta canadensis</i> .....	fairly common
Tufted titmouse. <i>Bæolophus bicolor</i> .....	rare
Chickadee. <i>Penthestes atricapillus</i> *.....	common
Labrador Brown-cap chickadee. <i>Penthestes hudsonicus nigricans</i> .....	once
Golden-crowned kinglet. <i>Regulus satrapa</i> .....	common
Ruby-crowned kinglet. <i>Regulus calendula</i> .....	common
Blue-gray gnatcatcher. <i>Poliophtila cærulea</i> .....	rare
Townsend's solitaire. <i>Myadestes townsendi</i> .....	accidental
Wood thrush. <i>Hylocichla mustelina</i> *.....	common
Veery. <i>Hylocichla fuscescens</i> *.....	fairly common
Gray-cheeked thrush. <i>Hylocichla aliciae aliciae</i> .....	fairly common
Bicknell's thrush. <i>Hylocichla aliciae bicknelli</i> .....	uncommon
Olive-backed thrush. <i>Hylocichla ustulata swainsoni</i> .....	fairly common
Hermit thrush. <i>Hylocichla guttata pallasi</i> *.....	common
Robin. <i>Planesticus migratorius</i> *.....	abundant
Varied thrush. <i>Ixoreus naevius</i> .....	once
Wheatear. <i>Saxicola cœnanthe</i> .....	twice
Bluebird. <i>Sialia sialis</i> *.....	common

*A Brief Account of the Thompson Family on Long Island.*

The names of Tomson, Thomson, Tompson, and Thompson, are found among the earlier settlers of New England, and were from England, Scotland, and Ireland. Whether they were originally of the same family, is impossible now to determine, for the various spellings of the name is equivocal, and not at all satisfactory evidence in genealogical investigations. Those who came from England are presumed to have been near related, being from the neighborhood of London and Hertfordshire.

The principal individuals among these were as follows: *David* was of Scottish descent, came to Portsmouth, N. H., 1622, where he established fisheries, and in 1626 removed to an island in Boston Harbor, still called *Thompson's Island*.

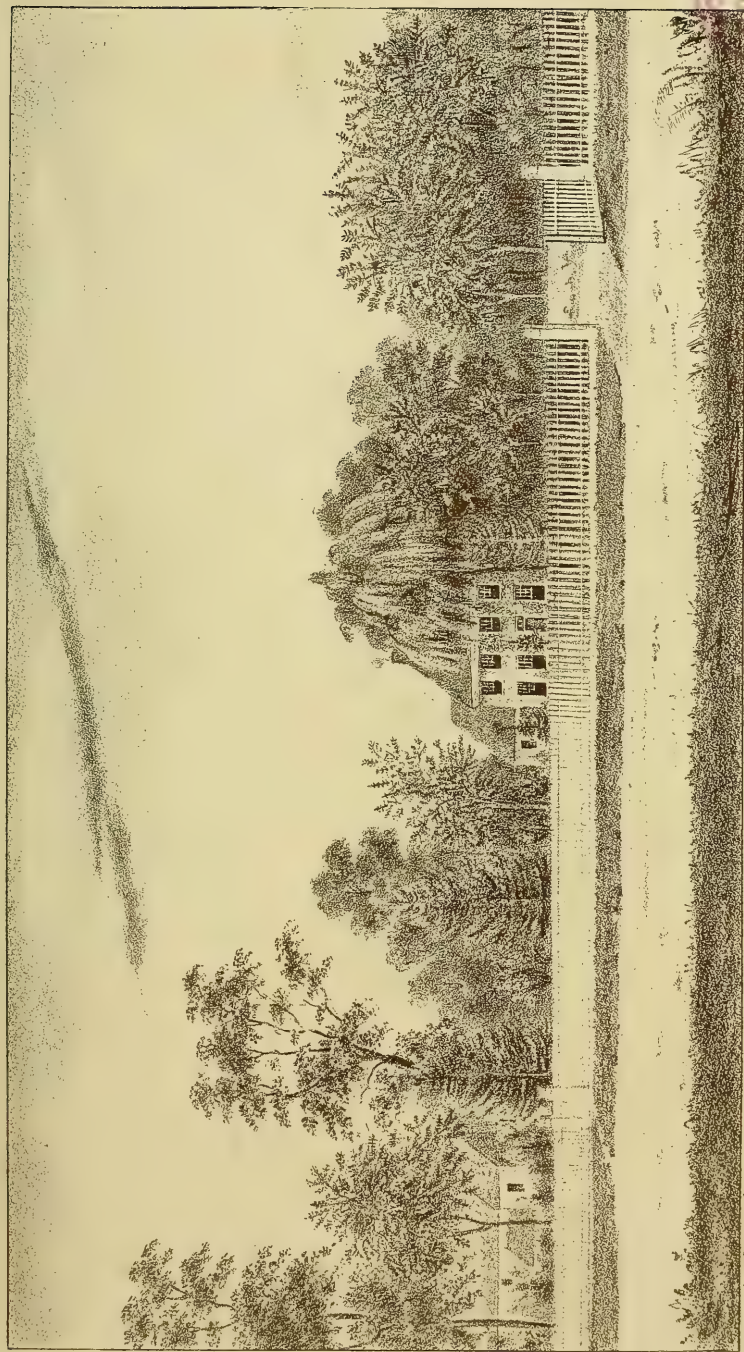
*James*, of Charlestown, 1632, was among the first settlers of Woburn, Mass., 1634.

*Major Robert* resided in Boston, 1639, and became a wealthy man.

*Maurice*, a merchant of London and governor of the East India Company, established fisheries at Cape Ann in 1639.

David, above named, was employed by Mason, Georges, and others, as agent for lands in New England, and began a plantation at Piscataqua in 1623. He assisted Maverick to build a fort on Noddle's Island previous to 1630.





*Drawn by C. Maynard*

*Plate 35. W.*

RESIDENCE OF THE LATE JUDGE THOMPSON.  
ISLIP L.I.



*Edward* died December 4, 1620, on his passage to New England.

*John* was at Watertown 1635. *Simeon* at Ipswich 1636, and *Edmund* at Salem 1637.

*Rev. William*, born at Lancashire, England, 1597, graduated at Brasenose College, Oxford, January 20, 1619, and came to New England 1634. He first settled at Acomenticus (now York), Maine, removed to Dorchester 1636, and was ordained pastor of the church at Braintree (then called Mount Wallaston) September 24, 1639, as successor of the Rev. John Wheelwright, who, with others, had been banished for alleged religious heresy, from the colony of Massachusetts. November 27, 1639, he received a grant of 120 acres of land. In October, 1642, he was sent as a missionary to Virginia, with Rev. Thomas James of New Haven and Rev. John Knowles of Watertown.

Soon after their arrival there the grand assembly of that province prohibited the preaching of Puritan doctrines and ordered those who would not conform to the English church to leave the colony. During Mr. Thompson's absence, Abigail, his wife, died in January, 1643, leaving a family of young children, who, says Governor Winthrop, were scattered, but well disposed of, among godly friends. In 1646 he married Anne, widow of Simon Crosbie of Cambridge, by whom he had a daughter Anne, born March 3, 1648. He died December 10, 1666, and his widow October 8, 1675. In consequence of a somewhat disordered mind and ill health, he ceased to preach at Braintree in 1659. Governor Winthrop speaks of him as "a very gracious, sincere man" and both Mather and Johnson mention him in honorable terms. For some cause, not now known, he was buried

at Roxbury, where is also the grave of his youngest son, Benjamin, who was born July 14, 1642, graduated at Harvard 1662, and died April 13, 1714, aged seventy-two, leaving eight children. Upon his tomb he is called schoolmaster, physician, and poet.

His sister Helen married William Vesey, and died April 23, 1711, aged eighty-five.

Samuel, eldest son of Rev. William Thompson, born 1630, married Sarah Shepherd April 25, 1656, was deacon of the church and town clerk of Braintree, for fourteen years a delegate to the general court, Boston, and died June 18, 1695, aged sixty-four, having lost his first wife January 15, 1687, and married a second who died November 5, 1706, aged sixty-nine.

His brother Edward was ordained at Marshfield, October 14, 1696, and died, aged thirty-nine, March 16, 1705. His wife, Hannah, deceased February 6, 1697, and their son Samuel died, aged sixty-seven, April 11, 1750.

Joseph, another son of Rev. William Thompson, born May 1, 1640, married Mary Bracket, July 24, 1662, settled at Billerica, and died, aged ninety-two, October 13, 1732.

Anthony and John Thompson were among the earliest settlers of Quinapiack, or New Haven, and Thomas, another of the same family, settled at Maidstone, afterwards called Easthampton, L. I. Whether these individuals were in any way related to the Rev. William Thompson, is not very satisfactorily ascertained, although such is the traditionary account in the family.

John and Anthony, supposed to be sons of the said Anthony of New Haven, who died in 1648, came from that place to Long Island about the year 1650, and

finally located at Setauket (then called Cromwell Bay, and afterwards Ashford) in 1656.

The last named Anthony had a son named Anthony, born in 1660, who married Abigail Homan, and had sons Joseph and Archibald, and daughter Abigail. He died October 19, 1728, aged sixty-eight. Joseph had Patience, who married Timothy Smith, son of Job, and had Timothy, Israel, James, Gamaliel, William, Anne, Mary, and Sarah. Archibald had Sarah, who died unmarried November 16, 1805, at an advanced age.

The last named John, and the first Long Island ancestor of the compiler of this notice, was born June 3, 1609, and became one of the original proprietors of the town of Brookhaven. He was by trade a nailor or blacksmith, and married, June 12, 1663, Hannah, daughter of Jonathan, and granddaughter of Elder William Brewster of Plymouth, Mass., a sister of the Rev. Nathaniel Brewster, first Presbyterian minister of the town.

A portion of the lands allotted to him, which constituted his residence, was a five-acre tract, south of and adjoining the public green in Setauket, since owned by Mr. Charles Dallas, and now by Ebenezer Baylis. This he sold to John Palmer of New York for £100, March 2, 1685, and died, aged seventy-nine, October 14, 1688.

He left sons William (named after his maternal grandfather, Elder Brewster), and Samuel, and a daughter Elizabeth, who married Job Smith of Smithtown, L. I., and had Job, St. Richard, Timothy, Adam, James, Joseph, and Elizabeth.

William, born April 9, 1664, married Ruth Avery of Stonington, Conn., February 19, 1684, where he finally settled and left a family of sixteen sons and four daughters by his only wife above mentioned.



Samuel Thompson, youngest son of John, was born March 4, 1668, became a farmer, and died in Setauket, July 14, 1749, aged eighty-one. He married, November 6, 1709, Hannah, widow of Mr. John Muncey, and daughter of the Rev. Nathaniel Brewster, who was, of course, his cousin-german. Her mother was a daughter of the Hon. Roger Ludlow, one of the founders of Dorchester, Mass., 1630, deputy-governor of that colony, 1634, afterwards employed to frame a code of laws for Connecticut, whence he removed to Virginia in 1654, and died in 1670.

The wife of Mr. Thompson was born May 19, 1679, married John Muncy January 16, 1703, who died June 12, 1707. She died November 7, 1755.

His grave and that of his wife are at the south-east corner of the present Presbyterian Church in Setauket, and a portion of his tombstone is still to be seen there. His will, dated April 3, 1745, makes his son Jonathan and two of his sons-in-law executors, and gives his silver tankard to his grandson and namesake Samuel Thompson, father of the compiler hereof. His children were Jonathan, Isaac, Susannah, Mary, Deborah, Ruth, and Sarah; of these:

1. *Isaac*, the youngest son, born September 9, 1715, took to the sea, where he is supposed to have perished in 1735, at the age of twenty years.
2. *Susannah*, born August 17, 1712, married, August 16, 1734, Thomas Strong (whose father Selah emigrated from Northampton, Mass., to Setauket in 1720), and died March 5, 1788, aged seventy-six, leaving Selah, Abigail, Submit, Ruth, Mary, Susannah, Zipporah, Hannah, and Katurah. Her husband deceased May 14, 1760.

3. *Mary* married Daniel Smith, and had issue Ruth, Elijah, Daniel, Timothy, Mary, Amos, Richard, and Sarah.
4. *Deborah* married Arthur Smith, by whom she had Jemima, Susannah, Sarah, Samuel, Benajah, Arthur, and Hannah. He died in 1744, and she married again William Miller, by whom she had no issue.
5. *Ruth* married Thomas Telford of New York City, and had a daughter Charity, who married John Al-  
liner, and died of yellow fever in 1798.
6. *Sarah* married her cousin William, son of her uncle William Thompson of New London, Conn., and had a considerable progeny.

Jonathan, named after his maternal grandfather, Jonathan Brewster, eldest son of Samuel and Hannah, was born October 25, 1710, and became proprietor of all his father's real estate by devise. He married Mary, daughter of Mary and Richard Woodhull of Setauket, September 30, 1734. She, born April 11, 1711, survived her husband, dying in her ninetieth year, January 30, 1801. He died June 5, 1786, aged seventy-five. He was a magistrate and a leading man in the town most of his life.

Their children were Mary, Samuel, Isaac, Jonathan, Hannah, and Nathan; of these:

I. *Mary*, born November 25, 1735, married Thomas Smith April 20, 1764, and died of cancer in the breast at the age of fifty-eight years, May 23, 1794. They had one child, Anna, who married Richard Floyd in 1798, and died June 28, 1803, leaving Elizabeth, Thomas S., and Nancy.

II. *Samuel*, born October 2, 1738, took by will his father's real estate in Setauket. He devoted himself

to agriculture during his life, but when more than thirty years old he turned his attention to medicine, and had an extensive and profitable practice till within a few years of his death. At the age of forty-two, on January 7, 1781, he married Phebe, daughter of Jacob and Mary Satterly, who was born August 25, 1759, being then twenty-two years old, and died July 7, 1793, aged thirty-three. He married again, March 10, 1795, Ruth, daughter of Timothy and Seviah Smith, and died September 17, 1811, aged seventy-three. His widow died, aged seventy-six, January 26, 1834.

By his first wife he had Hannah and Benjamin Franklin, and by the second, Mary Woodhull, Samuel Ludlow, and Isaac Smith. The said Hannah, born June 21, 1782, died June 7, 1792. Benjamin F., born May 15, 1784, married June 12, 1810, Mary Howard, daughter of the Rev. Zachariah and Mrs. Abigail Greene, by whom he had Henry Rutgers, born March 17, 1813, who died unmarried October 15, 1842; Mary Greene, born March 20, 1815; Harriet Satterly, born November 9, 1818, who married Jacob Thuthill Vanderhoof, June 12, 1839 (and has issue Henry Thompson, born April 12, 1841; Mary Elizabeth, born February 14, 1844, and Harriet Louisa, born March 24, 1846); and Edward Zachariah, born September 2, 1821, who married Mary Elizabeth, daughter of James Lush, July 10, 1843, and has issue Edward.

Mary Woodhull, born June 11, 1796, died single December 28, 1834. Samuel L., born March 5, 1799, married Sophia, daughter of Isaac Satterly, February 12, 1842, and has Mary Woodhull, born January 18, 1843. Samuel L. died February 6, 1865, and his wife died

January 26, 1865.\* Their daughter, Mary Woodhull, married W. L. Berrian, and secondly Thomas S. Griffing, January 14, 1868.\* Isaac S., born in 1801, died in infancy.

III. *Isaac*, born January 18, 1743, settled upon a farm purchased by his father at Islip, L. I., called Apple-Tree Neck; and died in his seventy-fourth year, January 30, 1816. He married first Mary, daughter of Colonel Abraham Gardiner of Easthampton, June 4, 1772, by whom he had Jonathan and Abraham Gardiner. She died, aged thirty-seven, April 2, 1786, and February 7, 1791, he married Sarah, daughter of Gilbert Bradnor of Orange County, who died April 26, 1819, having had Mary and Julia. Of these:

Jonathan, born December 7, 1773, became a merchant in the City of New York; in 1812 was appointed collector of internal revenue and direct taxes; and in 1820 was made collector of the customs for the district of New York, which office he held eight years, after which he was chosen president of the Manhattan Company, which office he retained till his death, at the age of seventy-three, December 30, 1846. He married, July 4, 1796, Elizabeth, daughter of James Havens, by whom he had:

1. *David*, born in May, 1798, who married Sarah Diodati, daughter of John Lyon Gardiner, May 10, 1827, and had Elizabeth G., David, Charles G., and Mary B. Elizabeth, wife of Jonathan Thompson, died at Islip, L. I., May 31, 1868, in the ninety-sixth year of her age.\*
2. *Junius*, born January 31, 1800, graduated at Columbia College 1821, became a physician, and died March 24, 1831, aged thirty-one.

\* This sentence was added to the MS. after Thompson's death in 1849.

3. *Mary Gardiner*, born in 1807, married Samuel B. Gardiner in January, 1837, and had Mary Lyon, David Johnson, George, and Sarah Griswold.
4. *George Washington*, born in 1805, married Eliza Ann, daughter of Ichabod Prall.
5. *Eliza*, born in 1810.
6. *Jonathan*, born in February, 1814, graduated at Columbia College 1832, became a merchant and married Kate, daughter of Joseph Todhunter of Baltimore, October 3, 1844.
7. *Abraham Gardiner*, born August 10, 1816, graduated at Columbia College 1833, studied medicine, and in 1845 was a representative from the city of New York in the state legislature.

Abraham Gardiner, second son of Isaac Thompson, born October 27, 1776, became a merchant of New York, and died, aged seventy-five, October 30, 1851. He married, July 16, 1796, Rachel, daughter of Zachariah Rogers of Huntington, L. I., who died September 18, 1827, and by her had several children, most of whom died in infancy. His son, Augustus Frederick, born 1801, died December 6, 1807, and Edward Gardiner, born 1802, graduated at Yale College 1822, and died, aged thirty-two, July 23, 1835. He married, 1829, Mary, daughter of Jonathan Kellogg, and had Cornelia, born 1831, Augustus, born May, 1833, and died April 22, 1846, and Edward, born 1835. The said Cornelia married February 19, 1848, Thomas R. Quimby.

Mary, eldest daughter of Isaac Thompson, was born April 13, 1792, married William Howard May 5, 1812, and died December 23, 1813, aged twenty-one, leaving a daughter, Sarah Bradnor, born May 2, 1813, who married Dr. Moses H. Staples, M.D., November 28, 1833,



and had William Howard and Mary Thompson. Dr. Staples died August 26, 1849.

Julia, youngest daughter of Isaac Thompson, born December 12, 1793, married Selah S. Carll January 11, 1820, who was born February 14, 1790, and died September 24, 1829, leaving Mary Ann, Julia, Elizabeth, and Timothy Smith, the *first* of whom, born May 8, 1821, married Elbert Carll January 23, 1839 (and has Nancy Augusta, born October 20, 1839, Julia Thompson, born November 29, 1842, and Selah Smith, born September 2, 1845). The *second*, born August 1, 1824, married James H. Carll September 18, 1845. The *third* was born March 14, 1827. Julia, widow of Selah S. Carll, died July 29, 1872, in the seventy-ninth year of her age.

The said Isaac Thompson was a magistrate a greater part of his life, a judge of the common pleas, and a member of assembly in 1795.

IV. *Jonathan*, born February 14, 1745, was employed in mercantile pursuits till about the year 1770, and in 1773 died on board of his vessel December 17th, in the twenty-ninth year of his age. The following printed notice is from the *New York Gazette* of May 11, 1773, which shows his business and the name of his vessel.

For BARBADOS

The Sloop

MARY-ANN,

Jonathan Thompson,

Master,

For Freight or Passage apply

to said Master on board.

V. *Hannah*, born October 5, 1747, married Colonel Benajah Strong May 18, 1772, and died at Islip, L. I., aged thirty-eight, February 1, 1786. He died December 29, 1795. They had Mary, Samuel, Benajah, Elizabeth, and William, born as follows:

1. *Mary*, born April 2, 1773, married John Dewick June 9, 1798, and died November 17, 1819, leaving Samuel, Benajah, Hannah, and Margaret.
2. *Samuel*, born October 1, 1774, married Ruth, daughter of Silas Carll, January 18, 1797. (Issue Ellis, born August 22, 1798, who married Mary, daughter of Micah Jackson, May 3, 1822; and Mary Ann, born March 31, 1802, who married Timothy P. Carll in January, 1822.)
3. *Nancy*, born February 3, 1777, died single.
4. *Benajah*, born June 11, 1779, married Elizabeth Benedict.
5. *Elizabeth*, born May 29, 1781, married Samuel Terry, and died April 16, 1823.
6. *William*, born June 11, 1783, married Gloriana, daughter of William Terry, 1806, and had William Nelson, Edmund, Charles, Amanda, and Hannah Maria.

VI. *Nathan*, born February 22, 1750, died in infancy.

---

*Narrative of facts and proceedings in relation to Captain John Scott, for some time a resident of Long Island*

The subject of this article figures largely upon the state records of Connecticut, and those of the court of assize in the colony of New York. Between the years 1660 and 1665, he was the unhappy occasion of embarrassment and

difficulty to many individuals upon Long Island, which made it necessary for the general court at Hartford to interfere. He was a man of shrewdness, but base and unprincipled, as is evident from the whole tenor of his dealings. Professing to be the rightful owner of numerous tracts of land in various parts of the island, under purchase from the Indian tribes and in various other ways, he found persons sufficiently credulous to become purchasers of what he styled *perpetuities*, or leases for very long periods, which involved the grantees in controversy with other claimants, and called for investigation by the public authorities. In 1660, we find him a resident of Southampton, and on the 2d of May of that year, he conveyed to Thomas Hutchinson (late of Lynn), for the sum of £40, land described as "lying from Southampton westward 30 miles, at a Wading River, called by the Indians Quaconsuck, and so six miles westward, in breadth the same southward, till it cometh within two miles of the bay, on the south of which is reserved for the Indians, together with all the privileges conferred on said Scott by Wyandanch and Weacham his son." Soon after the date of this instrument, Scott is found at Setauket, with the appointment of magistrate, conferred upon him by Connecticut, the influence of which served still further to enhance his power of doing mischief; for so far had he imposed upon the people there, that on the 5th of December, 1663, an agreement was entered into, between said Scott and the inhabitants of Ashford (Setauket), to become co-partners in a tract of land purchased by him, or pretended to be so, of Mahmasutee and others, "bounded easterly with Nanemoset Brook, westerly with Nessaquague east line, and running south to the middle of the island, even to the said Indian's utmost bounds, and north

to the Sound, as sold and delivered to said Scott by '*turf and twig*,' Nov. 23, 1663. The said Scott, Richard Woodhull, Daniel Lane, Thomas Mapes, and George Wood, to have double shares for their trouble, in all future divisions (except Little Neck, to which they lay no claim)." December 16, 1663, Scott sells his lands "about Ashamomuch Neck and elsewhere in Southold (except Hog Island), to Thomas Corteous and wife, in trust for the children of one William Salmon."

These frequent conveyances, which were suspected to be fraudulent, and other acts of Scott, produced much discontent, and on complaint to the general assembly of Connecticut, an order was made March 10, 1664, that the particulars should be drawn up in form, and sent to the magistrates of New Haven, Milford, and other towns, for the purpose of his arrest and punishment.

A proclamation was also issued as follows:

"To all his ma<sup>ties</sup> subjects within these parts of o<sup>r</sup> Royall Souvreinne Charles King of England, france and Ireland, his Dominions in New England, and especially those plantations scituate w<sup>th</sup>in the Limitts of the corporation of Connecticutt: These presents do declare and proclaim; that forasmuch as John Scott inhabitant w<sup>th</sup>in the Libertyes of Ashford, alias Sewtawkitt, on Long Island, stands charged in the court of Connecticutt for sundry Hainous crimes and practises seditious, to the great disturbance of the peace of his ma<sup>ties</sup> subjects on the island aforesaid, particularly as followeth—1. Speaking words tending to the deffamation of the King's majesty; 2. Seditious practises and tumultuous carriages; 3. Abetting and encouraging the natives in hostile parties, one against another; 4. Usurping the authority of the King, pretending to pardon treason; 5. Threatening his ma<sup>ties</sup>

subjects with hanging and banishment; 6. Gross and notorious profanation of God's holy word; 7. Forgery and violation of his solemn oath; 8. Acting treacherously to the colony of Connecticut; 9. Usurping authority upon pretence of a commission; 10. Calumniating a commissioned officer in this corporation with the charge of villanous and felonious practices. Therefore they do in his ma<sup>ties</sup> name, desire and expect all and every civill officer, who are conservatives of the peace of his ma<sup>ties</sup> subjects, within the plantations of New Haven, Milford, Branford, Fairfield and upon Long Island, wheresoever the s<sup>d</sup> Scott is resident, forthwith upon receipt and knowledge of the contents of these premises, to apprehend the body of s<sup>d</sup> Scott, and deliver him to the marshall, Jonathan Gilbert, that he may be tried according to law. God save the King."

The marshall found the accused at Setauket, and on attempting to take him, Scott drew his sword, commanding those around, with the air of authority, to resist the officer, using, at the same time, very indecent and opprobrious epithets toward the court and government of Connecticut. Being secured, and conveyed to Hartford, he was there imprisoned, but effecting his escape without even satisfying the keeper of the prison for his board, the court decreed him £10 out of Scott's estate, upon which the court, on the 12th of May, 1664, ordered a sequestration, and the commissioners, in the several towns appointed for the purpose, were commanded to take an account of all said Scott's property and effects, in their respective towns, and preserve it from embezzlement, until the pleasure of the court should be known. On the 16th of May, 1665, Captain John Youngs of Southold was authorized by the court, to sell the lands of John Scott, upon Long Island. He had the boldness, after-



wards, to dispose of lands upon the western part of the island; and being brought before the court of assize at New York, by order of Governor Nicoll, all his agreements with individuals were declared to be void. What became of Scott is not known; but it appears that he, with John Winthrop and others, was, by Charles II., recommended to the protection of the commissioners of the United Colonies, they being molested in their possessions in the Narragansett, by the people of Providence plantation. He continued to be a source of trouble to the New England colonies for some years after he had been driven from Long Island.

---

### *John Bowne and His Descendants*

John Bowne informs us in his journal that he was born at Matlock, in Derbyshire, England, March 9, 1627; that his father, Thomas Bowne, was baptized at that place May 25, 1595, himself March 29, 1627, and his sister Dorothy August 11, 1631. All of them left England in 1649 and arrived at Boston. He sailed again for England in October, 1650, arrived there November 23, left March 17, 1651, and reached Boston on the 25th of May following. June 15, 1651, he visited Flushing, in company with Edward Farrington, the husband of his sister Dorothy, and settled there soon after, where, May 7, 1656, he married Hannah, daughter of Robert Field of the society of Friends. In 1661 he built the westerly part of the house, which is yet standing and in good repair, having always been owned and occupied by his descendants. He afterwards joined the

Friends, "not merely, he observes, from kindness and affection to his wife, but his judgment also was convinced of the truth of the principles they held forth," but in a little time his faith was put to the test, and he had to partake, in a large degree, of the sufferings to which others of the same faith and profession were exposed; and his persecutions, imprisonment, banishment, and severe privations for conscience sake were such as most persons would shrink from in this day of ease and quiet enjoyment. On the 14th of September, 1662, he was fined by Governor Stuyvesant 150 guilders, which not being found effectual, he was put on board the ship "Fox" for Holland, October 31, 1662, and arrived at Amsterdam on the 29th of February, 1663, by the way of England. In April he went again to England and visited his sister Truth at Selby.

While at Amsterdam he addressed the West India Company as follows:

"Friends:—The paper drawn up for me to subscribe I have perused and weighed, and do find the same not according to the engagement to me through one of your members, namely, that he or you would do therein by me as you would be done unto, and not otherwise. For which of you, being taken by force from your wife and family (without just cause) would be bound from returning to them, unless upon terms to act contrary to your conscience and deny your faith and religion, yet this (in effect) do you require of me and not less. But truly I cannot think that you did in sober earnest ever think I would subscribe to any such thing. It being the very cause for which I rather chose freely to suffer want of the company of my dear wife and children, imprisonment of my person, the ruin of my estate in my absence

there, and the loss of my goods here, than to yield or consent unto such an unreasonable act as you would thereby enjoin me unto. For which I am persuaded you will not only be judged in the sight of God, but by good and godly men. Rather to have mocked at the oppressions of the oppressed, and added afflictions to the afflicted, than herein to have done unto me as you in the like case would be done unto, which the Royal Law of our God requires.

“I have with patience and moderation waited several weeks expecting justice from you, but behold an addition to my oppression in the measure I receive, wherefore I have this now to request for you that the Lord will not lay this to your charge, but give you Eyes to see and Hearts to do justice, that you may find mercy with the Lord in the day of Judgment.

“JOHN BOWNE.”

It seems he spent the summer of 1663 in visiting different parts of England, whence he wrote to his wife as follows:

“MOST DEAR AND TENDER WIFE—

“In the truth of our God I dearly salute thee, and unto thee doth my love and life flow forth exceedingly. But my dearest desire for thee is, that thou mayest be preserved faithful to the Lord, and may grow and prosper in his living truth. So my dear heart, be bold for the Lord, and let nothing discourage thee, for He is a sure reward to all those who truly and sincerely give up all, for His truth’s sake, the truth of which I believe thou canst truly witness with me; and this I can in verity say, that in all my trials, I find the Lord to be my sure helper, my Rock and my Defence. He hath brought me to be content with what He is pleased to direct me in, &c.

“I manifested my case to the West India Company, by

sending in a writing which they read, and accordingly appointed a committee upon it; but it being feasting time, and they who are great not regarding those who are little, we were delayed a hearing for fourteen days; but when we came before them, they were not disposed to take offence at our manners or the like, neither one word against me in any particular, nor one word tending the approval of any thing that was done against me, but freely, and with a joint consent, promised without any scruple that the next day, at the tenth hour, my goods should be delivered to me, and the next day when we came there, orders were given to the keeper of the guard house to that purpose, but he, with others of the underling officers, consulted together and asked me if I had paid my passage money, and the Company (tho' ordered by the governor), not willing to pay money on such an account, they do not only detain my goods, but also deny me a passage home, except upon such gross and unreasonable conditions (which I would rather lay down my life than yield unto), which may appear by those writings which I think to send, and if I do, would not have them published until I come. Neither the papers nor any copies, to pass from thy hands, thereabouts, &c. &c.

"So my dear Lamb, my having been up all this night to write, and having no more time I must and do conclude in tender love to thee and my dear children, in which Love, the Lord God of my life preserve and keep you all, Amen.

"Thy dear Husband,

"JOHN BOWNE.

"Amsterdam, this 9th of 6th mo. }  
called June, 1663." }

"P. S. Dear George Fox and many more friends desire their dear love and tender salutations to all Friends."

His father, Thomas Bowne, died at Flushing in

1675, and by his will dated October 20, 1675, gives all his estate to his son John, he paying to his sister Truth £10. John Bowne's wife made a voyage to England in 1675, and died there in December, 1677. He was afterwards married to Hannah Bickerstaff, and again to Mary Cock, who survived him. His death took place at the age of sixty-eight, October 20, 1695. His children were: 1. *John*, born 1657, died 1673; 2. *Elizabeth*, born 1658, married Samuel Titus May 4, 1660, and died 1691; 3. *Abigail*, born 1662, married Richard Willets, had Hannah, and died April 16, 1688; 4. *Hannah*, born 1665, married Benjamin Field, and died 1707; had issue Robert, born 1690; Bryan, born 1692; John, born 1694; Samuel, born 1696; Anthony, born 1698; Joseph, born 1700; Hannah, born 1702; and Sarah, born 1704; 5. *Samuel*, born 1667, married Mary Becket August 4, 1690; Hannah Smith, October 8, 1709; Grace Cowperthwaite September 14, 1735, and died March 30, 1745; 6. *Dorothy*, born 1669, married Henry Franklin, and died 1690; 7. *Martha*, born 1673, married Joseph Thorne and died 1750; 8. *Sarah*, born 1680; 9. *John*, born 1683, died young; 10. *Thomas*, born 1684; 11. *John* 2d, born 1686, married Elizabeth, daughter of Joseph Lawrence, 1714; 12. *Ruth* died young; 13. *Amy* married Richard Hallett 1717.

Samuel, fifth child of John, was a minister among the Friends. His first wife, above mentioned, was an English lady, who came over with Mr. Penn, and died 1707. His children were: 1. *Samuel*, born 1691, married Sarah Franklin, and died 1769; 2. *Thomas*, born 1694, married Hannah Underhill; 3. *Eleanor*, born 1695, married Isaac Horner; 4. *Hannah*, born 1696, married Richard Lawrence and died 1748; 5. *John*, born 1697, married



Dinah, daughter of Samuel Underhill and died 1757; 6. *Mary*, born 1698, married John Kees; 7. *Robert*, born 1700, married Margaret, daughter of Joseph Latham, and died 1743; 8. *William*, born 1702; 9. *Elizabeth*, born 1704; and 10. *Benjamin*, born 1707. The three last died in infancy.

By his second wife, Hannah Smith, he had 11. *Sarah*, born 1710, married William Burling 1729; 12. *Joseph*, born 1711, married Sarah Lawrence 1735; 13. *Amy*, born 1715, married Stephen Lawrence 1734; 14. *Benjamin*, born 1718, married Mary Rodman; and 15. *Elizabeth*, born 1720, married Thomas Dobson.

Samuel and Sarah (Franklin) had 1. *William*, born 1719, married Elizabeth, daughter of John Willet, September 20, 1744, and had Willet only; 2. *Samuel*, born 1721, married Abigail Burling and had Samuel of New York; 3. *Mary*, born 1723, married John Farrington, and had George and Walter; 4. *Amy*, born 1724, married George Embree; 5. *Sarah*, born 1726, married William Titus and had Silas and James (married Caroline Rodman).

The said Willet Bowne, born June 8, 1745, married Deborah, daughter of Benjamin Cornwell, June 9, 1769 (she was born 1751), and had only William, born 1770, who died December 10, 1824 (leaving Isaac W., who died August 12, 1848, aged fifty-four; Stephen C., Cornwell, Mary, Sarah, and Elizabeth). He again married Hannah, daughter of Charles Hicks, and died March 27, 1832, aged eighty-six; she, born May 26, 1755, died June 27, 1832, aged seventy-seven; issue *Charles*, *Philip* (married Eliza, daughter of George Farrington, 1813, and had Elizabeth, William, George, Maria F., and Catherine L.), *James*, *Samuel*, *John W.*, *Hannah H.*, *Benja-*

*min C.*, and *Scott H.*\* (married Emily Ann, daughter of Abraham Hendrickson, December 23, 1828).

Thomas and Hannah (Underhill) had Daniel, who married Sarah Stringham, and had *Ann*, born 1753, who died 1783; *Mary*, born 1754, who married Walter Franklin; *Thomas*, born 1758, and *Sarah*, born 1763.

James and Caroline (Rodman) had 1. *Catherine*, married John Murray; 2. *Walter*, late mayor of New York, married Elizabeth Southgate (had Walter, married Eliza Rapelye, and Mary, married John W. Lawrence. He died August 31, 1846, aged seventy-six); 3. *Elizabeth*, born 1770, married George Townsend; 4. *John R.*, married Grace Sands, daughter of Robert, March 9, 1813; 5. *Mary*, married John King; and 6. *Caroline* (who died February 28, 1848).

John and Dinah (Underhill) had *Thomas*, born November 7, 1739, who died unmarried; *Mary*, born February 14, 1741, married Israel Pearsall; *John*, born November 31, 1742, married Ann Field, and died April 2, 1841, and his wife April 11, 1834 (issue *Mary*, born 1784, married Samuel Parsons, February 2, 1806, who died January 16, 1839, aged fifty-five); *Robert*, born November 31, 1744, married Elizabeth Hartshorne (and had *Mary*, born September 17, 1774, married Benjamin G. Minturn); *Robert H.*, born October 27, 1776, married Hannah Shipley and Sarah Hartshorne; *John Latham*, born November 2, 1779, married Eliza Howland, and died April 3, 1847, aged sixty-eight; *Sarah*, born June 9, 1781, married William Minturn; *Hannah*, born August 14, 1784, married Benjamin S. Collins; *Elizabeth*, born April 10, 1789; *Jane*, born Janu-

\* Hannah, only child of Scott H. Bowne, married George W. Quimby, April 25, 1848.

ary 31, 1792, married Reuben Haines; and *William*, born October 3, 1794, died October 20, 1815.

Walter Franklin and Mary (Bowne) had *Mary*, born 1775, who married De Witt Clinton February 10, 1796; *Sarah*, born 1777, married John L. Norton, and died 1842; and *Hannah*, born 1780, married George Clinton, son of James and brother of De Witt.

---

### *Lion Gardiner and His Descendants*

*Lion Gardiner*, a native of England, was educated in civil and military engineering with a view to the profession of arms. When he entered upon active life, Germany and the Netherlands were the theatres of wars, which were engrossing the attention of the civilized world. Family connections and private vexations induced the kings of England, first James and afterwards Charles, to espouse the cause of the Netherlands against Spain, and Gardiner was one of the many young men of Britain of bold and adventurous spirit, who, seeking fame or sympathizing with the oppressed, repaired in the language of the day "to trail a pike in the army of the Prince of Orange." He obtained the place of master of works of the fortifications in the encampments of the prince, and in the course of a war replete with rapid and striking events, saw much active service. The pains of non-conformity had driven many of the English dissenters, both of the church and the laity, to seek a refuge in the low countries. Their doctrines spread among their countryman in the army, and to that source they turned for men who possessed the active qualifications necessary to carry into effectual execution the designs they were in-

duced to entertain of colonization in America. Through the persuasion of Hugh Peters, their pastor of the English Church at Rotterdam, and during the latter part of the protectorate chaplain of Oliver Cromwell, and of John Davenport, who had been a popular minister in London, and afterwards became eminent in New England, Gardiner consented to repair to the colonies. He entered into an agreement with Peters, by which he pledged his services to the patentees of the territory at the mouth of the Connecticut River, "in the drawing, ordering and making of a city, towns, forts, and fortifications." By the terms of his agreement he was to act in this employment four years, and have under his command 300 able-bodied men.

Meanwhile (probably while on service at Fort Orange, in the neighborhood of the small city of Woerden, so often devastated in the wars of Europe) he married Mary Willemson, a native of that place, and a lady of prominent connections.

Leaving Woerden on the 10th of July, 1635, he went to London, and after a short delay set sail for America with his wife, a female attendant, and eleven men, in a Norse bark of only twenty-five tons' burden. The voyage was very tempestuous; but "through the Lord's great providence," says Winthrop, this diminutive vessel came across safely, and after touching at Boston arrived at the mouth of the Connecticut River on the 28th of November, 1635. Here he was bitterly disappointed, and the objects of his mission were in a great measure thwarted by the failure of the patentees in the fulfilment of their contract: so far from being supplied with a force sufficient for the foundation of a city and towns, he was furnished with barely men enough to garrison the fort

which he built at Saybrook, the remains of which are still conspicuous. Soon after his arrival, the Pequot war was excited by a course of conduct which he deprecated, and foretold would lead to it; the fort was long invested by that warlike tribe, several of the men were killed, and Gardiner himself severely wounded. Of this war he wrote a historical relation, in which his earnest feelings frequently break through the style of the age, and quaint conceits give way to the natural eloquence of the heart.

He remained at Saybrook fort until the expiration of the term of his engagement, and during this period of four years was actively employed in the settlement of the country about the mouth of the Connecticut River. In the course of the Pequot war, he became acquainted with the Sachem Wyandanch of Montaukett, who conceived for him a high regard, and ever afterwards through a long life maintained for him an ardent and devoted attachment. He purchased from the sachem Gardiner's Island, called by the Indians "*Monshonock*," and by himself the "*Isle of Wight*." This purchase was confirmed by the deputy of the Earl of Stirling, by a patent erecting it a separate and independent plantation, with power to the grantee "to execute and put in practise such laws for church and civil government as are agreeable to God, the king, and the practice of the country." In the fall of 1639, Gardiner removed to the island with his family and a number of laborers taken from the garrison of the fort. The settlement thus made was the first English settlement within the present state of New York. Here he continued to reside, until the settlement of Easthampton on the adjacent shore. Of this town he became one of the proprietors, and in 1653 removed into the settlement with his wife and daughters, leaving his



son with the laborers and farmers on the island. He resided in Easthampton during the remainder of his life, and was active in composing the affairs and promoting the quiet harmony and prosperity of the community. Through his influence with the natives, the intercourse of the whites with them was placed on the most friendly footing, and from the first settlement, although the Montauketts were one of the most warlike of the eastern tribes, no difficulties ever occurred between them which led to a resort to arms. The confiding friendship of Wyandanch, enabled him frequently after his departure from Saybrook to advise the New England colonies of the plots of the Narragansetts. He died in the latter part of the year 1663, leaving a character for integrity, decision, and bravery, mingling the piety and prudence of the Puritans with uncommon liberality of sentiment—and Mason, Winthrop, and Sir Richard Saltonstall refer with cordial feelings to his hospitality and friendship. While at Saybrook he redeemed from the Pequots two maidens, who had been captured in the attack on Wethersfield, and restored them to their friends at his private expense. Subsequently he redeemed from the Narragansetts the only daughter of Wyandanch, who had been borne away in a surprise of the Montauketts, while they were engaged in the celebration of her nuptials. The respect and veneration of his townsmen was shown in their courteous designation of him, and in their promptness to rebuke what might be offensive. When, during the apprehended Dutch war, an individual in the fervor of his patriotism, declared that he would even strike Mr. Gardiner, if he should help the Dutch, the remark met with the censure of the general court.

Although a considerable portion of his property had

been absorbed in discharging debts, which his son (who appears in early life to have been inclined to extravagance), had contracted in England, he left at his death, besides Gardiner's Island and his estate in Easthampton, a good deal of other property, personal and real. He received from the sachem of Montaukett, in consideration for the redemption and restoration of his daughter, the territory constituting a large proportion of the present town of Smithtown, which he conveyed to Richard Smith, the first settler of that town. His wife survived him and died in 1665.

His children were David, Mary, and Elizabeth. He devised his whole estate to his wife, who, by will of April 19, 1664, gave the island to David, and the real estate in Easthampton to Mary, and to Elizabeth Howell, only child of her deceased daughter Elizabeth. The said Mary, born at Saybrook, August 30, 1638, married Jeremiah Conkling of Easthampton, and died June 15, 1727, in the eighty-ninth year of her age. Her sister Elizabeth, born on Gardiner's Island, September 14, 1641, was the first white child born in the county of Suffolk, and the first child of English parentage born within the present limits of the state of New York. She married Arthur Howell, and died in February, 1657, leaving a daughter, Elizabeth Howell. *David*, born at Saybrook fort, April 29, 1636, was the first white child born in Connecticut. He was educated in England, where, in the parish of St. Margaret, Westminster, he married Mary Herringham, widow, June 4, 1657. The first general assembly, which met in 1683, made his island a constituent part of Long Island, although a distinct existence had been secured to it, and notwithstanding his strong opposition to such an arbitrary measure. Subsequently he

received from Governor Dongan the last patent of the island, previously called the Isle of Wight, but which was now erected "a lordship and manor, to be henceforth called the lordship and manor of Gardiner's Island." This patent was afterwards confirmed by Governor Hunter, in which provision was made, in contemplation of its becoming a numerously tenanted estate, for the holding of a Court Baron and Court Leet, and for the advowson or right of patronage to the church or churches that might be established. Mr. Gardiner died suddenly at Hartford, Conn., where he had gone on public business, July 10, 1689, and his tomb still stands in the old burial ground of that city. His children were: John, Elizabeth, Lion, and David. Of these *Elizabeth* married James Parshall, of whom little more is now known.

*Lion* settled in Easthampton, and was accidentally shot while hunting deer, September 23, 1723, leaving issue Lion and Giles, the last of whom died without issue, and the former died in 1781, leaving issue John, Lyon, and Jeremiah. Of these, Lyon died without issue; John died in 1780, leaving a son John, who in 1795 settled at Moriches in Brookhaven, and died in 1800, leaving sons John D., Abraham H., Aaron F., and a daughter Esther, who married one Hedges, 1815, and died 1845. *David*, son of David, second proprietor of the island, settled at Southold and died May, 1733, leaving a son and three daughters.

*John*, son of David and third proprietor of the island, was born April 19, 1661, and married, first, Mary King, who died July 4, 1707; second, Sarah Coit, widow, who died July 3, 1711, and third, Elizabeth Allen, widow, who survived him and died May 15, 1747, aged sixty-four.

He lived upon the island at the time when Kidd buried his treasure upon it, and when subsequently it was plundered by the Spanish pirates, who spread great alarm through the adjacent country. A silver tankard saved from plunder is still preserved in the family. He died, aged seventy-seven years, June 25, 1738, having been thrown from his horse and mortally injured six days before at Groton, Conn., where he was buried. His widow died May 15, 1746. His children were David, John, Mary, Samuel, Elizabeth, Joseph, Jonathan, Sarah, Hannah, and Abigail. Of these:

1. *David*, born January 3, 1691, was the fourth proprietor of the island. He married, first, Rachel Schellinger, April 15, 1713, who died December 16, 1744, aged fifty-four; and second Mehitable Burrows, widow, of Saybrook, who survived him. He died July 4, 1751, aged sixty, and was probably the last white person who could speak the Montauk language. He left John, Abraham, Mary, Samuel, David, Rachel, Abigail, and Hannah, of whom hereafter.
2. *John* married Elizabeth Osborn, October 4, 1733, and died, leaving only daughters.
3. *Mary* married Ebenezer Grey, June 27, 1720, and probably settled in Windham, Conn.
4. *Samuel*, born 1698, inherited an estate in Easthampton, where he resided till his death, May 24, 1729, aged thirty-one. He married Elizabeth Coit of Connecticut, who died, aged twenty-two, October 1, 1725. He had issue Elizabeth (who married her cousin, David Gardiner of New London), and Samuel, who settled in New London, and married his cousin Abigail, daughter of his uncle David Gardiner of Gardiner's Island, and died March, 1776, aged fifty-

three, leaving Thomas and Samuel, both of whom died unmarried.

5. *Elizabeth* married Thomas Greene of Boston, March 28, 1728, and is supposed to have been the mother of the late Gardiner Greene of that city, an eminent merchant.
6. *Joseph* married Sarah Grant, October 1, 1729, and is supposed to have left the island soon after.
7. *Jonathan* died previously to 1737, and left a son of the same name, but it is not known what became of him.
8. *Sarah* married Charles Trente of Connecticut, October 12, 1727.
9. *Hannah* married John Chandler of Worcester, Mass., and had a son Gardiner, and daughter Lucretia, who married Rev. Aaron Bancroft, and was the mother of the Hon. George Bancroft, author of a history of the United States and successively Secretary of War and minister plenipotentiary to Great Britain.
10. *Abigail*, born March 26, 1713, died in infancy.
11. *John*, eldest son of David, was the fifth proprietor of the island. He was born June 7, 1714, graduated at Yale College 1736, and married Elizabeth, daughter of Matthew Mulford, May 26, 1737. She died October 21, 1754, aged forty; and he married Deborah Avery (maiden name Lathrop, of Norwich, Conn.). He died May 19, 1764, and she married Major General Israel Putnam, a distinguished Revolutionary officer, who died in 1790. She died at his headquarters in the highlands in 1777, and was interred in the vault of Beverly Robinson, Esq. Mr. Gardiner left issue by both of his wives, viz.: David, Mary, John, Elizabeth, Jerusha, Hannah, and Septimus, the last of whom was



taken under the care of his stepfather General Putnam, and died in 1777.

2. *Mary*, daughter of David, born February 13, 1716, married Samuel Hunting, and died without issue May 28, 1745.
3. *David*, son of David, born June 3, 1718, graduated at Yale College 1736, and married his cousin Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Samuel Gardiner. She died October 13, 1772, aged fifty-one, and he January 17, 1776, aged sixty. He had ten children, one of whom, a daughter, married a Coit of New London, and David and Lucretia died unmarried. His male issue is believed to be extinct. Of his sister Rachel nothing is known.
4. *Abigail*, daughter of David, born May 1, 1724, married her cousin Samuel Gardiner of New London, and died March 28, 1775.
5. *Hannah*, daughter of David, born December 30, 1730, married Joshua Lathrop of Norwich, and died July 24, 1779.
6. *Abraham*, son of David, born February 19, 1721, married Mary, daughter of Nathaniel Smith, who was a farmer in the town of Easthampton. He built the old mansion house there, now occupied by Samuel B. Gardiner, and died August 21, 1782, aged sixty-one. His widow died May 19, 1807, having been born October 3, 1725. They had issue Mary, Rachel, Phebe, Nathaniel, and Abraham. Mr. Gardiner was generally known as Colonel Gardiner.

*David*, sixth proprietor, eldest son of John (the fifth proprietor of the island), was born October 8, 1738, graduated at Yale College 1759, and married Jerusha, daughter of the Rev. Samuel Buell, D.D., December

15, 1766. He died September 8, 1774, aged thirty-six years, and his widow married Isaac Conkling December 4, 1778 (had a son, the late Dr. Isaac Conkling), and died February 24, 1782, aged thirty-two. Issue of the first marriage, John Lyon and David.

*Mary*, daughter of John, made a runaway match with the Rev. Mr. Blake, chaplain and teacher in her father's family, and after his death married the Rev. Stephen Johnson, a distinguished divine, by whom she had issue. Her sister *Jerusha* married Lewis Osborne, and *Hannah*, born 1759, married Samuel Williams and settled at Pomfret, where her stepfather General Putnam resided.

*Abraham*, son of Colonel Abraham Gardiner, born January 25, 1763, married Phebe Dayton, May 31, 1781, and resided at Easthampton, where he died September 10, 1796. His widow died December 12, 1810, at the age of fifty-three. Issue Abraham S., David, Mary S., Samuel S., and Nathaniel.

*Phebe*, daughter of the colonel, born January 5, 1756, died September 18, 1775.

*Mary*, daughter of Colonel Gardiner, married Isaac Thompson, Esq. of Islip, L. I., June 4, 1772. She was born October 6, 1748, and died April 21, 1786, leaving issue Jonathan and Abraham G. Thompson.

*Rachel*, daughter of the colonel, born January 22, 1751, married David Mulford, and after his death her cousin John Gardiner of Eaton's Neck.

*Nathaniel*, eldest son of Colonel Gardiner, born January 11, 1759, became a physician, and was a surgeon in the American army during the Revolution, and afterwards pursued his profession in Philadelphia. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Dering, who

died March 8, 1801, aged forty-one. Issue: Maria Sylvester, born December 17, 1784, who died November 9, 1804; Robert Smith, born September 10, 1786, who graduated at Yale 1807, and died January 19, 1824; and Eliza Parker, who married Reuben Brumley of New York, but had no issue. Dr. Gardiner finally became a shipping merchant in New York, and died, aged forty-five, March 25, 1804.

*John Lyon*, eldest son of David, inherited the island by entail, and was the seventh proprietor. He was born November 8, 1770, graduated at the College of New Jersey 1789, married, March 4, 1803, Sarah, daughter of deacon John Griswold of Lyme, Conn., and died November 22, 1816, aged forty-six years, leaving issue David Johnson, Sarah Diodate, Mary Brainard, John Griswold, and Samuel Buell. Of whom as follows:

1. *David Johnson*, born August 16, 1804, was the eighth proprietor of the island, but died unmarried December 18, 1829, intestate, whereby the property descended in equal portions to his surviving brothers and sisters.
2. *Sarah Diodate*, born November 1, 1807, married David Thompson, Esq. of New York, May 10, 1827, and has issue Elizabeth, Gardiner, David, Charles Griswold, and Mary Brainard.
3. *Mary Brainard*, born December 4, 1809, died of consumption at Columbia, S. C., February 22, 1833, and was brought to the island for interment.
4. *John Griswold*, born September 9, 1812, purchased the interest of his surviving brother and sisters, and thus became the ninth proprietor of this valuable domain.
5. *Samuel Buell*, born April 6, 1815, married Mary

Gardiner, daughter of Jonathan Thompson, Esq. of New York, January, 1837, and has Mary, Lyon, David Johnson, George, and Sarah Griswold, born May 1848.

David, youngest son of David and brother of John Lyon, born February 29, 1772, graduated at the College of New Jersey 1789; studied law with the elder Samuel Jones, which he relinquished for agricultural pursuits, and settled on a farm at Flushing, L. I. He married Julia, daughter of James Havens of Shelter Island in 1796. She died July 3, 1806, leaving issue Charles, David, and John Lyon. He again married in 1809 Helen, daughter of James Willets of Whitestone, L. I., and died without issue by her April 6, 1815, aged forty-three. Of his children:

1. *Charles*, born May 7, 1797, was educated at Columbia College, removed to Gallia County, Ohio, in 1818, and on the organization of Meigs County was made recorder thereof. He married Lucy, daughter of Levi Stedman, August 29, 1821, who died without surviving issue January 10, 1824, and he again married Nancy Gibbs Elliot, June 25, 1825, by whom he had no issue, and died March 12, 1827.
2. *David*, born January 1, 1799, was educated at Columbia College, and married, February 20, 1820, Mariette, eldest daughter of Dr. Abel Huntington of Easthampton, and had charge of Clinton Academy from 1820 to 1824. He studied medicine and settled in Brooklyn. Issue Frances Lee, born May 30, 1821; John Lyon, born May 6, 1823; and Charles Huntington, born June 10, 1826. The said John L. married Mary E., daughter of Samuel Osborne, July 19, 1848, graduated in 1845 at the College of Physicians

and Surgeons, New York, and is engaged in practice at Bridgehampton, L. I.; and Charles H. is a clergyman.

3. *John Lyon*, born June 27, 1801, became a clerk in the Manhattan Bank, New York, and died September 3, 1824.

Of the children of Captain Abraham and Phebe Gardiner:

I. *Abraham S.*, born April 6, 1782, married Abby, daughter of Elisha Lee of Lyme, Conn., in October, 1809, and died at New Hartford, Oneida County, N. Y., in February, 1827, aged forty-four. Issue *James Lee*, born December, 1810; *Samuel*, born November, 1812, who married in 1838 a daughter of Richard F. Nicoll of Shelter Island, and has sons Abraham and Nicoll and a daughter; *Mary Frances*, born December, 1814, who married Robert Hazard in 1833, and has William Henry, born 1833, Loise Gertrude, born January, 1837, and Harriet Gardiner, born November, 1843; *Gertrude*, born June, 1817; *Harriet Lee*, born 1819, who died February, 1841; *Abraham Smith*, born November, 1822, who died January, 1823; and *Juliet Lay*, born October, 1824.

II. David, born May 2, 1784, graduated at Yale College in 1804, and was bred to the bar. He entered the practice of his profession in the city of New York, from which, however, he early retired. He married Juliana, daughter of Michael McLachlan, a Scotch merchant in New York. She was born February 8, 1799. Mr. Gardiner was for some time a member of the state senate, and during a short stay at Washington he (with several others) was killed by the bursting of the great gun on board of the United States steamer "Princeton,"



February 28, 1844. His mangled remains were brought to his native place, Easthampton, where a handsome granite monument has since been erected, bearing a brief but appropriate inscription. He left issue *David Lyon*, *Alexander*, *Margaret*, and *Julia*, who married his Excellency, John Tyler, President of the United States, June 26, 1844, and has a son David Gardiner, born July 12, 1846, and another born April 9, 1848. *Margaret* married John H. Beeckman, January 8, 1848.

III. Mary Smith, only daughter of Abraham and Phebe Gardiner, born November 3, 1786, married Philip G. Van Wyck, brother of the late Pierre C. Van Wyck, September 27, 1811. Issue: 1. *Joanna Livingston*, born July 14, 1812; 2. *Catherine*, born December 30, 1813, married Rev. Stephen Henry Battin, August 17, 1842, of St. Stephen's Church, New Hartford, Oneida County, N. Y., and had Catherine Van Wyck, born September, 1844, and Mary Gardiner, born December, 1846; 3. *Philip Cortlandt*, born December 25, 1815, was a midshipman in the navy, and died January 12, 1842; 4. *Eliza*, born January 16, 1818; 5. *Gardiner*, born June 18, 1820; 6. *Ann Van Rensselaer*, born March 9, 1822, married Alexander Wells, October 8, 1846, a lawyer of the city of Albany; 7. *Pierre Van Cortlandt*, born September 24, 1824, graduated at Princeton, N. J., 1845, and became a physician; and 8. *David*, born August 21, 1826.

IV. *Samuel S.*, born May 4, 1789, graduated at Williams College 1811, and was also bred to the bar. He was one of the clerks of the convention which framed the constitution of this state in 1821. In 1824 he married Mary, only child of the Hon. Ezra L'Hommedieu of Southold, who died January 28, 1838, leaving issue

Mary L'Hommedieu, Phebe, and Fanny, the eldest of whom married Ebenezer N. Horsford, August 4, 1847. He again married, February 28, 1844, Susan, widow of William W. Mott, and daughter of Henry Franklin.

V. *Nathaniel*, born February 23, 1792, was educated to mercantile pursuits, and was many years employed therein in the city of New York. He married, June 19, 1820, Eliza S., only daughter of Andrew Francis. She died June 14, 1842, and September 2, 1844, he married Mrs. Almira L'Hommedieu, widow of Sylvester Y. L'Hommedieu, and daughter of the late Silas Howell of Sag Harbor, by whom he has Harriet Howell, born November 17, 1845. Issue by the first marriage as follows:

1. *John Bray*, born September 9, 1821, graduated at Yale College 1840, studied law and was admitted to the New York bar in May, 1844; 2. *William Henry*, born December 28, 1822, graduated at the New York University July, 1843, and took his degree of M.D. in the medical department of that institution March 10, 1847; 3. *Mary Frances*, born February 6, 1825, died July 24, 1826; 4. *Abraham*, born November 11, 1826, died October 2, 1827; 5. *Mary Frances* 2d, born June 3, 1829, died December 20, 1836; 6. *Eliza Dayton*, born March 6, 1831.

*John*, son of John (fifth proprietor), born May 19, 1747, was educated at Yale College, and settled upon Eaton's Neck, L. I. He married Joanna Conkling of Easthampton, 1771. She was born December 18, 1745, and died September 30, 1809. He died May 29, 1813. Issue: 1. *Matthew*, born March 27, 1772, married Phebe, daughter of Joseph Bunce, March 12, 1796, and died August 3, 1831. She was born July 26, 1780, and died May 9, 1838; 2. *Jonathan*, born August 3,

1773, graduated at Yale College 1795, and married Sarah, daughter of one Gelston in 1812. She died and he married Fanny, daughter of one Peck, and died March 7, 1833, aged fifty-nine; 3. *Elizabeth*, born July 18, 1775, married Samuel Fleet; 4. *John Herriman*, born September 17, 1777, married Abigail Scidmore, December, 1804. She was born May 23, 1801; 5. *Phebe*, born June 8, 1779, died October 20, 1780; 6. *Abigail*, born May 18, 1782, died July 13, 1793; 7. *Mary*, born June 6, 1784, married (as second wife) Henry C. Mather; 8. *Jerusha*, born May 3, 1786, married Azel Lewis; 9. *Phebe*, 2d, born July 10, 1789, married Henry C. Mather.

The issue of said Matthew and Phebe Gardiner:

1. *Orland Hallam*, born November 20, 1798, married Hannah, daughter of Edmund Bryant, November 7, 1822, who died August 9, 1845, leaving Edmund Bryant, born August 27, 1823, and Louisa Augusta, born September 1, 1825; 2. *Joel Bunce*, born July 10, 1800, married, April 27, 1820, Frances, daughter of Alexander Smith, and died February 2, 1849, aged forty-eight; 3. *Matthew Herriman*, born May 9, 1802, married, March 7, 1825, Martha, daughter of Scudder Lewis; 4. *Abigail Conkling*, born September 4, 1804, married, January 30, 1828, Solomon C. Lewis; 5. *David Mulford*, born November 25, 1805, died May 17, 1827; 6. *Ebenezer Bryant*, born October 19, 1807, died April 26, 1842; 7. *Jane Hicks*, born June 18, 1809, married Joel S. Bryant, January 19, 1831, and died December 29, 1840; 8. *Jerusha Amanda*, born April 27, 1811, died November 26, 1829; 9. *Martha Almira*, born November 2, 1812, died February 3, 1830; 10. *Mary Elizabeth*, born Jan-

uary 12, 1814; 11. *Phebe Cornelia*, born February 13, 1816, married, January 4, 1842, Edward H. Brush, and died January 22, 1844; 12. *John Lyon*, born May 13, 1817, married, March 18, 1839, Adelia, daughter of Zebulon Whitman; 13. *Nancy*, born December 2, 1819; and 14. *Sarah Frances*, born May 1, 1820, died March 7, 1839.

Issue of said Jonathan and Sarah, his first wife:

1. *Albert Gelston*, born August 6, 1813.

By second wife, Fanny Peck:

2. *Eliza Gracie*, born October 14, 1815, married Charles H. Jones, July 12, 1839; 3. *Fanny Peck*, born September 9, 1817, married John Van Nostrand, June 21, 1843; 4. *George C.*, born June 21, 1819, married Mary C., daughter of Augustin Bryant, January 5, 1843; 5. *William Gracie*, born March 29, 1821, married Martha, daughter of Charles Scudder, July 30, 1846; 6. *Nancy Rysum*, born March 6, 1823, married Dr. John Shelton, September 6, 1842; 7. *Sally Gelston*, born January 9, 1827.

Issue of John H. and Abigail (Scidmore):

1. *Joanna Conklin*, born June 3, 1806, married Jacob S. Mulford, May 18, 1836; 2. *Mary Alida*, born August 8, 1807, married David H. Sanford, June 22, 1840; 3. *Benjamin Franklin*, born February 1, 1810, married a daughter of Elias Mulford, December 23, 1830; 4. *Phebe Caroline*, born May 17, 1813; 5. *Sarah Ann*, born January 19, 1816; 6. *Jacob*, born May 16, 1818, died September 5, 1819.

David, son of David fourth proprietor, born June 3, 1718, settled in Southold, where he died in May, 1733, leaving John and Lyon. The last died without issue, and the former died leaving issue David, John, James,

Jared, Benjamin, Martha, and Mary. The said *David* left issue Jetur and Fletcher. *James*, born April 5, 1757, married Charity, daughter of Josiah Howell, November 12, 1787, and died May 26, 1816, aged fifty-nine; she died September 19, 1817, aged forty-seven. She had thirteen children, of whom *Henry*, born September 8, 1788, married Mary Horton, daughter of John Hubbard, April 18, 1821; she died October 9, 1841, leaving no issue, and he married again Mary Jane, daughter of Silas Jessup, October 19, 1842, who was born September 20, 1821; *Augustus*, born August 6, 1791, married Sarah, daughter of Charles Stevens, June 9, 1823, and has one daughter Ann; *William*, born May 23, 1827, married Sarah C., daughter of John Rogers, leaving no issue; and *Mary*, born July 28, 1809, married Benjamin F. Rogers, 1832. The said *Martha* married William Horton (no issue), and *Mary* married Samuel Tillotson and had no issue. *Jared* and *Benjamin* died unmarried.

*John*, last above named (son of John), was born August 12, 1752, and became a physician at Southold, where he died October 21, 1823, aged seventy-one. He married Abigail, daughter of Captain Seth Worth, October 15, 1781. She, born 1765, died August 22, 1800, aged thirty-five. He again married, in 1803, Margaret, eldest daughter of Major Calvin Moore, who died November 8, 1823. By his first wife he had issue:

1. *Rejoice*, born July, 1783, died 1790; 2. *John Worth*, born April 6, 1785, died September 23, 1801; 3. *Sidney*, born January 23, 1787, married, May 23, 1811, Mary H., daughter of Etienne Veron, and died May 11, 1827, having six children; 4. *Laura*, born February



2, 1789, married Anthony Post Brower of New York, November 13, 1806, and has been the mother of ten children; 5. *Baldwin*, born June 3, 1791, married October 26, 1815, Louise Le Roy Veron of Philadelphia, daughter of Etienne Veron, and had ten children; 6. *Mary Reeve*, born July 4, 1794, married William C. Gildersleeve, February 18, 1830.

Dr. Gardiner had by his second wife Margaret Moore two sons; *John Calvin*, born in 1804, who died the next year, and *John David*, born in August, 1807, who died in New Orleans in 1832.

The children of Laura and Anthony P. Brower:

1. *John Gardiner*, born September 3, 1807, married August 7, 1833, Sarah Jane, daughter of James B. Burger of New York, and had Henry Burger and Jonas, born May 17, 1834; Emily Maria, born October 4, 1836; Sidney Gardiner, born July 2, 1838, and Helen Cobb, born December 5, 1842; 2. *Sidney Livingston*, born December 18, 1808, died June 19, 1836; 3. *Baldwin*, born December 25, 1810, died at Palermo, Italy, February 15, 1845; 4. *Abigail Worth*, born March 20, 1813; 5. *George Clinton*, born August 31, 1816, married, September 5, 1844, Louise Le Roy, daughter of his uncle Baldwin Gardiner, no issue; 6. *Mary Louisa*, born August 18, 1818, married, June 26, 1838, Albon Platt of New York, and had William, born June 5, 1839; George Brower, born December 18, 1840, who died March 11, 1843; Frederick Halsey, born January 28, 1843; Albon Platt, born November 14, 1845; and Laura Gardiner, born August 27, 1847; 7. *Gardiner*, born January 17, 1823, died January 4, 1830; 8. *Laura Gardiner*, born December 18, 1824; 9. *Ellen Eliza*, born January 31, 1832.

The said third son Baldwin, born as above in 1810, married in New Orleans, May 18, 1836, Elizabeth Hazard, daughter of Jacob Barker, formerly a distinguished banker of New York, by whom he had *Anna Hazard*, born May 20, 1837, who died June 24, 1838; *William Barker*, born April 29, 1839; and *Baldwin*, born August 5, 1841, who died January 16, 1843. After this the name of the surviving son was changed to Baldwin.

The children of Sidney and Mary H. Veron Gardiner:

1. Algernon Sidney, born February 28, 1812, died May 9, 1844;
  2. John Worth, born October 12, 1815, died April 15, 1817;
  3. Ellen Maria, born October 11, 1817, married, September 10, 1834, George W. Fairman of Philadelphia, and has *Caroline*, born October 10, 1836; *Edward*, born December 31, 1837; *George*, born October 1, 1839; *Charles*, born May 9, 1841; *Mary*, born January 7, 1843; *Delia*, born October 13, 1844; and *Ellen*, born November 12, 1846;
  4. John Hampden, born December 22, 1820, married in Philadelphia, November 9, 1843, Adeline Masters, and had George Masters, born December 11, 1844.
- The children of Baldwin and Louise Re Roy Veron Gardiner:

1. Louise Le Roy, born May 11, 1817, married George Clinton Brower;
2. Melanie Veron, born January 31, 1819, married, June 28, 1837, Thomas J. Stewart of Philadelphia, and had *Melanie*, born September 4, 1838, who died November 10, 1838; *Catherine*, born January 21, 1840; *Louise*, born November 2, 1841; *Beverly*, born October 9, 1844, who died September 1, 1845; *Arthur*, born December 16, 1845; and *Helen*, born August 16, 1847;
3. Laura, born July 2, 1820, died July 28, 1845;
4. John Baldwin, born October 29,

1821; 5. Rosaline, born February 22, 1823; 6. Robert Sidney, born June 8, 1827; 7. Celestine, born December 7, 1829; 8. Charles Chauncey, born June 24, 1831; and 9. Etienne Veron, born December 18, 1838.

John D. Gardiner, son of John and Esther (Hedges-Fithian) Gardiner, was born January 2, 1781, graduated at Yale College 1804, became a Presbyterian clergyman, and married in 1801 Frances, daughter of Abraham Mulford, by whom he had *Charles Fox*, born 1802, and *Caroline Hunt*, born 1804. The first married, 1823, Eliza, daughter of Phineas Corey, and had *Charles Addison*, born July, 1824, who married, 1846, Caroline, daughter of William Cooper; *Maria*, born 1827, who died March 8, 1845; *James M.*, born 1829; *Fanny*, born 1831. Charles Fox died January 12, 1840. *Caroline Hunt* married, March 25, 1832, Nathan H. Cook, and has Agnes, Sylvanus, and John. Mrs. Gardiner died in 1814, and her husband married again Mary, widow of Nathan Cook, and daughter of Samuel L'Hommedieu, Esq., in November, 1814. She was born April 8, 1791. Issue:

1. *Samuel L'Hommedieu*, born August 10, 1816, married, October 1, 1842, Ann, daughter of Nathaniel Shaler, and has Geraldine S., born July, 1842, and Leonice M., born February, 1846; 2. *John David*, born July 23, 1818, married, August, 1846, Mary, daughter of Jesse Starr, and has a son; 3. *Frances May*, born June 25, 1820, married, February, 1843, Henry L. Gardiner, and has a daughter Marcia, born 1843; 4. *Ezra L'Hommedieu*, born September 5, 1822, married, October 7, 1846, Ruth, daughter of Elijah Terry, and had Mary Ann, born May 10, 1848; 5. *Alexander S.*, born July 19, 1824, graduated at the

New York University in June, 1847; 6. *Howard Calhoun*, born September 17, 1826; 7. *Sarah Elizabeth*, born October 11, 1828.

Abraham H., son of John and Esther (Hedges-Fithian) Gardiner, was born December 20, 1783, and married, 1816, Hannah, daughter of Jonathan Mulford. She died in 1837. Issue:

1. *Catherine*, born 1817, married in 1843, Silas W. Edwards; 2. *Henry*, born 1819, married in 1843, Frances M., daughter of the Rev. John D. Gardiner, and has a daughter Marcia; 3. *Mary*, born 1822, married Gilbert H. Cooper, and has a daughter Hannah Gardiner; 4. *Robert E.*, born 1826; 5. *Cornelia*, born 1828; 6. *Thomas*, born 1831.

Aaron F., son of John and ——— Gardiner, born in 1786, married Martha Pope in 1811, and has issue Lathrop P., William Livingston, and Thomas Jefferson.

---

### *Matthias Nicoll and His Descendants*

Matthias Nicoll, descended of an honorable and ancient family at *Islippe*, Northamptonshire, England, was by profession a lawyer, and the son of a clergyman of the Established Church. He was a resident of New Amsterdam previous to the conquest of New Netherland in 1664, and immediately after that event was appointed by Governor Richard Nicoll, secretary of the colony, and authorized *ex officio*, to preside with the justices of the different ridings in the court of sessions. No relationship existed between the governor and his secretary, at least on the paternal side. In 1674 he was chosen mayor of the city, and after the act of 1683 for remodelling the

courts, was appointed one of the judges of the supreme court, and officiated for the last time in that capacity in Queens County, September 12, 1687. He acquired a large landed estate upon the western part of Cow Neck,<sup>1</sup> where he died December 22, 1687, and was, as well as Abigail, his wife, buried there, although nothing remains to mark the precise spot where they were interred. This valuable possession became the property of his son William, who, in 1716, conveyed it to Joseph Latham, having removed to his estate in Suffolk County.

Margaret, the daughter of Matthias, born May 30, 1662, married the second Richard Floyd of Setauket, May 12, 1686, and died February 1, 1718. She was of course the grandmother of General William Floyd, a member of that body of patriots who declared the independence of the thirteen colonies. It is a tradition in the family that the other children of Mr. Nicoll were accidentally drowned in the East River, near Hell Gate, and that William saved himself by swimming to the shore. This gentleman, commonly called the *Patentee*, was born in England in 1657, and educated for the bar, of which he became in time a highly distinguished member. He had somewhat the spirit of an adventurer, and in 1677 accompanied Sir Edmund Andros to England, where on his arrival he joined a regiment of troops destined for the war in Flanders, and spent some time in the army, from which ill health compelled him to retire at the expiration of two years. The journal of his adventures on this expedition still exists, and is a literary curiosity. On his return to New York he commenced his professional life in earnest and rose to much distinction. In 1683 he was made clerk of Queens County

<sup>1</sup> Now Manhasset Neck.—EDITOR.



which office he retained till June 20, 1688. His lands in Suffolk, comprising one hundred square miles, were confirmed by patent, September 20, 1697. In 1693 he married Ann, daughter of Jeremiah, and widow of Killian Van Rensselaer (who died 1687), eldest son of Johannes, heir at law of Killian Van Rensselaer, first proprietor of the manor of Rensselaerwyck and Claverack.

Mr. Nicoll was the friend of liberty, and sided with the Revolution in favor of William and Mary, but was opposed to the measures of Leisler and his adherents; in consequence of which he, with others of his associates, was imprisoned for daring to avow their opinions in relation to public affairs. He was, however, set at liberty on the arrival of Governor Slaughter in March, 1691, and on the 23d of the same month was called to the council board. In 1695 he was sent to England to urge the Crown to enforce the contributions allotted to the other colonies for defending the country against the French, the weight of which fell unequally upon New York, and for this service he was allowed £1,000. Being captured on his passage by a French privateer, he destroyed his papers, but was robbed of £350, besides being imprisoned in St. Malo, where he remained till exchanged some months after, and sent to England. He was suspended from the council by Lord Bellomont in 1698, who seems to have adopted the views and feelings of the Leislerians, and exerted his official influence against his opponents. In 1701 he was elected to the assembly from Suffolk County, but being at that time a non-resident, his seat was vacated August 26, 1701. The assembly being soon after dissolved, he removed to his estate, where he continued ever after to reside. He was elected again in 1702, and became speaker of the assem-

bly. From which time to his death he was regularly re-elected a member of each succeeding assembly and held the place of speaker till he resigned it on account of his health in 1718, having been a member for twenty-one successive years, and speaker sixteen. March 30, 1691, he was employed with James Emmot and George Farrawell as king's council to conduct the prosecution against Leisler and his associates, and was one of the counsel employed by Nicholas Bayard in March, 1702, in defending him from a political prosecution instituted by Lieutenant Governor Nanfan, and pursued with all the violence and bitterness of party rancor, for circulating and signing petitions to the king and parliament, in which the arbitrary conduct of his Honor and his friends were enumerated; a report of the case is published in the state trials of that year. He was also one of those employed in defence of Francis McKennie, a Presbyterian clergyman, in June, 1707, who was indicted for preaching without the governor's license, an indictment brought about by the bigotry of Lord Cornbury.

Mr. Nicoll was in the assembly when the colony was divided into bitter parties, and, when a variety of interesting questions arose between the governor and assembly affecting their rights, engaged in defence of the latter. Governor Dongan, who was styled Lord of the Manor of Martin's Vineyard, appointed Mr. Nicoll, December 19, 1685, steward thereof during his pleasure. In 1707 Giles Sylvester, from feelings of personal friendship, devised to him his lands upon Shelter Island, which with his former purchases, made him owner of four-fifths of that island.

He died, aged sixty-six, in 1722, leaving sons Benjamin, William, and Van Rennselaer, and daughters

Mary, Catherine, and Frances. His wife died before him in 1715. *Mary* married Robert Watts of New York, a Scotchman, about the year 1706, and had issue Robert and John. Her husband died September 21, 1750, aged seventy-two. *Catherine* married Jonathan Havens of Shelter Island, and was the mother of Nicoll, and grandmother of the Hon. Jonathan Nicoll Havens, formerly member of congress from Long Island. *Frances* married Edward Holland and had a son Henry, who died in his youth.

Benjamin, eldest son of the patentee, was born 1694, and inherited the Islip estate. He married, 1714, his cousin Charity, daughter of Richard Floyd, who was born April 6, 1692. He died 1724, aged thirty-three, leaving issue William and Benjamin, and his widow on September 26, 1725, married the Rev. Dr. Samuel Johnson of Stratford, Conn., who, in 1754 was elected president of Kings College,<sup>1</sup> New York, by whom she had also two sons, William and William Samuel. The latter was made president of this institution in 1787, and held the office till 1800. He was born at Stratford, October 7, 1727, entered college at the age of thirteen years, and graduated at the age of seventeen in 1744. He was bred to the law, and in 1765 was a delegate from Connecticut to a colonial congress in the city of New York; next year was chosen a member of the council of his native colony and received the degree of LL.D. from the university of Oxford. He was made a judge of the superior court in 1772, and died, aged ninety-two, November 14, 1819. His wife died, aged sixty-six, June 5, 1758, her two eldest sons having been educated under the care of their stepfather, and graduated at Yale

<sup>1</sup> Now Columbia University.—EDITOR.

College in 1734. Van Rennselaer, son of the patentee, became entitled to all the land and personal property of his mother at and near Albany. He married one Salisbury, by whom he had a son Francis, who married Martha Van Rennselaer.

William, youngest son of the patentee, took by devise one-quarter part of Shelter Island, including Sachem's Neck, and the lands adjoining. He was born in 1702, and after graduating at Yale in 1734, studied law and continued to practise after his removal to Shelter Island. He was generally called by way of distinction Speaker Nicoll, from having held that situation a long time in the assembly to which he was first elected in 1739, and became an active and influential member of that body. In 1746 he was one of the commissioners on the part of the assembly to treat with the neighboring colonies, in relation to the war between England and France. He was chairman of the committee which reported the address to Governor Clinton in 1749, during a collision between him and the assembly, in which they say, "On your excellency's asking the question, whether any man could say you had invaded his liberty or property, we assure you we sincerely wish the *breaking open* the stores at Albany, the *letter* wrote to the judge, clerk, and sheriff of Dutchess County, requiring them to put a stop to proceedings in cases of private property, an attempt to *restrain* the liberty of the press and *other things* of the like nature could be buried in eternal oblivion." And in conclusion, "We are extremely grieved that we are obliged to remain here, with great expense to our constituents and inconvenience to our own private affairs, without any prospect of serving the public; but at the same time, we take the liberty to assure you that no in-

convenience, how great soever, to which our own persons or private affairs may be exposed, by means of being kept here, shall ever prevail on us to abandon the true interests of our country." In 1755 he was one of the committee to confer with Governor Shirley of Massachusetts on the subject of a concentrated action by the colonies against the French, and reported the plan of operations to the house. He was chosen speaker of the assembly in 1759, after serving nineteen years, and was re-elected to the same office for nine successive years. In 1764 and 1765 he signed, as speaker, petitions to the king and parliament, in which were boldly asserted doctrines similar to those for the maintenance of which the declaration of independence was made in 1776; and had he survived the latter period he would have been found among the first to oppose the encroachments of arbitrary power. He was again returned to the assembly in 1768, being for twenty-nine years a member of that body. On the dissolution of the house by Governor Moore, he set out for home, but died suddenly on Hempstead Plains, at the age of sixty-six years, December 3, 1768, having never been married.

*William* 3rd, son of Benjamin, commonly called Lawyer or Clerk Nicoll, was born October 7, 1715, and was educated for the bar. He married Joanna, daughter of Captain Samuel De Honneur, and was in 1750 appointed clerk of Suffolk County, which office he held till his decease, March 1, 1780, but for the last four years of his life the administration of justice upon Long Island was suspended by the war, and of course the office yielded to the incumbent no profit; his last entry upon the records bearing date November 8, 1776. He was an active member of assembly, and in March,



1768, was elected to fill the place of his uncle, Speaker Nicoll. The assembly being dissolved January 2, 1769, he was chosen again in March following, with Colonel Nathaniel Woodhull. In 1774 he, with John Watts, William Smith, and Robert R. Livingston, was appointed a commissioner, to meet others from Massachusetts for settling the boundary between the two colonies, and their decision was approved by Governors Tryon and Hutchinson. He was concerned also in the petitions addressed by the assembly to the king, the memorial to the lords, and remonstrance to the Commons, April 25, 1775. This assembly continued till it was superseded by the provincial congress in May, 1775, when the disputes between England and the colonies came to a crisis. The occasion required great moral courage, energy, and zeal, and Mr. Nicoll seemed to lack the boldness and decision which the occasion demanded; but justice requires that it should be known that at this critical juncture of public affairs he had been attacked with paralysis, and became enervated by disease, which rendered him unequal to the stirring scenes, requiring all the energy and elasticity of middle age. His wife died December 3, 1772. He had issue who survived him: Charity, William, Gloriana Margaretta, Joanna Rachel, and Samuel Benjamin. His daughter Charity, born March 27, 1753, married Garret Keteltas of New York, and died in 1816. Gloriana Margaretta, born September 13, 1759, married John Loudon McAdam, son of James, of Waterhead, Scotland (celebrated afterwards for his improved method of road-making in England, who died November 26, 1836, aged eighty), and had sons William Nicoll, and James (now Sir

James) Loudon McAdam. She died at Bristol in 1820. Joanna Rachel, born in 1760, married Clerk Kilby McAdam, and had Gilbert and James, and died January 8, 1795.

Benjamin, son of Benjamin, and grandson of the patentee, was born March 17, 1718, graduated at Yale College 1734, and was educated for the law. His father dying intestate, his elder brother took the patrimonial estate, and he was thrown entirely upon his own resources for support. Settling in New York, he married Mary Magdalen, daughter of Edward Holland, an eminent merchant, and mayor of that city from 1747 to 1757; and bid fair to stand at the head of his profession, when he was cut off by death in 1760. He, however, lived long enough to give abundant evidence of his abilities and usefulness, being one of the founders of the city library, and of Kings College, of which his stepfather, Dr. Johnson, was the first president. He left issue Henry, Edward, Samuel, and Matthias. Of whom:

1. *Henry* graduated at Kings College in 1774, and married Elizabeth, only daughter of General Nathaniel Woodhull, by whom he had Edward Holland, Eliza Woodhull, and Henry Woodhull. He died in 1790, and his widow married the late General John Smith in October, 1792, by whom she had issue, and died September 14, 1839, aged seventy-six. The said *Edward H.*, born in 1783, married Mary, daughter of Solomon Townsend, and died May 10, 1848, aged sixty-five. He had issue Henry, who married Ann, daughter of James Thorne in 1844. The said *Eliza W.*, married Richard Smith, July 20, 1808, who died November, 1830, aged sixty, leaving issue Ed-

ward, Henry, John Lawrence, Ann Eliza, Sarah Elizabeth, Marcia, and Charlotte. The said *Henry W.* married Mary, daughter of John Ireland, and died in 1827.

2. *Edward* graduated at Kings College 1776, and died unmarried.
3. *Samuel* was a physician of talent, and practised with much reputation in the city of New York. He was a trustee of Columbia College, and professor of chemistry and of the practice of medicine from 1792 to 1794; but died at an early age, having married his cousin, only daughter of Francis Nicoll, by whom he had two sons and one daughter.
4. *Matthias*, the youngest son of Benjamin, born in 1754, graduated at Kings College 1776, and became an eminent and successful shipping merchant at Stratford, Conn., where he died December 11, 1830, aged seventy-one. His wife was Sarah, who died, aged ninety years, January 7, 1847. Issue: Samuel, who is still living, Francis H. (candidate for governor of Connecticut 1841, who died unmarried, aged fifty-seven, September 24, 1842), and Ann, who married James Clinch, by whom she had a daughter Sarah Nicoll, who married her relative John Lawrence Smith, February 4, 1845.

William, eldest son of Lawyer or Clerk Nicoll, to whom he devised the Islip estate, called Captain Nicoll, was born May 20, 1756, and married Frances, daughter of Colonel Henry Smith of Setauket, by his third wife Margaret Biggs. He died, aged thirty-nine, April 22, 1795, leaving issue William and Henry. Of whom, *William*, born in 1773, married Deborah, daughter of Obadiah Seaman and died, in 1798, aged twenty-five, leav-

ing 1. *Frances*, born in 1797, who married Wickham Conklin, who died September 4, 1841, aged forty-seven, and by whom she had Nathaniel, William, Thomas, and Erastus; 2. *William*, born October 26, 1798, who came into the possession of the Islip estate by entail in October, 1820. He married, 1819, Sarah, daughter of Dr. Thomas Greenly of Oneida, and died, aged twenty-five, November 20, 1823, leaving a son William, and daughters Sarah and Louisa. The last named William married a daughter of Edward A. Nicoll of New York. His sister Sarah married William H. Ludlow, by whom she has issue, and Louisa died unmarried.

Samuel Benjamin, youngest son of Clerk Nicoll, born September 4, 1764, married, December 6, 1784, Anne, daughter of Colonel Richard Floyd of Mastic, by Arabella, daughter of Judge David Jones, who was born August 17, 1767, and died June 8, 1813. Mr. Nicoll removed in 1787 to the estate formerly occupied by his great uncle *Speaker* Nicoll on Shelter Island, where he became an extensive and enterprising farmer. He was endowed with a disposition and taste which peculiarly fitted him for the enjoyments of domestic life, eschewing every public employment that might divert his attention from the pursuits of an agricultural life. He died at the age of sixty-four years, September 19, 1828. Issue: Richard Floyd, William, Elizabeth Floyd, Anna Willet, Samuel Benjamin, Thomas Elbert Ellison, Maria Cortland, John Cortland, Gloriana Margaretta, and Arabella Jones Floyd. Of these as follows:

1. *Richard F.*, married Margaret, eldest daughter of General Sylvester Dering, who died August 25, 1847, leaving issue.
2. *William*, born December 6, 1787, died while a lieu-

tenant of marines, on board the frigate "Congress" at Rio de Janeiro, March 22, 1822, aged thirty-four and unmarried.

3. *Elizabeth F.*, born February 9, 1790, married Charles F. Dering, by whom she has no issue.
4. *Anna W.* was born February 14, 1792.
5. *Samuel B.*, born March 25, 1794, became a lawyer, married Sarah B., daughter of Dr. Benjamin Payne of Flushing, L. I., and settled upon a part of his father's possessions on Shelter Island, where he still resides, having represented the county of Suffolk in the assembly in 1843.
6. *Thomas E. E.*, born January 2, 1796, died unmarried in August, 1827.
7. *Maria C.*, born November 2, 1798, married Rev. Ezra Youngs of Southold.
8. *John C.*, born April 17, 1800, studied medicine and died at St. Iago de Cuba,<sup>1</sup> June 22, 1825.
9. *Gloriana M.* was born May 24, 1803.
10. *Arabella J. F.* was born January 26, 1807.

---

### *Tallmadge Family*

In addition to our notice of Colonel Benjamin Tallmadge, it may be observed that most families of this name in this country, if not all, are doubtless of one stock, although the name is variously spelled. Thomas and Enos were in Boston in 1631; the former was made free-man there in 1634, and at Lynn in 1636. Both came to Connecticut. Thomas settled in Branford, but removed

<sup>1</sup> Old form of Santiago de Cuba.—EDITOR.



finally to New Haven where he died. Enos resided a while at New Haven, but accompanied his son Thomas to Easthampton, L. I., in 1648, and there spent the remainder of his life, his son Thomas being one of the eight original proprietors of the town. His daughter Temperance married Sweton Grant, and died at Newport, R. I., May 19, 1792, aged eighty-two. Thomas of New Haven had Benjamin and James; the former became a clergyman and settled as has been seen at Brookhaven, L. I., where he died; and James, who married Martha Roberts, February 13, 1741, settled at Sharon, Conn., and had Daniel, James, Hannah, Martha, Josiah, Elisha, John, Rebecca, Sarah, Joel, Ezra, Sibil, and Luther. Of these James, born September 11, 1743, was a Revolutionary officer, and was severely wounded at the capture of Burgoyne. Phebe, his widow, died December 13, 1842, aged seventy-seven. His children were Matthias B., James, and Mary. Matthias married Elizabeth, daughter of Vice-President George Clinton, and had Clinton (who married Julia, daughter of George W. and Ann Clinton), Charles William, Theodore, and Elizabeth. He succeeded the Hon. John Sloss Hobart as judge of the United States Court for the district of New York in 1806, and held the office till his death in 1820. James was bred to the bar, and married Laura, daughter of his uncle John Tallmadge, and had Mary, who married Philip Van Rensselaer. His wife died, aged forty-five, April 21, 1834. In addition to other distinguished offices, he was in 1834 elected lieutenant governor of New York by a majority of more than 32,000 votes. His sister Mary married, August 4, 1789, the Rev. Stephen Gano, who was born December 25, 1762, and was a surgeon in the American army during

the Revolution, afterwards becoming a clergyman. He settled in the First Baptist Church at Providence, R. I., in 1792, and died, aged sixty-five, August 18, 1828, leaving two daughters, who married gentlemen of the name of Ludlow. The said Joel Tallmadge settled in Rensselaer County, N. Y., where he died January 26, 1834, aged seventy-seven, leaving six sons and a daughter, two of whom were Nathaniel P., and Daniel B. Tallmadge. The first was some time senator in congress from New York, and in 1844 was appointed governor of the territory of Wisconsin. The latter held for a while the judgeship of the superior court in the city of New York, and died in October, 1846.

Thomas Tallmadge of Easthampton had a son Enos, and probably others. The sons of Enos were Enos, Thomas, John, and Daniel. Thomas, second son, had by his first wife Daniel, John, and Enos, and by his second wife two sons and six daughters. Daniel, son of Enos and grandson of Thomas, removed to New Jersey in 1725, where he left sons Daniel and Thomas, and a daughter. The last-named Thomas, born October 24, 1755, died October 2, 1834, leaving issue Goin, Daniel, David, Jehial, Thomas, Samuel K., John V., and six daughters. Of these Goin died in 1812, leaving Thomas Goin; Catherine, who married David F. Atkins, April 29, 1845; and two other daughters. Samuel K. graduated at New Jersey College 1820, and is a minister. Daniel, second son of Thomas, died unmarried, and David, the third son (ex-sheriff of Somerset County, N. J.), had six sons and four daughters, three of whom, James R., John V. N., and Goin are ministers. Of these, James R. graduated at Princeton 1826, married Grace S., daughter of Isaac Miller, September 20,

1832, and is settled at Blauenburgh, N. J. His brother Goin settled in New Jersey, and John V. N. is a missionary in China; Daniel, one of his sons, being a merchant in the city of New York. Jehial, fourth son of Thomas, graduated at Princeton in 1813, and is a minister in Ohio, and Samuel K., the sixth son, graduated in 1820, also a minister, the latter being president of Oglethorpe University in Georgia. John V., the seventh son, is a merchant in New York. Thomas Goin, son of Goin Talmadge, born October 22, 1801, married Dorothy, daughter of David Miller, who died in 1834, leaving three sons and one daughter. He again married, July 15, 1834, Sarah Maria, daughter of Cornelius Van Brunt, who died in April, 1843, leaving a son and daughter, and on January 22, 1848, he married Mrs. Harriet Stone, widow of Jonas Stone and daughter of Tunis Jerolamon, deceased. Names of the sons: David Miller, William Henry, Tunis Van Pelt, and Thomas Adriance, the eldest of whom married Sarah Jane Stone, February 3, 1846. William Henry graduated at the New York University in 1846, and married Nancy Weed, January 11, 1848. The eldest daughter, Maria Louisa, married John L. Green, January 17, 1848. Mr. Talmadge was a merchant in the city of New York, from 1819 to 1836; in 1837 a member of assembly, and a member of the common council in 1838 and 1839. He was also an alderman of Brooklyn in 1842, 1843, and 1844, mayor of the city 1845, judge of Kings County 1846 and 1847, and United States Deposit Loan commissioner during the latter period. Thomas Talmadge, son of the first Thomas of Easthampton, had a son John, who was the father of nineteen children, and died aged eighty-four in 1765. His son David died aged seventy-six in 1806, having had

John, Jeremiah, Nathaniel, and Enos, the last of whom died at Milton, N. Y., in 1804. Henry, another son of John, born 1762, was engaged in the Revolution, after which he went to Vermont, married a daughter of William Hooker, and removed to Greenville, N. Y., where he died, aged fifty, in March, 1813. His son, William Talmage, is a member of the bar in the city of New York. William and John, the other sons of John, settled in Vermont.<sup>1</sup>

---

*Colonel Benjamin Tallmadge*

This able soldier, statesman, and patriot, who has received the most honorable notice in the histories of his time as a highly brave, active, and enterprising officer of the Revolution, was the second son of the Rev. Benjamin Tallmadge of Setauket, L. I., where he was born, in the house now occupied by the Rev. Zachariah Greene, February 25, 1754. He lost his mother, daughter of the Rev. John Smith of White Plains, Westchester County, at the age of fourteen years, but his father survived till the year 1786. He very early exhibited a fondness for learning, and under the tuition of his father, who was an excellent classical scholar, made such progress, that at twelve years of age he was examined by President Daggett of Yale College, then on a visit to Brookhaven, and found well qualified to enter that institution. He, however, did not enter till some years after, and graduated in 1773. Soon after, he was invited to take charge of the high school at Wethersfield, which station he held

<sup>1</sup> It is a curious fact that members of this family spell the name in three different ways, viz., Tallmadge, Talmadge and Talmage.—EDITOR.

with pleasure to himself and satisfaction to the public, until the bloody scenes of Lexington and Bunker Hill induced his entrance into the army. The legislature of Connecticut having resolved to raise their quota of troops for the campaign of 1776, he accepted a commission of lieutenant, and soon after received the appointment of adjutant in the regiment of Colonel Chester. He joined his regiment in New York in June, from which time to the end of the war he was in constant and active service. He was engaged in the battle of Long Island on the 27th of August, 1776, and was one of the rear guard when the army retired to New York from their lines at Brooklyn. Before the regiment to which he belonged was discharged, he received the appointment of captain of the first troop in the second regiment of dragoons. The commission is dated December 14, 1776. The regiment was ordered to rendezvous at Wethersfield, where the winter was occupied in preparing for the campaign of 1777. In the course of this year he received the commission of major, and was honored with the confidence of the commander-in-chief and principal officers of the army. He was in most of the general battles that took place with the main army in the northern states, at Long Island, White Plains, Brandywine, Monmouth, Germantown, and White Marsh. He opened, this year, a secret correspondence (for General Washington) with some persons in New York, and particularly with the late Abraham Woodhull of Setauket, which lasted through the war. He kept one or more boats constantly employed in crossing the Sound on this business. On Lloyd's Neck, an elevated promontory between Huntington and Oyster Bay, the enemy had established a strongly fortified post with a garrison of about 500 men. In the



rear of this fort, called Fort Franklin in honor of Governor William Franklin of New Jersey, a band of marauders had encamped themselves, who, having boats at command, were constantly plundering the inhabitants along the main shore, and robbing the small vessels in the Sound. This horde of banditti Major Tallmadge had a great desire to break up; and on the 5th of September, 1777, embarked with 130 men of his detachment, at Shippan Point, near Stamford, at eight o'clock in the evening. In about two hours they landed on Lloyd's Neck, and proceeded to the attack, which was so sudden and unexpected that nearly the whole party was captured and landed in Connecticut before morning. Not a man was lost in the enterprise. For the purpose of breaking up the whole system of intercourse between the enemy and the disaffected on the main, he was appointed to a separate command consisting of the dismounted dragoons of the regiment and a body of horse. While he was stationed near North Castle, a prisoner was brought in, calling himself *John Anderson*, who turned out to be Major André on his way to New York, after his interview, near West Point, with the infamous *General Arnold*. Of this prisoner Major Tallmadge had the custody up to the day of his execution, and walked with him to the gallows at Tappan, October 2, 1780. In November of the same year he resumed his favorite scheme of annoying the enemy on Long Island, and having obtained the most accurate information of Fort St. George, erected on a point projecting into the South Bay at Mastic, he communicated his project to the commander-in-chief, who, considering the attempt as too hazardous, desired him to abandon it. Having crossed the Sound and examined the particular condition of the post, he was

finally authorized to risk the enterprise by the following letter from Washington:

“Headquarters, November 11, 1780.

“Sir:—I have received your letter of the 7th instant. The destruction of the forage collected for the use of the British army at Corum upon Long Island, is of so much consequence, that I should advise the attempt to be made. I have written to Colonel Sheldon to furnish you a detachment of dismounted dragoons, and will commit the execution to you. If the party at Smith’s house can be attempted without frustrating the other design, or running too great a hazard, I have no objection. But you must remember that this is only a secondary object, and, in all cases, you will take the most prudent means to secure a retreat. Confiding entirely in your prudence as well as enterprize, and wishing you success,

“I am your’s, &c.,

“G. WASHINGTON.”

In pursuance of this communication, Major Tallmadge ordered the detachment to repair to Fairfield. Here being met by other troops, the party embarked the 21st of November, 1780, at four o’clock, P. M., in eight whaleboats. The whole number, including the crews of the boats, amounted to eighty men. They crossed the Sound in four hours, and landed at *Old Mans*<sup>1</sup> at nine o’clock. Among this number were Captain Caleb Brewster, Heathcote, Muirson, Benejah Strong, and Thomas Jackson, all natives of Long Island. After leaving their boats, the body of troops had marched about five miles, when, it beginning to rain, they returned, and took shelter under their boats, and lay concealed in

<sup>1</sup> Now Mt. Sinai.—EDITOR.

the bushes all that night and the next day. At evening the rain abating, the troops were again put in motion, and at three o'clock in the morning were within two miles of the fort. Here he divided his men into three parties, ordering each to attack the fort at the same time at different points. The order was so well executed that the three divisions arrived nearly at the same moment. It was a triangular enclosure of several acres, strongly stockaded, having well barricaded houses at two of the angles, and at the third a fort, with a deep ditch and wall, encircled by an abattis of sharpened pickets, projecting at an angle of forty-five degrees. The stockade was cut down, the column led through the grand parade, and in ten minutes the main fort was carried by the bayonet. The vessels near the fort, laden with stores, attempted to escape, but the guns of the fort being brought to bear upon them, they were secured and burnt, as were the works and stores. The number of prisoners was fifty-four, of whom seven were wounded. While they were marched to the boats under an escort, Major Tallmadge, proceeding with the remainder of his detachment, destroyed about 300 tons of hay collected at Corum,<sup>1</sup> and returned to the place of debarkation just as the party with the prisoners had arrived, and reached Fairfield by eleven o'clock the same evening; having accomplished the enterprise, including a trip of forty miles by land and as much by water, without the loss of a man. Congress passed a resolve complimentary to the commander and troops engaged in this expedition, which was said by them to have been planned and conducted with wisdom and great gallantry by Major Tallmadge, and executed with intrepidity and complete success by the officers and soldiers of his detach-

<sup>1</sup> Now spelled Coram.—EDITOR.

ment. The following was addressed to him by the commander-in-chief :

“ Morristown, Nov. 28, 1788.

“ Dear Sir:—I have received with much pleasure the report of your successful enterprize upon Fort George, and the vessels with stores in the bay, and was particularly well pleased with the destruction of the hay at Corum, which must, I conceive, be severely felt by the enemy at this time. I beg you to accept my thanks for your judicious planning and spirited execution of this business, and that you will offer them to the officers and men who shared the honors of the enterprize with you. The gallant behavior of Mr. Muirson gives him a fair claim to an appointment in the second regiment of dragoons, when there is a vacancy. And I have no doubt of his meeting with it accordingly, if you will make known his merit, with these sentiments in his favor. You have my free consent to reward your gallant party, with the little booty they were able to bring from the enemy’s works. Your’s, &c.,

“ G. WASHINGTON.”

During that part of the campaign of 1781 in which the main army was in Virginia, Major Tallmadge was left with the forces under General Heath in the highlands on the Hudson; still, however, holding a separate command, he moved wherever duty or a spirit of enterprize dictated. In continuation of his former design of annoying the enemy upon Long Island, he marched his detachment to Norwalk; and as Fort Slongo, at Tredwell’s Bank, near Smithtown, was possessed by a British force, he determined to destroy it. On the night of the 9th of October, 1781, he embarked a part of his troops under the command of Major Trescott, with orders to assail the fort at a particular point. At the dawn of day

the attack was made, the fortress subdued, the block-house and other combustible materials burnt, and the detachment returned in safety with their prisoners and a handsome piece of brass artillery. During the month of April preceding, Major Tallmadge had written to General Washington a letter, wherein he says: "At Lloyd's Neck, it is supposed are assembled about 800 men, chiefly refugees or deserters from our army. Of this number there may be about 450 or 500 properly armed. Their naval squadron consists of one vessel of sixteen guns, two small privateers, and a galley. About eight miles east of Lloyd's Neck, they have a post at Tredwell's Bank, of about 140 men, chiefly wood-cutters, armed. I have seen an accurate draft of this post and works." He believed that if two frigates should enter the Sound in the absence of the British fleet, and at the same time a suitable body of troops were embarked in boats, the posts might be cut off; and he offered to aid or direct an enterprise for such an object. To this proposition the commander-in-chief replied as follows:

"New Windsor, April 8, 1781.

"Sir:—The success of the supposed enterprise must depend on the absence of the British fleet, the secrecy of the attempt, and a knowledge of the exact situation of the enemy. If, after you have been at the westward, the circumstances from your intelligence shall still appear favorable, you will be at liberty to be the bearer of a letter to the Count de Rochambeau, to whose determination I have referred the matter. Yours, &c.,

"G. WASHINGTON."

Nothing more is heard of this matter till the July following, when the Count de Barras, having no employ-



ment for his squadron at Newport, detached for this service three frigates, with 250 land troops, the whole under the command of the Baron d'Angely. The detachment sailed on the 10th of July, and was joined in the Sound by several boats, with a few volunteers and pilots from Fairfield. But it was soon evident that the fort on Lloyd's Neck was much stronger than had been supposed, and not to be carried without the help of cannon, which had not been provided. The party, after a few shots from the fort, re-embarked, having two or three killed and wounded. Among those mortally wounded was Heathcote Muirson, the individual so favorably mentioned by General Washington in his letter to Major Tallmadge inserted above. He was a son of Dr. Muirson of Setauket, and had graduated at Yale College in 1776. His death, as may well be supposed, was a source of grief to all who were acquainted with his many amiable qualities.

After the affair of Fort Slongo, Major Tallmadge returned to the neighborhood of White Plains, where he found full employment in guarding the inhabitants against the refugee corps under Colonel De Lancey, and the cow-boys and skimmers who infested the lines. In the course of the ensuing winter he took his station on the Sound, and arranged another plan to beat up the enemy's quarters on Long Island; but a violent storm prevented its being carried into effect; he succeeded, however, in capturing many of the enemy's vessels engaged in illicit trade between the opposite shores, and several cargoes of valuable goods were taken and condemned. The secret correspondence conducted by Major Tallmadge, during several years, within the British lines, has been before alluded to. And when the American army was about to

enter the city of New York after the peace, he entered before it was evacuated by the British, that he might afford protection to those who were the secret friends of their country, and who otherwise would have been exposed to ill treatment, as refugees or tories. He retired from the army with the rank of colonel. He was for several years treasurer, and afterwards president, of the Cincinnati society.

In 1800 Colonel Tallmadge was chosen a representative in congress from Connecticut, having been for many years previous engaged in mercantile business in Litchfield. He was in congress during eight successive elections, a firm and judicious member of that body, and watchful of the political interests of a country, whose independence he had so nobly contributed to achieve. After sixteen years of service in the national legislature, he declined a re-election, and retired with dignity and honor to the shades of private life. He was, however, by no means an indifferent spectator of passing events, but felt truly anxious for the future glory and welfare of his country. To public objects of charity and benevolence, it has been observed he always gave largely and freely.

On the 16th of March, 1784, he married Mary, eldest daughter of General William Floyd of Long Island, who was born March 6, 1764, and had issue William Smith, who died unmarried, Henry Floyd, Maria Jones, Frederick Augustus, Benjamin, Harriet Wadsworth, and George Washington; of whom, Henry F. married Maria Canfield, daughter of the Hon. Andrew Adams of Litchfield, Conn.; Maria J. married the Hon. John P. Cushman of Troy, N. Y., one of the circuit judges of this state, who died September 16, 1848, aged sixty-four; Frederick A. married Eliza, daughter of the Hon. Jud-

son Canfield of Sharon, Conn.; Benjamin was an officer in the United States navy, and died at Gibraltar, unmarried; Harriet W. married John Delafield, Esq. of New York; and George W. married Pacera M., daughter of the Hon. Calvin Pease of Warren, Ohio.

Colonel Tallmadge lost his wife June 3, 1805, at the age of forty-one, and May 3, 1808, he married Maria, daughter of Joseph Hallet of New York, and died at Litchfield, March 7, 1835, at the age of eighty-one. His widow died September 18, 1838, aged sixty-two, having been born February 19, 1776.

His third son Frederick Augustus, bred to the bar, held the office of recorder of the city of New York from 1841 to March, 1848, and again in 1849. He was elected a representative in congress in 1846.

---

### *Floyd Family*

Richard Floyd, of a Welsh family, came to America about the middle of the seventeenth century, and took up his residence at Setauket, L. I., in 1656. Of his wife, it is only known that her name was Susanna, and that she died January, 1706, aged eighty. He was one of the original fifty-five proprietors of Brookhaven, and became the owner of a large landed estate. His death took place in 1700, and a portion of his lands is still possessed by his descendants. The number and names of his children are unknown, except that he had a son *Richard*, born May 12, 1665, who married Margaret, daughter of Colonel Matthias Nicoll, first English secretary of the colony, and sister of William, the patentee of the Islip estate. She was born May 30,

1662, and was married September 10, 1686. Her husband who inherited most of his father's wealth, was a judge of the county and colonel of militia. The death of his wife occurred February 1, 1718, and his own February 28, 1718. He left issue: 1. *Susanna*, born May 25, 1688, married Edmund Smith, and died April 12, 1729, leaving issue Edmund, Floyd, and Margaret; 2. *Margaret*, born April 25, 1690, married the Hon. John Thomas of Westchester County; 3. *Charity*, born April 6, 1692, married, first, Benjamin Nicoll, 1714, who died in 1724, leaving sons William and Benjamin, and second, Rev. Dr. Samuel Johnson of Stratford, Conn., September 26, 1725, by whom she had issue William, and William Samuel, and died June 5, 1758, the two eldest sons being educated by their stepfather, and graduated at Yale College in 1734; 4. *Unice*, born May 16, 1694, married William Stephens, of whom little is known; 5. *Ruth*, born August 6, 1699, married Walter, youngest brother of Governor Thomas Dongan, in 1723, by whom she had Richard, Thomas, and Ruth. To his said brother, Governor Dongan devised his large landed estate upon Staten Island, comprising most of the present town of Castleton. The time of her death is uncertain. Her son Thomas was a colonel in the British service, and was killed at the head of his regiment on Staten Island, August 22, 1777. Richard married Cornelia Shanks, and had Thomas, Walter, Ruth, and Sarah. The said Walter, born January 2, 1763, was living on Staten Island in 1847; 6. *Richard*, born December 29, 1703, died April 21, 1771. 7. *Nicoll* was born August 27, 1705.

*Richard* (third) inherited the paternal estate in Setauket, and like his father was both a judge and colonel

of the county. He married Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin Hutchinson. She was born March 28, 1709, married June 4, 1730, and died April 16, 1778, aged sixty-nine, having survived her husband seven years.

Their children were: 1. *Richard*, born February 26, 1731; 2. *Elizabeth*, born June 4, 1733; 3. *John*, born December 4, 1735; 4. *Margaret*, born December 3, 1738; 5. *Benjamin*, born December 4, 1740; 6. *Gilbert*, born April 21, 1743, who died April 30, 1760, ten days after graduating at Kings College; 7. *William Samuel*, born August 16, 1745, who died unmarried, October 6, 1772; 8. *Mary*, born October 29, 1748, who married William Ellison of New Windsor, and had a son Thomas; and 9. *Anne*, born March 4, 1751, who died unmarried.

*Richard* (fourth) settled upon his father's estate at Mastic, L. I., which he forfeited by his adhesion to the British cause in the Revolutionary War, having been quarter master of De Lancey's third battalion, and removed to New Brunswick in 1783, where he died 1792. His wife was Arabella, daughter of the Hon. David Jones of Queens County, who was born December 7, 1734, married November 2, 1757, and died May 29, 1785, aged fifty-one. Their children were: 1. *Elizabeth*, born August 8, 1758, married John Peter Delancey, son of Lieutenant James Delancey, September 28, 1785, and died May 7, 1820, having had sons Thomas, James, Edward, and William Heathcote (bishop of western New York), and daughters Anna, Susan, Caroline, Martha, and Maria. The said Anna married John Loudon McAdam, who became celebrated for an important discovery in road-making, for which he received £10,000 from the British government. Susan married James Fenimore Cooper, the novelist. 2. *Anne Willet*,



born August 17, 1767, married Samuel Benjamin Nicoll, December 6, 1784, and had issue Richard Floyd, William, Elizabeth Floyd, Anna Willet, Samuel Benjamin, Thomas Elbert Ellison, Maria Cortland, John Cortland, Gloriana Margaretta, and Arabella Jones Floyd. She died June 8, 1813, and her husband September 19, 1828, aged sixty-four. 3. *David Richard*, born November 14, 1764, married Sarah, daughter of Hendrick Onderdonk, September 20, 1785, and died February 10, 1826. His widow died February 29, 1844, aged eighty-five. Issue Thomas and Henry. Mr. Floyd in accordance with the will of his grandfather, and in pursuance of an act passed March 14, 1788, added the name of Jones, and this branch of the family is now known by the patronymic of Floyd-Jones. Of whom as follows:

The eldest son *Thomas Floyd-Jones*, born July 28, 1788, married Cornelia, eldest daughter of Major William Jones, who died, aged forty-three, December 29, 1839, leaving issue: David Richard, William, and Elbert. Of these David Richard married Mary L. Stanton of Albany in 1845. William married Catherine, daughter of Robert Blackwell, November 16, 1847; and Elbert married Emily, daughter of Dr. Plunkett Glentworth of Philadelphia, who died and left four children. Elbert again married Mary Caroline, daughter of Isaac Wigham, January 25, 1848. *Henry Floyd-Jones*, born January 3, 1792, married Helen, daughter of Charles Watts of New York, and had Charles W. and Henry Floyd, who was born 1820, and died February 20, 1849, aged twenty-eight. He has been a member of assembly for Queens County, a state senator and major-general of the militia of the district in which he resides.

Benjamin, son of third Richard, was born 1740, and

married Ann, daughter of Samuel Cornell of Flushing, September 15, 1767. She was born December 25, 1745, and died May 29, 1773, aged twenty-eight. He died at the age of eighty, December 27, 1820. Issue:

I. *Richard*, born December 22, 1769, married Anna, daughter of Thomas and Mary Smith in 1798, and died May 9, 1803. She died June 28, 1803, leaving Thomas S., born March 18, 1801, who married Mary, daughter of Daniel Jones, by whom he had issue Elizabeth, born July 14, 1799, who is unmarried, and Nancy, born June 27, 1803, who married Richard Brewster, March 15, 1823, and had Adeline and Harriet, the first of whom married Richard L. Brewster, September 11, 1844.

II. *Gilbert*, born July 21, 1771, married Sarah, daughter of Richard Dewick in 1808, and had: 1. Benjamin, born April 15, 1809; 2. Samuel, born January 31, 1812; 3. Margaret Ann, born October 8, 1813, who married Vincent Dickerson; 4. Gilbert, born August 23, 1815; 5. Richard, born January 7, 1816, who died August 5, 1824; 6. Sarah Hutchinson, born January 26, 1819, who married George G. Dominic; and 7. William, born January 9, 1821. Gilbert's wife died in 1821, and he married, March 21, 1824, Sarah, daughter of Abraham C. Woodhull, who died without issue by him, February 1, 1826, and he married again, September 19, 1826, Lydia, widow of Abraham Woodhull (maiden name Terry), by whom he had a son Abraham Woodhull, born in 1827. He died, aged sixty-one, July 27, 1832.

III. *Samuel*, born May 19, 1773, married his cousin Elizabeth, daughter of William Ellison, who died without issue, and secondly, June, 1817, Mary Augusta, daughter of one Van Horne, by whom he had issue two sons and one daughter.

*Nicoll*, second son of Richard second, married Tabitha, daughter of Jonathan Smith in 1730, and died, aged forty-seven, in 1752. He had issue as follows:

I. *Ruth*, born February, 1732, married Nathaniel, commonly called General Woodhull, 1761, by whom she had Nathaniel, who died young, and Elizabeth, born November 30, 1762, who married Henry Nicoll, and General John Smith, by both of whom she had issue. General Woodhull died September 21, 1776.

II. *William*, known afterwards as General Floyd, born December 17, 1734, married Isabella, daughter of William Jones, by whom he had Nicoll, Mary, and Catherine, and, secondly, Joanna, daughter of Benajah Strong, by whom he had issue Ann and Eliza. He died at Westernville, Oneida County, August 4, 1821, aged eighty-seven, and his widow, November 24, 1826, aged seventy-six. His early education was less extensive than might have been expected from the wealth and ability of his father. His natural intelligence was great, and his moral character elevated. His academic course was hardly closed, when the death of his parent made it necessary for him to take charge of his patrimonial estate. His sound mind, disciplined and enlightened by the moderate education he had received—his friendly disposition, his kindness and affability, all united in rendering him popular in the community where he lived, and at an early age made him a leading man among his fellow citizens. His fidelity in the execution of minor offices imposed upon him induced his promotion to others of more importance, and eventually to some of the highest places of political trust and confidence. He was early chosen an officer in the militia of Suffolk County, and rose finally to the rank of major general.

At an early period of the controversy between Great Britain and her colonies, the feelings of General Floyd were strongly enlisted on the side of the people, and he entered with zeal into every measure calculated to ensure their rights and liberties. These feelings, on his part, excited a correspondent sympathy on the part of the people, and led to his subsequent appointment to the first continental congress, which met at Philadelphia September 5, 1774, and he most heartily concurred in all measures adopted by that body. It may indeed be questioned whether any deliberative assembly of men collected, as the first continental congress was, from different provinces, trained up under local governments, somewhat different, placed in such a situation, under such trying circumstances, called to act not only for the living, but for posterity, almost without the lights of experience to guide them—ever evinced more consummate wisdom, prudence, and sound discretion, than the first American continental congress of 1774.

Of this extraordinary body of patriots General Floyd was one. On the journals of 1775 are recorded the numerous committees on which he served, and the important services which his intelligent and active habits enabled him to render, to promote the common cause. Few of the leading patriots of the Revolution suffered more severely than he. His mansion house and farm were exposed to the enemy during their possession of Long Island, and his family was of course exiled from their home and property. The produce and stock of his estate were seized to furnish provisions for the British army, his woods cut down, for their use, and his dwelling used as a rendezvous for a party of horse. Thus for seven years he derived no benefit from his lands, while he and

his family were driven to find shelter and safety in Connecticut. When again allowed to return to his home, he found it, as might have been expected, in a state of dilapidation and ruin. The naked soil was nearly all that remained without bearing marks of destruction.

General Floyd was one of that immortal band of patriots, who, on the 4th of July, 1776, signed and published to the world the great charter of American Independence. In 1777 he was elected a senator, and on the 7th of November of that year took his seat in the first constitutional legislature of this state. On the 15th of October, 1778, he was appointed by the legislature a member of congress, and was reappointed the 14th of October, 1779, in conjunction with his brother-in-law, Ezra L'Hommedieu and John Sloss Hobart. On the adoption of the federal constitution in 1788, and when the government was to be newly organized, he was returned a member of the first congress convened in New York, March 4, 1789, when General Washington was inaugurated President of the United States. In 1784 he purchased a tract of land (now of great value) on the Mohawk River, then in a state of nature, without inhabitants or culture. In 1795 he was a candidate for lieutenant governor as the opponent of Stephen Van Rensselaer. Being now free from public life, he undertook to improve his land, and removed to it with his family in 1803. In 1800 he was chosen one of the electors of president and vice president of the United States, and deposited his vote for the republican candidates, Jefferson and Burr,—and in 1801 had also been a delegate from Long Island to the convention called to revise the state constitution. He afterwards served repeatedly as presidential elector, and for the last time in



1820. He continued to enjoy very unusual health till near the close of life, and the faculties of his mind remained unimpaired to the last. In his person, he was of middle stature, and possessed a natural dignity, which seldom failed to impress those with whom he associated. He was eminently a practical man, without ostentation or vanity. When his plans were once formed, he found no reason to alter them; and his firmness and resolution were seldom equalled. In his political character there was much to admire. Uniform and independent, his views were his own, and his opinions the result of reason and reflection. If the public estimation of a man be a just criterion by which to judge, General Floyd was excelled by few of his contemporaries; since, for more than fifty years, he was honored by his fellow citizens with offices of trust and responsibility.

III. *Tabitha*, born January 12, 1735, married Daniel Smith, January 18, 1769, and had Elizabeth, born December 14, 1770, who died March 4, 1789, and Hannah, born November 8, 1776, who died April 26, 1781. He died September 16, 1795, and she married Daniel Reeve, February 14, 1800, and died September, 1812, without issue surviving her.

IV. *Nicoll*, born 1737.

V. *Charles*, born February 4, 1739, married Margaret, daughter of John Thomas, June 3, 1761, and died September 27, 1774, aged thirty-six, and his widow, born August 1, 1739, died December 2, 1794 (having married again, one John Wright, by whom she had no issue). Mr. Floyd had children Glorina, born July 10, 1762; Thomas, born August 18, 1763; John, born February 2, 1764; and Abigail, born July 19, 1767.

VI. *Charity*, born January 20, 1739, married Ezra

L'Hommedieu, December 21, 1756, and died without issue July 31, 1785.

VII. *Mary*, born in 1743, married Edmund Smith.

VIII. *Catherine*, born May 9, 1746, married General Thomas of Westchester County, 1770, who was born June 17, 1745, and died May 29, 1824, and she, January 15, 1825, aged seventy-eight. Issue: Gloriana, born December 9, 1772, who died December 1, 1778; Catherine, born August 9, 1774, who died in 1795, aged twenty-one; Nancy, born 1776, who died February 1, 1795, aged nineteen; and Charles Floyd, born 1778, who died, aged twenty-four, January 2, 1802.

IX. *Ann*, born August 1, 1748, married Hugh Smith.

Issue of General William and Isabella Floyd:

1. *Nicoll*, born October 4, 1762, married Phebe, daughter of David Gelston, October 10, 1789, and had Augustus, born November 28, 1796; William, born in 1790; John Gelston, born in 1806, married Sarah, daughter of General Joseph Kirkland of Utica; David Gelston, born May 1, 1802, married Lydia, daughter of William Smith, July 31, 1845; Mary, born in 1799, married John Ireland of New York; and Julia, born July 4, 1808, married Dr. Edward Delafield. January 31, 1839; Kitty, born in 1792, died young, and Katherine was born in 1804. Mrs. Floyd died March 2, 1811.
2. *Mary*, born March 6, 1764, married Colonel Benjamin Tallmadge, March 16, 1784, and died June 3, 1805, leaving William Smith, Henry Floyd, Maria Jones, Frederick Augustus, Benjamin, Harriet Wadsworth, and George Washington. Her husband died, aged eighty one, March 7, 1835.
3. *Catherine* married Samuel Clarkson, and had a daugh-

ter, who married William B. Crosby, and a son, Samuel Floyd Clarkson, a lawyer of New York.

Issue of General Floyd by his second wife, Joanna Strong:

4. *Ann* married, first, George W. Clinton, September 19, 1808, son of the late Vice-President of the United States, by whom she had a son George Washington, and second, Abraham Varick, by whom she had Antoinette, Richard Floyd, and Julia Clinton.
5. *Eliza* married James Platt of Utica, and died December 17, 1820, leaving issue, one of which, the late William Floyd Platt, was born in 1815, married Catherine, daughter of Henry Livingston Woolsey, and died April 14, 1844, aged twenty-nine, leaving a son. Issue of Charles and Margaret Floyd:
  1. *Gloriana*, born 1762, married William Hopson, and died November 22, 1848, aged eighty-six.
  2. *Thomas* married Katherine, daughter of Ebenezer Jones, and died, leaving issue Charles.
  3. *John* married, first, Sarah, daughter of Colonel Jesse Woodhull, February 8, 1785; she was born September 9, 1763, and died May 10, 1789; second, Elizabeth, daughter of Benjamin Blydenburgh, 16th of March, 1790. She was born 1761, and died May 6, 1812. He died April 17, 1826, leaving issue by his first wife, Jesse Woodhull and Sarah Woodhull, and by his second wife, Charles Alfred, Elizabeth, Almy, and Richard Franklin, of whom *Jesse W.*, born March 12, 1787, married Miama, daughter of John Shepherd, May 29, 1811, and had Elizabeth A., who married Charles W. Doane, May 25, 1845; John; Richard; Franklin; Floyd; Sarah Woodhull; and Julia, who died September 11, 1840, aged nineteen. *Sarah W.*, born

May 8, 1789, married Nathaniel Smith in 1807, and had Nathaniel, Joel L. Griffing, Edmund Thomas, and Sarah Renelche, who died in 1841. *Charles Alfred*, born May 12, 1791, married Sophia, daughter of Goldsmith Davis, and had Edward and Sophia (Edward married Antoinette, daughter of Walter Ireland). *Elizabeth*, born November 9, 1792, married Allison Post, who died March 16, 1848, aged sixty-nine. *Almy*, born in 1794, married Joel Post, April 24, 1820, and died November 3, 1843, aged forty-nine. *Richard Franklin*, born August 19, 1795, became a physician, and died at Benton, Miss., aged thirty-eight, October 3, 1833.

4. *Abigail*, youngest child of Charles and Margaret Floyd, married William Post, and had a daughter who married George W. Brown.

To this brief notice we may be permitted to add, that among those who composed the English Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in New England, 1649, sixteen in number, five had been residents of New England, of whom, says the editor of *Morton's Memorial*, Richard Floyd was one. From this observation of the learned editor, supported, doubtless, by good authority, it would seem that the first named Richard Floyd had been in this country, previous to his settlement in 1656, and perhaps visited Long Island, resolving to return with his family and settle upon it. Hutchinson, in his *History of Massachusetts*, says that Richard Floyd was treasurer of the corporation created by the British parliament in 1650, to raise funds for propagating the gospel among the American Indians. It is also affirmed upon authority of English books of Heraldry, that the names of *Floyd* and *Lloyd* are identical with the Welsh

people, both having the same arms and crest. If this be true, it is a matter of some curiosity, as well as interest to the descendants of these families.

---

*Rev. John Youngs and his Descendants*

Rev. John Youngs, first minister of Southold, L. I., was born in England 1597, had preached a while at Hingham, came with his wife Mary and some of his church to New Haven in 1640, and the same year to Southold, where he died, aged seventy-four, in 1672. His descendants are numerous, but of many of them no very satisfactory account has been obtained. He had John, Thomas, Gideon, Benjamin, and several daughters.

*John*, the eldest, was well educated, and held important offices, both civil and military, and was both sheriff and colonel of the county. He had a son Zerubbabel, father of John, whose son Thomas died at Southold, February 19, 1793, aged seventy-five, and had issue: *Hannah*, who married Absalom K. Rackett; *Thomas*, who married Lydia, daughter of John Tuthill; *Joshua*, who married Sarah Tuthill; *Mary*, who married Eliphalet Wardsworth of Farmington, Conn., June 17, 1794; *Rhoda*, who married James Brown; *Jemima*, who married John Ayres of Saybrook, Conn., and *Benjamin*, who married Phila Wheaton.

The said Thomas and Lydia had *Thomas*, *Joshua*, *John*, *Lydia*, who married Rev. Ezra King in 1811, and died September 10, 1816; *Rhoda*, who married Jane Wiggins; *Benjamin Franklin*, who married Sarah Wiggins; *Ezra*, who married Mary C., daughter of Samuel B. Nicoll; and *Jacob*.



The said Hannah and Absalom K. Rackett, had Absalom, Thomas, Vincent, Hazard, and Joshua Youngs, who married Louisa Lay of Lyme, Conn., and had Louisa, wife of Francis Clark of Cincinnati, Ohio.

*Thomas*, second son of Rev. Mr. Youngs, born in England 1627, came with his father to Southold 1640, married Rebecca, daughter of Thomas Mapes, and removed to Oyster Bay in 1654. By his said wife he had daughters, but no son. He married, secondly, Sarah, daughter of John Frost in 1658, and had Thomas and Hannah. He died 1689. His son Thomas, born 1660, inherited his estate, and married Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel Weekes, by whom he had Samuel, Jacob, Richard, Jonas, and several daughters. His death occurred 1720. Samuel, born 1680, married Penelope Allen, and had Thomas, Daniel, and Roxana. He died in 1750. He carried on the business of farming and rope-making, and the place where he conducted the latter is still known as "Ropemaker's Hollow." His son Thomas, born 1716, married Mary, daughter of Thomas Caldwell, by whom he had no issue. Thomas's brother Daniel, born 1718, married Hannah, daughter of Peter Underhill, and had Daniel, Samuel, and Penelope. By his second wife Hannah, widow of Samuel McCoun, and daughter of Rev. Benjamin Woolsey, he had no issue. He died 1784. His sister Roxana married George Townsend and had issue Samuel, John, Thomas, Richard, George, Temperance, Mary, and Phebe.

Daniel, son of Daniel and Hannah, born January 21, 1748, married Susan, daughter of Timothy Kelsey of Huntington, L. I., had Hannah, Keziah, Samuel, and Daniel, and died November, 1809. His widow survived him almost forty years, and died, aged ninety-four, Sep-

tember 22, 1847. She had a very distinct recollection of General Washington, whom she had the pleasure to entertain at her house, during his tour through Long Island in 1789. Their eldest daughter Hannah married Joseph Townsend, February, 1786, and had Judith, James, Daniel, and Mary Ann. Keziah, the youngest daughter of Daniel, born December 12, 1773, married Major William Jones, and died May 1, 1847, aged seventy-three. Issue *Samuel W.*; *David W.*; *Cornelia*, who married Thomas Floyd-Jones; *Susan*, who married James H. Weekes; *Eleanor*, who married William Sidney Smith; *Hannah*, who married Rev. Samuel Seabury; and *Daniel Youngs*.

Samuel, son of Daniel and Susan, born April 1, 1777, married Hannah, daughter of John Fleet, February, 1800, and had Margery (who married Elbert H. Jones, and has several children). He married again, February, 1815, Phebe, daughter of James Reynolds, and had David J. (who married, June 6, 1847, Cornelia, daughter of Dr. James C. Townsend), and Hannah.

Samuel, son of Daniel and Hannah, born November 5, 1753, married Rebecca, daughter of John Brush of Huntington, and had Elizabeth, Thomas, John, Penelope, Mary (died February 3, 1810, aged twenty-five), Harry, Daniel, Hannah, and Frances. He represented the county in the assembly in 1794, and died November 2, 1797. His sister Penelope married Nathaniel Williams of Huntington, and had a son Richard Montgomery Williams, afterwards judge of Wayne County.

Daniel, son of Daniel and Susan, born December 13, 1783, married Maria, daughter of John Baker, and had Daniel, William, Thomas, and Susan.

Elizabeth, daughter of Samuel and Rebecca, born Janu-

ary 23, 1773, married Wright Coles, and had Samuel, Hannah, Elias, John, Mary, and William. She died October, 1813.

Thomas, son of Samuel and Rebecca, born April 10, 1775, married Catherine, daughter of Dr. Christian Tobias of Dutchess County, and had *Rebecca E.* (who married Daniel Fleet, October 28, 1846), Samuel, Thomas, Henry, Daniel, and Alfred. He died December 3, 1815, and his widow married Daniel Youngs, who was born January 6, 1791, and died September 29, 1830, and had *Catherine M.* (who died unmarried, aged twenty-seven, May 9, 1845); *Anna* (who married William Sidney McCoun); and *Edward*.

Penelope, daughter of Samuel and Rebecca, born 1782, married John Ludlum, and had Elizabeth, Thomas, Mary, Samuel, Adeline, and Frances, and died January 30, 1824.

*Gideon*, third son of Rev. Mr. Youngs, was born 1638, and died December 1, 1699. He became the owner of a large and valuable real estate in Southold, in which was an island, called Gideon's Island, which by the accumulation of sand and other materials, is now connected with the mainland of Oyster Ponds.<sup>1</sup> On this may still be discerned the remains of an ancient fort erected doubtless by the Indians. He left Gideon and Jonathan. The said Gideon, born 1663, died, aged seventy-six, in 1749. By his first wife Eunice, he had Ezekiel, who died May 13, 1727, and she died May 6, 1725. By his second wife Rachel, daughter of Jonathan Rackett, whom he married, 1730, he had Gideon; Michael, who married Nathaniel Tuthill; and Experience, who married Nathaniel King. Gideon had *Henry*, *Reuben*,

<sup>1</sup> Now Orient.—EDITOR.

*Silas, Abimal, Gideon, and Walter*, the first four of whom removed to Orange County, and settled at or near Goshen. The said Silas was by trade a carpenter, and after his removal to Goshen, received of Vincent Matthews 550 acres of land as the price of erecting a barn, of which he conveyed to his brother Reuben 100 acres. He had by his wife Martha: Silas, Abimal, and Rhoda. Of these Abimal married Mary Harlow (widow of Jonathan Tuthill), and had Sarah Ann, Elmer, Silas, and Mary. His daughter Mary married William B. Tuthill, whose mother was a daughter of Judge Bodle. Henry, son of Gideon, left issue Henry and Birdseye, the first of whom married Abigail, daughter of Barnabas Horton, and left issue Henry and Eunice.

Henry, son of Henry and Abigail, married Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Phineas Rumsey, and died, leaving issue Henry, Hiram, Oliver, Mary, Julian, and Eunice. Of these Henry and Hiram have been settled as merchants in the city of New York many years. Birdseye married Rachel, daughter of Selah Strong, and had Isaac (who married Anna Brooks) and Birdseye (who married Elizabeth, daughter of Captain Phineas Heard, and died, leaving two daughters).

*Benjamin*, youngest son of Rev. Mr. Youngs, had Thomas, Grover, Experience (who married Rev. Ebenezer Prime); and Mary, who married Robert Hempstead, and had Abigail, who married, first, John Ledyard, by whom she had John, Youngs, and William. He died and she married as second wife Dr. Micah Moore, January 6, 1765, by whom she had Juliana, born August 17, 1767, and Phebe, born November 5, 1769. The eldest daughter married Jonathan Landon, and the youngest Matthias Case, November, 1788, by whom she had

Jerusha, Hutchinson H., Maria, who married Joseph H. Goldsmith, Esq., and Albert G. Case. The said John Ledyard was the father of the celebrated traveller, who died at Grand Cairo, 1788. Youngs was the father of the late Dr. Isaac Ledyard, and William, the ever brave, but unfortunate defender of Fort Griswold, who was so basely murdered by the enemy under Lieutenant Colonel Eyre, September 6, 1781. David, another son of Benjamin, born 1719, became a clergyman, and succeeded the Rev. George Phillips at Setauket. He graduated at Yale College 1741, settled in Setauket 1745, and died in 1753, at the age of thirty-four years.

---

*Of the Descendants of Major Richard Smith, commonly called "Bull Smith"*

Richard Smith, patentee of Smithtown, came from England with Richard his father, to New England, in the early part of the seventeenth century, where he married his first wife Sarah, by whom he had issue Jonathan, Obadiah, Richard 2d, Job, Adam, Samuel, Daniel, Elizabeth, and Deborah. Jonathan married Sarah Brewster; issue, Jonathan and Deborah; Obadiah was drowned 1680, and, it is supposed, was the first white person buried in the town of Smithtown; Richard married Hannah Tooker, June 20, 1670, and died 1720; issue, Nathaniel, Richard 3d, Ebenezer, Hannah, and Sarah; Job married Elizabeth Thompson; issue, Job 2d, St. Richard, Timothy, Aaron, James, Joseph, and Elizabeth; Adam married Elizabeth Brown; issue, Edmund 1st; Samuel married Hannah Longbotham; issue, Obediah 2d, Richard



(Quaker), Mary, Phebe, Anna, and Hannah; Daniel married Ruth Tooker; issue, Obadiah 3d, Daniel 2d, and Deborah; married again Mary Hilton; issue, Solomon, Lorinda, Mary, and Sarah; Elizabeth married Captain William Lawrence (1664); issue, Mary, Thomas, Joseph, Richard, Samuel, Sarah, and James Lawrence; again 1680 married Captain Philip Carteret, governor of New Jersey, by whom she had no issue; Deborah married Major William Lawrence 1680, and died 1743; issue, William, Richard, Obadiah, Daniel, Samuel, John, Adam, Stephen, Joshua 1st, Caleb, Deborah, Sarah, and Elizabeth Lawrence.

Jonathan 2d, son of Jonathan 1st, married Elizabeth Platt; issue, Platt, Tabitha, and Ruth. His sister Deborah married Joseph Blydenburgh; issue, Richard and Sylvester. Nathaniel, son of Richard 2d, married Hannah Howell; issue, Josiah, William, Phebe, Mary, and Prudence. Richard 3d, son of Richard 2d, married Anna Sears; issue, Elisha, Isaac, Martha, Hannah, Charity, Juliana, and Phebe. Ebenezer 1st, son of Richard 2d, married Anna, daughter of Job 2d; died 1747; issue, Richard Phineas 1st, Temperance, Hannah, and Ann. She next married Zepheniah Platt; issue, Jeremiah, Daniel, and Dorothy Platt. The last named Temperance married Jonas Platt; issue, Ebenezer, Richard, Zepheniah, Charity, and Elizabeth, the latter of whom married Rev. David S. Bogart. Hannah, sister of Temperance, married Joshua Smith 2d; issue, Joshua 3d, Ebenezer 2d, Dan. E., Nancy, Deborah, and Hannah; Ann, sister of Hannah, married William Dodge; issue, John, Richard, and Sarah. Hannah, daughter of Richard 2d, married James Fanning; issue, James, Thomas, Phineas, Edmund, Catherine, Sarah, and Nancy; her sister Sarah married

Nathaniel Woodhull; issue, Nathaniel (General), Richard, Jesse, Ebenezer, Dorothy, Ruth, Sarah, Temperance, Juliana, and Deborah. Job 2d married Dorothy Woodhull (just named); issue, Job 3d, Epenetus, Nicholas, Nathaniel 2d, Charity, George, Ebenezer 2d, Charles, Woodhull, Anne, Elizabeth. St. Richard married Elizabeth Brush; issue, Lemuel, Sybia, and Mary. Timothy, son of Job 1st, married Patience Thompson; issue, Timothy 2d, Israel, James, Gamaliel, William, Ann, Mary, and Sarah. Aaron, son of Job 1st, married Seviah, daughter of James Sands; issue, Othniel, Abigail, Sands, Jessie, Abner, Sarah, and Seviah. James, son of Job 1st, married Jerusha Topping; issue, Matthew, Ezekiel, Austin, Nathaniel, Francis, Eunice, Keturah, Temperance, and Jerusha. Joseph, son of Job 1st, married Mary Aldrich; issue, Joseph, David, Stephen, Gershom, Gilbert, Rhuhamah, Jane, Mary, and Mehetabel. Elizabeth, daughter of Job 1st, married William Taylor. Edmund, son of Adam 1st, married Susannah, daughter of Richard Floyd; issue, Edmund, Floyd, and Margaret; the last named married Richard Woodhull; issue, Susannah, Richard, Mary, Adam, and Abraham (judge). His second wife was Mary, daughter of Henry Smith; issue, Adam 2d, Thomas, and Ann, the last of whom married Obadiah Smith 3d. Obadiah 2d married Susannah Stephens; issue, Obadiah 3d, Stephens, Philetus, William, Elizabeth, Sarah, and Susanna. Richard (Quaker), married Elizabeth Talman; issue, Gilbert, Talman, Richard, Mary, and Elizabeth. His sister Mary married James Smith (from England); issue, Samuel; again married Thomas Liscomb; issue, Thomas, Tabitha, and Sarah; again married Jacob Munsell; issue, Jacob and Alexander. Her sister Phebe married Nathaniel Brewster; issue, Nathaniel, Henry,

Timothy, and Ruth. Her sister Hannah married John Stratton; issue, Smith (who became a minister). Her sister Ann married Zephaniah Platt; issue, Nathaniel, Obadiah, Richard, Mary, and Phebe. Daniel 2d married Hannah, daughter of Benjamin Brewster; issue, Daniel 3d, Obadiah 4th, Caleb, Joshua 2d, Micah, Ruth, Deborah, and Mary; he died January 13, 1763, aged seventy-three. Deborah, daughter of Daniel 1st, married Thomas Rutyard; issue, Thomas, John, Daniel, William, Mary, Margaret, and Ruth. Solomon, son of Daniel 1st, married Hannah Conklin; issue, Jacob, Jeffrey, Phebe, Margaret, Ruth, Hannah, Mary, Sarah, Elizabeth, Deborah, and Theodosia. Of these Phebe married Platt Carle; Margaret married Nathaniel Smith 3d; Ruth married William Cornwall; Hannah married Alexander Fleet; Elizabeth married Thomas Betts, of Norwalk; Deborah married William Haviland; and Theodosia married Benjamin Hutchinson. Lorinda, daughter of Daniel 1st, married Thomas Stedman; issue, Daniel, John, and Mary; her sister Mary married Obediah Smith 2d, and afterwards Zebulon Bunce, by whom she had issue Obadiah and Lemuel. Platt, son of Jonathan 2d, married Mary Woolsey; issue, Elizabeth and Abigail. His sister Tabitha married Nicoll Floyd; issue, William, Nicoll, Charles, Catharine, Ann, Ruth, Tabitha, Mary, and Charity. Her sister Ruth married Henry S. Smith; issue, Charles, Jeffrey, Brewster, James, Elizabeth, and Martha. Josiah, son of Nathaniel 1st, married Ann Gelston; issue, Hugh, Oliver, Mary, Hannah (married Pelletreau), Jane (married Fanning), and Julia (married Cromline). William, his brother, married Mary Howell; issue, Mary. His sister Phebe married Platt Conklin; issue, Nathaniel. Prudence, another sister, married Jeffrey Smith, son of Solomon 2d;

issue, Nathaniel 4th, Solomon 3d, and Abraham. Of these, the first married Phebe, daughter of Derick M'Coun; issue, George, Francis, Mary, Elizabeth, and Phebe. Solomon 2d married Ann, daughter of Vincent Jones; issue, Vincent and Catharine; and Abraham married first, Ann Bunce; issue, Elbert, Jeffrey, Edmund, Mary, Martha, and Prudence; and second, Mary, daughter of Isaac Smith, and widow of Robert De Grove. Mary, daughter of Nathaniel 1st, married Colonel Abraham Gardiner; issue, Nathaniel (Doctor), Abraham, Samuel, Mary, Rachel, and Phebe. Nancy, daughter of Richard 3d, married Abner Smith; issue, Elisha, Hannah (married Barney Reeves), Nancy, and Julia. Her sister Sarah married Rev. Naphthali Daggett (afterwards President of Yale College); issue, Mary, who married Robert Platt. Her brother Isaac married Margaret Field; issue, Richard (Shell Dick) and Mary. His sister Martha married John Adams; issue, James and Betsy. Her sister Juliana married Joseph Bryant; issue, Joseph, Richard, Julia (married Richard Smith). Phebe, another sister, married Nathaniel Platt; issue, Isaac, Nathaniel, Hannah, Phebe, and Maria.

Richard 4th married Sarah, daughter of Edmund Smith, and died April 9, 1812; issue, Richard, Edmund, Woodhull, Phineas, Abigail, Nathaniel, Dorothy, Ebenezer, Ann, and Thomas. Of these, Richard married Eliza W., daughter of Henry Nicoll; Edmund married Sarah, daughter of Richard Woodhull 5th; Woodhull married Sarah Rogers; Phineas married first, Mary Carle, and second, Sarah Whitman; issue, a daughter; Abigail married Henry Rogers; Nathaniel married Sarah W., daughter of General John Floyd; Dorothy married Isaac Platt, and died February 7, 1822; Ebenezer mar-



ried Ann, daughter of Timothy Carle, and Ann married Isaac Pierson.

Ebenezer, son of Job 2d, married Hannah, daughter of Stephen Woodhull; issue, Susan (married Isaac Blydenburgh) and Elizabeth (married Benj. B. Blydenburgh; issue, Hamilton and Brewster); she died in September, 1842. His brother Charles married Rachel Hubbard; issue, Henry, Job 3d, John, Charlotte, Esther, Ruth, Rachel, and Elizabeth. George, another brother, married Lucy Beers; issue Henry and Lucy. His brother, Nicholas, married Mary Skidmore; issue, Halsy, Triphena, Olivia, and Dorothy. His brother, Woodhull, married Dorothy Smith; issue, Josiah, Ruth, Susan, and Mary. His sister, Charity, married Edmund Smith; issue, Edmund and Susanna, who married Micah Smith. Elizabeth, her sister, married Daniel Smith 3d. Her brother, Epenetus, married Deborah, daughter of Joshua Smith 2d; issue, Moses, Isaac, Epenetus, Temperance, who married Edmund Smith, Rachel, who married Jonas Mills; issue, Epenetus, Mary (married Isaac Arthur);—he again married Mary Blydenburgh; issue, Samuel and Deborah. Nathaniel, son of Job 2d, married Margaret, daughter of Solomon 1st; issue, Jacob (married Jerusha Smith), Elkanah (married Mary Arthur), Ruth (married Joshua Smith), Dorothy (married John Smith), and Sarah (married Ebenezer Bryant); Moses, son of Epenetus, married Mary Ives; issue, Daniel, Thomas, Lewis, Eliphalet, and Hannah. Epenetus, son of Epenetus, married Rhoda Oakley, and died May, 1832; issue, Samuel A., Ralph, a minister, John, Matilda, Julia, Phebe, and Caroline. His brother, John, married Dorothy, daughter of Nathaniel Smith, and died February, 1832; issue, Nathaniel, Moses, Conklin, Isaac,



Epenetus, Margaret, Deborah, Sarah, Mary, Temperance, and Hannah. Caleb, son of Daniel 2d, married Martha Smith; issue, Paul, Caleb, and Martha; of these Paul married Elizabeth, daughter of Theodorus Van Wyck; issue, Caleb, Theodorus, Richard, William, Samuel, Jane, Melly, and Sarah; Caleb married Elizabeth, daughter of Aaron Smith, and died December, 1831; issue, Caleb (married Harriet, daughter of Samuel Baylis), Martha (married Thomas H. Mills), Sarah (married Ebenezer Smith), and Elizabeth (married Richard Blydenburgh). Joshua, son of Joshua 2d, married, first, Almy Blydenburgh, second, Ruth Smith; issue, Ebenezer and Ruth, third Deborah, daughter of Epenetus; issue, Joshua B., Hannah, and Almy. His brother, Daniel E., married Susan, daughter of William Mitchell; issue, William, George, Daniel, Jane, and Augusta. Samuel, son of Epenetus, married Phebe Wheeler; issue, Albert, Isaac, Tredwell, Chatfield, Maria, Sarah, Deborah, Eliza, and Phebe. Joseph, son of Joseph, married Sarah Saxton; issue, Eliphalet, Joseph, William, Daniel, Selah, Catharine, Rhuhamah, and Sarah. Of these, Eliphalet married Sarah, daughter of Benjamin Hawkins; issue, Havens, Selah, Thomas, Scudder, George, Juliana, and Martha. Joseph married Catharine Havens; issue, Havens, John, Samuel, and Fanny. Stephen, son of Joseph, married Sarah, daughter of Samuel Smith; issue, Peter, who had issue, James and Isaac. His brother, Gersham, married Hannah Burtis; issue, Gershom and Fordham. Ezekiel, son of James, had issue, James, Charles, Ezekiel, and William; of these, James had issue, James, George, Vincent, Richard, Samuel, Mary, and Elizabeth. His brother, Ezekiel, had issue, Ezekiel, Phebe, Keturah, Sarah, Sophia, and Elizabeth. His

brother, William, married Sophia, daughter of Benjamin Hawkins, and had issue, Benjamin. Philetus, son of Samuel, married Phebe, daughter of Timothy Tredwell; issue, Tredwell, Alexander, Elias, Hannah (married William Smith), and Phebe. Elias, son of Philetus died in 1839; issue, Joseph W. (married Miss Lamberson, and died May 8, 1839); Phebe (married Leonard W. Lawrence), Amelia (married Jeremiah Platt), and Sarah Maria (married Dr. Josiah Bowers). Floyd, son of Edmund, married Clarissa Helme; issue, Jesse, Charity, and Temperance; of these, Jesse married Charity Smith; issue, Adam, Jesse, Clarissa, and Julia. His sisters married successively, John Bailey. Thomas, brother of Floyd, married Mary, daughter of Jonathan Thompson; issue, Anna, who married Richard Floyd. Edmund, son of Edmund, married Dorothy, daughter of 2d Richard Woodhull; issue, Edmund and Susan, and by his second wife, Temperance Smith, he had issue, Nathaniel (married Renelche Woodhull), Sarah (married Richard Smith), and Charity. Obediah, son of Daniel 2d, married Anne, daughter of Edmund 1st; issue, Daniel, Adam, Mary, and Ruth; of these, Adam married Charity, daughter of Thomas Rudyard; issue, Daniel, Thomas, Lyman Beecher, Alanson, Charity, Anne, and Abigail; Mary married Abraham Woodhull; issue, Elizabeth, Mary, and Jesse; Ruth married Timothy Carle; issue, Selah Smith, Elizabeth, and Anne. Othniel, son of Aaron 1st, married Deliverance Longbotham; issue, Jacob, Abner, Abijah, Sophia, Mary, Jemima, Sarah, and Hannah, who married Daniel Rose. His brother, Jesse, married Charity Willets; issue, Adam, Jesse, Clarissa, and Julia. His brother, Aaron 2d, married Sarah, daughter of Stephen Smith; issue, Jeremiah, Platt, Eliza-

beth, who married Caleb Smith, Sarah, who married John Vail; issue, Aaron, Harvey, Edward, Jeremiah, Elizabeth, who married Charles Little, Sarah, who married Edward Gould, and Mary, who married Nathaniel Smith. The said Harvey Vail married first, Elizabeth, daughter of John S. Mount, Esq., and second, Ann, daughter of Dr. Richard Udall.

Micah, son of Daniel 2d, married Susan Smith; issue, Micah, Jonas, Charity, and Dorothy; of these, Micah married Elizabeth, daughter of Moses Smith; issue, Hezekiah, Cornelia, Elbert, Maria, Daniel, Douglass, and Moses. Jonas married Mary Hubbs; issue, Jonas, Carleton, Ebenezer, Edmund, Emmet, Elmira, Elizabeth, Ann, and Antionette. Issue of Richard 5th and Eliza W. Nicoll, Edward Henry, John Lawrence, Ann Eliza, Sarah Elizabeth, Marcia, and Charlotte. Issue of his brother, Woodhull, Elizabeth, Charity, Dorothy, Renelche, Edmund, Elizabeth 2d, and Julia Ann. Issue of his brother Phineas, Mary. Issue of his brother Nathaniel, Nathaniel, Joel Griffing, Edmund, and Sarah Renelche, deceased. Issue of his brother Ebenezer, Timothy, Richard, and Ann, who married Hamilton Blydenburgh. Seviah, daughter of Aaron 1st, married Timothy Smith; issue, Daniel, Jedediah, Elijah, Isaac, Ruth, Amos, Richard, and Sarah; of these, the first married Sarah Norton. Ruth married Dr. Samuel Thompson, as second wife, Amos married Ruth Bennet, Richard married Sarah Davis, and Sarah married Colonel Isaac Satterly, as second wife. Samuel, son of Obediah, married Susan Blydenburgh; issue, Samuel Prior, Thomas, and Mary; the first of these married a daughter of Thomas Blydenburgh, and the last married Ebenezer Smith. David, brother of Samuel, married Martha, daughter of Jonas Mills; issue,

Jonas Mills, Obadiah, Ebenezer, and Willis. His brother, Lucius, married Dorcas Gildersleeve; issue, Rebecca, Charity, Hannah, Esther, and Moses; of these, Rebecca married Obadiah Smith, Charity married Henry Brush, Hannah married Platt Vail, Esther married Rowland Seaman, and Moses married Kesia Stage.

William, son of Joseph, married Charity Smith; issue, Nathan, Temperance, and Charity. His brother, Daniel, married Hannah Satterly; issue, Jonas. Jacob, son of Nathaniel, married Jerusha Smith; issue, Ebenezer, Isaac, Nathaniel, Harry, Elkanah, Hannah, Caroline, and Maria. Mary, daughter of Epenetus, married Isaac Arthur; issue, John, Elbert, Isaac, Harriet, Deborah, Ann, Elizabeth, and Mary. Merrit, son of Clement, married Abigail Howland; issue, Cadwallader, Howland, William, Caleb, Elizabeth, Martha, Nancy, and Abigail.

---

*Of the Descendants of Richard Woodhull, who settled on  
Long Island in 1656.*

The family from whom this gentleman was descended, is said to be very ancient, and may be traced to an individual who came from Normandy into England with William the Conqueror in 1066. The name was originally written Wodhull, and continued to be so spelled, for many years after the arrival of the family in this country.

Richard, the common ancestor in America, was born at Thenford, Northamptonshire, England, September 13, 1620. The precise time of his arrival upon this continent is not known, but it must have been as early as 1648. The name of his wife was Deborah. His zeal in the cause of

English liberty during the Protectorate, and the danger reasonably to be apprehended upon the restoration of the monarchy, probably induced him to leave Europe, and seek an asylum in a distant country.

He is first known in the town of Jamaica, L. I., where his name appears associated with the early settlers of that place. But disliking the policy and measures of the Dutch government, he left the western part of the island, and seated himself permanently at Setauket, then called Cromwell Bay, or Ashford, and became one of the most useful and valuable citizens of that place. His particular knowledge in surveying and drawing conveyances, rendered his services invaluable at that early period of the settlement, and his name is found associated with most of the transactions of the town during his life. His death occurred October, 1690, leaving issue Richard, Nathaniel, and Deborah. The second son died unmarried in 1680. Deborah married Captain John Lawrence of Newtown, and died January 6, 1742. Richard was born October 9, 1649, and like his father, was an intelligent and useful man. He was early chosen a magistrate, and retained the office till near his death, October 18, 1699, having survived his father only about nine years. His knowledge and integrity endeared him to the people, and he died much lamented. His wife was Temperance, daughter of the Rev. Jonah Fordham of Southampton, and sister of the Rev. Josiah Fordham, who preached a while at Setauket, after the death of the Rev. Mr. Brewster, in 1690. His will is dated October 13, 1699, and was proved before Chief Justice William Smith, May 28, 1700. His children (named in said will) are Richard, Nathaniel, John, Josiah, Dorothy, and Temperance.

By an original letter, now in possession of his descend-



ants, it appears that a relationship existed with Lord Crew, the Bishop of Durham, and other respectable families in England. This letter is as follows:

“Sr. I was heartily glad to find by yr letter, that it hath pleased God to blesse and prosper your family, and that you received the small present” (crest and arms of the family) “I sent you some time since wh I thought had been lost. For our country news, take this account. My father departed this life Dec. 12, 1679, and as he lived well, soe he had greate joye at his death, with a Longing to leave this world. I have six children, but noe sonne, it having pleased God to take him in ye 15th yeare of his age, a man growne and very hopefull, God’s will be done. My brother Walgrave hath left one sonne, who stands heire both to ye Bishop of Duresme (Durham) and myselfe for Thenford. Yr cozen Wodhull lives very well, is a justice of peace and very well beloved; the three brothers live all together with the greatest kindnesse that can bee. My uncle Sol died last yeare and is buried at Hinton: my uncle Thomas a year before: my uncle Nathaniel is still living. I have enclosed the papers you desire. My service to all my cozens. I rest your loving friend and kinsman.”

“CREWE.”

“Steane, Sep. 5, 1687.”

(Superscribed) “*ffor my Loving Kinsman, Richard Wodhull, Esq.*”

To his eldest son, Richard, who was born November 2, 1691, the testator devised his paternal estate in Setauket, now in possession of his descendant of the sixth generation. He, like his father, was a magistrate for many years, and was in all respects a useful and highly exemplary man. He married Mary, daughter of John Homan of the same town, by whom he had issue Richard,

Mary, John, Nathan, Stephen, Henry, and Phœbe. His death took place November 24, 1767, aged seventy-six, and his widow died in 1768. His will bears date April 16, 1760. His eldest daughter, Mary, was born April 11, 1711, married, September 30, 1734, Jonathan Thompson, and was the grandmother of the compiler of this work. She died January 30, 1800, aged eighty-eight. Her sister, Phœbe, died unmarried in 1734. Henry became a lunatic, and so continued till his death in 1770.

Richard fourth, the eldest son, commonly called Justice Woodhull, took the paternal estate at Setauket. He was born October 11, 1712, and married Margaret, daughter of Edmund Smith of Smithtown. He was among the most useful men, and filled the office of magistrate for a large portion of his life. His death occurred October 13, 1788, but his widow survived till October 11, 1803, when she died at the age of eighty-nine years.

Their children were, 1. Susanna, born March 10, 1739, and died unmarried, July 14, 1804. 2. Richard, born June 3, 1741, married Sarah Miller of Miller's Place, and died January 16, 1774; issue, Richard, Sarah, Dorothy, and Julia. 3. Mary, born in 1743, and married Amos Underhill; issue, Amos and Margaret, who married Oliver Coles, Esq. 4. Adam, born October 12, 1747, and died unmarried, December 13, 1768. 5. Abraham, born October 7, 1750, to whom was devised most of his father's real estate at Setauket. He married Mary, daughter of Obediah Smith of Smithtown, and died January 23, 1826, leaving issue Elizabeth, Mary, and Jesse. He was an individual of good abilities, and much engaged in public life. He was many years a magistrate, and first judge of the county of Suffolk from 1799 to

1810. His wife died July 9, 1806, and he married, some years after, Lydia Terry, who survived him.

John Woodhull second, son of Richard third, was born January 15, 1719, married Elizabeth, daughter of Major William Henry Smith of Mastic, and, November 27, 1740, settled at Miller's Place, where he died, January 3, 1794; issue, 1. William, born December 14, 1741, became a minister of the gospel, married Elizabeth, daughter of William Hedges, and settled at Chester, N. J., where he died, leaving issue Temperance, Mary, Mehetabel, William, Jeremiah, Elizabeth, John, Hannah, Henry, and Caleb. 2. John, who married Miss Spafford of Philadelphia, and settled, first, as the minister of Lancaster, Penn., and next, at Freehold, N. J., where he died, leaving issue Spafford, John, and Gilbert. 3. Caleb, who died February 26, 1791, unmarried. 4. Merrit, who took the paternal estate, and died November 29, 1815, leaving issue John, Samuel, Caleb, Charles, Albert, and Mary. His wife was Mary Davis, who died March 26, 1840. 5. Henry, who died without issue. 6. James, who married Keturah, daughter of Selah Strong, Esq., by whom he had issue Selah S., who became a clergyman as previously mentioned, and Elizabeth, who married George Griswold, Esq., merchant of New York. 7. Elizabeth, who married Samuel Hopkins. 8. Gilbert, who with his brother James was a merchant of New York, and died in 1798, without issue. 9. Jeffrey, who married Elizabeth Davis, and died June 19, 1839, leaving issue William, Elizabeth, and Smith.

Nathaniel, second son of Richard second, settled upon lands devised to him at Mastic, and married Sarah, daughter of Richard Smith second, of Smithtown, by whom he had issue Hannah, Temperance, Nathaniel, Dorothy,

Sarah, Richard, Ruth, Jesse, Juliana, Deborah, and Ebenezer. His death took place March 9, 1760. Of these Jesse and Ebenezer settled in Orange County, where they left issue. Richard, born in 1729, graduated at Yale in 1752, and was several years a tutor in that institution. "He enjoyed," says Professor Kingley, "a high reputation for his attainments in all the branches of collegiate learning, but was particularly distinguished in the department of mathematics. He adopted the theological opinions of the Rev. Robert Sandeman, and president Clapp was unwilling that he should any longer be connected with the college." He first married Elizabeth Mix, and for his second wife, Rebecca Carr of Boston. His only daughter married Jehu Brainerd, Esq., of New Haven. His death took place December 7, 1797. Dr. Dwight says, "He was a man of extensive and varied learning, generally reserved, but when drawn into conversation, highly interesting." Of his brother Nathaniel, some account will be given in a subsequent page.

John Woodhull, third son of Richard 2d, settled at Wading River, and had issue John, whose children were James, Josiah, John, and William. Nathan Woodhull, third son of Richard 3d, was born July 5, 1720, married Joanna Mills, and died at Setauket, where he spent his life as a merchant, October 27, 1804, his wife having died October 5, 1873; issue, Nathan, Nathaniel, David, Sarah, and Phebe. Of these, the first is noticed in another place; Nathaniel married Rebecca, daughter of Joseph Brewster, and left issue, Nathan, Samuel, Richard, Rebecca, and Hannah. David married Irena, daughter of the Rev. Noah Wetmore, and died without issue at Newtown, L. I. Sarah married Selah Strong, a respectable merchant of New York, and had issue, Benjamin, James,

Henry, Julia, Anne, and Charlotte. Phebe married Jacob Van Brunt, and had issue John and Sarah.

Stephen Woodhull 4th, son of Richard 3d, was born in 1722, and married Hannah, daughter of Abraham Cooper of Southampton, and had issue John, Cooper, Hannah, and Sarah. Of these, John married Catherine Smith; Hannah married Ebenezer Smith; Cooper married Sarah, daughter of Dr. Gilbert Smith, and Sarah married a Hudson. William Woodhull, son of John, son of John, son of Richard 2d, married Elizabeth, daughter of Phillips Roe, Esq., by whom he had issue Charity, James, Eliza, Sophia, and Submit.

Of the children of Merrit S. Woodhull, fourth son of John, John married Hannah, daughter of William Helme; Caleb married first, Levina, daughter of George Nostrand, and second, Harriet, daughter of Abraham Fardon; Charles married Mary, daughter of James Woodhull; Albert married Sarah, daughter of Benjamin Cheetham, and Mary married her cousin, Samuel Hopkins.

---

#### *General Nathaniel Woodhull*

This distinguished individual and patriot was the eldest son of Nathaniel, and great-grandson of Richard Woodhull, who settled at Setauket in the year 1656, as stated in the account of this family. He was born at Mastic, L. I., December 30, 1722. His early life was passed in assisting his father to cultivate the possession which he afterwards inherited, and his education was such as was calculated to fit him for the duties of active life. He was endowed by nature with a strong discriminating



mind and a sound judgment, which soon attracted the notice of his fellow citizens, and pointed him out as peculiarly qualified for public usefulness. In 1761 he married Ruth, daughter of Nicoll Floyd, and sister of General William Floyd. His first public employment was in a military capacity in the war between Great Britain and France, which commenced in 1754 and terminated in 1760. But it is not known that he entered the army before 1758. Previously to that year, the war had been conducted without much system or vigor, and the French had the superiority in every campaign. Being appointed a major in the provincial forces of New York, Mr. Woodhull in 1758 served in that capacity in the army under General Abercrombie, intended for the reduction of Ticonderoga and Crown Point. He was engaged in the daring, or rather rash assault, ordered by the English general, before the arrival of the artillery, upon the former place, which, strongly fortified, was defended by a garrison of more than 5,000, and protected on its only assailable side by fallen trees, with their branches projecting outward, so cut as to answer the purpose of a *chevaux-de-frise*. After an exposed fire of four hours from the French, during which time every effort of heroic perseverance proved ineffectual in making an impression on the enemy's works, the assailing force was obliged to retire to the southern side of Lake George, with the loss of about 2,000 killed and wounded. Desirous of wiping off the stain of this repulse, General Abercrombie detached a portion of his army against Cadaraqui, or Fort Frontenac (now Kingston), an important fortress at the communication of Lake Ontario with the St. Lawrence. Lieutenant Colonel Bradstreet, with whom the design originated, commanded the enterprise,

having a train of eight cannon and three mortars, and a body of 3,000 men, of whom 150 were regulars. The rest of the detachment was composed of provincials from different places. On the 27th of August, 1758, a combined operation was made against the fort by land and water. The conduct of the forces in the boats was committed to Corsa and Woodhull, the latter with orders to receive the fire of the fort without returning it, until their troops had loaded and fired. The resolution with which the operations were conducted dispirited the enemy, whose forces were insufficient for the defence of their works, and, after a feeble resistance, the garrison struck their colors and capitulated. Immense stores of provisions and merchandise, intended for the French forces in America, sixty pieces of cannon, sixteen mortars, and nine armed vessels, some carrying eighteen guns, were the fruits of this surrender. Whether Mr. Woodhull was employed in the campaign of the following year is not ascertained, most of his papers having been destroyed by a fire a few years after his death. It is believed, however, that he either marched with the force which General Prideux conducted in 1759, against Niagara, or that led by General Amherst against Ticonderoga and Crown Point, which last enterprise had a successful issue. In 1760 he served as colonel of the third regiment of New York provincials, under General Amherst, which marched against Montreal, and effected the final reduction of Canada.\* Upon the capitulation of the Marquis De Vaudreuil, on the 8th of September, Colonel Woodhull, with his troops, returned to New York, and retired

\*The original manuscript Journal of Colonel Woodhull, 3rd New York Regiment, kept during this expedition, is now in possession of his descendants at Mastic.—H. O.

to private life. The removal of French power from their neighborhood, so dangerous to the colonists, and their consciousness of having efficiently contributed to its achievement, produced, naturally, a more free inquiry into the relative rights of the provinces and the mother country. The spirit to which this inquiry gave rise was stimulated by the pretensions of Britain, that Americans were to be taxed by parliament for the expenses of whatever attacks might be made upon them, occasioned by any wars of interest or ambition, in which the parent state might engage; pretensions which grew into assertions of a right to tax them in all cases whatsoever. Acts of parliament rashly passed, and sometimes timidly repealed, only served to increase the existing discontent, and hasten the impending crisis. Participating in the general feeling, the assembly of New York, at the close of December, 1768, unanimously resolved that no tax *could*, or *ought to be*, imposed on the persons or estates of his majesty's subjects within the colony, but by their *own free gift*, and by their *representatives* in general assembly; that the rights and privileges of the legislatures could not be abridged, superseded, abrogated, or annulled; and that they had a right to consult with the other colonies in matters wherein their liberties might be affected. In consequence of these resolutions, the governor, Sir Henry Moore, dissolved the assembly on the 2d of January, 1769. The language and proceedings of the assembly were highly approved by the people of Suffolk, and at the election in the spring of 1769, they returned to the assembly Colonel Woodhull and William Nicoll, Esq. In their instructions, drawn for their representatives, the county emphatically expressed their reliance on the exertions of their members *to preserve their freedom, and the*

*command over their own purses.* The injunction was faithfully observed by Colonel Woodhull, who, during the six years that followed of the continuance of the royal government, was constant in his devotion to the rights of his countrymen and his opposition to the court party. In the convention which met in the city of New York, April 10, 1775, to choose delegates to the continental congress, Colonel Woodhull appeared from the county of Suffolk. Pursuant to a recommendation from the New York local committee, a provincial congress was deputed by the several counties, which met in the city, May 22, 1775. This body practically asserted its right to entire sovereignty, suspending, in effect, from the time of its organization, and ultimately dissolving and expelling the royal authority. Colonel Woodhull was placed at the head of the delegation from Suffolk. On the 22d of August, 1775, the provincial congress reorganized the militia of this colony into brigades, directing that a brigadier-general, with a major of brigade, be commissioned to the command of each. The militia of Suffolk and Queens constituted one brigade, of which Colonel Woodhull was subsequently appointed general, and Jonathan Lawrence, Esq., a member of the provincial congress from Queens, major of brigade. On the 28th of August, 1775, General Woodhull was elected president of the provincial congress, which office he held in the body that succeeded it in 1776. The provincial congress, doubting its powers to conform to the recommendation of the continental congress, by erecting a new form of government, to the exclusion of all foreign control, on the 31st of May, 1776, recommended to the electors of the several counties to vest the necessary powers either in their present delegates, or in others to be chosen in

their stead. The British army having, on the 30th of June, appeared off the harbor of New York, the provincial congress, on its adjournment that day, directed that the congress in which those new powers were vested, should immediately assemble at White Plains. They did not, in fact, assemble till the 9th of July, 1776, when General Woodhull was chosen president. The Declaration of Independence, passed on the 4th, had not yet received the unanimous approbation of the colonies in continental congress, the delegates from the colony of New York having declined to vote (although they were personally in favor of the measure, and believed their constituents to be so), because they were fettered by instructions drawn nearly twelve months before, when the hope of reconciliation was yet cherished. Immediately on this meeting, the new provincial congress unanimously adopted the declaration (General Woodhull presiding), on the part of the people of New York; thus filling the void occasioned by the want of the necessary powers in their delegates at Philadelphia. On the next day they assumed the title of the *representatives of the State of New York*.

The invading army under Lord Howe had landed on Staten Island, and by the command which their naval force secured over the adjacent waters, they were enabled to threaten an attack from this point, either upon Long Island or the island of Manhattan. General Washington was therefore obliged to divide the force collected to oppose them, a portion of which entrenched themselves at Brooklyn, while the residue was stationed at different places on Manhattan Island. The New York convention had, on the 20th of July, ordered one-fourth of the militia of Queens and Suffolk to be drafted; and the second regiment thus obtained had marched under command of



Colonel Josiah Smith of Brookhaven, and Colonel Jeromus Remsen of Newtown, within the lines at Brooklyn, then commanded by General Sullivan. On the 10th of August, General Woodhull's affairs requiring his return home, he obtained leave of temporary absence from the convention, whose sittings had been transferred to Harlem, and proceeded to his residence at Mastic, seventy-five miles from New York. On the 22d of August, the uncertainty that had prevailed as to the first point of attack on the part of the invaders, was dispelled by the landing of a portion of their forces at New Utrecht, at the place now called Bath. Aware of the increasing want of provisions among the enemy, and fearing that, the American army being confined to the lines, the whole stock and produce of Long Island would be in the power of the hostile troops, unless means were promptly used to prevent it, the convention adopted a policy since successfully pursued by the Russians on a larger scale. This was to deprive the invading foe of supplies, and thus compel their abandonment of the island, by removing the stock and other provisions in the vicinity, and, if that could not be effected, by destroying them. Resolutions were accordingly passed on the 24th of August, ordering General Woodhull, or, in his absence, Colonel Potter (Dr. Potter of Huntington, who had served against the French in 1758-59), to march, without delay, one-half of the western regiment of militia of Suffolk County, with five days' provisions, into the western parts of Queens County; and that the officers of militia of Queens County should immediately order out the whole militia of that county to effect the desired object. An express being sent with these directions to Major Lawrence, Colonel Potter, and General Woodhull, the latter

reached Jamaica on the next day (Sunday), and immediately took measures to apprise the convention of his arrival there, and awaited the approach of the forces intended to act under his command. He was, however, doomed to experience not only delay, but disappointment, and his feelings may be more easily imagined than described. The convention were fully aware that the militia to be collected on this emergency would be wholly insufficient to effect the desired object, and more particularly to enable the general to station a force, agreeably to their wishes, on the high grounds in the western part of Queens County, to repel the ravaging parties of the enemy.

In the preceding year it had been found necessary to despatch some of the troops under the command of General Wooster to Suffolk County, to prevent depredations along its exposed coast, and its armed inhabitants were not now more than competent for the same purpose. In Queens, a majority of the inhabitants were disaffected to the patriotic cause, and rendered the defence of the county much more difficult. The tories there had, in the preceding month of December, obtained a quantity of arms from the "Asia," man-of-war; and had even prevented, by their superior numbers at the polls, an election, then attempted, of delegates to the provincial congress; insomuch that a military intervention, under the direction of the continental congress, had become necessary to deprive the tories of offensive weapons, and to secure to the whigs the freedom of election. A large body of the whigs of that county were already embodied in the regiment of Colonel Remsen, and many of those at home were overawed by the nearness of the British force, or were employed in preparations for the flight

of their families, if fortune should favor the British arms. The convention accordingly deputed a committee to General Washington, advising him of their object; of their apprehension of the insufficiency of the force they had ordered to join General Woodhull; and of their conviction that it would be most conducive to the public welfare that the regiments of Colonels Smith and Remsen should be added. The committee reported on the 26th, that at the conference with General Washington, he seemed well pleased, but said he was afraid it was too late. He, however, expressed his willingness to afford every assistance to the convention consistent with the public good; and stated that he would immediately give orders that Smith's and Remsen's regiments should march into Queens County, and join General Woodhull. Notice of this was forwarded to General Woodhull; as well as of the expectation that by the time he received their letter, the promised reinforcement would have joined them. On the same day the whole militia that had been collected were assembled at Jamaica, and were found to consist only of about one hundred men, led by Colonel Potter of Suffolk, about forty militia from Queens, and fifty horsemen belonging to the troop of Kings and Queens counties. With this handful of men, General Woodhull advanced to the westward of Queens County, agreeably to his orders. Owing, probably, to the receipt of information that increased numbers of the British had disembarked on the preceding day at New Utrecht, the commanding officer at Brooklyn did not detach the second Long Island regiment to join General Woodhull; and by some fatality, the omission was neither communicated to the convention, nor to the expecting general. Disappointed at not meeting the additional

troops, without whom he could not post any force on the heights to repel depredations of the enemy, he, nevertheless, commenced with vigor the execution of the rest of his orders. He placed guards and sentries to prevent communication between the tories and the enemy; and scouring, this and the succeeding day, the country southward of the hills in Kings, and a considerable part of Newtown and Jamaica, he sent off an immense quantity of stock, collected them toward the great plains, and ordered off a further quantity from near Hempstead. In the meantime his numbers had dwindled (by the anxiety of the militia to reach their homes, and protect or remove their families) to less than a hundred men, who, as well as their horses, were worn down. What they had effected, demonstrated that with the force the convention had expected to place under his command, the object to which they attached so much importance could have been accomplished. The subsequent disasters to the American arms would, however, have rendered its accomplishment useless.

Early on the 27th of August, a pass through the hills in Kings County, which had been left unguarded by the American troops, was taken possession of by the enemy. The American outposts were surprised, and the army driven, after a sanguinary engagement, within their entrenchments at Brooklyn. Numbers of the British troops, during the same day, posted themselves on the hills between New York and Jamaica, and parties of the enemy's horse made incursions into the country, within a short distance of the general's force. In this state of things he retired to Jamaica, sending, at different times, two messages to the convention, apprising them of his situation; of the absolute necessity of reinforcements,

and of his conviction that the two Long Island regiments could not join him in consequence of the interruption of communication. Unfortunately the convention did not sit on that day, and the general, receiving no answer, despatched his brigade-major, who was also a member of that body, to repeat his representation and obtain their orders. The convention, at their meeting on the 28th, still adhered to their former project; believing that by crossing the East River to Manhattan Island, and making a detour to Flushing, the two regiments might still reach Jamaica. They accordingly sent Major Lawrence to General Washington with a letter expressing that opinion, and referring him to the brigade-major for explanations as to the means; at the same time they directed the necessary preparations for the transportation and landing of the troops, and, receiving soon after a reiteration of the call for an immediate reinforcement, they deputed two of their body, John Sloss Hobart and James Townsend, Esqs., to repair to General Woodhull with instructions and advice. Owing, probably, to the intermediate roads being in possession of the enemy, these gentlemen, it is believed, never reached him.

Whether the express despatched by Major Lawrence, as soon as ordered, on the mission to General Washington, was more successful, is not known. On the same morning, the convention forwarded a circular to the committees of the different towns of Connecticut lying upon the Sound, requesting their co-operation in removing the stock from Long Island to that state, and an application to the governor for such force as could be speedily obtained. An application to him had been immediately made by General Washington, to throw over 1,000 men upon the island. In the afternoon, Major Lawrence



returned from the American camp, bringing a letter from the commander-in-chief, declining the request of the convention for the desired reinforcement; because, in the opinion of himself and his general officers, the men they had were not more than competent to the defence of their lines. The retreat across the river, which was effected on that night, might have been suspected and thwarted if the passage of the second regiment had been attempted in open day. This, no doubt, formed an additional reason for non-compliance. In the meantime General Woodhull, whose notions of military obedience had been formed in the strictest school, was awaiting the expected orders and reinforcements. At this time the situation of General Woodhull was peculiarly embarrassing. If he had not received encouragement that he should be relieved, the smallness of his force would have justified an immediate retreat. Every communication from the convention, from whom he received his orders, imported it to be their wish he should retain his station in the western part of Queens County, and encouraged him to expect a reinforcement. The omission of any intelligence to the contrary, with the delay of the return of his brigade-major, who was detained by the convention, was calculated to strengthen that expectation. To have retreated under these circumstances, would have been a violation of military rules, and in case of relief being sent, would have been deemed highly dishonorable. In this emergency, the general had no counsel but his own honorable feelings to consult, and he adopted the course which they dictated. He resolved not to make a final retreat until he heard from the convention. On the morning of the 28th, he ordered his troops to fall back, and take a station about four miles east of Jamaica, and

there to remain until further orders. The general remained at Jamaica till afternoon, in momentary expectation of a message from the convention. He then retired slowly with one or two companions, still indulging the hope of intelligence from the convention, until he fell a sacrifice to his reliance on their vigilance and his own high sense of military honor, which forbade his abandoning the station assigned him, however perilous, before he was assured that relief was hopeless, or he had orders to that effect. A severe thunder shower, it is supposed, obliged him to take refuge in a public house,<sup>1</sup> about two miles east of Jamaica; he was there overtaken by a detachment of the 17th regiment of British dragoons, and the 71st regiment of infantry, accompanied by some of the disaffected inhabitants as pilots.

The general immediately, on being discovered, gave up his sword in token of surrender. The ruffian who first approached him (said to be a Major Baird, of the 71st), as reported, ordered him to say, *God save the King*; the general replied, "God save us all;" on which he most cowardly and cruelly assailed the defenceless general with his broad sword, and would have killed him upon the spot, if he had not been prevented by the interference of an officer of more honor and humanity (said to be Major Delancey of the dragoons), who arrested his savage violence.

The general was badly wounded in the head, and one of his arms was mangled from the shoulder to the wrist. He was taken to Jamaica, where his wounds were dressed, and, with other prisoners, was detained there till the next day. He was then conveyed to Gravesend, and with about eighty other prisoners (of whom Colonel

<sup>1</sup> Carpenter's Tavern, still standing (1916).—EDITOR.

Troup \* of New York was one), was confined on board a vessel which had been employed to transport live stock for the use of the army, and was without accommodations for health or comfort. The general was released from the vessel on the remonstrance of an officer who had more humanity than his superiors, and removed to a house near the church in New Utrecht, where he was permitted to receive some attendance and medical assistance. A cut in the joint of the elbow rendered an amputation of the arm necessary. As soon as this was resolved on, the general sent for his wife, with a request that she should bring with her all the money and provisions she

\* Robert Troup, Esq., a lieutenant in Colonel Lasher's battalion of New York militia, was made prisoner by a British scouting party, about three o'clock, A. M., August 27th, five miles west of Jamaica. After a week's confinement at Flatbush, he, with seventy or eighty officers, was put on board a small vessel, or transport, lying between Gravesend and the Hook, which had been employed in bringing cattle from England. After Troup's release, he made oath of the treatment he had received; and at the close of it he adds:

"And the deponent further saith, That, while he was, as aforesaid, confined on board the said transport, Brigadier General Woodhull was also brought on board, in a shocking mangled condition: that deponent asked the general the particulars of his capture, and was told by the said General that he had been taken by a party of light-horse, under the command of Captain Oliver De Lancey: that he was asked by the said Captain if he would surrender; that he answered in the affirmative, provided, he would treat him like a gentleman, which Captain De Lancey assured him he would; whereupon the General delivered his sword, and that immediately after the said Oliver De Lancey, junior, struck him, and others of the said party, imitating his example, did cruelly cut and hack him in the manner he then was: that, although he was in such a mangled and horrid situation, he had, nevertheless, been obliged to sleep on the bare floor of the said transport, if a lieutenant of the man-of-war who guarded the transport had not lent him a mattress: that General Woodhull was afterwards carried to the hospital in the church of New Utrecht, where he perished, as deponent was on good authority informed, through want of care, and other necessities: and further this deponent saith not.

"ROBERT TROUP.

"Sworn the 17th of January, 1777, before me,

"GOUV. MORRIS."

had in her possession, and all she could procure; which being complied with, he had them distributed among the American prisoners, to alleviate their sufferings—thus furnishing a lesson of humanity to his enemies, and closing a useful life by an act of charity. He then suffered the amputation, which soon issued in a mortification that terminated his life September 20, 1776, in the fifty-fourth year of his age. He left one child, Elizabeth, who first married Henry Nicoll, and secondly the late General John Smith.

It is said that one of the battalions employed in this inglorious warfare against an unresisting individual, was commanded by Major Crewe, a distant kinsman of the general; and that when apprized of that fact, and of the circumstances of the case, he was so much disgusted, that he either resigned his commission and quit the service, or obtained permission to leave the army and return to England.

General Woodhull's excellent wife, who had barely arrived soon enough to attend him in his last moments, was permitted to remove his dead body, which was prepared for the purpose by the British surgeons. Painful as her feelings must have been while attending the mangled corpse of her deceased husband and dearest friend in its slow progress over a distance of seventy miles, she had the satisfaction of reflecting that it was out of the possession of the enemy, and the consolation of depositing it on his own farm, amid the graves of his ancestors. The cruel treatment of this gallant officer and eminent citizen aroused in every patriotic bosom feelings of indignation. Nor can the circumstances ever be recollected without admiring the lofty spirit which no extremity could bend to dishonor, nor without disdain and abhorrence of a

coward brutality, which vainly seeks for extenuation in the bitter animosities of the times.

The talents of General Woodhull were peculiarly adapted to a military station. With personal courage, he possessed judgment, decision, and firmness of character, tempered with conciliating manners, which commanded the respect and obedience of his troops, and at the same time secured their confidence and esteem.

It is proper here to state that the late Chief Justice Marshall, in the *Life of George Washington*, while narrating the disposition of the American forces immediately prior to the battle of Long Island, fought on the morning of the 27th of August, 1776, makes the following remark: "The convention of New York had ordered General Woodhull, with the militia of Long Island, to take post on the high grounds, as near the enemy as possible; but he remained at Jamaica, and seemed scarcely to suppose himself under the control of the regular officer commanding on the island."

The unjust imputation contained in this short sentence, upon the well-known character and principles of General Woodhull, and its total variance from facts, make it obvious to every well-informed person that the learned historian was entirely unacquainted with what transpired on the occasion referred to, and had mistaken the circumstances attending the conduct and fate of the unfortunate general. To remedy, as far as possible, the consequences of this erroneous statement, and rescue the memory of the noble martyr from the grave charge above mentioned, a communication was addressed to Judge Marshall, by John L. Lawrence, Esq., which is as follows:



*"New York, February 13th, 1834.*

"Sir: Although personally a stranger to you, I am sure that you will not consider this letter an unwarrantable intrusion. Its object is to free the memory of an early martyr of the Revolution from mistaken imputations, which are contained in your valuable work, the 'Life of George Washington.'

"If that publication were of ordinary authority, the errors alluded to would be less important. Stamped, however, with your name, its statements will be unquestioned by posterity; and it becomes therefore of importance that any inaccuracies should be corrected, while the author yet survives.

"In mentioning the disposition of the American forces, immediately prior to the battle of Long Island, fought on the morning of the 27th August, 1776, the following sentence occurs, opposite the marginal date of the 26th of the same month:

" 'The Convention of New York had ordered General Woodhull, with the militia of Long Island, to take post on the high grounds, as near the enemy as possible; but he remained at Jamaica, and seemed scarcely to suppose himself under the control of the regular officer commanding on the island.'

"The obvious inferences from this passage, are, that on the 26th August, 1776, General Woodhull had a considerable body of militia under his command, with which the Convention of New York had ordered him to take a position in the neighborhood of the enemy; but that, disobeying their orders, and indulging in false punctilio toward the regular officer commanding on Long Island, he was wanting in his duty to his country, and contributed to the disaster that befel the American arms.

"These are grave charges. If true, the errors they impute, were somewhat redeemed by the circumstances which attended his capture and death. If inaccurate, they

constitute an unsuitable return for the services and martyrdom of one of the noblest patriots of the Revolution.

“Before I proceed to show the nature of General Woodhull’s duty, as prescribed by the Convention, the number of his troops, and his fatally strict observance of the rules of military obedience, it may be proper to advert to the charge of insubordination to ‘the regular officer commanding on the island.’ The officer alluded to, is, I presume, either General Sullivan, or General Putnam, the latter of whom assumed the command at Brooklyn on the 26th of August, 1776.

“No document, that I have found, nor any recollections that I have consulted, sanction the idea that any jealousy or misunderstanding existed between General Woodhull and either of the officers above named, in relation to their respective commands. Had such an event taken place, some trace of it would probably be found in the letters and papers, of which copies are herewith forwarded. In the absence of positive proof in your possession, I must conclude that the charge is founded in misapprehension. If, indeed, I could suppose that General Woodhull was required by the regular officer commanding on Long Island, to give a direction to his small force inconsistent with the duty assigned to him by the Convention, I should not doubt that he refused obedience. Unconnected with the main army, acting in the execution of a design of which the convention had General Washington’s approbation, and furnished with written orders from that body for his government, he could not depart from those orders, without violating every rule of propriety, military or otherwise. It is not necessary, however, to dwell farther upon a mere supposed case. I hasten, therefore, to a detail of the facts, which meet the other charges implied in the passage I have quoted.

“General Woodhull, the president of the ‘Convention of the Representatives of the State of New York,’ had

been appointed by the provincial congress of New York, in August, 1775, to the office of brigadier general of the brigade composed of the militia of Queens and Suffolk counties, on Long Island. That brigade was not embodied during the invasion in 1776, the county of Suffolk requiring that the greater part of its militia should remain at home, to repel hostile visits to its coasts, and the county of Queens being so decidedly in the power of the tories, that the whigs could not be spared, in great numbers, from their dwellings. In July, soon after the landing of the enemy on Staten Island, two regiments of Long Island militia, commanded by Colonel Smith of Suffolk, and Colonel Remsen of Queens, constituting nearly the whole disposable force of the two counties, were marched within the American lines at Brooklyn, in Kings county. General Woodhull, being obliged to be temporarily absent from the convention, on his own concerns, that body, on the 10th of August, 1776, appointed Abraham Yates, jr., Esq., its president *pro tempore*. The British having landed on Long Island, on the 22d of August, the convention, on Saturday, the 24th of that month, determined to endeavor to deprive them of the supplies which Long Island would afford them, the positions of the two armies being such as to leave Queens county, and other parts of the island, open to the enemy. Resolutions were accordingly passed, directing General Woodhull, (whose return to the convention was then expected,) or in his absence, Lieutenant Colonel Potter, to march, *not* the militia of Long Island, but one half of the western regiment of Suffolk county, with five days' provisions, into the western part of Queens, and that the officers of the militia in Queens should immediately order out the whole militia of that county, together with their troop of horse, in order to prevent the stock and other provisions in Queens county from falling into the hands of the enemy. The resolutions farther directed, that the supplies should be removed

out of the way of the enemy, or if that could not be effected, they should be destroyed; and that if necessary, the troop of horse in Kings county should join in performing this duty. An express was sent with these resolutions to General Woodhull, Lieutenant Colonel Potter, and the major of the brigade. On Sunday, the 25th of August, the General arrived at Jamaica, where he awaited the assembling of his troops. On the succeeding day, (the 26th of August, mentioned in your marginal note,) one hundred men joined him from Suffolk county, fifty from Queens, and forty of the troop of horse of Kings and Queens. These constituted the whole force under his command. Small as it was, he did not hesitate immediately to advance with it, according to his orders, and to attempt, with even such unequal means, their execution. In proof of this fact, I refer you to the copy of his letter to the convention, forwarded herewith, dated 'Westward of Queens county, August 27, 1776.'

"The convention, knowing that the forces they had ordered to be collected, would be insufficient for the purposes mentioned in their resolutions of the 24th and particularly to effect another object, not expressed in those resolutions, to wit, to repel incursions of the enemy, that would be consequent upon the performance of the duty assigned to General Woodhull; determined to apply to General Washington for the troops belonging to General Woodhull's brigade, then within the American lines at Brooklyn, and commanded by Colonels Smith and Remsen. A committee, consisting of Samuel Townsend, Esq., of Queens, and William Smith, Esq., of Suffolk, was accordingly deputed to wait on the commander-in-chief. On Monday, the 26th of August, (the marginal date I have referred to,) these gentlemen reported, that at their conference with General Washington, he seemed well pleased with the intention of the convention, and promised 'that he would immediately give orders that



Colonels Smith and Remsen's regiments, should march into Queens county, to join General Woodhull.' The president *pro tem.* of the convention, therefore, on the same 26th of August, wrote to General Woodhull, announcing the promised addition to his force, and an expectation that it was, at the moment of writing, on the spot. Enclosed were instructions, passed on the same 26th day of August, under the supposition that the two regiments were with General Woodhull. These instructions did not, as the 'Life of George Washington' states, direct him to 'take post on the high grounds, as near the enemy as possible,' but were better suited to the intended service. As his duty was to commence as near to the enemy as it would be prudent to approach, in the work of stripping the country of its stock and provisions, and to recede from their position in proportion to his success, it would be desirable to give the protecting force against the depredations of the enemy such a station from time to time, as might be most effectual. Accordingly, the instructions of the 26th August directed him to take post 'on the heights, near the western boundaries of Queens county, or in such other place or places in the counties of Kings, Queens or Suffolk, as he should deem most convenient for preventing the incursions and depredations of the enemy.' In the same instructions, the resolutions of the 24th were referred to, and the duties therein mentioned in respect to the supplies, were again enjoined, together with other duties in relation to the disaffected. From the contents of General Woodhull's letter to the convention, dated Jamaica, 27th August, 1776, (among the documents herewith sent you,) which was forwarded by an express, and was evidently written after the one which follows it, in the minutes of the committee of safety, dated, 'Westward of Queens county, 27th August, 1776,' some have believed that the instructions of the 26th did not reach General Woodhull until the 27th, after the American army had



been defeated, and he had retired to Jamaica. If this were so, General Woodhull had in fact no other orders than those contained in the resolutions of the 24th (which did not contemplate his stationing a force anywhere), until after the marginal date, nor until after the battle of Long Island was lost. I cannot, however, suppose that the convention would have failed to communicate their orders of the 26th, some time on that day. Certain it is, either that General Washington omitted to issue the orders respecting Smith's and Remsen's regiments, or that the regular officer commanding on Long Island did not obey them. Different as the orders of the 26th were from those you state, General Woodhull was, in consequence of these omissions, left without the means of carrying them into effect. Circumstances not known justified, I presume, General Washington or his officer in withholding the promised force. Why the change of determination was not communicated to the convention or to General Woodhull, is, however, surprising. Acting under the delusion that the force had joined, or might join him, the convention persisted in its purposes long after they ought to have been abandoned, and the general, punctilious in his obedience to their orders and wishes, became, on the 28th, a captive and a victim.

"If the statements and remarks I have submitted are correct, it follows that injustice has been unintentionally done to General Woodhull's memory. It is consolatory to know, that it has been undesignedly committed, and by one who will be prompt to repair the injury. I send herewith a book, entitled 'The Treasury of Knowledge,' in the biographical part of which, page 373, is a connected account of General Woodhull's proceedings, between the 25th and 28th Aug., 1776, and of his brutal massacre. The documents which I also forward are, with one exception, certified extracts from the minutes of the convention. The excepted document is the letter of Mr. Yates, presi-

dent, *pro tempore*, of the New York Convention, dated 26th Aug., 1776, of which the copy I send is, I believe, correct. These documents show, in addition to the objects for which they are forwarded, that the statement in the letter of the British general, that General Woodhull was among the prisoners taken at the battle of Long Island, is inaccurate. In that battle he had no participation. It was fought on the morning of the 27th, and his capture took place on the afternoon of the 28th. In giving, what I fear will be a tedious letter, I have sought to avoid imputations upon others. It is not my design to attack, but to shield. If any expression has escaped me, of an opposite tendency, it has been unintentional. Above all, if, contrary to my wishes, and to the great respect I bear you, in common with my fellow-citizens, any thing has found its way here, unpleasant to your own feelings, I pray you to believe it has been altogether undesigned.

"I shall be much obliged by your acknowledging the receipt of this letter, and by your apprizing me hereafter, in order to be communicated to General Woodhull's now aged and widowed daughter, of your conviction (if it shall be produced), of the errors I have pointed out.

"I am, with the greatest respect,

"Your obedient servant,

"JOHN L. LAWRENCE.

"Hon. John Marshall, Chief Justice of the United States."

To this candid and accurate statement of facts, communicated by Mr. Lawrence, confirmed in every particular by documentary evidence, the chief justice responded in a manner which was to be expected from a great and generous mind, when satisfied that an important error had been by him unconsciously committed. His reply was as follows:

*"Washington, February 21st, 1834.*

"Sir—Judge Edwards did me the favor to deliver, yesterday evening, your letter of the 13th, with the documents to which it refers. It is to me matter for deep concern, and self-reproach, that the biographer of Washington should, from whatever cause, have mis-stated the part performed by any individual in the war of our Revolution. Accuracy of detail ought to have been, and was, among my primary objects. If, in any instance, I have failed to attain this object, the failure is the more lamented, if its consequence be the imputation of blame, where praise was merited.

"The evidence with which you have furnished me, demonstrates, that the small body of militia assembled near Jamaica, in Long Island, in August, 1776, was not called out for the purpose of direct co-operation with the troops in Brooklyn, and was not placed, by the convention, under the officer commanding at that post. It is apparent, that their particular object, after the British had landed on Long Island, was to intercept the supplies they might draw from the country. It is apparent, also, that General Woodhull joined them only a day or two before the battle; and there is every reason to believe, that he executed, with intelligence and vigor, the duty confided to him. I had supposed that the order to march to the western part of Queens County, directed an approach to the enemy, and that the heights alluded to, were between Jamaica and Brooklyn. But I have not the papers, which I read at the time, from the publications then in my possession. I only recollect the impression they made, that General Woodhull was called into the field for the purpose of aiding the operations from Brooklyn, and that General Washington, knowing the existence of this corps, had a right to count upon it, in some slight degree, as guarding the road leading from Jamaica. In this I was

mistaken; and in this mistake, the statement of which you complain originated.

"I think, however, that you misconstrue it. No allusion is made to the number of the militia under his command, nor to any jealousy of the military officer commanding at Brooklyn; nor is it hinted that the convention had placed him under that officer. I rather infer, that it appeared to me to be an additional example of the many inconveniences arising, in the early part of the war, from the disposition of the civil authorities to manage affairs belonging to the military department.

"I wish, very much, that I had possessed the information you have now given me. The whole statement would most probably have been omitted, the fact not being connected with the battle, or if introduced, have been essentially varied.

"I am Sir, with great respect,

"Your obedient,

"JOHN MARSHALL.

"John L. Lawrence, Esq., New York."

---

*Correspondence between General Woodhull and the  
Convention*

The capture of General Woodhull was one of the most calamitous events of the Revolution. It deprived the country of the talents, the experience, and counsels of one of the ablest and most patriotic of her citizens. The cruel and dastardly treatment of a prisoner, especially of his rank and character, after a peaceable surrender, roused a spirit of indignation in the breast of every honest and disinterested man. It contributed to alienate the affections of the people from a country whose officers were capable of such unprincipled barbarity, and to strengthen the determination of all ranks to adhere to the resolution

then recently adopted by the continental congress and the convention of this state, to render the United States independent of her control. General Woodhull was as much distinguished for his private and domestic virtues as for his zeal for the rights of his country, and was held in the highest estimation by all those who enjoyed his society, or had the pleasure of an intimate acquaintance with him. His death spread a gloom over Long Island—was universally lamented by the friends of freedom, to whom he was known, as well as by all those to whom he was endeared by social relations; and while the Revolution continues to be a subject of gratitude with the people of Long Island, his memory will be cherished among their fondest recollections.

August 25, 1776, General Woodhull wrote to the convention. His letter cannot be found, but the contents may be inferred from the following answer :

*" August 26th, 1776.*

" Sir—Your's of yesterday is just come to hand, in answer to which we would inform you that Robert Townsend, the son of Samuel Townsend, Esq., is appointed commissary for the troops under your command, of which we hope you will give him the earliest notice; and that we have made application to General Washington for the regiments under the command of Cols. Smith and Remsen to join you. He assured our committee that he would issue out orders immediately for that purpose, and we expect that they are upon the spot by this time.

" Confiding in your known prudence and zeal in the common cause, and wishing you the protection and blessing of heaven,

" We are, with respect, your very

" humble servants,

" By order, &c.

ABRAHAM YATES, Jun.

" To Gen. Nathaniel Woodhull."



*"Westward of Queens county, August 27th, 1776.*

"Gentlemen—Inclosed I send you a letter from Col. Potter, who left me yesterday at 11 o'clock, after bringing about 10 men to me at Jamaica. Major Smith, I expect, has all the rest that were to come from Suffolk county. There have about 40 of the militia joined me from the regiments in Queens County, and about 50 of the troop belonging to Kings and Queens counties, which is nearly all I expect. I have got all the cattle southward of the hills in Kings County, to the eastward of the cross road between the two counties, and have placed guards and sentinels from the north road to the south side of the island, in order to prevent the cattle's going back, and to prevent the communication of the tories with the enemy. I am within about six miles of the enemy's camp: their light horse have been within about two miles, and, unless I have more men, our stay here will answer no purpose. We shall soon want to be supplied with provisions, if we tarry here.

"I am, gentlemen, your mo. obt. h'ble serv't,

"NATH'L WOODHULL.

"The Hon. Convention of New York, at Harlaem."

---

*"Jamaica, August 27th, 1776.*

"Gentlemen—I am now at Jamaica, with less than 100 men, having brought all the cattle from the westward and southward of the hills, and have sent them off with the troops of horse, with orders to take all the rest eastward of this place, to the eastward of Hempstead Plains, to put them into fields, and to set a guard over them. The enemy, I am informed, are entrenching southward, and from the heights near Howard's. I have now received yours, with several resolutions, which I wish it was in my power to put in execution; but, unless Cols. Smith and

Remsen, mentioned in yours, join me with their regiments, or some other assistance immediately, I shall not be able; for the people are all moving east, and I cannot get any assistance from them. I shall continue here as long as I can, in hopes of a reinforcement; but if none comes soon, I shall retreat, and drive the stock before me into the woods.

“Cols. Smith and Remsen, I think, cannot join me. Unless you can send me some other assistance, I fear I shall soon be obliged to quit this place. I hope soon to hear from you.

“I am, gent'n your mo. ob't h'ble serv't,

“NATH'L WOODHULL.

“To the Hon'ble the Convention of the State of New York.”

---

“*Jamaica, August 28th, 1776.*

“Gentlemen—I wrote two letters to you yesterday, one by express and another by Mr. Harper, and also sent my brigade major to you, to let you know my situation, and I expected an answer to one of them last night; but my express informed me that he was detained till last night for an answer.

“I have now received yours of the 26th, which is only a copy of the last, without a single word of answer to my letter, or the message by my brigade major. I must again let you know my situation. I have about 70 men and about 20 of the troop, which is all the force I have or can expect, and I am daily growing less in number. The people are so alarmed in Suffolk, that they will not any more of them march; and as to Cols. Smith and Remsen, they cannot join me, for the communication is cut off between us. I have sent about 1100 cattle to the great fields on the plains yesterday. About 300 more have gone off this morning to the same place, and I have ordered a

guard of an officer and seven privates. They can get no water in those fields. My men and horses are worn out with fatigue. The cattle are not all gone off towards Hempstead. I ordered them off yesterday; but they were not able to take them along. I yesterday brought about 300 from Newtown. I think the cattle are in as much danger on the north side as on the south side; and have ordered the inhabitants to remove them, if you cannot send me an immediate reinforcement. [I am afraid I shall have no men with me by to-morrow night, for they consider themselves in an enemy's country; and if I can have no reinforcement, I beg you will send very particular directions what I shall do with the stock; whether I shall take them or leave them, for I shall not be able to get them all together and tend them, if the men I have will all stay with me. I beg you would immediately send at least two members as a committee, that I may have their advice. For unless you do I must quit, for I hope the convention does not expect me to make brick without straw.

"I am gent'm your most ob't

"NATH'L WOODHULL.]" \*

"The Hon. Convention of New York."

---

*Correspondence between the Convention and General Washington*

"Wednesday morning, Aug. 28th, 1776.

"Sir—I am commanded by the convention to enclose to your Excellency the copy of a letter they received last

\* The latter half of this letter, included in brackets, was first discovered and annexed by Henry Onderdonk, jun. The second leaf of the sheet had been torn off, and was thus accidentally inserted out of its proper place in manuscript Journals of the provincial congress, and in that way had escaped the notice of Mr. Lawrence.—H. O.

evening from General Woodhull. The convention are of opinion that the enemy may be prevented from getting the stock and grain on Long Island if the regiments under the command of Col. Smith and Col. Remsen be sent to join Gen. Woodhull. That this junction may be effected, and how, Major Lawrence, who is a member of this convention and the bearer thereof, will inform your Excellency.

“I have the honor to be, with great respect,

“Your Excellency’s most obedient servant,

“By order, ABRAHAM YATES.

“His Excellency Gen. Washington.”

---

“*Long Island, Aug. 28th, 1776.*

“Sir—I was just now honored with your favor of this date, with General Woodhull’s letter, and should esteem myself happy, were it in my power to afford the assistance required; but the enemy having landed a considerable part of their force here, and at the same time may have reserved some to attack New York, it is the opinion, not only of myself, but of all my general officers I have had an opportunity of consulting with, that the men we have are not more than competent to the defence of those lines, and the several posts which must be defended. This reason, and this alone, prevents my complying with your request. I shall beg leave to mention, in confidence, that a few days ago, upon the enemy’s first landing here, I wrote to Governor Trumbull, recommending him to throw over a body of 1000 men on the island to annoy the enemy in their rear, if the state of the colony would admit of it. Whether it will be done I cannot determine. That colony having furnished a large proportion of men, I was, and still am, doubtful whether it could be done. If it could, I am satisfied it will, from the zeal and readiness

they have ever shown to give every possible succor. I am hopeful they will be in a condition to do it; and if they are, these troops, I doubt not, will be ready and willing to give General Woodhull any assistance he may want. But can not the militia effect what he wishes to do? They, I believe, must be depended on in the present instance for relief.

“ I have the honor to be, in great haste,

“ Sir, your most obedient servant,

“ GEORGE WASHINGTON.

“ The Hon. ABRAHAM YATES.”

---

*Continuation of the correspondence by the Committee of  
Safety*

“ *King's Bridge, Aug. 30th, 1776.*

“ Sir—In our way to Fishkill, agreeable to an adjournment of the convention, we are informed that the army on Long Island is removed to the city of New York; and anxiety to know the fact, as well as to be informed whether you think any measures necessary for us to take, induces us to trouble your Excellency at this time for an answer hereto. We have ordered, last night, all the militia of the counties of Ulster, Dutchess, Orange, and Westchester, to be ready, on a minute's warning, with five day's provisions. We shall wait the return of our messenger at this place, and are

“ Sir, your most obed't and very humble serv't,

“ By order, ABRAHAM YATES, jun.

“ His Excellency Gen. WASHINGTON.”

---

“ *August 30th, 1776.*

“ Sir—Your favor of this date is just come to hand. Circumstanced as this army was, in respect to situation,



strength, &c. it was the unanimous advice of a council of general officers to give up Long Island, and not, by dividing our force, be unable to resist the enemy in any one point of attack. This reason, added to some others, particularly the fear of having our communication cut off from the main, of which there seemed no small probability, and the extreme fatigue our troops were laid under in guarding such extensive lines without proper shelter from the weather, induced the above resolution. It is the most intricate thing in the world, Sir, to know in what manner to conduct one's self with respect to the militia. If you do not begin many days before they are wanted to raise them, you cannot have them in time. If you do, they get tired and return, besides being under very little order or government, whilst in the service. However, if the enemy have a design of serving us at this place, as we apprehend they meant to do on Long Island, it might not be improper to have a body in readiness, to prevent or retard a landing of them east of Harlaem river, if need be.

“In haste, and not a little fatigued,

“I remain, with great respect and esteem,

“Sir, your most obedient humble servant,

“GEORGE WASHINGTON.

“The Hon. ABRAHAM YATES.”

---

*Extract from a letter from the Hon. John Sloss Hobart, to the Committee of Safety, dated Fairfield, October 7, 1776.*

“Gentlemen—I wrote to the convention from the camp at King’s Bridge, giving an account of the progress I had made in negotiating the exchange of Gen’l Woodhull; since which I have received the melancholy intelligence of his death. The wound in his arm mortified—the arm was

taken off—but the mortification still continued, and in a few days put an end to his useful life.

“He was attended in his dying moments by his lady, who was permitted to remove the corpse to his seat, where it was interred about the 23d ulto. These particulars I have from Capt. Benajah Strong, of Islip, by whose door the procession passed in its way to St. George’s.”

Although the following ballad by an unknown hand is incorrect in supposing General Woodhull to have been engaged in the battle of Long Island, and to have there received the wounds which caused his death, yet it is so complimentary to his merits and disgraceful to the enemy, that it is thought worthy of preservation.\*

#### BALLAD

Stay! traveller, stay! and hear me tell  
A gallant soldier's fate!  
'T was on this spot brave Woodhull fell!  
Sad story to relate!

A stout brigade was his command,  
Of Suffolk's sons compos'd;  
Thus far he led his patriot band,  
And here his life he clos'd;

That time Lord Howe, from Gravesend Bay,  
His banner bold advanc'd,  
On that same dark and doubtful day,  
In evil hour it chanc'd

That Suffolk's raw, new-levied force,  
Surpris'd and overthrown,  
By sudden charge of furious horse,  
Took flight and left alone

Their chief, expos'd on battlefield,  
Without a troop or guard,  
For him to raise protecting shield  
'Gainst Britain's vengeful sword!

\* It was first printed in the *New York National Advocate*, February 28, 1821. See *Revised Incidents of Suffolk County*, pp. 590 to 599.—H. O.

He saw the desp'rate day was lost,  
He saw himself betray'd;  
Not one remain'd of all his host  
To lend him needful aid;

Forthwith fierce horsemen, gath'ring round,  
Cut off all hope of flight;  
And soon his single arm he found  
With fearful odds must fight;

Full twenty foes about his head  
Their glittering sabres flung,  
And down, on his uplifted blade,  
Swift blows descending rung!

But soon he ceas'd such fruitless strife,  
And now for quarter cried,  
Yet vainly begg'd a prisoner's life,  
For thus the foe replied:

"Who will not say 'God save the King,'  
No mercy here shall find;  
These are the terms from George we bring;  
Art thou to these inclin'd?

"If thou wilt straight pronounce these words,  
We grant thy traitor's prayer,  
And, peaceful sheath'd, our loyal swords  
Thy rebel life shall spare!

"But if this offer thou refuse,  
Thy doom is instant death;  
Then speak! thy life to save or lose!  
It hangs on thy next breath!"

The chief, indignant, answering, spake,  
"Your mercy then I spurn,  
On such base terms my life to take,  
Proud, haughty foe I scorn!

"I freely say '*God save us all*,'  
Those words include your King;  
If more ye ask, then must I fall,  
Nought else from me ye'll wring."

"No! rebel, no! 't is not enough,"  
On ev'ry side he heard;  
"And since thou art such stubborn stuff,  
Lo! *thus* we keep our word!"

Then straightway, show'ring thick as hail,  
 Their cruel blows they dealt,  
 Their countless weapons fiercely fell,  
 And many an edge he felt!

Yet still he held his trusty sword  
 Uprais'd above his head,  
 And feebly strove his life to guard  
 While he profusely bled!

"God save the king," the horsemen said,  
 At every stroke they gave;  
 "God save us all," he faintly cried,  
 "And me, a sinner save!"

Till gash'd with many a gaping wound  
 At length they smote him dead,  
 And, prostrate stretch'd upon the ground,  
 His generous spirit fled!

A more heroic, gallant end,  
 No age nor clime can boast;  
 Yet history ne'er the tale hath penn'd  
 And but for me 't were lost!

Had he thus died for ancient Rome,  
 His now forgotten name,  
 By poets' page, and sculptured tomb,  
 Had well been known to Fame!

The death of General Woodhull has also occasioned a tragedy, entitled "Kate Woodhull," from the pen of C. Edward Lester, 1849.—H. O.

---

### *Genealogical Notice of the Strong Family.*

Most, if not all, the families of the name in this and the New England States, are presumed to be descended from Elder John Strong, who was at Hingham, Mass., in 1635, and with seven associates commenced the settlement of Northampton, then called Nonatuck, in 1659. His father was Richard, who died in England. John was born at Taunton, Somersetshire, England, in 1605, and sailed from Plymouth with his family and a sister,

March 30, 1630, in the ship "Mary and John," in company with Messrs. Warham, Maverick, Mason, Clap, and others, and arrived at Nantasket in May following and settled at Dorchester, from whence he went to Hingham, and finally to Windsor, Conn., and with Roger Ludlow and others aided in the settlement of that place. He was made freeman of Plymouth Colony December 4, 1638. He married in England, but his wife either died upon the passage or soon after her arrival here. His second wife was Abigail Ford, whom he married at Dorchester, Mass., in 1630, and was the mother of his children, eighteen in number, except his son John, and an infant which died after their arrival in America. Elder Strong died April 4, 1699, at the age of ninety-four. To show the great increase of the family, it may be stated, that up to 1828 more than sixty of the name had graduated at the New England colleges, of which seventeen were clergymen.

The children of Elder Strong who survived infancy, were, 1. John, who had several children, and from whom was descended the Rev. Dr. Strong of Randolph, Mass. 2. Return, who left issue. 3. Thomas, who had sixteen children, and from whom descended the Rev. Dr. Nathan Strong of Hartford, and the Rev. Dr. Strong of Norwich, Conn. 4. Jedediah, who had twelve children. 5. Ebenezer, who had six children, and from whom the late Governor Caleb Strong was descended. He was born in 1745 and died in 1819, having been Governor of Connecticut ten years. 7 and 8. Samuel and Joseph, twin brothers, the former of whom had twelve children, and from whom descended the Hon. Simeon Strong of Amherst, Mass.; the latter died unmarried. 9. Josiah, and 10. Jerijah, of whose posterity we know nothing. The names of the eight daughters of the said John Strong were Abigail,



Elizabeth, Experience, Hannah, Mary, Esther, Sarah, and Thankful.

Jonathan, a son of the said Ebenezer Strong, had seventeen children by his first wife, Mehetabel Stebbins, and it is remarkable of the family generally, that it has been uncommonly prolific.

The said John Strong, eldest son of the emigrant, resided at Windsor, Conn., where he married Mary Clark November 26, 1656. His children were Mary, Hannah, Hester, John, Jacob, Mary (2d), and Elizabeth. He died February 20, 1697, aged about seventy. John, who was born December 25, 1665, lived at Windsor, married Hannah Trumbull of Suffield, November 26, 1689, and died 1749, aged eighty-four. His children were Hannah, Jonathan, Ann, John, who lived in East Windsor, and married a daughter of the first Governor Wolcott, and David, who lived in Bolton, Conn., and was a deacon of the church in that place, and died January 25, 1801, aged ninety-six. Jonathan, who was born April 22, 1694, removed to Bolton about the year 1721. He married Hannah Ellsworth, daughter of Job Ellsworth of Windsor. She was born February 10, 1700. They had three children, Jonathan, Charles, and Job. Job removed to Southampton, Mass. Charles lived in Bolton, and died March 5, 1810, aged eighty-two. Jonathan married Mary, daughter of Mr. Ebenezer Northum of Colchester, Conn., June 8, 1750, who was born March 13, 1725, and died December 20, 1817, in the ninety-third year of her age. His children were Hannah, Mary, Sarah, Esther, Alexander, and Jonathan.

Thomas, the third son of John above named, and grandson of Elder John Strong, married Mary Cotton, granddaughter of the Rev. John Cotton of Boston, and

had issue sixteen children, the eleventh of whom in the order of birth was Selah, the ancestor of the Long Island and Orange County families of Strong. He was born at Northampton, December 22, 1688, and while a young man came to Long Island. He settled in Brookhaven and married Abigail Terry of Southold, and by his industry acquired a good estate. He was a useful man in his day, and justly acquired the confidence and esteem of the community. He died April 15, 1732. He left five sons, Thomas, Selah, Benajah, Joseph, and Benjamin. His daughter Rachel married Captain Samuel De Honneur, whose only daughter, Joanna, born in 1731, married (lawyer) William Nicoll of Islip. The last named Thomas married Susanna, daughter of Samuel Thompson of Setauket, where he died May 14, 1760. He had one son and eight daughters; 1. Selah; 2. Abigail, who married Benjamin Havens; 3. Submit, who married Phillips Roe; 4. Ruth, who married Enoch Wickes; 5. Mary; 6. Zipporah, and 7. Susannah, twin sisters, the first of whom married William Shelton of Connecticut, and the last the Rev. Benjamin Tallmadge, Thomas Benedict, and the Rev. Samuel Taylor successively, and died a widow at an advanced age in 1836; 8. Hannah, who married James Smith; and 9. Keturah, who died unmarried.

Of the said Selah, notice has been taken under the article Brookhaven. He was born December 25, 1737, and died July 4, 1815. His children were, 1. Keturah, who was born November 4, 1761, and married James Woodhull; 2. Thomas, of whom notice has been before taken; 3. Margaret, who was born May 2, 1768, and married her cousin Joseph Strong of Orange County; 4. Benjamin, who was born April 14, 1770, and married Sarah Weekes; 5. Mary, who died in infancy; 6. William, who was born January 24, 1775, and died unmarried Septem-

ber 26, 1794; 7. Joseph, who was born December 1, 1777, and married Hetty, daughter of William Jones of New York; and 8. George Washington, who was born January 20, 1783, and married 1. Angelina, daughter of John Lloyd of Lloyd's Neck, and 2. Elizabeth Catharine Templeton of New York.

Selah Strong, second son of the above first named Selah, was born February 23, 1712, married Hannah, daughter of Nathaniel Woodhull, and settled at Blooming Grove, N. Y., where he had a family of fourteen children, whose descendants are numerous in Orange County. His brother, Benajah Strong, was born March 7, 1715, married Martha Mills November 14, 1740, and died November 10, 1772. Joseph, his brother, was accidentally drowned in Stratford Harbor, leaving a son. Another brother, Benjamin, removed to Orange County, where he had two sons and five daughters. The children of the last named Benajah were, 1. Sarah, who was born June 14, 1740, and married Eleazer Miller; 2. Charity, who was born May 13, 1742, and married Nathaniel Roe; 3. Abigail, who was born May 19, 1745, and married Richard Conkling; 4. Joanna, who was born January 4, 1747, and married General William Floyd; 5. Benajah, who was born May 9, 1749, and married first, Hannah, daughter of Jonathan Thompson, and second, Elizabeth, daughter of Ananias Carle; 6. Selah, who was born October 2, 1753, and married Sarah, daughter of Captain Nathan Woodhull, by whom he had children Benjamin, James, Henry, Julia, Ann, and Charlotte. He died January 13, 1837.

The children of the last named Benajah were Samuel, Nancy, Mary, Benajah, Elizabeth, and William, by his first wife; and Silas and Hannah by his second. He died December 29, 1795, and his first wife February 1, 1786.

*Captain Nathan Hale*

This eminent martyr to American liberty was the son of Deacon Richard Hale of Coventry, Conn., where he was born June 6, 1755; he graduated at Yale College in 1773, and was remarkable for his studious habits and gentlemanly demeanor. Possessed of genius, taste, and ardor, he early became distinguished as a scholar, and, being endowed, in an eminent degree, with those gifts and graces which always add a new charm to youthful excellence, he gained the respect and confidence of all that knew him. Being a patriot from principle, and enthusiastic in a cause which appealed equally to his sense of justice and love of liberty, he was among the first to take up arms in defence of his country, whose soil had been invaded by a hostile force, and its citizens subjected to the alternative of *determined resistance* or *humiliating submission*. The life of Captain Hale was short, but eventful. Its termination was under rare circumstances of intrepidity and cruelty. His case has been deemed parallel with that of Major André, and in some respects it was so—the nature of the service was identical. Both were young, well educated, ardent, and brave; one for his king, the other for his country; and each fell a victim to the rigor of military law. The news of the battle of Lexington roused his martial spirit, and summoned him to the tented field. Before arriving at the age of twenty-one, a captain's commission was tendered him, and he soon became an efficient officer in the continental army; where his activity, zeal, and patriotism obtained universal approbation. The company under his command, participating in the same spirit, submitted to a system of discipline before unknown to the

army and productive of very beneficial results. He entered as a lieutenant, but was soon made a captain in the light infantry regiment commanded by Colonel Knowlton of Ashford, and was with the army on its retreat from Long Island in August, 1776. He was in the detachment which destroyed the barracks on one of the islands in Boston harbor. The American forces took refuge in the city of New York, and afterwards at the heights at Harlem; and it became a matter of the utmost importance, in the opinion of the commander-in-chief, to ascertain the numerical force and contemplated operations of the enemy; for on that knowledge depended the safety of the American army, and perhaps the nation also. A council of officers was assembled, and resulted in a determination to send some one competent to the task into the heart of the enemy's camp, and Colonel Knowlton was charged with the selection of an individual to perform the delicate and hazardous service. On being informed of the views and wishes of Washington, Hale, without hesitation, volunteered his services, saying, that he did not accept a commission for fame alone; that he had been some time in the army without being able thus far to render any signal aid to his country; and that he now felt impelled, by high considerations of duty, to peril his life in a cause of so vital importance, when an opportunity presented itself of being useful. The arguments of his friends were unavailing to dissuade him from the undertaking; and having disguised himself as well as he could, he left his quarters at Harlem Heights, and, having an order from the commander-in-chief to all the American armed vessels to convey him to any point which he should designate, he was enabled to cross the Sound from Fair-



field to Long Island, and arrived at Huntington about the middle of September, 1776. When he reached Brooklyn, the British army had taken possession of New York. He was in the British camp two or three days, and examined, with the utmost caution, the fortifications of the enemy, and ascertained, as far as possible, their number, position, and future intentions; and having satisfactorily accomplished the objects of his mission, he again reached Huntington<sup>1</sup> for the purpose of recrossing the Sound. While waiting for a passage, a boat came on shore, which he at first supposed to be from Connecticut, but proved to be from the British ship "Cerberus," or "Halifax," which lay off the east side of Lloyd's Neck, to protect a body of men employed in cutting wood for the garrison at New York. On board this boat, it is said, was a relative of Captain Hale, a tory refugee, who recognized and betrayed him. He had assumed a character which did not belong to him, that of pretending to be what he was not. That he was a *spy*, could no longer be concealed, and he was immediately sent to General Howe at New York. Here the parallel between *his case* and that of *André* ceases. The latter was allowed time and an impartial trial before officers of honorable rank and character, and his last moments were soothed by tenderness and sympathy. Not so with the former; he was delivered into the hands of the infamous provost-martial, Cunningham, and ordered immediately for execution, without even the formality of a trial. The order was performed in a brutal manner on the 22d of September, 1776, and his body was buried

<sup>1</sup> The spot where Hale was captured on the Huntington shore is now marked by an appropriate monument. This locality is known as Halesite.—EDITOR.

on the spot where he breathed his last. He was, indeed, permitted to consecrate a few previous moments in writing to his family; but as soon as the work of death was done, even this testimony of affection and patriotism was destroyed, the reason assigned being "*that the rebels should never know they had a man in their army who could die with such firmness.*" In this trying hour, the use of a Bible and the attendance of a minister, which he desired, were also denied him.

Captain Quarm of the "Halifax," when he was informed of the brutalities to which Captain Hale had been subjected, is said to have expressed his sincere regret that he had not permitted him to have escaped, and was much mortified that more consideration had not been shown on board his vessel to so noble and generous a youth, who had thus gallantly and patriotically exposed his life for the salvation of his country. It is believed that he was executed upon an apple tree in Rutger's orchard, at the (present) corner of Madison and Market streets, in the city of New York. The sentence was conformable to the laws of war among civilized nations, and Hale was prepared to meet it. But the circumstances of his death aggravated his sufferings, and placed him in a situation widely different from that of Major André some years after; yet a maukish sensibility has been felt for the latter, and public sympathy invoked on his account by those who scarcely seem to recollect that so noble and amiable a being as Hale suffered in a far nobler cause—that of liberty against tyranny.

In the midst of these barbarities, Hale was calm, collected, firm; pitying the malice that could insult a fallen foe and a dying man, but displaying to the last his native

elevation of soul, dignity of deportment, and an undaunted courage. Alone, unfriended, without consolation or sympathy, he closed his mortal career. Thus, unknown to those around him, with no eye to pity, or a voice to administer consolation, fell one of the most noble and amiable youths which America could boast; with this his dying observation, "*that he only lamented he had but one life to lose for his country.*" Though the manner of his execution will be abhorred by every friend of humanity, yet there cannot be a question but that the sentence of death was conformable to the practice of all civilized nations. It is, however, but common justice to the character of Captain Hale to state, that his motives for engaging in this service were entirely different from those which sometimes influence others in like cases. Neither expectation of promotion or pecuniary reward induced the attempt. A high sense of public duty, and a hope of being in this way useful to his country, and the opinion which he had adopted that every kind of service became honorable by being necessary, were the motives which prompted him to this hazardous, and to him, fatal enterprise. To see such a one, in the bloom of youth, influenced by the purest intentions and emulous of doing good to his beloved country, fall a victim to the policy of nations, must have been wounding even to the feelings of his enemies.

When André stood upon the scaffold, he requested those around him to bear witness, that he died like a brave man. The dying words of Hale embodied a nobler and more sublime sentiment; breathing a spirit of satisfaction, that, though brought to an untimely end, it was his lot to die a martyr in his country's cause. The whole tenor of his conduct, and this declaration itself,

were such proofs of his bravery that it required not to be more audibly or more fully proclaimed. André expected honor and promotion; Hale was offered no reward, nor did he expect any. It was necessary that the service should be undertaken from purely virtuous motives, without a hope of gain or of honor; because it was of a nature not to be executed by the common class of spies, who are influenced by pecuniary consideration; and promotion could not be offered as an inducement, since that would be a temptation for an officer to hazard his life as a spy, which a commander could not, with propriety, hold out. Viewed in any light, the act must be allowed to bear unequivocal marks of patriotic disinterestedness and self-denial.

The body of André was in April, 1821, taken up by order of the British government, and transported to England, where a monument was raised and consecrated to his memory by the bounty of a grateful sovereign; and his ashes now repose among the remains of the illustrious dead in Westminster Abbey. But alas! where is the memento of the virtues, the patriotic sacrifices, the early fate of Hale? It is not inscribed in marble, it is hardly recorded in books—and there is a painful uncertainty as to the spot where he met his dreadful fate. Let then the memory of this brave and youthful martyr of American liberty, be the more cherished in the hearts of his countrymen.

Among other causes of distress in 1776, the want of provisions and clothing was severely felt by the American army. Just previous to the battle of Long Island, it was ascertained that an *English sloop*, with supplies of these essential articles, had arrived in the East River, and lay there under the protection of the ship "Asia,"

of ninety guns. Captain Hale conceived the bold project of capturing this sloop and bringing her into the port of New York, and found a sufficient number of bold hearts and stout hands to make the attempt. At an appointed hour they passed in a boat to a point of land nearest the sloop, where they lay till the moon was down; and when all was quiet, except the voice of the watchman on the quarter deck of the "Asia," they pulled for the sloop, and in a few minutes were on board. She became their prize, and the goods were distributed to those who most needed them in our army.

The father of Captain Hale was born September 28, 1717, and died June 1, 1802; having been a magistrate many years, and several times a representative from Coventry to the state legislature. He had twelve children. John Hale, one of his sons, held the commission of major in the militia of Connecticut, and was frequently a representative in the assembly. He died December 18, 1802. David Hale,\* another son, was for some years a judge of the county court; and the Rev. Enoch Hale, who settled at Westhampton, Mass., in 1779, and died in 1837, aged eighty-three, a person of extraordinary abilities, and held in high estimation, was also a son of Deacon Hale.

A meeting of the citizens of Coventry and the neighboring towns was held November 25, 1836, when a society was formed called the HALE MONUMENT ASSOCIATION, for the purpose of erecting a suitable memorial to the memory of the subject of this notice. An eloquent address was delivered on the occasion by Andrew T.

\* Father of David Hale, late of the *New York Journal of Commerce*, who was born at Lisbon, Conn., April 24, 1791, and died at Fredericksburg, Va., Jan. 20, 1849.



Judson, Esq., to which we are indebted for much of the information in this brief memoir.

The following poetical tribute to this heroic youth is from the pen of President Dwight of Yale College:

“Thus, while fond virtue wished in vain to save,  
HALE, bright and generous, found a hapless grave;  
With *genius*’ living flame, his bosom glow’d,  
And *science* charmed him to her sweet abode;  
In *worth*’s fair path, adventured far,  
The *pride* of peace, and rising *grace* of war.”

As yet no monument has been erected, nor have his ashes ever been recovered. A select committee of congress, January 19, 1836, recommended an appropriation of a thousand dollars from the treasury towards carrying the object into effect; but no action was had upon it afterwards, and it is much to be feared, though hardly possible, that so praiseworthy a design will be allowed to sleep by a legislature composed wholly of American citizens. The eminent services which Hale rendered his country, his devotion to the cause of liberty, so strongly exemplified in his memorable dying words, surely entitle him to the honor of a monumental column, to tell his story to posterity. The most effective incentives to patriotism and heroic deeds in the living, are public monuments commemorating those virtues in the dead. The Greeks and Romans well understood this, and rarely neglected to pay this tribute of gratitude and affection to the memory of their eminent public men. The British Government did not think it had discharged its bounden, but melancholy duty, till it had transported the remains of André 3,000 miles, that they might receive the attention due to them and rest in their native soil.

But where, it may be asked, lie the remains of the

chivalrous Hale? Alas! even the place of his sepulture is unknown. No marble column tells his story to his countrymen—the gallant soldier, the devoted patriot, the noble Christian, rests almost forgotten and unknown.

---

*Hon. Francis Lewis*

This estimable individual was the son of the Rev. William Lewis, a clergyman of the Church of England, and his mother a daughter of the Rev. Dr. Pettingall, also of the established church, residing in North Wales. Young Lewis was born at Landaff in South Wales, 1713, and was not merely an only child, but was left an orphan at the age of five years. Being thus early deprived of his parents, he was taken by his maternal aunt, a single lady, who took the best possible care of his health and education. She had him taught his native language, and also the Gaelic tongue in Scotland, where he was sent, while yet quite young, to some relatives in the Highlands. These languages he retained in considerable perfection to the end of his life, occasionally meeting with those with whom he could converse in them. At a more advanced age he was taken into the family of an uncle, who was dean of St. Paul's in London, where he finished his education, and left school with the reputation of a good scholar. He was afterwards put apprentice with a merchant in London, with whom he remained till of full age, and became well qualified for the business of after life.

Having now come into possession of his patrimonial estate, he invested most of it in articles of merchandise, and in 1735 sailed for New York. Here he soon after formed a connection in business with Mr. Annesley, left

a part of his goods with him, and embarked with the remainder for Philadelphia. Two or three years later he returned to New York and made it his place of business ever after. It is related of him that during the severe winter of 1742-1743, he drove a horse and sled upon the ice from a short distance above Hell Gate, through the Sound, and as far as Cape Cod in Massachusetts. He was now extensively engaged in foreign commerce and navigation, and became more intimately connected with his partner by marrying his sister, Miss Annesley. His commercial pursuits frequently called him abroad; travelling extensively in Europe, he visited Russia, and was twice shipwrecked upon the coast of Ireland.

During the French Canadian war of 1756, he was agent for the British American Colonies, and was at Oswego when it surrendered to General Montcalm, after Colonel Mersey had been killed by his side. Such was the high appreciation of Mr. Lewis' services by the British Government in this contest, that he received a gratuity of 5,000 acres of land.

His commercial relations and business became so great, as to extend to all the ports between St. Petersburg and Archangel, and over the entire north of Europe. Notwithstanding his extensive engagements in business, he was first among the sons of liberty in the early revolutionary movements of his country, and foremost among the advocates of American Independence. He was a delegate to the continental convention which met at New York in 1765, and gave his hearty support to every measure adopted by that body in opposition to the odious stamp act passed by parliament, and when attempts were afterwards made to put the law in force, Mr. Lewis withdrew from business and retired to his country resi-

dence at Whitestone in the town of Flushing, L. I. Here he continued till 1771, when he resumed his mercantile employment for the purpose of introducing and establishing his eldest son Francis in business, but relinquished it again at the commencement of hostilities between the mother country and her American colonies in 1775. On the 22d of April of that year, he was appointed a delegate from the New York provincial congress to the continental congress at Philadelphia, and was continued for 1776, when he affixed his signature to the declaration of his country's independence. He was employed by congress in the importation of military stores, and on various secret services. He had, in the summer of 1776, removed his family to Flushing. In the autumn of that year his dwelling was plundered by a party of British Light Horse, and his extensive library and papers wantonly destroyed. The enemy thirsted for opportunity to wreak their malice upon one who had done so much to oppose their violent and unjust measures, and who had even dared to put his name to a document which so forcibly proclaimed the tyranny of Great Britain, and the solemn determination of the colonies to obtain their independence or perish in the attempt. Unfortunately Mrs. Lewis fell into their power, and was retained a prisoner several months, without a change of clothing, or even a bed to lie upon. Through the exertions and influence of the commander-in-chief, Washington, she was at length released, but such had been her sufferings, that her health was seriously undermined, and she soon sank into the grave.

When the representatives of this state assembled at Kingston, in May, 1777, Mr. Lewis received a vote of thanks for his long and faithful services to the colony,

and in October of that year he was elected a member of the continental congress. The ensuing year he was re-appointed to the same office for the last time, and soon after his retirement from that body they appointed him a commissioner of the board of admiralty, an appointment which he accepted. He continued his residence at Flushing about twenty years, and then returned again to the city. Of his subsequent life, little is known, as he took no part in public concerns; but his last days were spent in comparative poverty, his large property having in various ways, been sacrificed upon the altar of his country's freedom. The life of this excellent man was, however, protracted to his ninetieth year, and he ended his days at New York, December 30, 1802.

Mr. Lewis had seven children, three only of whom survived their infancy, to wit; Francis, Ann, and Morgan. The first married Elizabeth, daughter of Colonel Gabriel G. Ludlow, formerly a resident of Queens County, and mayor of St. John, N. B., 1785, whose property was forfeited by his adherence to the enemy in the Revolution. Gabriel L. Lewis, Esq., of New York, is his son. Ann married Captain Robinson of the British navy, and had two sons and four daughters; the eldest daughter married a Mr. Robinson of the East India Company; another married the Bishop of Durham; the third the Bishop of Chester, the fourth, now living, is the wife of Lord Moncrief, judge of the supreme judicial court of Edinburgh, one of whose sons is a judge of the supreme court of Calcutta.

The Hon. Morgan Lewis, youngest son of Mr. Lewis, was born in New York, October 16, 1754, and graduated at Princeton 1773. He chose the legal profession, and pursued his preparatory studies in the office of the



late Governor Jay. In 1775 he joined the American army, was appointed a major in 1776, and quartermaster general and colonel the following year. He was with General Gates in Canada the same year (1777) as chief of his staff, and was present also at the defeat of Burgoyne. He was at Stone Arabia in 1778, and led the advance against the enemy. In 1780 he accompanied Governor Clinton to Crown Point to intercept a corps of British troops, and continued in the service till peace was declared, when he was elected to the assembly where his talents shone to so much advantage that in 1791 he was appointed attorney-general of the state. He had the honor of escorting General Washington at his first inauguration as President of the United States. In 1792 he was placed on the bench of the supreme court of the state, and in 1801 became chief justice. In 1804 he was made governor. In 1810 he was a senator from the middle district. In 1812 he received the appointment of quarter-master general in the army of the United States, and, during the war of that period, aided the operations of government with his private fortune to the amount of several thousand dollars. In 1813 he was raised to the rank of major-general, and was stationed upon the Niagara frontier, where he assisted in the capture of Fort George. After the war he returned to private life, and has been for many years president of the Cincinnati society. His wife, whom he married in 1779, was Gertrude, daughter of Robert, and sister of Robert R. and Edward Livingston. She died in 1824, while her husband survived in the full enjoyment of his mental faculties till April 7, 1844, when he died in the ninetieth year of his age. His last public appearance was February 22, 1832, when, at the request of the corporation of the

city of New York, he delivered an oration at the celebration of the first centennial anniversary of the birth of Washington. His only daughter married Maturin Livingston, Esq., who died November 7, 1847, aged seventy-nine years, leaving a daughter Angelica, married to Alexander Hamilton December 10, 1845.

---

*Egbert Benson*

This eminent jurist resided many years in the village of Jamaica, L. I., where he died August 24, 1833, aged eighty-seven. The following eloquent sketch of his life and services was kindly furnished us by his former pupil and intimate friend, the late Hon. James Kent, former chief justice and chancellor of the state of New York, who closed his useful life at the age of eighty-four years, December 12, 1847, leaving a widow, son, and two daughters.

Judge Benson was born in the city of New York, June 21, 1746, of respectable Dutch parents, and was educated at Kings (now Columbia) College, where he graduated in 1765. He was one of those sound classical scholars, for the formation of which, that learned seminary always has been, and still is, most justly distinguished. His taste for classical literature never forsook him, even during the strength and vigor of his age, and amidst the arduousness of official duties. His legal education was acquired in the office of John Morin Scott, one of that band of deep-read and thorough lawyers of the old school, who were an ornament to the city at the commencement of the Revolution. When he came to the bar, there were very few, if any, better instructed in the

ancient and modern learning of the English common law. To great quickness and acuteness of mind, and profound discernment of character, he added much deliberation and candor. He was a master of order and method in business. If he was not the first, he was one of the first proficient in the science of pleading; and his equal does not exist at the present day. But, though a strict technical lawyer, he did not cease to penetrate the depths of the science, and rest himself upon fundamental principles. He was more distinguished than any man among us, Hamilton alone excepted, for going, in all researches, to the reasons and grounds of the law, and placing his opinion on what he deemed to be solid and elementary principles. His morals and manners were pure and chaste. He was liberal and catholic in his sentiments, without the smallest tincture of fanaticism or affectation of austerity; and nothing could weaken his faith or disturb his tranquillity, though he had to pass through the storms of a tempestuous age, in which the French revolution, and the daring speculations which accompanied it, attacked equally the foundations of religious belief and the best institutions of social life.

Mr. Benson commenced the practice of the law at Red Hook, Dutchess County, in 1772; but before he had time to enter largely into business, or to acquire much more than a scanty temporary provision for his support, the American war broke out, and raised him at once to an elevated scene of action. Here his abilities and spirit were brought to a test, and proved to be of sterling value. He was present at, and guided the earliest meetings in Dutchess County, preparatory to a more organized resistance to the claims of the British Government. He took the lead in all the whig measures

adopted in that county; a more zealous and determined patriot, or one more thoroughly master of the grounds of the great national contest, did not exist. It followed, of course, that his knowledge of law and of the enlightened principles of civil liberty, and his practical and business talents, would carry him forward rapidly to places of high public trust. He was accordingly appointed first attorney-general of this state, by the ordinance of the convention of the 8th of May, 1777; and this painful and most responsible office he discharged with the utmost zeal, ability, and integrity, during the whole period of the American war, and down to the spring of 1787, when he voluntarily resigned it, on assuming other public duties. He was a member of the first legislative assembly of this state, elected in 1777. His name, in the public opinion, seemed to be identified with wisdom, patriotism, and integrity. He drafted almost every important bill that passed the assembly during the war; and it is matter of public notoriety with those persons whose memories can date back to that period, that his name truly merits this transcendant eulogy. During the war, he was the most confidential and efficient adviser of the elder Governor Clinton; and it is well known that no governor had greater difficulties to contend with, or surmounted them with better discretion and firmness. He was importuned and taxed with a perplexing variety of public concerns during the most busy and perilous period of our revolutionary history. He was president of the board of commissioners in Dutchess County for detecting and defeating conspiracies, and it was under this authority that the board, in July, 1778, sent the Hon. William Smith, the historian of New York, into the British lines, who did not fail to complain severely of

the stern and inflexible manner in which the chairman of the commissioners had executed the power. Amidst the various and important duties of his several trusts, he was brought in contact, and formed friendships with, that host of eminent men, who then swayed the councils of the state. A common sympathy, as well as a common interest, is excited and felt at times of public calamity, and leads to generous and disinterested actions. Mutual respect and strong friendships were created and subsisted between Mr. Benson and Governor Clinton, General Schuyler, Chief Justice Jay, Chancellor Livingston, Judge Hobart, James Duane, Alexander McDougal, Alexander Hamilton, William Duer, and a roll of other distinguished patriots, who adorn the page of revolutionary history; and we need no better evidence of the great and useful talents of Mr. Benson, than to know the fact, that he was admired and beloved, and his counsels and society anxiously sought after, by all the leading men of the state during the best and brightest period of our domestic history. He took a zealous part in the adoption of the Constitution of the United States, on which, as he uniformly thought and declared, he rested all his hopes of American liberty, safety, and glory. No person could be more devoted to its success. In 1789 he was elected one of the six representatives from this state to the first congress, in which he continued four years. He drew the bills organizing the executive department of the government, and he labored incessantly to further and sustain the measures that distinguished the glorious and unparalleled administration of Washington. In this situation he had the happiness to add largely to the number of his particular friends, and to associate on cordial and confidential terms with such men as



George Cabot, Fisher Ames, Oliver Ellsworth, Rufus King, William Patterson, George Clymer, and others of the same brilliant stamp, with whom there was an equal interchange of respect and esteem. As for Hamilton, he never thought or spoke of him without expressing his highest admiration of his talents, and reverence for his patriotism. Of Fisher Ames he used to say that he thought him the most perfect man he ever knew, and that he had the purity and wisdom of a *seraph*.

In 1794 Mr. Benson was called into judicial life, and appointed a judge of the supreme court of this state; in which situation he remained several years, and fulfilled all its duties with the utmost precision, diligence, and fidelity. He did more to reform the practice of that court than any member of it ever did before, or ever did since. The object of the rules of practice which he drew, was to save useless time and trouble, and facilitate business. He resigned in 1801, on receiving the appointment of chief judge in the second circuit, under a new arrangement of the circuit courts of the United States; but was deprived of the office by a repeal in the following year of the statute creating the new courts. During the remainder of his life Judge Benson was principally confined to the occasional calls of professional duty, and to short assumptions of places of public trust. He was a regent of the university from 1787 to 1802. He removed many years ago to Jamaica, where he continued during the rest of his life, boarding in the family of Mr. William Puntine. He continued to be blessed with a protracted old age, "exempt from scorn or crime," and that "glided in modest innocence away"; while the circle of his old friends and acquaintances became gradually more and more contracted, as his descending sun was

casting his lengthened shadows before him. He used to amuse himself with the publication, now and then, of short tracts on what he deemed the errors and follies of the times, for he had naturally a quick and keen perception of the false and ridiculous, and the flame of genuine patriotism never ceased to live and glow in his bosom. Of these tracts that on the *British Rule of 1756*, and his *Vindication of the Captors of André*, may be cited as examples. His writings never received the attention which their merit, contained under a forbidding exterior, justly demanded; for by his constant efforts to attain sententious brevity, he became oftentimes obscure. This great and good man survived all his cotemporaries, and seems to have died almost unknown and forgotten by the profession, which he once so greatly adorned. He was happy, however, to have preserved his mental faculties, in respect to all ancient recollections and impressions, perfectly unimpaired to the last; and died as he had lived, in the most serene tranquillity, with entire resignation to the will of God, and in humble reliance on those means of salvation upon which he placed his hope from early life.

---

*Commodore Thomas Truxtun*

Of that ardent spirit of enterprise, which, for the most important purposes, Nature has implanted in the heart of man, where shall we find stronger instances than in the biography of seamen? Inured to toil and familiar with danger, it is in difficulty and peril that they are seen to advantage; and though their country, unmindful of their services, may have treated them with coldness

and neglect, yet, generous to excess and brave to temerity, should the tempest of war lower upon her coast, in them, regardless of the bickerings of party, should we again behold the most zealous of her defenders. Thomas Truxtun, whose achievements shed lustre on the infant navy of this country, was the son of Thomas, an eminent English lawyer of the (then) colony of New York, and was born at Jamaica (L. I.) on the 17th of February, 1755. In consequence of the death of his father, he was placed (while yet a child) under the guardianship of his father's intimate friend, John Troup, Esq., of Jamaica, who bestowed every kind attention on him which his bereaved situation required. At the age of twelve he made choice of the profession of a sailor, entered on board a ship bound to Bristol, and the next year, at his own request, was bound apprentice to Captain Chambers, a well-known commander in the London trade. In the dispute relative to the Falkland Islands, he was impressed on board a British sixty-four. In 1775 he commanded a vessel which brought a considerable quantity of powder into the colony, but she was afterwards taken and condemned. Having arrived, soon after, at Philadelphia, he sailed early in 1776 as lieutenant in the private armed ship "Congress," captured several valuable Jamaica ships off Havana, and taking command of one of them, brought her safe into New Bedford. In 1777, in conjunction with Isaac Sears, known as "King Sears," he fitted out a vessel called the "Independence," of which he took command; and off the Azores, besides making several other prizes, he fell in with a part of the Windward Island convoy, of which he captured three large and valuable ships, one of which was superior to his own in guns and men. On his return

he fitted out the ship "Mars," mounting upwards of twenty guns, sailed on a cruise in the English channel, and took many prizes. Sailing in the "St. James," of twenty guns, he disabled a British ship of thirty-two guns, and returned from France with a most valuable cargo. He then settled in Philadelphia, became part owner of several armed vessels built there, and brought from France and the West India Islands large cargoes of such articles as were of the first necessity for the army. After the peace in 1783, he turned his attention to commerce, and was concerned in an extensive trade to Europe, China, and the East Indies, until the commencement of our naval establishment in 1794; when he was one of the first six captains selected by President Washington. He superintended the building of the "Constellation," of thirty-six guns, and in her he was the same year appointed, with a squadron under his command, to protect the American commerce in the West Indies; and such was his vigilance and success, that an enemy's privateer could scarcely look out of port without being captured. On the 9th of February, 1799, with the "Constellation," he engaged and captured the French frigate "Insurgente," of forty guns and 417 men, twenty-nine of whom were killed and forty-four wounded, while on board his own ship he had but one killed and two wounded. He received congratulatory addresses from all quarters, and the merchants at Lloyd's coffee-house sent him a service of plate valued at 600 guineas, with the action between the frigates engraved upon it, which offering was presented through Mr. King, our minister at London. Captain Barreau, of the "Insurgente," says, in a letter to Commodore Truxtun, "I am sorry our two nations are at war; but since I have unfor-

tunately been vanquished, I felicitate myself and crew upon being prisoners to you; you have united all the qualities which characterize a man of honor, courage, and humanity. Receive from me the most sincere thanks; and be assured I shall make it a duty to publish to all my fellow-citizens the generous conduct which you have observed toward us." Hearing that the "Vengeance," a large French national ship, with fifty-four guns and upwards of 500 men, including officers, was lying at Guadaloupe, he proceeded, in January, 1800, to that port. The ships came to action on the 1st of February, which lasted nearly five hours, when the French ship was completely silenced. But the mainmast of the "Constellation" going by the board, and a gale coming on, the French ship escaped in the night, and got into Curacoa, having 160 men killed and wounded, and nearly all her masts and rigging shot away. The "Constellation" lost fourteen men killed, and had twenty-five wounded. For the signal gallantry displayed in this action, the congress of the United States voted that a gold medal be presented to Commodore Truxtum. This was his last cruise. Having, during the administration of Mr. Jefferson, been appointed to the command of the expedition against Tripoli, and being denied a captain to command his flag-ship, he declined the service; which the president construing into a resignation of his rank, he was therefore dismissed. He retired to the country until the citizens of Philadelphia, in 1816, elected him high sheriff. He remained in that office till 1819, and died May 5, 1822, in his sixty-seventh year. He left two daughters, both of whom are married: and one son of the name of William, who died at Key West in April, 1830. Commodore Truxtun was a man of whom Long



Island may well be proud; and his excellent example and extraordinary success may serve to stimulate those who are left like him to struggle, unfriended and alone, against the difficulties of poverty and the allurements of folly.

---

*Colonel Benjamin Birdsall*

It is most unfortunately the case with many of the distinguished actors in the Revolution, and in relation to the subject of this notice in particular, that few events in their history have been preserved. The truth is, that many men of exalted patriotism, who filled their respective parts, both in public and private life, with honor and usefulness, were naturally unobtrusive, pursuing the even tenor of their way without parade or ostentation. Among those who, in the crisis that *tried men's souls*, devoted their best years to the service of their country, was Benjamin Birdsall. He was descended from an ancestor of the same name among the early inhabitants of Hempstead, who emigrated from England in 1657. He was the son of Thomas Birdsall, and was born in this town September 17, 1736. Being intended by his father for the occupation of a farmer, he enjoyed no other advantages for an education than such as an ordinary country school at that day afforded. Blessed with a good natural understanding, and having a fondness for reading, he was enabled in a few years to acquire a valuable stock of general and useful information, which subsequent observation did not fail materially to improve. He married Freelove, daughter of Major William Jones of Oyster Bay, by whom he had several children. The revolutionary contest having begun and presenting to the con-

sideration of every patriot matters of high interest, Mr. Birdsall did not hesitate as to the course he ought to pursue. Apprehensions were entertained that it was the intention of the enemy to invade Long Island, and it became indispensable that measures should be adopted to prevent or repel the attempt. Having obtained a captain's commission, Mr. Birdsall was enabled to procure about sixty volunteers, with whom he marched to the west end of the island in the summer of 1776, and aided the forces under General Putnam in throwing up entrenchments upon the heights of Brooklyn. He was not engaged in the battle, but retreated with the army to New York, marched with them when they left the city, and encamped at Harlem Heights. Soon after this event, a circumstance occurred which exhibited in bold relief the intrepidity and patriotism of Captain Birdsall. An American vessel, laden with flour for the army, had been captured by the British in the Sound; and Captain Birdsall, believing she could be retaken, offered, if the undertaking were approved by his superior officer, to superintend the enterprise in person. The proposal met the approbation of the commanding officer, when the captain, with a few select men, made the experiment, and succeeded in sending the vessel to her original destination. But it so happened that himself and one of his men were taken prisoners by the enemy. It was his fate to be imprisoned in the jail, then called the provost, under the surveillance of that monster in human shape, the notorious Cunningham. He requested the use of pen, ink, and paper, for the purpose of acquainting his family of his situation. On being *refused*, he made a reply, which drew from the keeper some opprobrious epithets, accompanied by a thrust of his sword, which penetrated

the shoulder of his victim and caused the blood to flow freely. Being locked up alone in a filthy apartment, and denied any assistance, he was obliged to dress the wound with his own linen; and there to endure, in solitude and misery, every indignity which the malice of the provost-marshal urged him to inflict upon a *damned rebel*, who, he declared, "*ought to be hanged.*" General Washington, when made acquainted with his situation, took measures to have his wife and children conveyed from Long Island to Dover, in Dutchess County, where they remained during the war. During his incarceration, Captain Birdsall was honored with the commission of colonel, and after a few miserable months of confinement and starvation, an exchange took place, by which he was again set at liberty. Some letters of Colonel Birdsall may be found in the printed correspondence of the New York Provincial Congress.

So great was the sympathy of the public for his sufferings, and confidence in his patriotism and intelligence, that in 1777 he was appointed by the convention a member of the assembly, in which body he continued till the establishment of peace in 1783. He soon after returned with his family to his farm, which he found had suffered much devastation by those who had possessed it in his absence. When the enemy got possession of Long Island in September, 1776, his house was plundered of many valuable articles. Two pair of fat oxen, six head of fat cows, thirty store cattle, two pair work oxen, two ox-carts, two horses, a good new wagon, ninety sheep, poultry, etc., were carried off. In 1794 he disposed of his farm and removed to the mills which he owned near the village of Jerusalem, where he died, highly beloved and regretted, July 30, 1798.

*Captain Nathaniel Norton*

Of the great number of native-born citizens of Long Island, who, by their patriotism, energy, and perseverance, materially aided in asserting and establishing the independence of the United States, and whose best days were honestly devoted to her service, it is to be lamented that many worthy individuals have passed into oblivion, while scarcely anything is remembered of their particular services; however much their efforts may have contributed to success in that dark and trying period of American history. In this worthy class of patriots may be reckoned the subject of this notice, yet it is evident that he performed much in the sacred cause of liberty and his country. Mr. Norton was born in Brookhaven, in the year 1742. What were the particular circumstances and employment of his juvenile days are not exactly known. At an early age he volunteered as a private in the provincial corps in the French war (which commenced in 1756), in the force commanded by Major General Bradstreet; and in the year 1760 was stationed at Oswego. Mr. Norton displayed on all occasions the characteristics of a brave and prudent soldier. In the beginning of 1776 he was appointed and commissioned as lieutenant in the fourth New York Continental Regiment, commanded by Colonel Henry B. Livingston; and continued attached to that body till toward the end of the year 1781, when the five New York regiments were consolidated; and although he was not appointed to a command in these regiments, yet such was the estimate of his services and usefulness, that his pay and appointments were continued to him during the remainder of the war; and by a resolution of congress, he became entitled

to his due succession of rank. In the same year he was secretly commissioned by Governor Clinton to obtain loans of money from wealthy whig inhabitants of Long Island for the use of the government; and thereupon the better to conceal this object and fulfil its duties, he was appointed to the command of a small national vessel called the "Suffolk," in which he cruised in the Sound, between Sands' Point and New Haven. In this business he was very successful, and obtained large sums on the faith of the government, which he regularly delivered to the governor. Captain Norton had previously done duty in the *corps de reserve* at the battle of Monmouth on the 28th of June, 1778, and was engaged with the artillery in that action. He afterwards accompanied General Sullivan in the expedition against the Six Nations, then occupying the western part of this state, but was prevented by sickness from taking an active part in the actions of Bemus' Heights and Stillwater, which led to the capture of the British army under Burgoyne. After the war, Captain Norton retired to his farm in this town and remained till 1790, when he became an elder, and subsequently a minister in the Baptist Church. He was settled for some time in Connecticut, and afterwards at Herkimer, in this state. In 1805, age and bodily infirmity made it necessary to relinquish his pastoral duties, and he spent the remainder of his days in retirement, a pension from the government enabling him to do so in a comfortable manner. His mental powers were active and vigorous, his memory retentive, and his conversation at all times interesting and agreeable. He died suddenly while on a visit to New York, the 7th of October, 1837; and his funeral solemnities were attended by his surviving brethren of the Society of the Cincinnati, of



which he was, at the time of his death, the oldest member. By his own previous desire, his body was conveyed to Brookhaven, and interred in the burial ground of the Baptist Church at Coram, on the 10th of December, 1837.

Mr. Norton was descended from a family of that name which emigrated from England, by the way of Massachusetts, to Long Island in 1660, and settled in Brookhaven. The name of this ancestor was George—he was probably the son of John, who was the second minister of Ipswich in 1636. Captain Norton had several children, of whom the late Dr. Samuel F. Norton, late of Coram, Suffolk County, deceased, was one. He died in 1840.

---

### *Melancthon Smith*

Among those who particularly distinguished themselves in the most interesting crisis of American history, none was more active and efficient than the subject of this notice. He was one of the fifteen children of Samuel Smith, a respectable farmer of Jamaica, Queens County, L. I., where he was born in 1744, and while a boy was placed in a retail store at Poughkeepsie. In 1777, such was his intelligence and character, that he was appointed first sheriff of Dutchess County, under the constitution, which he held four years, and was afterwards made judge of the common pleas. He had been a constant reader and such was the power of his memory and intellect, that he remembered and digested whatever he read. “He was (says Chancellor Kent) very amiable in his temper and disposition, of a religious cast, and very fond of meta-

physical and logical discussions, in which he was a master." In 1784 he removed to the city of New York, and formed a mercantile partnership with Hendrick Wyckoff, which continued till the death of the latter, in 1791. In 1788 he was chosen by the people of Dutchess County to the convention which met at Poughkeepsie, June 17, 1788, to consider the Constitution of the United States, prepared by the convention at Philadelphia in May, 1787. In the discussions and deliberations of this body, Mr. Smith exhibited talents and information of the highest order. He was of the anti-federal side upon the great questions which divided the opinions of his associates, and was the ablest opponent of Hamilton and Livingston on the floor of the convention. His speeches on that occasion, if fully and faithfully reported, would fill a volume of the greatest interest and value. A sufficient number of states having so decided, as to render the adoption of the Constitution certain, Mr. Smith gave up his objections in the hope of obtaining thereafter, in the shape of amendments, such alterations as might render that instrument more acceptable to the republican, or anti-federal party. "This was deemed at the time (says Judge Kent) a magnanimous sacrifice of preconceived principles and of party discipline for the national welfare, and the effort was the greater, inasmuch as he had to desert his friend, Governor Clinton, who persevered to the end in his hostility to the Constitution."

This was the termination of his political life, and he continued his mercantile business till July 29, 1798, when he died, being the first victim of that fatal malady, yellow fever, of which the whole number of deaths in that year was 2,086. His first wife was Sarah Smith of New Jersey, who died in 1770, and his second Margaret, daugh-

ter of Richbill Mott of Cow Neck,<sup>1</sup> L. I., whom he married in 1771, and by whom he had issue Richbill, Melancthon, Sidney, and Phebe. The second was a colonel during the late war and died in 1819, leaving a son, Melancthon, who married Mary, daughter of Thomas Jones, Esq. of Queens County, L. I., April 19, 1836, and is now an officer of the American navy. Sidney was a captain of the navy, and died in 1827; and Phebe, who married John Bleecker, Esq., of New York, died in 1817.

“Melancthon Smith (says Mr. Dunlap) was a man of rough exterior, powerful in bodily appearance, and undaunted in expressing his mind, which he did in plain language, but with a sarcasm that was cutting, and a humor correct and playful.” “Of him (says the biographer of Colonel Burr) it is proper to remark that he was a plain, unsophisticated man. A purer patriot never lived. Of the powers of his mind some opinion may be formed by the following anecdote: ‘Dr. Ledyard, who was afterwards health officer of the port of New York, was a warm federalist. He was at Poughkeepsie while the federal constitution was under discussion in the state convention. Smith was an anti-federal member of that body. Some time after the adoption of the constitution, Ledyard stated to a friend of his, that to Colonel Hamilton had been assigned, in a special manner, the duty of defending that portion of the constitution which related to the judiciary of the United States. That an out-door conversation between Colonel Hamilton and Mr. Smith took place in relation to the judiciary, in the course of which Smith urged some of his objections to the proposed system. In the evening a federal caucus

<sup>1</sup> Now Manhasset.—EDITOR.

was held; at that caucus Mr. Hamilton referred to the conversation, and requested that some gentleman might be designated to aid in the discussion of that question. Robert R. Livingston was at that time a distinguished leader in the ranks of the federal party. Whoever will take the trouble to read the debates in the convention, in which will be found the reply of Smith to Livingston, will perceive in that reply the effort of a mighty mind. It was a high but well merited compliment to the talents of Melancthon Smith, that such a man as Hamilton should have wished aid in opposing him.' "

Mr. Smith was also one of the commissioners in 1777 for detecting and defeating all conspiracies formed in this state, and they were empowered to arrest and examine suspected persons, and either imprison them or send them into the enemy's lines.

In the pages of the *Commercial Advertiser* of July 30, 1798, is the following eloquent notice :

" Departed this life, yesterday morning after a short illness, Melancthon Smith, Esq., in the fifty-fifth year of his age. It is a debt of justice to pay honors to men who have devoted their lives to their country. Among the patriots and zealous defenders of our national rights, was Mr. Smith. He early evinced a disposition to aid in bursting the shackles of our foreign oppressors; possessing a peculiar energy of mind and acuteness of judgment, his fellow citizens respected and esteemed him; in the stormy seasons of our Revolution, his morality and virtue gained him the confidence of a numerous acquaintance; he was at different times chosen to the most honorable stations in the gift of the people; he was a member of the provincial congress, and in that body considered as a man of the keenest penetration; and the marks of

genius and talents which he daily exhibited in the convention of this state, for the formation of a federal constitution, will never be forgotten. Envy will exert itself against a competitor whilst life remains, but when death stops the competition, affection will applaud without restraint; it is greatness of soul alone that never grows old. Having bestowed the best part of his life on his country, he has received a praise that will not decay; a sepulchre that will be most illustrious; not that in which the bones lie mouldering, but that in which his fame is preserved, to be on every occasion when honor is the employ of either word or act, externally remembered. His attachment to America never diminished: to the last moment of his existence he breathed the sentiments of republicanism. In domestic life he was of a communicative disposition, free from that hauteur, pride, and pageantry, which are never failing characteristics of a weak and ignoble mind. He was a peaceable worthy citizen, and as charitable as amiable. His morality was founded on a firm belief in the doctrines of Christ—he was a real Christian—an affectionate husband, kind father, sincere friend, and honest man.”

The character of this gentleman will long be cherished, and by none more sincerely than by those who knew him best. Educated in the principles of liberty he did not abandon them, yet he long saw with undissembled regret and mortification, the decay of those principles which secured the independence of the United States, an event to which he had so eminently contributed.

He likewise saw and lamented that system of measures which he knew would terminate in open hostilities between America and her old ally, the French nation. He gave it all the opposition in his power, but it proved unavailing, and he lived just long enough to witness the



commencement of a war, which he, in common with every good man, deprecated as the worst evil that could befall his country, a war of blood with an ancient friend and ally in the period of her greatest peril.

---

*Rev. David S. Bogart*

This pious and estimable gentleman was descended, on the paternal side, from the French Huguenots, thousands of whom abandoned their native country, on the threatened repeal of the edict of Nantes, which had been passed under Henry IV. of France, in the year 1598, for protecting the Protestants in the enjoyment of their religious opinions. His grandfather, Cornelius Bogart, was a large landowner in the city of New York, where he conducted an extensive mercantile business anterior to the American war; which he transferred to his sons Henry C. and Nicholas C. Bogart, whose voluminous correspondence with the London merchants, still preserved, exhibits the magnitude of the trade in which they were engaged. On the 19th of April, 1793, they lost their father, who died at the advanced age of ninety-four years, and whose character in all the civil, social, and domestic relations of life, was truly amiable, and justly endeared him to all that had the pleasure of his acquaintance.

Henry C. Bogart married Helena Van Wyck of Bergen, N. J., and died without issue in the West Indies, where he went on business. He was a man greatly admired for the elegance of his person, his accomplished manners, and the sterling integrity of his private and public character. His junior brother, Nicholas C. Bogart, father of the subject of this notice, continued his

mercantile business for some time after the death of Henry. His wife was Ann, daughter of Myndert Schuyler, a respectable merchant of New York, whose wife, Elizabeth Wessels, was a lady of very superior intellect and accomplishments.

During the revolutionary war, he removed with his family to Tappan, Rockland County, where he was taken prisoner by the enemy, and only through the interposition of General Washington was he released. It was at his house that the unfortunate Major André was confined after his arrest, and from whence, October 2, 1780, he was led forth to execution. At their hospitable mansion, Mr. and Mrs. Bogart were frequently visited at intervals of leisure by the commander-in-chief—and a written invitation from him to dine with him at his quarters, is preserved by the family of Mr. Bogart with pious reverence, it being in the handwriting of Washington.

The death of Mr. Bogart happened April 22, 1794, and all who knew him bore ample testimony to his many good qualities of head and heart, and to the unexceptionable character which he maintained through life.

He left two sons, Cornelius N. Bogart and the said David S. Bogart. The former was never married, and resided, the greater part of his life, in the family of his brother. He possessed a rare fund of native wit, and a happy talent of delighting those with whom he associated, which, united to an amiable and affectionate disposition, secured him the friendship and regard of many who retained their strong attachment to him through life. He died at the residence of his brother, Hempstead Harbor,<sup>1</sup> L. I., in the fifty-third year of his age.

<sup>1</sup> Now Roslyn.—EDITOR.

The Rev. David S. Bogart was born in the city of New York, January 12, 1770, and was admitted a member of the church by the Rev. Dr. John H. Livingston, at the early age of sixteen years. He graduated at Columbia College in 1790, and having pursued theological studies with Dr. Livingston, was in 1792 licensed to preach. October 14, 1792, he delivered his first sermon in the North Dutch Church, much to the satisfaction of the audience, and the next four years he labored in various places, where he attracted much attention by the elegance of his person, his polite and easy address, and by his remarkable elocution.

In 1795 he visited Southampton by an application through his friend, the Rev. Dr. Rogers, and in May following removed his family to that place; but before the assembling of the presbytery by whom he was to be installed, he received and accepted a call to the First Presbyterian Church in Albany. He proceeded thence in January, 1797; but after a few months' trial, finding his health failing, which he attributed to the climate, he acquiesced in the wishes of the people of Southampton, who were still anxious for his settlement with them, and was installed there May 31, 1798. Here he remained, respected and useful, for fifteen years, when, in 1813 he accepted an invitation to settle in the Reformed Dutch churches of Success and Wolver Hollow,<sup>1</sup> Queens County. He took up his residence at Hempstead Harbor,<sup>2</sup> midway between the two churches, the situation of which was delightful, and he had the heartfelt satisfaction of knowing that he was beloved by the people of his charge. He devoted much time, as he had always

<sup>1</sup> Now Brookville.—EDITOR.

<sup>2</sup> Now Roslyn.—EDITOR.

done, to literary pursuits, and was well read in history and *belles lettres*.

His health, which had now become precarious, induced him to dissolve the pastoral relation to his congregation in 1826, and remove with his family to the city, where he lived ever after, preaching occasionally in the vacant churches till near the close of his earthly career. This solemn event took place July 10, 1839, and that of his widow October 26, 1841. This lady, who was a bright example of female excellence, was Elizabeth, daughter of Jonas Platt and Temperance his wife (a daughter of Ebenezer Smith of Smithtown). She was the youngest of ten children, born April 14, 1774, and married to Mr. Bogart, April 29, 1792.

Her brother, Ebenezer Platt, was taken prisoner in the Revolution, and conveyed to London, where he was visited by the celebrated Mrs. Patience Lovell Wright, widow of Joseph Wright, so well known for her skill in wax modelling, in which she took the likenesses of the royal family and many of the nobility. Mr. Platt married one of her daughters, a sister to the wife of the celebrated painter, Benjamin West. Colonel Richard Platt, another brother of Mrs. Bogart, who married Sarah Aspinwall, was the officer who received the gallant Montgomery in his arms, while expiring at the siege of Quebec, December 31, 1775.

A surviving friend and early associate of Mr. Bogart, bears the following testimony to his talents and qualifications: "I can speak of him (says he) during his academic life, as a most zealous and indefatigable student, and one of its brightest ornaments, when he received his college honors. His researches in the various departments of science and literature seemed to be stimulated and

invigorated, not so much by the ordinary ambition of treasuring up the ample stores of knowledge, as by a remarkable and untiring concentration of his faculties to the simple discovery and acquisition of truth. Truth, in all its forms of beauty and grandeur, directed and controlled all his intellectual aspirations. He was, of course, highly distinguished for his attainments in mathematics, philosophy, history, and biography; but his most delightful employment consisted in investigating the pure doctrines of the Christian faith. Ardent and persevering in the studies of these great truths, he stood forth, on all proper occasions, their fearless and uncompromising advocate. Hence, in the prosecution of his great aim, he became an expert Greek scholar, and, I believe, habituated himself to peruse the pages of the New Testament, in the force and copiousness of the original text.

“Not only in his academic pursuits, but in the exercises and discussions belonging to a literary association, this peculiar devotion of his powers to the cause of truth was strikingly exemplified. Here, as well as in a society for religious improvement, he was conspicuous for uncommon quickness of perception, great perspicuity in the expression of his views, facility of diction, and a graceful and impressive oratory. The same absorbing application of his energies to the love of truth, characterized his contributions to the literary journals of the city, the effusions of his extensive private correspondence, his subsequent public ministrations in the sacred desk, and the various offices incident to his pastoral charge. In temperament he was cheerful, kind, and generous, and in his deportment uniformly bland and affable. Such dispositions could not fail to fix their impress on his social intercourse, to exhibit their lovely influence in the sincerity and constancy of his early friendships, and in



the affectionate tenderness and undying strength of his domestic attachments. To all these rare qualities of heart and intellect was united a memory of surprising vigor and tenacity, from whose rich stores all who enjoyed his acquaintance might derive instruction and gratification, ever interesting, ever new."

Mr. Bogart had eight children who lived to maturity, viz: Ann Schuyler, Elizabeth, David Schuyler, William H., Eugene, Alwyn, Alexander J., and Orlando M. Bogart, of whom the following particulars may interest the reader.

Ann Schuyler Bogart, the eldest daughter, was as much beloved for the qualities of her heart as for intellectual attainments. She married Charles Debost, a French gentleman, in 1817, and was early subjected to trials and changes, which she supported with great equanimity and Christian fortitude, retaining through life her usual fascination of manner, and possessing powers of conversation which were quite remarkable, yet cultivating also the humble graces of the Christian, as of more value than all other endowments. She was celebrated among her acquaintances for letter-writing, possessing a natural and flowing diction, purity and beauty of sentiment, richness of imagination, and uncommon versatility of description, which entitled her epistolary correspondence to publication. She had many warmly attached friends, who adhered to her through every event of her checkered life, which terminated in her fortieth year. She left four sons and one daughter.

Elizabeth Bogart, like her sister, was early distinguished for her taste and productions in literature, having been for many years a contributor to the *New York Mirror*, *Philadelphia Album*, and various other peri-

odicals in the United States. Her writings, both in prose and verse, have been extensively copied in every part of the Union, and highly appreciated for their originality and sterling worth. The tale entitled "The Effect of a Single Folly," and another called "The Forged Note," both obtained a premium, and with many other productions of her pen, met with universal admiration, as well for originality of conception as the depth of thought which they exhibited. Having devoted much of her time to composition, she is now, at the special solicitation of her friends and admirers, engaged in preparing her pieces for publication in a volume, which we hazard little in saying will be cordially approved by the literary community. (See Griswold's *Poets of America*.)

David Schuyler Bogart, the eldest son, after finishing his academic education, adopted the business of a teacher, which he pursued several years. As a mathematician, he was probably excelled by none of the present day, for when very young he could solve problems which baffled the skill of many older and abler competitors. He was the favored pupil and protégé of Robert Adrian, LL.D., the well-known professor of mathematics and natural philosophy in Columbia College, who omitted no proper opportunity of applauding the talents of his youthful friend.

William H. Bogart received a more thorough education than either of his brothers, and graduated at Yale in 1825. Few youths have been favored with talents superior to his, and they were improved by diligence and study; indeed such was the versatility of his intellect, that he might have followed with success any occupation or profession. He possessed a thorough acquaintance with the classics, and was well versed in the literature of the

day. With the history and politics of his country he was familiar, and entered with ease and good humor into every topic of conversation. He delivered numerous public addresses, and was considered an engaging, instructive, and popular speaker. He terminated his earthly course at the age of thirty-five without completing the study of any profession.

Eugene Bogart chose a less obtrusive course of life, and has hitherto devoted himself with great industry, perseverance, and success to mercantile pursuits. By which means he has risen, through every hazard and fluctuation of trade, to a high rank among the eminent merchants of New York. By unremitted exertion, punctuality in dealing and the strictest integrity, he has acquired a high reputation, and an amount of wealth that ought to satisfy the ambition of any individual. He married in 1828 Eliza, daughter of David Beck, Esq. of New York.

Alwyn Bogart gave his early attention to the medical sciences, which he pursued under the auspices of Dr. John W. Francis, a gentleman of the most exalted reputation in his profession, and graduated M.D. in 1828. The next year he was allied in marriage with Elizabeth Ludlow, daughter of Dr. Richard L. Walker, a physician of great merit, who held for many years the important station of health commissioner of the city of New York.

Dr. Bogart is well fitted for the profession which he has chosen, having all the essential qualifications of intelligence, fortitude, skill, and judgment, but he has imbibed a dislike for the practice of his art, which has withheld him in a great measure from its pursuit; consequently he has not acquired the reputation and

business which would otherwise have fallen to his share.

Alexander J. and Orlando M. Bogart, the two younger brothers, following the example of their brother Eugene, are industriously engaged in mercantile employments; and with their known perseverance, intelligence, and honorable principles can hardly fail to acquire character, public confidence, and a pecuniary sufficiency. The first married in 1829 Olivia, daughter of Captain Reuben Howland, a respectable ship-master of New York, and the latter married in 1840 Catharine, daughter of Richard Terhune, Esq., of Hackensack, N. J.

---

### *Whitehead Hicks*

The Long Island families of the name of Hicks are of English descent. Their ancestors were among those who, during the turbulent reign of Charles I., retired to Holland to avoid the persecutions of that unhappy period.

In 1641, having obtained the consent of the Dutch Government, and effected an arrangement with the West India Company, under whom the management of affairs in the New Netherlands was placed, they left Europe for America, and settled finally in the town of Flushing. The family at that time consisted of three brothers, Thomas, John, and Robert Hicks. The last named went afterwards to New England, where some of his name had previously settled, who are not unfrequently mentioned by historians as among the foremost men of that time.

Thomas, the eldest brother, located at what is called

Little Neck, and owned the farm lately belonging to Wynant Van Zandt, and now to George Douglass, Esq.

John, the second brother, is found among the patentees of Flushing in 1645, and Thomas is named in the patent of Dongan in 1685, both of whom, it is evident, were persons of substance and consideration. John became the owner of lands also in Hempstead, was a subscribing witness to an ancient Indian deed there, and subsequently removed to that town. He settled on that part of the territory now called Far Rockaway, previous to 1650. Both these brothers held offices, civil and military, and their names are found in connection with many important transactions of that ancient period, as will be seen in the course of these pages. Thomas was a captain of militia in 1686, and in 1691 was the first judge of the county of Queens appointed under the act of that year, which office he retained till 1699. He was twice married, and had by both wives six sons and four daughters. The descendants of these brothers are numerous, and diffused over a wide extent of country. Thomas, eldest son of the said Judge Hicks, married Deborah, daughter of Daniel Whitehead, one of the most extensive landowners of Jamaica, and settled at Bayside, Flushing, on the farm lately owned by Abraham Bell. He had four sons and six daughters, of whom Thomas was the first, and upon the decease of his father in 1712, succeeded to the Bayside estate. In 1738 he was appointed judge, and in 1749 first judge of Queens County, which latter office he held till his decease in 1777. He was moreover a member of assembly from 1738 to 1775. By Margaret, daughter of his uncle Isaac Hicks, whom he married in 1724, he had two sons and four daughters, viz., Catharine, who died unmarried; White-



head, the subject of this notice; Sarah, who first married her cousin, Cornelius Van Wyck, and afterwards James Burling; Gilbert, who married Mary Allen; Mary, who married Jacob Suydam; and Amelia, who became the wife of John Thorne.

Whitehead Hicks, the eldest son of Thomas last named, was born at Flushing, August 24, 1728, and being destined by his father for the legal profession, received a good preparatory education, and was then placed as a student in the office of the Hon. William Smith of New York, where he had for his associates William Smith, jun., the historian of New York, and afterwards chief justice of Lower Canada, and William Livingston, afterwards governor of New Jersey. Mr. Hicks was admitted to the bar October 22, 1750, and immediately entered upon the practice of the law in the city of New York, where he met with well merited success and shared with his cotemporaries in the best business of his profession. He rose in a few years to the highest rank at the bar of the superior courts of the province, and was esteemed in a special manner, for the integrity and courtesy which distinguished his professional and private conduct. He married, October 6, 1757, Charlotte, only child of John Brevoort, by whom, on the decease of her father, he received an accession to his fortune. He enjoyed the particular friendship and patronage of the Hon. John Cruger, a gentleman of amiable character, of great influence with the royal government, and who held the office of mayor of the city of New York from 1739 to 1744, and again from 1756 to 1766. Mr. Hicks was appointed clerk of Queens County in 1757, and retained the office till 1770, though it is probable he executed its duties during most of the

time by deputy, as he lived much in the city, where in October, 1766, he succeeded his friend Mr. Cruger in the mayoralty, who it is believed, declined the office upon the promise of the governor that Mr. Hicks should receive the appointment. His promotion was no less acceptable to the people than the discharge of his trust proved satisfactory to the government, and he was continued in the office till 1777, through a period of great political excitement, during which he maintained an uninterrupted and undiminished popularity. The subject of British oppressions was the topic of universal and never-ending discussion; and the city, like all populous towns, abounded in violent partisans and hot-blooded politicians, yet such was his influence, and such the veneration of the people for his person, that by persuading the rational, soothing the irritable, and intimidating the lawless, New York escaped those outrages and excesses which were committed by an infuriated populace in other places. In February, 1776, upon a vacancy in the supreme court of the colony, Mr. Hicks was elevated to a seat upon the bench, and thereupon retired with his family to Jamaica, where he remained a few months, when, his father dying, he took possession of the patrimony at Bayside, and there spent the remainder of his life.

It is believed that he was privately in favor of independence, but timid in disposition, and holding an important judicial office under regal authority, he concluded to remain silent on political matters, while his cautious prudence equally prevented suspicion and ill-treatment from both parties. In consequence of which, his person and property were unmolested. But he was not without apprehension that his neutrality might incur

the imputation of favoritism to one party or hostility to the other. This state of apprehension, which was wholly imaginary, produced such an effect upon a constitution naturally excitable, that it eventually hastened his death, which took place October 4, 1780, and was a subject of the most universal regret. He left issue three sons and one daughter. His eldest son, John B. Hicks, succeeded to the Bayside estate. He was a man of good mind, and twice filled the office of sheriff of Queens County. He was born January 7, 1765, married Sarah, daughter of David Titus of Newtown, and died February 7, 1828, aged sixty-three. His only daughter Susan married Mr. Robert Carter. Thomas, second son of Whitehead Hicks, born January 14, 1771, married Martha, daughter of Thomas Buchanan, by whom he had three daughters, and died July 5, 1815. Elias, youngest son of Mr. Hicks, was born December 25, 1771, and married Mary, daughter of Nathaniel Lewis of Philadelphia, by whom he had a son Elias Whitehead, and died at New York April 19, 1844, aged seventy-two. He had been editor of the *New York Daily Advertiser*, and was many years secretary of the grand lodge of Masons in this state.

---

*Captain Caleb Brewster*

Among those who engaged in defence of their country against the oppression of a foreign power, few have had the good fortune to be remembered by posterity, or to receive their due share of respect and gratitude. It therefore devolves upon the historian, when opportunity offers, to rescue from oblivion the memory of the virtues and services of those to whose exertions and sufferings

we are indebted for the many privileges we enjoy. Great were the sacrifices of those who aided in the achievement of independence, and the establishment of the happy form of government under which we live. In this array of zeal and suffering, the subject of this notice stands pre-eminent.

Mr. Brewster was the son of Benjamin, grandson of Daniel, and great-grandson of the Rev. Nathaniel Brewster of Setauket, who was the son of Jonathan, and grandson of elder William Brewster of Plymouth, one of those worthies who arrived in the "Mayflower" in December, 1620.

The father of Mr. Brewster was a farmer, and, as was too often the custom of that day, gave his son only a limited education. He was born at Setauket in 1747, and learned such branches as were taught in the country schools of that period, comprehending little else than reading, writing, and arithmetic. Being naturally of an ardent and enterprising disposition, and anxious to explore beyond the confines of his native town, he chose the life of a sailor; and at the age of nineteen engaged himself on board a whaling vessel, commanded by Captain Jonathan Worth, bound to the coast of Greenland. His next voyage was to London in a merchant ship, and upon his return he found his country involved in the revolutionary contest. His enthusiasm in the cause of liberty did not allow him to hesitate for a moment as to the course which his duty called him to pursue, and he immediately volunteered his services in securing American Independence. He was honored in a short time with the commission of lieutenant of artillery, and from that time forward was eminently distinguished for zeal and intrepidity, possessing to the fullest extent the confidence

of the officers of the army and that of the commander-in-chief. In short, such was the exalted opinion entertained of his integrity, courage, patriotism, and prudence, that in 1778 he was employed as a confidential and secret agent of congress; and he devoted himself through the remainder of the struggle to procuring and transmitting the most minute, accurate, and important intelligence relative to the movements and intentions of the enemy at different points, and particularly in New York and on Long Island; for which he was uncommonly well qualified, as well by his intimate topographical knowledge of the country as his acquaintance with the people on both sides the great political question, and therefore knew in whom, of either party, he could venture to confide. He was among those who, under Colonel Parsons, crossed the Sound to Long Island in August, 1777, for the purpose of capturing a body of British and tories, which, under Colonel Hewlett, had taken possession of and garrisoned the Presbyterian Church at Setauket. On the 23d of June, 1780, he was appointed captain of artillery, and was frequently engaged with separate gangs of marauders who sometimes extended their predatory excursions upon the main. In November, 1780, he was a volunteer with Benajah Strong and Heathcote Muirson in the expedition under Major Tallmadge to the south side of Long Island, where they surprised and took prisoners a party of British troops encamped upon Smith's Point at Mastic, and on their return destroyed a large quantity of hay and military stores at Coram. In 1781 he engaged with and captured an armed boat with her whole crew in the Sound, which he carried safely into Black Rock Harbor. Upon reporting the result of this enterprise to the commander-in-chief, he received



from him the following, in reply to his application to be allowed a more considerable force :

“Headquarters, New Windsor, Feb. 23, 1781.

“Sir—It is not in my power at present to spare any further number of men for your detachment, as I am obliged to call in many guards, and weaken other necessary ones, to support the garrison of West Point. You will dispose of the boat, and what you took in her, for the benefit of the captors. I am, sir,

“Your obedient servant,

“G. WASHINGTON.”

On the 7th of December, 1782, Captain Brewster, with the whaleboats under his command, gave chase to several armed boats of the enemy in the Sound, and after a desperate encounter, in which most of the men on both sides were either killed or wounded, he succeeded in capturing two of the enemy's boats. This action has generally been denominated, by way of distinction, the *boat fight*; and at the time was justly considered, in connection with its attendant circumstances, one of the most valorous and extraordinary engagements of that portentous period. It was indeed a truly perilous adventure; yet the contest lasted only twenty minutes, and some of his boats refusing to come up, he was compelled, from his peculiar situation, to engage with the enemy almost single-handed. During this short but terrible conflict, his shoulder was pierced by a rifle ball, which passed out at his back. His prudence and resolution enabled him to keep this occurrence a profound secret till the enemy surrendered, when he found himself exhausted from the effusion of blood. After reaching the shore, he was confined under the hands of a surgeon for some time; for the injury thus

received he was placed upon the pension roll of the army, and continued to receive a gratuity from his country for the remainder of his life. He participated in several other important and hazardous engagements, while attached to the line of the army, the interesting particulars of which it is impossible to ascertain, as none of his compatriots on those occasions are now living. On the 9th of March, 1783, he took command of a sloop at Fairfield, for the purpose of attacking the "Fox," a British armed vessel in the Sound; and as soon as he came near, he ordered his men to board her with fixed bayonets, himself leading the way. In less than two minutes, she became their prize. Captain Johnson of the "Fox" and two men were killed, and several others wounded; while Captain Brewster had not a person injured. This extraordinary exertion on his part was more than his then state of health could endure, and in consequence of it he was confined to his bed for several months. When he recovered the preliminaries of peace had been exchanged, and his beloved country had assumed her appropriate station among the free nations of the earth. In 1784 he married Anne, daughter of Jonathan Lewis of Fairfield, Conn, where he continued afterwards to reside, when not in public service, to the close of life. In 1793 he was commissioned as lieutenant of the revenue cutter for the district of New York; and such was his well-known skill and prudence, that on the death of Captain Dennis, soon after, he was appointed her commander, which office he retained till 1816, with the exception of three years of Mr. Adams's administration, to which he was opposed. In that year he retired to his farm at Black Rock, where he departed this life at the age of seventy-nine years, February 13, 1827. In stature, Captain

Brewster was above the common size, of fine proportions, a commanding countenance, a constitution athletic and vigorous, and of extraordinary activity. His talent for wit and humor was almost unrivalled, and in relating anecdotes few men could be found more entertaining.

His Excellency Governor Tompkins, Dr. Mitchell, James Fairlie, Esq., and several other gentlemen, accompanied Captain Brewster in a voyage around Long Island in September, 1809; and so highly gratified were they all with his polite attentions to their comfort, that it was resolved to present him a silver cup as a token of their obligation and regard. The fort at Staten Island, where most of the gentlemen were present, was the spot chosen for delivering the cup, on which occasion Dr. Mitchell made an address in his usual able manner, and was happily responded to by Captain Brewster. On the subject of his military services, Mr. Knox, former secretary of war, on the petition of Captain Brewster, reported to the house of representatives, the 21st of June, 1790, that "he was a lieutenant of artillery during the war, and was confidentially employed in an armed boat by the commander-in-chief, to keep open the communication between Connecticut and Long Island, for the purpose of obtaining intelligence. That he performed this arduous and hazardous service with fidelity, judgment, and bravery, and to the entire approbation of General Washington, appears by his letters written to Captain Brewster, as well as by his certificate, bearing date June 10, 1784."

His widow survived her husband several years, and died in 1835, leaving a number of children, one of whom, Sturges Brewster, Esq., has been for many years attached to the New York Custom House.

*Elisha W. King*

This gentleman, who so lately ranked among the most eminent members of the New York bar, and whose private character was as pure as his professional talents were conspicuous, was the son of Jeremiah, grandson of William, and great-grandson of John King, who emigrated from England to Salem, Mass., in 1650, came to Long Island in 1654, and settled at Southampton, from whence he removed to Southold in 1664, after the conquest of New Netherlands by the English. His wife was Frances Ludlow, whom, it is believed, he married in New England, and by whom he had issue three sons, John,\* Samuel, and William, and six daughters. These sons purchased a part of Oyster Ponds,<sup>1</sup> where they settled. Jeremiah, one of the sons of the said William, married a Miss Dominy of Easthampton, by whom he had nine sons, one of whom, the subject of this notice, was the youngest but one. He was born at Lyme, Conn., whither his father and his family had been driven by the British troops, then in possession of Long Island, March 19, 1781. Most of his elder brothers were seafaring men, and he likewise manifested a strong inclination for the same employment. And although his parents were disinclined to listen to his wishes in this respect, he resolved to accompany one of his brothers, then about to set out upon a distant voyage. For this purpose, he travelled to New York, and went, with his brother, to the office of Francis Lynch, Esq., a practising lawyer in that city, to have some necessary papers

\* Phebe, widow of John King, died at Orient, March 5, 1848, aged ninety-two.

<sup>1</sup> Now Orient.—EDITOR.

drawn for his protection as an American citizen, in case of capture. His personal appearance made such a favorable impression upon Mr. Lynch, as induced him to request the brother to leave the youth with him till he should return from the present voyage, when, if still inclined to the seas, he might accompany him on the next.

The boy was then but twelve years old, and his new friend treated him with so much kindness and affection, that he became attached to him, and was, at the time, so much pleased with reading law, that he abandoned all thoughts of the sea, and resolved to make the law his profession. For the more than parental attention of his excellent instructor, Mr. King was ever most grateful, and always spoke of his professional preceptor with affectionate respect. So assiduously did he apply himself to his juridical studies, and so great was his proficiency, that at the age of nineteen years, he felt himself qualified to pass an examination for admission to the bar. But the rules of the supreme court required all candidates for this purpose to be of the age of twenty-one years. In this emergency, Mr. King applied for direction and advice to his friend, the late Colonel Richard Varick, a veteran lawyer of the day, stating his wishes, and the obstacle that presented to prevent their gratification. The answer he received from the venerable counsellor reminded him that the *first duty of a lawyer was to keep council*, to which he added, "*keep your own council, and if no one asks your age, you need not disclose it.*"

It is almost needless to say that this sage advice was strictly obeyed, and the applicant was admitted to the bar in the year 1800. At twenty years of age, he married Margaret, daughter of Peter Vandervoort of Bed-



ford, L. I.,<sup>1</sup> a gentleman of great respectability, who had frequently represented Kings County in the legislature of the state. Perhaps no event in the life of Mr. King more advanced his happiness and success, than this first and most important one. By this means, he not only became connected with a family of great influence, but found a companion every way qualified to aid his onward course to reputation and fortune. She even assisted him in copying papers, when the urgency of his professional business made it necessary, and he ever found her, as she should be, his first and best friend in every emergency.

As an industrious and sound lawyer, Mr. King rose rapidly into public notice, and acquired in a short time a high reputation, and a profitable professional business. He was highly esteemed for his integrity, a nice sense of honor in all his engagements, and strict fidelity to the interests of his employers. Few men possessed a more pleasing or effective elocution, and his persuasive eloquence procured him great success before a jury of his fellow-citizens. His personal appearance was highly prepossessing, and he possessed a voice which was harmony itself.

The late Hon. John T. Irving, whose acquaintance with Mr. King for more than thirty years was of the most intimate kind, and who is a person well qualified to judge, thus speaks of his friend:

“Mr. King’s mind (says he) was of a varied character; for although his education had been limited, he had a natural taste for works of art, and possessed a genius which was original and refined. This appeared

<sup>1</sup> Now included in Brooklyn.—EDITOR.

especially in his pleadings at the bar, which displayed great force and originality of thought. There was nothing commonplace about him; he won the respect of his competitors by the great strength and resources of his intellect. Besides this vigor of understanding, which appeared to enlighten whatever it touched, his life was marked by a purity of purpose and by a spirit which was above every thing that was grovelling and mercenary. He was a liberal practitioner, pursuing it with an elevation of mind, and a courtesy of manner toward his brethren of the bar, which soon obtained their confidence and esteem, and which he never lost. Industrious, persevering, temperate, and frugal, his reputation increased, and wealth flowed in upon him with an unfailing stream. Riches altered him not; they only enabled him to follow out more fully the benevolent impulses of his heart; his charity was 'fertile as the Nile's dark waters, undiscovered as their source.' And many objects of his bounty knew not whence relief came, until death stopped the source."

The services of Mr. King in the municipal councils of the city will long be remembered. Elected by no party, he was the representative of his ward. Firm, judicious, independent, and conscientious, he was swayed by no selfish motive; unfettered by party trammels, he followed the dictates of his own good sense in the discharge of all his public duties. He was elected assistant alderman of the fourth ward in 1810, and was continued till 1816, when he was chosen to the legislature. He was afterwards elected alderman, and to the assembly again in 1825. One of the most important and exciting questions discussed in the common council, while he was a member, was that of the law which prohibited interments in the city, in which he took a prominent and decided stand

in favor of the act; and he lived to see it established, with the approbation of a great majority of citizens. The dignity and sanctity of the pulpit, the talents of the medical profession, the rights of property, the prejudices and sympathies of the people, and the power of family pride, were arrayed against the law and its advocate; and though he strongly sympathized with those who desire, "when life's fitful dream is o'er," to repose with their kindred dead, yet he was not moved from his purpose, considering the safety of the living of more value than a regard for the last resting place of those who die.

In 1829 he relinquished his profession, and removed to his country seat in Westchester County, where he remained till November, 1836, when, being attacked by disease, he came to the house of his son, Dr. Theodore F. King, then of Brooklyn, for medical relief. There he breathed his last on the 3rd of December following, leaving a widow and several children. His son John B. King is a lawyer, and his daughter Helen Shelton married Dr. Alexander T. Watson of New York, May 20, 1846.

---

*Henry S., Shepard A., and William S. Mount*

In addition to accounts already given of individuals whose character, genius, and labors have conferred credit upon Long Island, it affords us pleasure to be enabled to name the brothers Mount, who, comparatively young men, have earned a lasting reputation for themselves, and reflected no small honor upon the place of their nativity.

Henry Smith Mount, Shepard Alonzo Mount, and William Sidney Mount, artists, are natives of Setauket, L. I., and sons of the late Thomas S. Mount, a farmer and inn-keeper of that place, who died there October 1, 1814. Their mother was Julia, daughter of the late Major Jonas Hawkins of Stony Brook, and died November 25, 1841.

Mr. William Dunlap, whose works in every department of literature are both numerous and valuable, and who is one of the most competent judges in matters of taste and skill, in his learned and excellent history of the rise and progress of the arts of design in the United States, makes respectful mention of these aspiring youths, and to this work we are indebted for many of the following particulars, the remainder of which our own personal acquaintance with the individuals has enabled us to supply.

*Henry S. Mount*, the eldest of these brothers, was born October 9, 1802, and was placed as an apprentice at the business of sign painting with the late Lewis Childs of New York, a person of much distinction in this line. Young Mount having faithfully served the term of his apprenticeship, set up for himself and followed the business with great success till symptoms of pulmonary consumption warned him to desist, when he retired to his farm at Stony Brook. He married, December 21, 1826, Mary Ford of Morristown, N. J., by whom he had several children. The disease which had driven him from his professional employment continued its ravages, advancing slowly but steadily, until it terminated his life January 20, 1841. He was, says Mr. Dunlap, a student of the National Academy of Design, and frequently produced pictures in the gallery of Clinton Hall, which

elicited high praise from the most eminent judges, and were the subjects of general admiration. His private character was of the most unexceptionable kind—his temper mild and amiable, and in all the relations of life scrupulously honest, faithful, and affectionate. The death of such a man, under such circumstances, was generally and deeply regretted, both by his family and a large circle of acquaintances.

*Shepard A. Mount*, the second brother, was born July 17, 1804, and learned the coach-making business in the city of New Haven. He, however, early evinced a love for the fine arts, and his small attempts at portrait painting, satisfied him that by proper and laborious application, with necessary instruction, he might acquire more fame and money than could be realized from building carriages. Accordingly, on the completion of his apprenticeship, he turned his attention to this new and favorite pursuit. In the fall of 1828, he commenced drawing at the National Academy, and was, in the following spring, awarded a silver medal for one of the best drawings from the antique. He has since pursued portrait painting with such signal success, as to have made it his principal employment—indulging occasionally, however, in *landscape* and *design*, in which his fine taste for coloring has enabled him to produce very excellent specimens. Many of his late portraits possess great merit, not only as correct and faithful delineations of personal features, but as highly finished pictures. He is likewise a student of the National Academy, and does honor to himself and the institution with which he is connected. His moral reputation is unsullied, and, with the addition of a modest and amiable disposition, he is respected as far as known. On the 5th of October, 1837, he married



Elizabeth H. Elliott of Sag Harbor, and should his health be preserved, intends to make portrait painting his main pursuit hereafter.

*William S. Mount*, the junior of these brothers, was born November 26, 1807, and at the age of seventeen years was put with his eldest brother Henry, at sign and ornamental painting, but this he soon after relinquished for a higher department of the pictorial art. He has, says Mr. Dunlap, displayed uncommon talents, both in fancy pictures (or composition of figures), generally rustic and comic, and, at the same time, in portrait painting. At an early period of his career, he earnestly sought for and examined pictures by different artists; and West's *Madness of Lear* and *Ophelia*, led him to study composition. His selecting these from among many other pictures in the same place, is a proof of his discriminating eye and correct taste. In the spring of 1828, he painted his first composition picture, *Christ raising the Daughter of Jairus*; and his second, *Saul and the Witch of Endor*; both of which were exhibited at the National Academy in 1828, and attracted much attention and commendation. In 1830 he painted his first comic picture, *The Rustic Dance*, which evinced that he had discovered the path in which he was destined to excel. A constant attention to drawing—a profound study of such specimens of coloring as fell in his way, with great devotion to the study and practice of design, have already been rewarded by a skill of uncommon grade, and he now occupies, by unanimous consent, the first class for humorous and domestic scenes. Mr. Allston, than whom no better judge could be found, in a letter of August, 1834, to Mr. Dunlap, thus expresses himself: "I saw some

pieces in the Athenæum (of Boston) last year, by a young man of your city, Mount, which showed great power of expression. He has, too, a firm, decided pencil, and seems to have a good notion of a figure. If he would study Ostade and Jan Steen, especially the latter, and master their color and chiaro oscuro, there is nothing, as I see, to prevent his becoming a great artist in the line he has chosen." In addition to the admirable performances above named, he has produced, among other things, *The Sportsman*, *The Last Visit*, *The Raffle*, *The Courtship*, *The Tough Story*, *Farmers' Husking Corn*, *The Undutiful Boys*, *The Fortune Teller*, *The Haymakers*, *A Fishing Scene in Setauket Harbor*, *The Ramblers*, *The Power of Music* (drawn on stone by Noel in Paris, and published in New York, 1848), and *Cider Making on Long Island*, which last, says the editor of the *American Repertory of Arts, Science, and Literature*, is a characteristic composition, so closely painted to nature, that its location is readily discovered to be Suffolk County. Every figure (says he) gives evidence of its intention, and all the details are brought into active requisition to compose the grand whole. Indeed all the subjects chosen for the exercise of his genius are well adapted for pictorial representation and comic effect; and the artist has not failed to invest them with incidents calculated to heighten their influence.

His portraits, too, are highly praised by those who have inspected them, particularly that of the Rev. Dr. Carmichael of Hempstead; that of the Hon. Jeremiah Johnson, painted for the corporation of Brooklyn, and the more splendid full length of the Right Rev. Bishop B. T. Onderdonk in the chapel of Columbia College. In conclusion, we may add, that the private character of

this artist is, in all respects, coequal with the strength and originality of his genius.

*Contributed by the Editor*

The paintings of the three Mount brothers are today held in high esteem, particularly the work of William S. Mount. He was one of the first American artists to make a study of negro physiognomy and character. His paintings depicting rustic life on Long Island are among his best productions and are admirably executed. Their fidelity to nature, charm of treatment, and the quaint story they often tell, make an impression on the beholder not soon forgotten. They are a legacy of our ancestors' appearance and homely customs, far more important than the printed page: a means by which we can transport ourselves to the hallowed past and live over again the life of our forbears in their native environment. He can be truly called "Long Island's artist." It was his birthplace, home, and last resting place.

He was a portrait painter of great ability, leaving many canvases, and there are some who think his fame should chiefly rest on these. Among his subjects were Judge Selah Strong, Mrs. Benjamin F. Thompson, James Rivington, Benjamin F. Thompson, Rev. Zachariah Greene, "the fighting parson," General Francis B. Spinola, and General John R. Satterly, all but Rivington being natives or long time residents of the Island.

Shepard Mount died on the 18th of September, 1868, and his brother William a month and a day later. A reproduction of the latter's portrait of the author of this book can be found as a frontispiece in Volume I.

*William Moore, M.D.*

This ornament of his profession, was the son of Samuel, grandson of Benjamin, and was born at Newtown, L. I., June 17, 1754. His father was an agriculturist, and died April 7, 1788, aged seventy-seven. He had by his wife Sarah: Benjamin, Jacob, William, Sarah who died June 17, 1796, Patience who married David Titus, and Judith who married Rev. Thomas Lambert Moore and died October 18, 1834. Jacob died July 22, 1825, his wife Elizabeth September 8, 1817, and their son John, born April 17, 1787, died March 17, 1808.

Dr. Moore received the rudiments of his education under the tuition of his elder brother Benjamin, afterwards bishop of New York, and president of Columbia College. He attended lectures on medicine delivered by Drs. Clossey and Bard.

In 1778 he went to London, and thence to Edinburgh; and in 1780 graduated as doctor of medicine, when he delivered a dissertation on the bile.

For more than forty years he continued unremittingly engaged in the arduous duties of an extensive practice, particularly in midwifery, estimating his number of cases at about 3,000. He died in the seventy-first year of his age, April 2, 1824.

The medical papers of this gentleman may be found in the *American Medical and Philosophical Register*, the *New York Medical Repository*, and the *New York Medical and Physical Journal*. For many years Dr. Moore was president of the medical society of the county of New York, and an upright and vigilant trustee of the College of Physicians and Surgeons. On his death, the college recorded their testimony of his pre-eminent worth.

Dr. John W. Francis, at that time professor of obstetrics in the college, in his lecture to the class, remarked of this estimable man, as follows:

"Before I conclude," says he, "permit me to pay my feeble tribute of homage and respect to the memory of the late Dr. Moore, recently called from among us by the fiat of Providence; a bright exemplar of the virtues and the important qualifications demanded of the practitioner in that department of the profession, the duties of which I have attempted to exhibit. I am persuaded that I do not allow feelings of personal friendship to prevail over the decisions of the severest scrutiny, when I assert that no member of our profession has exhibited in his life and conduct, a more beautiful example of the dignity and benignant lustre of the medical character. Honored for many years with his friendship, and admitted to the privilege of his conversation, I was early taught to look upon him with a respect and veneration, which all my subsequent acquaintance only served to strengthen and confirm. Thousands among us can testify to the mildness and urbanity of his manners; to his tender and watchful regard for the suffering patient, and sympathizing attendants; to his warm-hearted benevolence of feeling, and devotedness to the good of all whom his eminent attainments, or the lesson of a pure and unspotted life could profit; to his strictness of moral principle, and uniform devotion to the sacred obligations of religion.

"It was but a few months ago that the governors of this institution were honored with his co-operation, and enlightened by his counsels. How great their loss has been, can only be known to those who were acquainted with the liberality of his views, and his freedom from every mean and selfish bias.

"Dr. Moore rose to his great eminence by the force



of personal and professional merit. A liberal education had prepared him to commence with advantage his medical pursuits, and amid the toil and cares of his laborious career, he ever continued to recur with ardor and delight to those classical studies, in which he had been imbued in his youth. Seldom, indeed, has it happened, that the two professions were adorned with such attainments and such private excellence, as were exhibited in the instances of Dr. Moore and his brother Benjamin, the late pious and venerable bishop of the church. While we cherish their worth, let the regret at our bereavement give place to a noble emulation of their pure virtue and active benevolence."

That he was among the most eminent and useful men which the annals of medicine can boast, is fully established by the disinterested observations of his able, learned, and scientific cotemporary, and his name adds one more to the already extended list of great and good men, in almost every department of useful knowledge who grace the history of Long Island.

The compiler cannot allow the present opportunity to pass without expressing his acknowledgments to his ingenious and accomplished friend, Dr. John W. Francis, for the important assistance so liberally afforded by him, in several biographical sketches we have been enabled to give of those worthies in the department of philosophy and medicine, Dr. Ogden, Dr. Seaman, Dr. Mitchill, Dr. Post, and others; which as it was voluntary, fully evinces, if other evidence were wanting, the goodness of his heart, his obliging disposition, and his profound respect for the memory of those who merited the love and veneration of all for their many public services, and their great private worth and excellence.

Dr. Moore married Jane, daughter of Nathaniel Fish, by whom he had issue *Nathaniel Fish*, who is unmarried; *Maria*, who married Henry C. De Rham; *Samuel*, who became a physician, and married Emily Constable; *Benjamin*, deceased; *Jane*, who married Henry Major; *William*, who married Margaret Gouverneur; *Sarah*, who married Dr. Hodges; and *Susan*, who died unmarried. The said Nathaniel F. was many years professor of the Greek and Latin languages in Columbia College, and became president thereof in 1842.

---

*Wright Post, M.D.*

This gentleman, so justly ranked among the most eminent surgeons and physicians of the United States, was the son of Jotham, who was born July 14, 1740, and grandson of Richard Post of North Hempstead, L. I., where he was born February 19, 1766. His mother was a daughter of Benjamin Wright of Oyster Bay. He is said to have possessed, from childhood, a remarkably quiet, amiable, and accommodating temper, yet was resolute and firm of purpose, industrious, and active, both in mind and body. He was never known to engage in the mischievous sports and dangerous intrigues so common at country schools; and his mother has been heard to say that his conduct was never such as to occasion her any uneasiness on his account. Little is known of his early instruction or pursuits. While a boy, he was placed under the tuition of master David Beatty, in the village of Hempstead, from whom he received the primary elements of an English education: casual opportunities for improvement enabled him to add

to his village instruction, by an attendance on other teachers of higher attainments.

In 1781 young Post was placed under the superintendence of Dr. Richard Bayley, at that time the most celebrated and skillful surgeon in the city of New York. With this eminent man, he prosecuted his studies with great zeal and success—the limited anatomical collection of his preceptor giving him a tolerably fair opportunity of securing a substantial proficiency in a knowledge of the human structure, and his surgical science being tested by practical expositions in the hands of his master, yet finding that his professional attainments might be greatly increased by foreign travel, he repaired to London in 1784, then only eighteen years old, and became a house pupil of the far famed Shelden, whose reputation as a teacher of anatomy and surgery was deservedly high. The zeal of the master was felt by the pupil, and his progress was great. He also attended the valuable lectures of John Hunter and George Fordyce.

That these great opportunities of acquiring knowledge were not lost upon him, we have the evidence, in the lessons of general anatomy and surgery, which he afterwards delivered to admiring students upon his return to his own country in the fall of 1786. His skill in the practical display of his subjects by the scalpel, was a means of adding much to the value of his oral communications. Having spent, as we have seen, about two years and a half abroad, during all which period he was closely engaged in anatomical and physiological pursuits, and in hospital practice, he commenced his profession in the city of New York, and in the following year delivered his first course of lectures on anatomy in the unap-

propriated apartments of the New York Hospital, while surgery was taught by Dr. Bayley.

But owing to the imprudent exposure of an anatomical specimen by some pupils, the business of instruction was interrupted, the building itself broken into, by what is well remembered as the "*Doctors' Mob*," and the cabinet of anatomical preparations of his first preceptor heaped into carts, carried off, and triumphantly buried.

In 1790 he married the daughter of Dr. Bayley, who now advised him to repair again to London, in order still further to carry into successful operation his intentions of a teacher of anatomy and surgery, by procuring a suitable anatomical museum. In this interesting object he was eminently successful, as he brought out with him in 1793 a collection of sound and morbid specimens, which was deservedly considered the largest and rarest in this country. It was during this second visit to Europe, that he availed himself of the valuable instructions of Cruickshank and the late Dr. Mathew Baillie. Under them, Dr. Post prepared some of the first and most beautiful injections of the absorbent system that were ever seen.

Upon the reorganization of the medical school of New York, after the revolutionary contest, by the trustees of Columbia College, Dr. Post was appointed by that body to the department of surgery, while Dr. Bayley held that of anatomy; but on his return in 1793 an exchange took place, and consequently he assumed the responsibilities of teacher of anatomy. Some of his surgical operations were of the most extraordinary nature, and attended with wonderful success. His fame increased with age and experience; and from this time till 1813—a period

of twenty years—he discharged the duties of professor of anatomy and physiology in this institution with unexampled success, while he had for associates, in other departments of the healing art, such men as Bayley, Mitchell, Hammersley, Hosack, Francis, Stringham, Rogers, Smith, Macneven, and Mott, who, upon the union of the medical faculty of Columbia College with the College of Physicians and Surgeons and the state medical school of the regents of the university, now embracing under one head the faculties of the two rival institutions, presented a confederacy of names, several of which had been long conspicuous in the various departments of physical science.

While anatomy was taught by Post and Dr. John Augustine Smith, surgery received its best illustrations by Mott; the practice of physics its soundest doctrines by Hosack; juridical medicine, now first taught in this country, by Stringham; and the collateral branches of the healing art were imparted by the lectures of professors Macneven, Mitchell, and Francis.

The health of Dr. Post was always delicate, and for the purpose of recruiting it, he made a third voyage to Europe in 1815, and returning the next year with renewed vigor, he resumed his professional duties. In 1816 he was chosen a trustee of Columbia College, which office he held during the residue of life. He was also a member of the Literary and Philosophical Society of New York, and a counsellor for several years, while he was, for more than thirty-five years, a surgeon of the New York Hospital.

Upon the decease of Dr. Bard in 1821, he was appointed his successor as president of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, which office he retained till 1826,



when he resigned his several offices in the university, and confined himself to the practice of his profession, until a short time before his death, which took place at Throgs Neck, June 14, 1828. A suitable tablet was afterwards erected to his memory in Grace Church, New York.

From this hasty outline, it will be perceived that Dr. Post was engaged for a period of nearly forty years as teacher of anatomy; and his reputation as such has rarely been surpassed. His surgical fame will mainly rest on his distinguished and successful operation in 1817 for tying the subclavian artery above the clavicle, on the scapular side of the scaleni muscles, for a brachial aneurism situated so high in the axilla as to make it expedient to tie this artery.

With other advantages in early life, and a more devoted taste for literary acquisitions, he might have shone with greater brilliancy. But he was, neither from education, or from his natural or acquired habits of reflection, qualified to distinguish himself in the ranks of medical literature; and except a very few papers descriptive of some of his most interesting surgical cases, he has left nothing as an evidence of literary talent. There is reason to believe that he was greatly averse to the exercise of writing. His introductory lectures seldom exhibited proofs of originality of thought, nor did his anatomical and physiological lectures evince any great research, beyond the plain and obvious trait, which duty and decency prescribed.

Nevertheless, as a teacher, his lectures were characterized by judgment, accuracy, and minuteness, and few have rivalled him as the expositor of anatomical science. His general learning was, however, very limited, and he was too indifferent to the improvements which the inves-

tigations of modern physiologists and pathologists have made.

His eldest son Edward, born March 15, 1791, became early eminent in the profession of his father, with whom he was associated in practice, and was a lecturer on anatomy in the College of Physicians and Surgeons, but death put an end to his bright career at the age of twenty-five years, January 26, 1816. His daughter Emily married Dr. Frederick G. King in 1825, who died in 1829, and she again married Dr. William M. Hawthorn in May, 1833.

---

*Valentine Seaman, M.D.*

This eminent physician was the fourth son of Willet Seaman, a native of North Hempstead, L. I., and a distinguished merchant of New York. He was the son of Samuel, grandson of Nathaniel, and great-grandson of Captain John Seaman, who arrived from England, and settled at Hempstead about the middle of the seventeenth century.

The subject of this notice was born April 2, 1770, and, like his father, adhered through life to the Society of Friends. Having received the elements of an ordinary medical education, he commenced medical studies under the care of Dr. Nicholas Romaine, at that time conspicuous as an able teacher of several branches of the healing art. By his connection with Queens College, New Jersey, he was enabled, with his collaborators, to impart to his scholars an entire system in medicine and surgery. The city alms house was at that time the only institution in New York in which medical instruction was imparted, and in this young Seaman entered as

resident physician; the duties of which position he discharged most worthily, aided by the practical acumen of his preceptor.

In 1791 he repaired to the University of Pennsylvania, where he attended the lectures of Shippen, Rush, Kuhn, and others, and was honored with the degree of M.D. Like almost all other candidates for popular favor in professional life he encountered many difficulties at the commencement of his medical career, and it was not till the appearance of the malignant yellow fever in the city of New York in 1795, that his merits became better known and more widely appreciated. He entered with great zeal into an examination of the nature of the pestilence, and drew up a paper of some extent on the character of the disease as it had prevailed in the city in 1791 and other succeeding years. He came to the conclusion that the disease was probably imported, and that it required a combination of local causes to give it potency.

About this time he commenced a course of lectures on midwifery in the city alms house for female practitioners, and published a syllabus of his instructions. His account of the epidemic disease which occurred in 1800, was published in the *Medical Repository*, which may be referred to for other contributions to medical science, made by him during his professional life.

Interested in inquiries of a physical nature, he was not indifferent to the Mineralogical Society of New York, which was organized about this time, and having made personal examination on the subject, he printed a small volume on the mineral waters of Ballston and Saratoga, a performance not without its use, at that early state of philosophical research into the native products of the United States.

His appointment in 1796, as one of the surgeons of the New York Hospital, in connection with Post, KISSAM, and Bayley, he held until his death, and the better to render it advantageous to the medical student, he projected, in 1811, a course of clinical surgery, while his friend, Dr. Edward Miller, assumed clinical medicine. This plan was soon after interrupted by the lamented death of Dr. Miller in the spring of 1812. The personal intimacy and friendship of these individuals was of the most cordial and confidential nature. Upon the death of his associate, Dr. Seaman paid a feeling tribute to his private character and professional worth, in a special discourse delivered in the surgical theatre of the hospital.

Dr. Seaman was conspicuously active in introducing the practice of vaccination in New York. The vaccine virus had been forwarded to the city some short time before by George Pearson of London; but Seaman, who had enjoyed a personal acquaintance with Jenner during his visit to Europe for the benefit of his health, feeling the deepest interest in the inquiry, obtained matter from a patient who had been vaccinated by Dr. Waterhouse of Boston, and who arrived here at a proper period to take the infection. With this matter he vaccinated his own son and a number of citizens. The disorder assumed precisely the description given of it by Jenner. In 1816 he published a discourse on the subject, which he had delivered before his clinical class.

In 1810-11, Dr. Seaman united with several other professional gentlemen in forming a new medical institution, which was associated with Queens College, New Brunswick, then under the presidency of the Rev. Dr. Livingston, which new organization lasted about three years. His philanthropic labors were not limited to the

profession. He was a member of the Manumission Society for the liberation of slaves and the protection of those manumitted; and for many years he was an officer of the society, which he deemed an efficient means of meliorating the condition of the African race, and, with C. D. Colden, Eddy, Murray, and others, he had reason to be gratified with the benefit resulting from his efforts.

In the winter of 1815-16, his health was much disturbed by an inflammation of the lungs, from which he was never relieved, and which ultimately terminated in pulmonary consumption, of which he died in June, 1817, in the forty-eighth year of his age. He married early, Anna, second daughter of John Ferris of Westchester, and sister of Elizabeth, who married Dr. Thomas Cock, by whom he had issue William F. V., John F., Valentine, Percival, Willet, Mariana, Anna, and Eliza.

Dr. Seaman was a laborious practitioner in the healing art; as a clinical physician he was most assiduous, and his benevolence and humanity were worthy of himself, and the respectable Society of Friends to which he belonged. Among the list of his medical pupils was Dr. Valentine Mott, who, as a practical operator in surgical science, is not surpassed by any man living.

---

*Peter W. Radcliffe*

This much esteemed and distinguished man was born in Rhinebeck, Dutchess County, N. Y., June 28, 1774. His father, William, married Sarah Kipp, a lady of uncommon abilities, in 1761: he was a captain of militia in the Revolution, and rose to the station of brigadier general. He was a member of the state legislature, and



died in 1813, leaving four sons and two daughters. Jacob, the eldest, was bred to the bar, and became in a few years so distinguished as to be made a judge of the supreme court of this state, which office he subsequently resigned. He was afterwards a member of the legislature and mayor of the city of New York. William was appointed consul at Lima, South America, and died in Brooklyn in 1842. John resides in Rhinebeck. Peter, the subject of this notice, graduated at Yale in 1793, and commenced the study of the law with his brother Jacob at Poughkeepsie, and entered upon the practice of his profession at that place. October 1, 1800, he married Elizabeth H., daughter of the Hon. John Davenport of Hartford, Conn. (whose mother was a daughter of the Rev. Noah Wells of Stamford), and removed in 1802 to the city of New York, where he soon attained to professional distinction. In 1811 and 1812 he was a member of the assembly, in the ensuing year he was chosen to the senate, and was a member of the council of appointment. Although elected by a party vehemently opposed to the late war with Great Britain, yet Mr. Radcliffe, like an honest man and patriot, advocated every measure calculated to bring it to a successful and honorable termination.

In 1825 he removed to Brooklyn and was appointed first judge of Kings County during the administration of De Witt Clinton, which office he held several years. He continued to labor in his profession till his death. In his career both in public and private, he was remarkable not only for his talents, but for the purity of his character and strict regard to moral and religious duty; in short to know him was to love and venerate him.

Although time and exertion had whitened his locks, he

preserved in all their freshness and vigor the feelings of his youth. Time, while it had wrought with its relentless energies upon his person, had not touched his heart, which, like his hands, was "open as day to melting charity." He entered with cordiality into the feelings of the young and kindled into enthusiasm in contemplating the beautiful in nature and art. Everything around him was cherished with tenderness and affection. When he came to reside at Brooklyn, it was a small village; within fifteen years afterwards it was incorporated as a city, and he lived to see it take rank among the first cities of the Union. The name of Mr. Radcliffe deserves to be placed foremost among those who assisted to elevate it to its present proud position, as the second city of the empire state.

His virtues were of the severest sort, and he looked keenly to all the relations of life, both public and private, social and domestic, with the view to a strict and intelligent performance of the obligations which they involved. The active and passive duties were equally cultivated and conspicuous. He would neither do or suffer wrong, being equally resolute to maintain his own rights, as prompt to acknowledge and respect those of others. He considered the duties of citizen as no less absolute than those of husband and parent, and consequently he felt a deep and abiding interest in whatever concerned the welfare of the people among whom he lived. Decency, good order, intelligence, public and private virtue, the efficient maintenance of the laws, and the prompt administration of civil and criminal justice, were deemed by him as matters of the highest importance to the happiness and stability of civil government.

His spotless character as a man, his high reputation as

a lawyer and jurist, his public spirit as a citizen, gave to his opinions a weight and influence, rarely possessed and exerted by others. The character of his mind was eminently conservative. He had stood near enough to the fathers of the republic to appreciate their worth, to catch their spirit and to cherish with veneration the political system which they had bequeathed as a friendly gift to posterity. His love of truth, his maintenance of right, his contempt for everything mean, and his hatred of injustice and oppression, inspired kindred sentiment in others.

To Mr. Radcliffe and Judge Greenwood, the city of Brooklyn is indebted for the best provisions in its charter, and to the former more than to any other single individual, is due the establishment of the Brooklyn Lyceum, over which he presided as first president for several years.

But his character was one to be best and most warmly appreciated and beloved in his own domestic and social circle. There the thousand little acts of kindness and affection which are never chronicled except on the tablet of the heart, like a deep, clear mirror reflected his virtues upon those to whom he was most tenderly endeared, and by whom his memory will be most fondly and sacredly cherished and regarded.

The death of Mr. Radcliffe took place in his sixty-seventh year, December 1, 1840, and a handsome, but chaste monument has been erected to his memory in the yard of the church where he worshipped. His elder brother Jacob, a man of eminence as a lawyer, who was born in 1764, and had been a judge of the supreme court of the state and mayor of the city of New York, died at the age of eighty years, April 6, 1844.

*Major General Ebenezer Stevens*

Among the worthy citizens of Long Island, whose memoirs claim a place in these pages, the name of General Stevens stands conspicuous. His mansion at Astoria (Hallett's Cove) which he occupied for twenty-five years, is still in the possession of his family. He was born at Boston 1752, his father being a native of the adjoining town of Roxbury. The stirring times and events preceding the American Revolution found him a youth still in his minority, and with the advantage of a common school education only. Yet he possessed a vigorous constitution, an ardent and energetic temperament; he was enthusiastic in the cause of American liberty, and sincerely despising the despotism attempted to be exerted over the colonies, he volunteered in a company of artillery commanded by Captain Paddock, and in this way commenced his career of military services.

He was one of the noted "Tea Party," who were foremost in the outbreak of popular feeling, and was at the head of those who threw the obnoxious article into the sea. Indeed, so little disguise was used in the affair, that Mr. Stevens, although recognized by the officers of one of the ships, yet was nothing daunted on account of the discovery from completing the work they had undertaken to accomplish. He was soon after commissioned lieutenant of a company of artillery from Rhode Island, and subsequently, by order of the commander-in-chief, proceeded in mid-winter over the Green Mountains, by way of Otter Creek and Lake Champlain, with cannon and howitzers to join General Montgomery in Canada. In this detachment, which consisted of two companies of artillery and one of artificers, he acted as captain in

command. He, however, arrived too late, and met at Three Rivers an express with the news of the defeat of the American forces, and retreated to the forts on Lake Champlain. For his conduct in this most trying expedition, which was one of the greatest suffering, he was made a major by brevet, in which capacity he commanded the artillery at Ticonderoga, Crown Point, and other places in the vicinity, under General Schuyler, and subsequently under General Gates. As senior officer of this arm of defence in the northern department, he directed the artillery operations in the encounters which led to the defeat and surrender of Burgoyne, and soon after received a brevet commission as lieutenant colonel, with a special resolution of thanks from the continental congress, for merit as commandant of the artillery of the northern department in the campaigns of 1776 and 1777.

Up to this time his command had been included in the Massachusetts line, as part of Colonel Crane's regiment, though in fact it acted as a separate and independent corps. He was soon transferred to Colonel Lamb's regiment of the New York line, in which he served to the end of the war. In 1778 he was to have accompanied General Lafayette on an expedition to Canada, but this was abandoned. He also volunteered, under Colonel Hamilton, to storm Fort Washington, but this project was countermanded by General Washington, as, in his opinion, involving too much hazard, with too little prospect of ultimate success.

The care of the artillery and ordnance departments of the army, as then constituted, fell in great measure upon Colonel Stevens, who was entrusted likewise with the defences of the Hudson River, and exerted himself in placing across it a chain and other obstructions to



prevent the ships of the enemy from ascending. He also constructed the barracks at West Point.

In 1781 he prepared a train of artillery for the southern service, and was again selected by General Lafayette to accompany him upon his expedition to Virginia. To his energy and success in transporting the whole to the head of Elk River by the time appointed, the marquis bore ample testimony. These exertions injured his health, and his family affairs requiring his presence and attention, leave was given him by the commander-in-chief to return home. But his repose was of short duration, for General Knox shortly after sent orders for preparing a more formidable artillery force to go against Cornwallis. This was collected and transported from West Point, Philadelphia, and Baltimore, by the vigorous exertions and co-operation of Colonel Stevens; and he had the further good fortune, in those extraordinary efforts which induced the surrender of Lord Cornwallis at Yorktown, to command the American artillery during the siege with great and acknowledged ability. His active military services in the Revolution here closed, though he continued his command till the army was finally disbanded. It is believed that no officer of his grade in the army rendered more arduous, various, and important services than Colonel Stevens. And although, from the nature of his command, no opportunity was afforded him, by a separate and detached service, to acquire sudden fame by any one brilliant action, yet his characteristic energy, courage, and perseverance gave assurance that an opportunity only was demanded to have signalized himself in a manner worthy of his patriotism and ambition.

Peace being restored to his country, and her independ-

ence established, Colonel Stevens entered into commercial business in the city of New York, and without the advantages of previous experience, but relying on his own prudence and foresight, he met with extraordinary success, conducting various and important concerns with foreign ports. As agent of the war department, he constructed the fortifications upon Governor's Island in 1800. He was one year in the legislature of the state, and a year in the corporation of the city. In 1812 he was again found in the service as major-general of artillery, commanding the division of artillery of the state of New York, which when an attack upon the city was expected by the ships of the enemy, was mustered into the service of the United States. At the close of the contest in 1815, he resigned his command, and withdrew from all public employment. He died at Rockaway, where he went for his health in the summer of 1823, and his body was deposited in his own vault near St. George's Church at Astoria. His wife was Rebecca Hodgson of Boston, whom he married in 1775, by whom he had four children. In 1784 he married Lucretia, widow of Richardson Sands of Long Island, daughter of John Ledyard of Groton, Conn., and sister of the brave Colonel William Ledyard, so barbarously murdered in the capture of Groton Fort, September 7, 1781, and also of the renowned traveller John Ledyard, who died in Egypt. This lady died July 2, 1846, at the age of ninety years, having been born in 1756.

---

*Nathan Sanford*

This gentleman was born at Bridgehampton, L. I., on November 5, 1777, and received his elementary education

at Clinton Academy, Easthampton. He entered college in 1793, but did not graduate. In 1797 he entered the office of the elder Samuel Jones and was admitted to the bar in 1799. By his genius and application, he soon obtained a handsome and profitable practice. In 1800 he was made one of the commissioners in bankruptcy for the district of New York, and in 1803 district attorney of the United States for the same, which last office he held twelve years. In 1811 he was a member of assembly and was chosen speaker, being the last who presided in a cocked hat, a custom which had been always observed. In 1812 he was elected to the senate, and was the firm supporter of the administrations of Madison and Tompkins, with his colleagues Erastus Root and Martin Van Buren.

In 1815 he was chosen to the senate of the United States, shortly after which he relinquished his profession, and devoted himself in his legislative capacity, to establishing and promoting the commercial interests of his country, which had been prostrated by the war, then just terminated. Soon after the end of his senatorial term, he was chosen to the convention which framed the present constitution of this state, and was one of the most useful members of that celebrated body of statesmen. In 1823 he was appointed to succeed the Hon. James Kent in the office of chancellor, which he filled till 1826, when he was re-elected to the senate of the United States, in the place of the Hon. Rufus King, by a unanimous vote of both branches of the state legislature. At the expiration of his term, he retired forever from public life and took up his residence at Flushing, where he died October 17, 1838, aged sixty-one.

Among the many eminent men to whom Long Island has given birth, there has been no one, who, during an

equal period, has served the public in positions so various and important; for it is conceded by all, that the stations occupied by Mr. Sanford demanded the exertion of the best talents and the most cultivated intellect. These he brought to their service, and they were properly appreciated by those competent to judge of them, and of their value to the country. As a public man, the efforts of Mr. Sanford were always guided by good sense, and directed to practical purposes. While in the senate of the United States he made an elaborate report on coins, which subject deeply engaged the attention of congress, and upon his recommendations its subsequent legislation was principally based. As chairman of the committee of foreign relations in 1826, he proposed a course of proceedings toward France which was sanctioned and finally adopted by President Jackson as the only proper and efficient means of maintaining the honor of the nation, and rendering full protection to the property of its citizens.

The career of Mr. Sanford as chancellor was not surpassed by either of his distinguished predecessors, and the seat so highly adorned by the learning of a Kent, was worthily filled by his successor—and both lawyers and clients universally admired the clearness, promptitude, and judgment, with which he discharged the onerous and responsible duties of his high office. Here, as in other cases, he seized upon the substantial and governing points in every cause, from which his attention could not be diverted by the ingenuity or learned sophistry of counsel; and his decisions and legal opinions were distinguished for their good sense, as well as perfect freedom from all ambiguity of style or argument. He did not, like some judges, attempt to exhaust the

subject, or make a display of legal lore, until the case was oppressed by the learning thrown around it, or the true issue lost sight of in the wilderness of authorities. He loved the science of law, regarding it as the most intellectual of all pursuits, the primary objects of which are the discovery of truth, the promotion of justice, and the protection of human rights. Few men, it is believed, were ever less exposed to obloquy or reproach from any quarter, or received greater respect from all classes, than the subject of this notice. The beauty and amiable simplicity of his life, and the rectitude of his character and conduct, secured him the respect and confidence of the whole community. He was a finished scholar, was as familiar with the French language as his own, and in after life made himself master both of Spanish and Italian. The Latin poets were his delight, and he solaced his leisure with their richness and beauty till all literary avocations ceased to afford him their wonted satisfaction, and death, occasioned by a pulmonary affection of long standing, closed his useful life, at the age of sixty-one years. His case was among the most remarkable, he having breathed with one lung for more than twenty-five years.

In person, Mr. Sanford was somewhat below the ordinary standard in height, but his very erect carriage rendered this less perceptible; his head was intellectually formed—his eye black, but mild; his countenance pleasing, and his manner bland, courteous, and dignified. Yet he was naturally secret and taciturn; and although eloquent on subjects which interested him, few men had less of what may be properly termed "small talk."

Mr. Sanford was thrice married; his first wife was Eliza Van Horne of New York, whom he married, May



9, 1801, and who died in 1811. His second was Mary E. Isaacs of New Haven, whom he married April 14, 1813, and his third Mary Buchanan of Baltimore, by all of whom he had issue. His daughter Mary married in June, 1831, Peter Gansevoort of Albany.

---

*Captain Thomas Willet and Family*

Captain Willet was born of English parents at Bristol in 1611, but was educated in Holland, and subsequently much esteemed for his good character and capacity for business. He came in 1629 to Plymouth, Mass., and in 1630 the Plymouth Company sent him to superintend their trading house at Penobscot, where he remained several years, and became conversant with the fur and Indian trade from the Kennebec to the Hudson rivers. Having attained considerable riches he settled at Swanzey, now Barrington, but in 1664 went on board of Colonel Nicoll's fleet and was present at the capture of New Netherlands in that year. He had been an assistant in the Plymouth colony in 1651 and was annually elected till 1665, when he was excused, at the request of Colonel Nicoll, who thereupon made him mayor of New York, which office he filled with ability and satisfaction till 1673; for his acquaintance with the language and customs of the Dutch made him greatly serviceable to the new government. On the recapture of the city by the Dutch in the last named year, he retired to his plantation at Swanzey, where he expired August 4, 1674. He maintained through life a reputation for integrity and firmness, and was scarcely inferior to any of the pilgrims for those high qualities which rendered them so illus-

trous. He first married Mary, daughter of John Brown of Swanzey, July 6, 1636, who died January 8, 1669, and by whom he had *Mary*, born November 10, 1637; *Martha*, born August 6, 1639; *John*, born August 21, 1641; *Sarah*, born May 4, 1643; *Rebecca*, born December 2, 1644; *Thomas*, born October 1, 1646; *Esther*, born July 10, 1648; *James*, born November 23, 1649; *Hezekiah*, born November 17, 1651; *David*, born November 1, 1654; *Andrew*, born October 5, 1655; and *Samuel*, born October 27, 1658. His second wife Sarah survived him and married John Lawrence of New York.

Thus, "on a knoll at the head of a cove in Narragansett Bay, repose the ashes of the venerable Thomas Willet. Two rude stones with inscriptions nearly obliterated by time, mark the graves of himself and his wife." The following is found upon his tomb: "Here lyeth y<sup>e</sup> body of y<sup>e</sup> worthy Thomas Willet, Esq., who dyed Aug. y<sup>e</sup> 4<sup>th</sup>, in the 64<sup>th</sup> year of his age, Anno, 1674, who was the first mayor of New York, and twice did sustain the place." Thus (says Mr. Daggett in his *History of Attleborough*) the first English mayor of the first commercial city in America lies buried on a lonely and barren heath in the humble town of Seekonk, at a place seldom visited by the footsteps of man, and a plain monument marks the spot where his ashes repose.

Of the children of this remarkable man, *Andrew* died April 6, 1712, leaving two sons Francis and Thomas, and one daughter (Francis married Mary Taylor, and died without issue, February 6, 1776; and Thomas died a bachelor in 1725). *Mary* married the Rev. Samuel Hooker of Farmington, son of the Rev. Thomas Hooker of Hartford; *Martha* married John Saffin, a lawyer of Scituate, Mass., December 3, 1658, and died

December 11, 1678, leaving eight sons; *Esther* married Josiah Flint, whose daughter Dorothy married Edmund Quincy; *Ann* married Joseph Carpenter of Oyster Bay, L. I., 1707, and died 1708. In 1710 he married her sister Mary, widow of Mr. Hooker, and had a son Francis, who inherited the Willet estate, and married Esther Helme. Their son Willet Carpenter is now in possession of the said premises. *Hezekiah* married Anna, daughter of John Brown, 2d, January 7, 1675, and was slain in the time of King Philip's war, June 26, 1676; *James* married Elizabeth, daughter of Peter Hunt of Rehoboth, April 17, 1673; *Samuel* was a highly respectable man, and died at Jamaica, L. I., in 1720. He had several sons, among whom were *Cornelius*, sheriff of Queens County in 1708, and treasurer from 1714 to 1722; and *Samuel*, sheriff from 1720 to 1724. The issue of Cornelius was *Edward*, *Charles* (married Alice, daughter of Governor Colden), *Thomas*, *John* (whose daughter Anne married David Colden, and died in August, 1785), and *Charles* (whose daughter Sarah married Robert Whiting, and died, aged thirty-eight, July 7, 1797).

Edward, eldest son of Cornelius, born in 1701, married Aletta, daughter of Samuel Clowes of Jamaica, counsellor at law, September 19, 1731, and died, aged ninety-three, in 1794. He had a family of thirteen children, among them the late Colonel *Marinus Willet* of New York was one. His brother *Elbert* died at Albany, aged ninety years. *Isaac*, another brother, volunteered on board a privateer in the French war, and was lost in 1758.

Thomas, second son of Captain Willet, born as above, 1648, was a militia colonel, king's counsellor at

New York in 1667, and died in 1677, at the age of thirty-one years. His wife Sarah Cornell married Charles Bridges in 1679, who died 1697, and she became the wife of John Lawrence, one of the patentees of Hempstead, L. I. Colonel Willet left sons *William* and *Thomas* (who was sheriff of Queens County in 1688-89, and member of assembly 1703 to 1730).

The said William died, leaving first William, second Isaac (who married Isabella, daughter of Lewis Morris, sheriff of Westchester County, 1737-1766, and died without issue), third Thomas, fourth Cornelius (who had Elizabeth, born 1772, Hannah, who married Frederick Stephens; Millie, who married Rev. George Ogilby; Mary, Rachel, Martha, and Sarah), fifth Mary, who married a Rodman, and sixth Anna, who married the Hon. David Jones.

---

*Colonel Marinus Willet*

Son of Edward, was born at Jamaica, L. I., July 31, 1740, being one of thirteen children, all of whom he survived. His mother Aletta was a daughter of Samuel Clowes, Esq., of that place. During the period of the French war, a great excitement prevailed in the colonies, occasioned by the ill success, not to say disgrace, which had attended the armies of Great Britain in the war with the opposing nation; and the subject of this notice was offered, and accepted the commission of lieutenant colonel in a provincial regiment. It consisted of three battalions of 900 men each, and was commanded by Colonel Oliver De Lancey, a brother of Lieutenant Governor James De Lancey.

The regiment to which Colonel Willet was attached, was composed chiefly of men raised on Long Island, one of whose companies was commanded by Captain Thomas Williams of Huntington, an active and courageous individual.

Colonel Willet left New York with his force May 7, 1756, and on reaching Albany, marched over to Schenectady, and thence joined the main army under General Abercrombie at the south end of Lake George. On the 5th of June they proceeded down the lake, and on arriving at the north end of it, where the enemy had a fort, landed with little opposition. The troops were shortly after marched toward Ticonderoga, where they encountered the French, and an engagement ensued, in which Lord Howe, commander-in-chief, was killed.

On this and subsequent occasions, Colonel Willet distinguished himself for his prudence, activity, and bravery; and upon his return to New York in 1757, was the means of preventing a large quantity of arms, belonging to the city, from being carried off by the British troops embarking for Europe.

In the beginning of the Revolutionary War, Willet was appointed the second captain in the first New York Regiment, commanded by Colonel McDougall, and received his commission June 28, 1775. They embarked for Albany, August 8th, and proceeded to Ticonderoga, by way of Skeensborough, where they were joined by other troops from New England. On the 29th the troops to the number of 1,000, commanded by General Montgomery, crossed the lake, and September 4th, landed on the Isle-Aux-Noix, where they were joined by General Schuyler. The capture of Fort St. Johns soon followed, and in the appointment made for the new raised



troops in 1776, Willet received the commission of lieutenant-colonel to the third New York Regiment. At the time of the battle of Oriskany in August, 1777, at the siege of Fort Schuyler (Stanwix) when General Herkimer was mortally wounded, a diversion was made in his favor by a sortie of 250 men, under Colonel Willet, and such was the suddenness of his movements, that Sir John Johnson and his regiment who lay near the fort with his Indian allies, sought safety in flight. For which brilliant exploit, congress, October 4, 1777, directed that Colonel Willet should be presented with an elegant sword in the name of the United States.

Of the court martial ordered by General Arnold for the trial of Butler, as a spy, Colonel Willet was appointed Judge Advocate. (The prisoner was convicted but his execution did not follow in pursuance of his sentence.) He was in 1779 with General Sullivan on the western expedition against the Indians, and in the winter of 1779-80 he, with 500 men and one field piece, crossed the ice from New Jersey to Staten Island in the night to attack Colonel Van Buskirk, but found that he had absconded, leaving behind him a considerable quantity of stores, which was taken possession of by Colonel Willet, and was of very great service to the army.

In 1780 he commanded the fifth New York Regiment, but nothing material occurred, so far as he was concerned, and toward the close of the year, the five regiments were reduced to two, when Colonel Willet was ordered to the command of all the levies, militia, and state troops raised for protecting the northern frontier of the state of New York, in which command he continued to the end of the war.

Immediately after peace in 1783, he was appointed

sheriff of the city and county of New York, and held the office four years. In 1790 he was sent by General Washington on a friendly mission to the Creek nation. On his route he passed through the Cherokee country, and after great suffering and fatigue reached the Creek settlement a month and a half after leaving New York. More than two weeks however expired after his arrival, ere he was enabled to obtain a meeting of the chiefs, when he announced to them the object of his journey, and received an answer in all respects perfectly satisfactory.

He set out on his return, accompanied by a delegation of native chiefs, and reached New York after an absence of little more than four months. In 1792 he was again made sheriff of New York, and was the same year appointed by Washington a brigadier general in the army, intended to operate against the North-west Indians—this he respectfully declined, as also a request that he would attend a council to be held at the Miami village, for preventing the miseries of protracted hostilities.

In 1807 he was appointed mayor of New York, an office which had been filled by his great-grandfather, Thomas Willet, 133 years before.

On the 10th of August, 1814, he addressed an immense assemblage of his fellow-citizens, in an able and eloquent manner, on the war then waged against Britain, advising a patriotic union of all parties in its vigorous prosecution, as the only certain and efficient means of bringing the contest to a speedy and happy termination. One of his last public acts was to preside as chairman of the committee for the relief of the Greeks. He afterwards mingled little in public affairs, although his counsel and advice were frequently sought, till death put an end to his career, in the ninety-first year of his life, August 23,

1830. He was buried, according to his own request, in his ordinary dress, and with his hat upon his head. His remains were deposited in a cedar coffin, the materials of which he had previously prepared, in Trinity Churchyard, and were followed to the grave by the Society of the Cincinnati, and the public authorities of the city. His son Dr. Marinus Willet, died at the age of thirty-nine years, June 18, 1840. His only daughter Margareta married James H. Ray, Esq., July 6, 1830, and his son Edward is now a resident of Albany.

---

*Rufus King*

This extraordinary statesman and patriot was the eldest son of Richard King,\* a merchant of Scarborough in Maine, where he was born in 1755. He began his education at Byfield Academy, in the town of Newbury, under the superintendence of the celebrated Mr. Samuel Moody. In 1773 he entered Harvard College, soon after which he lost his father; in 1775, in consequence of the war, the studies of the college were suspended, and the students dispersed. They, however, assembled again in the fall at Concord, under their former teacher, and continued there till the British army evacuated Boston in 1776, when Mr. King returned to Cambridge, and graduated with great reputation as a classical scholar, and as an orator of extraordinary powers, in 1777. He immediately commenced juridical studies in the office of

\* Richard King had by his first wife, Rufus, Mary, and Paulina, and by his second Richard, Sebella, Dorcas, William, Elizabeth, and Cyrus. The last of whom has often been a representative in congress from Massachusetts, and William was the first governor of Maine, after its erection into a separate state.

the late Chief Justice Theophilus Parsons at Newburyport, and was admitted to the bar in 1780. He had, however, in 1778 taken the field as a volunteer, and served under General Sullivan, to whom he was appointed *aide-de-camp*, in his enterprise with Count D'Estaing against the British in Rhode Island. In the first cause in which he was engaged at the bar, he had for a competitor his legal preceptor, Parsons. He was soon afterwards elected a representative from Newburyport to the general court or legislature of Massachusetts, in which he manifested much ability, and urged the vesting of full authority in congress to regulate the commerce of the country, and to impose such duties as might be necessary for that purpose. In 1784 he was chosen a delegate to the *old congress* which assembled at Trenton, and subsequently adjourned to New York. He never after resumed his practice at the bar. On the 16th of March, 1775, he brought forward and advocated the passage of the resolution by which slavery was prohibited in the territory north-west of the Ohio, and became an active and leading member of that body which led eventually to the establishment of the present national government. In 1787 he was appointed by the legislature of Massachusetts, a delegate to the general convention at Philadelphia, which formed the present federal constitution. The history of the world records no case of more intense interest than that which pervaded the United States in 1788. Some union of the states was admitted by all to be indispensable; but how it was to be effected with the least detriment to any, and the greatest benefit to all, was a very important and solemn matter. "The great question was," said Washington, "whether we were to survive as an independent republic, or decline

from our federal dignity into insignificant and wretched fragments of empire." In 1787 Mr. King married Mary, the only child of Mr. John Alsop, an opulent merchant of the city of New York, and a delegate to the first continental congress. (Mr. Alsop was the first president of the New York Chamber of Commerce after the Revolution, and died 1795.) In 1788 the subject of this notice removed from Massachusetts to New York; in 1789 he was chosen by the citizens a representative to the state assembly, and the same year he and General Schuyler were elected the first senators from this state under the Constitution of the United States. Mr. King, in 1794, published, in conjunction with his friend Alexander Hamilton, a series of papers under the signature of *Camillus*, on the subject of the British treaty, which helped to reconcile the people to its various and highly important provisions.

"At this time," says Mr. Sullivan, "Rufus King was about thirty-three years of age—was an uncommonly handsome man; he had a powerful mind, well cultivated, and was a dignified and graceful speaker. He had the appearance of one who was a gentleman by nature, and who had well improved all her gifts." After the expiration of his first term, he was re-elected to the senate, and in the spring of 1796 was appointed by General Washington minister plenipotentiary to Great Britain, and remained at the court of England during the residue of the administration of Washington, the whole of that of the elder Adams, and for two years of that of Mr. Jefferson, when he returned home. While abroad, he lived on intimate terms with the most eminent statesmen and literary characters; and by the mild dignity of his manners, and his talents and capacity for public business, he



acquired and maintained a powerful personal influence, which he exerted to advance the interests of his country. In May, 1806, he removed with his family to his farm at Jamaica, L. I., which he made his permanent future residence. In 1813 he was again chosen by the legislature of this state a senator in congress; and although opposed to the declaration of war in 1812, as in his opinion both unwise and impolitic, yet no man exhibited a higher degree of patriotism in supporting it, pledging his credit and fortune to the government in its prosecution, rather than it should yield any of the national rights to the enemy, or submit to an inglorious peace. At this momentous crisis, which applied the touchstone to the hearts of men, Mr. King was neither idle nor dismayed. His love of country dispelled his attachment to party. In terms of the warmest solicitude, and in strains of the most impassioned eloquence, he remonstrated with the leaders of opposition on the folly, the madness, and mischief of their course; he contributed largely of his means in loans to government, and used all his efforts to infuse courage and perseverance in others. Having done all in his power to stimulate exertions at home, Mr. King repaired to his post in congress, where he zealously supported the prominent measures of the administration to sustain the country in the severe struggle in which she was engaged. In 1816 he was the candidate of the anti-administration party for governor of this state. His nomination was made without his knowledge, and he failed of election without regret. In the summer of 1809 he lost his wife, she having been for several years in feeble health; a loss which he but too deeply felt, for she added to strong affection and humble piety, a gentle temper and a cultivated mind. In

1820 he was reëlected again to the senate, in which he continued till the expiration of his term in 1825. During this period, in 1821, he was chosen a delegate from this county to the state convention for amending the constitution; and was one of the most useful and intelligent, as well as active members of that dignified and enlightened body. Upon his retirement from the senate in 1825, with the intention of closing his political career, he was solicited by President John Quincy Adams again to represent the United States at the court of St. James. But on his passage over he was attacked by disease, which prevented him, on his arrival in England, entering upon an active discharge of the duties of his office. After remaining abroad a year, in the hope of being enabled, by returning health, to assume the high functions with which he was charged, he returned to the United States; and here, in the bosom of his family, and with exemplary calmness and resignation, he awaited his approaching end. He died on the 29th of April, 1827, at the age of seventy-two. In person, Mr. King was above the common size, and somewhat athletic; with a countenance manly, dignified, and bespeaking high intelligence. His manners were courteous, his disposition affable, and his conversation and writings remarkable for conciseness and force.

Mr. King's manner in the senate was highly dignified, and in private life, that of a polished gentleman. His speeches, in manner and weight, gave him an exalted rank. Among his superior advantages, was an accurate knowledge of dates and facts of most essential service in the senate. His two finest speeches are said to have been on the burning of Washington by the British, and on the exclusion of Mr. Gallatin from the senate, for the reason that he had not been a citizen of the United

States long enough to entitle him to a seat there. Mr. King was a trustee of Columbia College from 1806 to 1824; indeed, he was a public man throughout his long and truly valuable life, with few and short intervals; but like all other men in the country, whose pride or pleasure depends on office, he was subjected to some disappointments. Yet he may be considered as one of the most successful of the eminent men whose relations to the public endured so long. The late President Dwight observes, "there are the best reasons for believing that no foreign minister was ever holden in higher estimation by the British Government than Mr. King."

He had five sons, but no daughters. *John Alsop*,<sup>1</sup> his eldest son, was born in 1788, and was bred to the law, which he relinquished in 1816, and retired to his farm at Jamaica, having in 1810 married Mary, daughter of Cornelius Ray of New York. In 1825 he accompanied his father as secretary of legation to the court of St. James, and on his death in 1827, took possession of the paternal estate in Jamaica, upon which he has since resided. He has been a member of the state senate, a representative in congress, and frequently represented Queens County in the assembly, and always with distinguished ability. His eldest daughter *Mary* married P. M. Nightengale of Georgia, November 16, 1836; his daughter *Elizabeth* married Henry Van Rennselaer of St. Lawrence County, New York, August 22, 1833; and his daughter *Caroline* married her cousin James Gore King, jun., September 7, 1843. His son *John Alsop* married, February 28, 1839, Mary Colden, daughter of Philip Rhinelanders.

*Charles King*, second son, born in 1789, was many years a partner of Archibald Gracie of New York City,

<sup>1</sup> Mr. King was governor of New York State, 1857-59.—EDITOR.

whose daughter Eliza he married in 1810. Her death took place in 1824, and in 1826 he married Henrietta, daughter of Nicholas Low of New York. For more than twenty years he was sole editor and proprietor of a well conducted newspaper in the city of New York, entitled the *New York American*, which he discontinued February 15, 1845, and became interested in the *New York Courier and Enquirer*, in conjunction with James Watson Webb. His son *Archibald Gracie* married a daughter of William A. Duer, late president of Columbia College, in May, 1845.

*James Gore King*, third son, was born 1791, graduated at Harvard in 1810, and applied himself to the law, which he relinquished for commercial pursuits, and has been for many years at the head of one of the first banking houses in this county. He married Sarah Rogers, daughter of the said Archibald Gracie, February 4, 1813.

*Edward King*, fourth son, born in 1795, also applied himself to the profession of the law, and settled in the practice at Chillicothe, Ohio, and was frequently a member of the legislature of that state. In 1816 he married Sarah, daughter of Governor Thomas Worthington, and died at the age of forty-two.

*Frederick Gore King*, youngest son of Mr. King, was born in London during the mission of his father to Great Britain, in 1802, graduated at Harvard in 1821, and was educated for and practised as a physician and surgeon with great promise in the city of New York. In 1825 he married Emily, daughter of his medical preceptor Dr. Wright Post, but was cut off from all the bright prospects of life at the age of twenty-seven years, April 23, 1829; and his widow in May, 1833, married Dr. William M. Hawthorne. "Dr. King," says the Rev. Charles

W. Upham of Salem, Mass., "was a brilliant and accomplished youth; of polished manners and of unrivalled conversational powers." He was pre-eminent as an orator, having inherited in full measure his father's powers in that respect. Had his application equalled his genius, and his course of life led him to a similar field, he would have attained to an eminence equal to his father's. He delighted in the spontaneous and sportful exercise of his extraordinary genius, rather than in patient and laborious study; and circumstances led him to a profession in which his peculiar powers of persuasion and eloquence would hardly have had an opportunity of displaying themselves, had his valuable life been preserved. But yet such were the resources of his intellect and the energy of his spirit, that there is no doubt but he would have attained the highest distinction in the profession he had chosen for the display of his talents and usefulness.

---

*Samuel Jones*

The first American ancestor of this gentleman was Major Thomas Jones, who emigrated from Ireland to Rhode Island in 1692 and married Freelove, daughter of Thomas Townsend, from whom, in 1696, they received a large and valuable tract of land on Long Island, called *Fort Neck*.<sup>1</sup> Here Mr. Jones erected a dwelling, which stood 140 years, and was known to travellers as the *old brick house*.

Of the many traditions in relation to this extraordinary personage, very little can be relied upon. That

<sup>1</sup> On the south shore in Oyster Bay town.—EDITOR.



he was in some way connected with the buccaneers of that period is not improbable, for he had been a soldier at the famous battle of the Boyne, fought between the English under William III., and the Irish under James II. in 1690; and as an acknowledgment for services rendered by him, he received from his royal master a commission to cruise against Spanish property, which, in all probability, he made liberal use of, and thereby accumulated considerable wealth. Some trophies of his enterprises are still preserved by his descendants, particularly a chest of drawers, curiously inlaid with various kinds of wood. He entered largely into the commerce of that day, the taking of whales along shore, which gave much employment to the Indians, who were very expert in that business. In 1704 he was commissioned by Lord Cornbury sheriff of Queens County, and in 1710 was appointed ranger general for the island of Nassau.

He died in 1713, and, agreeably to his own desire, was interred on the site of an old Indian fort near the creek, at the bottom of the upland, upon his own farm. The inscription at his grave, written by himself, is as follows:

*"From distant lands, to this wild waste he came,  
This seat he chose, and here he fixed his name:  
Long may his sons this peaceful spot enjoy,  
And no ill fate their offspring e'er annoy."*

His widow after his death married Major Timothy Bagley, a retired British officer, and died in July, 1726. Major Jones left issue David, Thomas, William, Margaret, Sarah, Elizabeth, and Freelove. Of these, Thomas was drowned in the Sound, unmarried.\* Margaret mar-

\* *New York, November 23, 1741.* We are informed from Oyster Bay that the ferryboat of Major Thomas Jones was overset in the Sound on 13th inst., and that he, his negro, three men, and one woman, with six horses were drowned.

ried Ezekiel Smith; Sarah married Gerardus Clowes; Elizabeth married Jacamiah Mitchell; and Freelove married Thomas Smith.

David Jones, eldest son, was born September, 1699, and to him was devised, intail, most of the paternal estate. Being educated for a lawyer, and possessed of a powerful intellect, he became greatly distinguished in his profession, and was esteemed a man of very superior juridical attainments. In 1737 he was chosen to the provincial assembly, and was continued in that body till 1758. For thirteen years he filled the office of speaker, and had the firmness on one occasion to close the doors of the assembly against the governor until a bill then under discussion could be passed, and which his excellency intended to defeat by prorogation. He married Anne, daughter of Colonel William Willet, by whom he had issue Thomas, David, William, Arabella, Mary, and Anne; she died January 31, 1751. His second wife was Mary, widow of John Tredwell, by whom he had no children.

In 1758 he was appointed a judge of the supreme court of the colony, which office he held till 1773. His death occurred October 11, 1775. During his whole life, and in every situation, he proved the unyielding advocate of the rights of the people, and few men ever shared more largely in the public confidence and respect.

By suffering a *common recovery*, his life estate was converted into a fee, which he devised to his eldest son Thomas for life, with remainder, on failure of issue, to the testator's eldest daughter Arabella, and her issue in tail. The said Thomas Jones (commonly called Judge Jones) graduated at Yale College 1750, and was admitted to the bar in 1755, and in 1770 was appointed

clerk of Queens County, which office he held till 1775. He was made recorder of New York in 1769, and remained four years in that office, being succeeded a few years later by his nephew, the subject of this notice. He married, December 13, 1762, Ann, a daughter of the Hon. James De Lancey, but had no issue. The stately mansion now occupied by General Thomas Floyd Jones, was completed by Judge Jones a short time before the Revolutionary War. He was appointed a judge of the supreme court, which office he held during the war by royal commission, which probably led to the confiscation of his estate and his own expatriation. He went to England, where he remained till his death, many years after. His brother David was a lieutenant of horse in the British service, and died at Fort Frontenac in 1758. His sister Mary married her cousin Thomas Jones, son of her uncle William; and Anne, her sister, became the wife of John Gale of Orange County.

William Jones, third son of Major Thomas Jones, born April 25, 1708, married Phebe, daughter of the second Colonel John, and great-granddaughter of Robert Jackson, the patentee, by whom he had sixteen children, fourteen of whom lived to have families. He was a highly respectable and intelligent farmer and resided at West Neck, where his grandson Thomas Jones now lives. His death took place August 29, 1779, and that of his widow, May 10, 1800. His children who survived him were: David, Samuel, Thomas, Gilbert, John,\* Walter, Richard, Hallett, Frelove, Elizabeth, Margaret, and Phebe, all of whom left issue. Of these Frelove married Benjamin Birdsall, afterwards a revolutionary colonel; Elizabeth married Jacob Conkling; Margaret married Townsend

\* John had John H., William, Walter, and Charles.

Hewlett, and was the mother of William M. and John J. Hewlett; Phebe married Benjamin Rowland; Sarah married John Willis, and died September 16, 1844, aged eighty-four; William married Mary, daughter of one Townsend, and had Townsend and Samuel, the last of whom died May 19, 1836, aged seventy-one, leaving his large property to the towns of Oyster Bay and North Hempstead, which was called the *Jones's Fund* for the support of the poor. Walter\* died May 7, 1828, and Hallett died February 29, 1836, aged seventy-six. Nearly all left issue.

Samuel, second son of said William Jones, the subject of this notice, was born July 26, 1734. His education was quite limited, and while young, he chose the occupation of a sailor, in which capacity he made several voyages to Europe in the merchant service. He was ultimately deterred from prosecuting the business further by the impressions made upon the imagination of his mother in a dream, in which she fancied the loss of the vessel in which he was about to embark upon another voyage. He was next placed in the office of William Smith, an eminent lawyer and historian of New York, and subsequently a judge in Canada. Mr. Jones was in due time admitted to the bar, and in a surprisingly short period found himself surrounded by friends and honored with an extensive and lucrative practice. For his exemplary industry, high attainments, and great purity of character, he presented a model for the imitation of all who aimed at distinction in jurisprudence. His office was sought by students, and, besides the late De Witt Clinton, he instructed many who afterwards rose to much distinction. At the close of the

\* Walter married a daughter of one Willis, and had Townsend, Sally, Mary, and Abigail.

revolutionary contest, he was called into the public councils, and continued to fill important and responsible offices till age admonished him to retire to private life. He spent the remainder of his days upon his farm at West Neck, indulging his taste for reading and observation, the fruits of which were communicated to the world through the medium of the press. Such was the estimation in which he was held by the legal profession, that his opinions were generally acquiesced in for their accuracy and justice. He was often in the assembly; and in 1788 was a member of the convention that adopted the Constitution of the United States, of which body his intimate friend, George Clinton, was president. It is well known that much difference of opinion prevailed in that body, and that the result was a matter of expediency and compromise among the members. He drew most of the amendments proposed and subsequently adopted as a part of that instrument. He was, in short, indefatigable in every situation; and nothing was ever permitted to interrupt the performance of any public duty. In 1789 he was associated with the late Richard Varick in revising the statutes of this state, but the revision was made principally by Mr. Jones and with uncommon accuracy and expedition. He was the same year appointed recorder of New York, the duties of which position were discharged with ability and integrity, till he was succeeded in 1797 by the Hon. James Kent. In 1796 he was requested by Governor Jay to draft a law for establishing and regulating the office of comptroller, to which he was appointed, and which he retained for several years. "I rely (says the late Dr. Hosack) on the testimony of others, when I speak of the legal talents of the late Samuel Jones: common consent has indeed assigned him



the highest attainments in jurisprudence, and the appellation of the *father of the New York bar*. He justly ranked among the most profound and enlightened jurists of this or any other country, and acted a useful and conspicuous part in organizing our courts and judiciary system after the Revolution. He was a liberal and enlightened whig, and advocated the cause of independence with zeal and success." "No one (says Chancellor Kent) surpassed him in clearness of intellect, and in moderation and extreme simplicity of character; no one equalled him in his accurate knowledge of the technical rules and doctrines of real property, and in familiarity with the skilful and elaborate, but now obsolete and mysterious black-letter learning of the common law." "He was (says Judge Hammond) a kind hearted, social, companionable man, and not only desired, but undoubtedly did much to advance the real prosperity of the community, and although he acquired something of the character of a time-server, he by no means deserved it, for on all questions of principle he was decided, firm, and unyielding."

He was distinguished for coolness, candor, and deliberation in debate, and sought the substantial rather than the showy part of an orator. He was twice married, first to Ellen, daughter of Cornelius Turk, who died soon after; and second to Cornelia, daughter of Elbert Herring, Esq. of New York, by whom he had issue Samuel, William, Elbert H., Thomas, and David S. Jones. He died November 21, 1819, and his widow July 29, 1821.

*Samuel*, eldest son, graduated at Yale College 1790, and was educated for the bar. He married Catherine, daughter of Phillip Schuyler, now deceased, and soon acquired a high standing in his profession. He fre-

quently represented the city of New York in the legislature, was chancellor of the state, chief justice of the superior court in the city of New York for more than twenty years, and was raised to the bench of the supreme court in 1847. He was created LL.D. at Allegheny College in 1846.

His brother *William*, a farmer at Oyster Bay, L. I., married Keziah, daughter of Daniel Youngs, who died, aged seventy-four, May 1, 1847. His children are Samuel William, James, Duane, Daniel, Francis, Mariana, and Cornelia Keziah. He has been a member of the assembly from his native county, and was always highly esteemed for his social qualities and honorable dealings through life. His eldest son Samuel W. has resided most of his days in the city of Schenectady, where he has been recorder and first judge of the county. He married Maria Bowers, daughter of James C. Duane, son of the late Judge Duane.

*Elbert Herring* is also a farmer, and has held the office of state senator. Although he studied the law, he has never practised it as a profession. His wife is Margery, daughter of Samuel Youngs, deceased. His daughter Susan Cornelia married Elijah Peck, April 28, 1847.

*Thomas* is the twin brother of the last, and is by occupation a farmer, living on the paternal estate at South Oyster Bay, L. I. He has been three times married. The first and third wives were daughters of the late General Jacob S. Jackson, and the second was a daughter of Thomas Jackson, deceased.

*David S.*, youngest son of Samuel Jones, graduated at Columbia College 1796, of which he was a trustee subsequently, and has long been eminent at the New York bar. He held the office of first judge of Queens County,

during a temporary retirement from his profession, for three years succeeding 1840. His first wife was a daughter of Dr. Thomas Jones of New York; his second Susan, daughter of the late Herman Le Roy, who died in January, 1832, and his third Mary Osgood, only surviving daughter of his Excellency De Witt Clinton. Judge Jones was made LL.D. in 1846, and died May 10, 1848, aged sixty-two.

---

*Isaac Ledyard, M.D.*

The grandfather of this gentleman was John Ledyard, who came from England and settled at Southold, L. I., in 1716, where he opened a store. He was a native of Bristol, England, and had been educated as a merchant in London. He married soon after his arrival here Abigail, daughter of Judge Benjamin Youngs, son of the Rev. John Youngs, first minister of Southold. From Southold, Mr. Ledyard removed to Groton, and in 1727 purchased an estate in that part of the town now called Ledyard. Finding himself in a few years burdened with a considerable family, he contrived to enlarge his business, and for that purpose removed to Hartford, where he engaged extensively in mercantile and commercial pursuits. While here he was elected to several important offices, and once to that of mayor, an evidence of the consideration in which he was held by his fellow-citizens. A number of his sons entered into navigation and became sea-faring men. John, the eldest son, and Youngs, his brother, the father of the subject of this notice, were commanders of vessels sailing between New London and the West Indies, both of whom

died abroad and about the same time. The former was the father of the celebrated John Ledyard, who travelled extensively in the East, and died at Cairo in Egypt, 1788. Another brother was Colonel William Ledyard, the brave defender of Fort Griswold on Groton Heights, who was basely killed with his own sword, which he had surrendered to the enemy under Arnold in 1781. And it may be well to mention, that twenty-eight individuals of and connected with the Ledyard family were either killed or wounded on that occasion, among the former of whom was Youngs Ledyard, a brother of Dr. Ledyard.

On the decease of their respective fathers, the said Isaac and his cousin John Ledyard were taken into the family of their grandfather at Hartford, and were by his assistance favored with a good education. John was sent to Dartmouth College, from whence in a short time he escaped, as related by his biographer, in a manner which sufficiently displayed his character for romantic adventure. His mother was Abigail, daughter of Robert Hempstead of Southold, who, after the death of her husband, married, January 6, 1765, Dr. Micah Moore of that place, and lived a widow there for the second time, when visited by her wandering son as described in so interesting a manner by Mr. Sparks in his life of Ledyard.

Dr. Moore was the son of James Moore, born in 1711, and first married Jerusha Howell. By his said second wife he had Abigail, born October 17, 1765; Juliana, born August 17, 1767, and Phebe, born November 5, 1769. The first married Jonathan Landon, and the second Matthias Case, in November, 1788, by whom she had Jerusha, Hutchinson H., Maria, who married Joseph H. Goldsmith, Esq., and Albert G. Case.

The subject of this notice was born at Groton (now

Ledyard) November 5, 1754, and was originally destined for a mercantile employment, which not relishing, and being of a studious disposition, he travelled to New York, where he sought an introduction to Dr. John Bard, a distinguished physician, then at the head of the medical school of that city, and finally was admitted a student in his office, where he met the most affectionate encouragement, which ripened into a firm and lasting friendship.

His cousin John had now become a wanderer in foreign parts, and between them a correspondence commenced which lasted during their joint lives. Dr. Ledyard had barely completed his professional studies when the revolutionary struggle broke forth, and he therefore sought for and obtained the situation of surgeon to a regiment commanded by General McDougall. His brother Benjamin Ledyard was at the time a captain in the same regiment, and rose afterwards to the rank of major. Dr. Ledyard, in a short space, was made hospital surgeon, and afterwards raised to the second office in that department of the army. He was constantly engaged during the war in the discharge of his professional duties, and after the peace of 1783 entered on the practice of medicine in the city of New York.

He married, March 13, 1785, Ann, daughter of John McArthur of New York, whose son, Major Alexander McArthur, a brave soldier of the Revolution was mortally wounded in battle. During the time Dr. Ledyard remained in the city he found leisure to indulge occasionally in literary pursuits and writing for the public journals. He was a warm friend of Alexander Hamilton, and carried on a political correspondence with him through the newspapers; but having, during the administration of the elder Adams, taken different sides in



politics, they became, finally, in a great degree estranged from each other, and continued so ever after.

Possessed of a keen relish for a country life, and anxious to escape from the noise and bustle of the city, Dr. Ledyard purchased a farm at Newtown, L. I., and in 1794 he erected a mansion, to which he removed with his family the following year. Here he indulged his love of a rural and literary life, devoting a portion of his time to the practice of his profession, which was not only profitable, but afforded sufficient exercise for the preservation of his health. Being known for his anti-federal principles, he was chosen a presidential elector in 1800, and cast his vote for Mr. Jefferson. He was the bosom friend of De Witt Clinton, whose country seat was also at Newtown, and whom he equally admired for his fine talents, and for his patriotic devotion to the highest interests of his state and country. He attended him as his surgeon in his hostile meeting with John Swartwout in August, 1799, in which the latter was wounded. On the accession of Mr. Jefferson, Dr. Ledyard was appointed health officer at Staten Island, where he died of an infectious disease August 28, 1803.

Few men were ever more esteemed than Dr. Ledyard: he was a gentleman of polished manners, affable, and of wonderful conversational powers. His reading was extensive, his observation acute, and his information on most subjects large and accurate. The death of such a man was not only a great calamity to his family, but to the public also. He had made arrangements to publish the life of his cousin the traveller, whose premature death was declared by Sir Joseph Banks "*as a world's loss*," but his own life being cut short that important

task fell upon Dr. Sparks, who has accomplished it in an able and satisfactory manner.

It was the design of Mr. Clinton to have written the life of his friend and associate Dr. Ledyard, but his intentions were frustrated by his sudden death in the midst of usefulness and in the full maturity of his fame.

Dr. Ledyard left a widow and five children. His son *John* married his relative Mary L. Ledyard of New London, and after her decease he married Clarissa, daughter of the late Benjamin Howard of Newtown, L. I.

*William Eustace* died at sea unmarried; *Daniel*, youngest son, married Olivia Van Tuyl of New York. His eldest sister *Ann* married Robert L. Bruce, who died in 1807; and her sister *Mary* married Reuben Nicoll of Balston, N. Y., in 1841.

---

*Richard Riker*

This gentleman was descended from Guisbert (or Gilbert) Riker, who is supposed to have arrived from Holland at New Amsterdam, between the years 1625 and 1630, in one of the earliest vessels of the Dutch West India Company. He received several grants of land in different places, but the most extensive was at Newtown, L. I., said to be a mile square, and of great value even at that early day. He, however, did not live long to enjoy his possession, and probably died a few years subsequent to 1640, leaving a son Abraham, and one daughter. This Abraham was a youth on his arrival, and about 1638 married Margaret Hendrickson. He acquired a title to the island, since known as Riker's Island, and obtained a patent for it from Governor Stuyvesant,

August 19, 1664. His will is dated March 9, 1688, and he died in the spring of the following year. His children were Ryck Abrahamson, Jacob, Mary, John, Aletta, Abraham, and Henry. He devised his real estate to Abraham, and gave a legacy of twenty shillings only to each of his other children, equal to the cost of lands at the original price of three pence per acre.

The said Abraham, youngest son, except Henry, was born in December, 1655, and married Margaret, daughter of John Burytenhuysen, January 10, 1682. His life was protracted to August 20, 1746, when he died at the age of ninety years, his sight, of which he had been deprived many years, having been restored near the moment of his dissolution. He was according to the best accounts of him, both an intelligent and highly useful man. His children were Catherine, Margaret (or Greetie), Mary, John, Abraham, Henry, Jacob, and Andrew. The said Margaret, born April, 1685, married Peter Brestede of New York, May 6, 1705, who died in 1724, and she again married Thomas Lynch, an Irishman, who deceased in 1737, and she married for the third time, May 9, 1741, Anthony Duane, an Irishman also, and father of the Hon. James Duane (member of congress and of the state convention or legislature during the whole revolutionary war, and mayor of New York from 1784 to 1789, when he was appointed a district judge of the United States). She survived her third husband, and died at the age of ninety, January 8, 1775.

Andrew Riker, youngest son of the last named Abraham, born November, 1699, married, November 13, 1733, Jane, widow of Dennis Lawrence, and daughter of John Berrien, whose brother settled in New Jersey, and was the grandfather of the Hon. John McPherson

Berrien, late attorney general of the United States, and senator in congress from Georgia. Mr. Riker died April 11, 1762, aged sixty-four, and his widow September 26, 1775. Issue Margaret, John, Berrien, Abraham, Samuel, and Ruth. Of these Abraham was a captain in the American service, and died at Valley Forge in 1778, from exposure, having, as he expressed it, "a rack for his pillow and the heavens for his canopy." Of his elder brother, Dr. John Berrien Riker, much might be said in his favor. He was born April 22, 1738, the possessor of fine native talents, and attained to eminence in the medical profession. He was a surgeon of the American army in 1775, was with the troops under Washington at Trenton, and proved of the most essential service, as well from his knowledge of the country, as his excellent advice on several important occasions. He continued with the army till the peace of 1783, after which he settled as physician in his native town, where he lived respected and beloved till his death, September 8, 1794. He married Susan, daughter of Nathaniel Fish, November 19, 1771, and had issue John, Nathaniel, Jane, and Abraham, none of whom married, and none except Jane are now living.

*Samuel Riker* son of Andrew and Jane, was born at Newtown, April 8, 1743, and married, January 17, 1769, Ann, daughter of Joseph Lawrence, by whom he had Joseph Lawrence, Andrew, Richard, Abraham, Patience, Samuel, Jane, Anna, and John Lawrence. Mr. Riker was a whig and committee-man in 1775-76, and a member of assembly in 1784, and the last public act of his life was to represent his district in congress in 1808-09. He died at Newtown May 19, 1823, aged eighty, and his widow, aged eighty-three, in 1833. Joseph and

Andrew adopted a maritime life, the former died June 20, 1795, and the latter October 17, 1817. Abraham died August 25, 1821. Patience married John Lawrence, October 16, 1802; Samuel became a lawyer, and died September 11, 1811; Jane married, January 15, 1803, John Tone, of the house of Hoyt and Tone, New York, who died, aged thirty-three, June 11, 1807, and in 1810 she became the wife of Dr. William James MacNeven of New York, a native of Ireland, and one of the most distinguished physicians of his age. He died July 12, 1841. Her sister Anna married Dr. Dow Ditmars. John L. Riker was bred to the bar, and married successively Maria and Livinia, daughters of Sylvanus Smith of North Hempstead, deceased.

The Hon. Richard Riker was born in the same town in 1772, and was educated chiefly under the superintendence of the Rev. Dr. Witherspoon, president of Nassau Hall, New Jersey. In 1791 he entered the office of the elder Jones, and was admitted to the bar in 1795. In 1802 he received the appointment of district attorney of New York, which he held for most of the time till 1815, when he was made recorder of the city, which office he retained with short intermission till 1837, having discharged its arduous and responsible duties for nearly thirty years.

Of the eminent talents and profound judicial knowledge of the late recorder, little need be said; they are both extensively known and universally acknowledged. The able manner with which he presided for so long a period in the court of sessions in New York, and the extraordinary qualities he displayed in the discharge of his onerous and important duties, are conclusive evidence of his great attainments and high moral worth. Perhaps



by no individual, at any time, or in any country, have the principles of criminal law been more firmly, yet temperately administered, and the rigid rules of law more happily blended with the benign precepts of moral justice and equity.

He was endowed by nature with fine perceptive powers, and a memory more than ordinarily retentive. He was perhaps never exceeded for his faculty of discharging business; on the bench he was always attentive, patient, and forbearing, both towards his associates, and the counsel and witnesses. There was nothing like official hauteur in his deportment, yet he never stooped to official trifling, although he possessed a ready wit, and a genial spirit of good humor, which made his remarks from the bench entertaining. His charges to juries were often profound, and in pronouncing sentence he was often truly eloquent. In short, it may be affirmed with confidence that few men for so long a course of years, have occupied more of the public attention than Mr. Riker, or taken a more prominent part in the business and realities of life. His knowledge of criminal law, from long and constant study and observation, was nearly universal, and his experience made him acquainted with all the cunning and devices of the human heart. He enjoyed uncommon health through a long life, and died in the seventieth year of his age, September 26, 1842. April 23, 1807, he married Janette, daughter of Daniel Phoenix, Esq., formerly treasurer of the city of New York, who still survives, and by whom he left issue Daniel Phoenix, Anna E., Elizabeth P., Janette, John H., and Rebecca P. Riker.

*Descendants of George Woolsey*

This gentleman was the son of Benjamin and grandson of Thomas, a near relative of Thomas, better known in history as Cardinal Woolsey, who, to the liberality of his royal master, Henry VIII., was indebted for his extraordinary elevation. Mr. Woolsey was born October 27, 1610, and had most likely resided some time with his father in Holland, having come over with the Dutch emigrants in 1623, while yet a mere boy. Many circumstances induce the belief that his father, Benjamin, joined him in this country a few years after. He resided several succeeding years in the city of New Amsterdam, where he is supposed to have been a trader or merchant.

In 1647 he purchased a plantation at Flushing, where he established himself, but afterwards took up his residence with his father at Jamaica, which place was then lately settled, and died there August 17, 1698, at the age of eighty-six. His will, which is recorded, bears date November 2, 1691, in which he names his wife Rebecca, his sons George, Thomas, and John, and his daughters Sarah Hallett, Mary Woolsey, and Rebecca Wiggins.

His son George, born at New York, October 19, 1650, removed with his father to Jamaica, and is mentioned in Dongan's patent of 1686. His name also frequently occurs upon the town books of Jamaica, establishing the fact of his being a man of talents and consequence.

Toward the close of his life, and when far advanced in age, he changed his residence to the house of his son Benjamin Woolsey at Dosoris, in the town of Oyster Bay, and his grave-stone is still to be seen in the family cemetery of that place. From the inscription thereon,

yet legible, it appears that he died at the age of ninety in 1741, new style.

Benjamin Woolsey, son of the preceding, was born at Jamaica November 19, 1687, graduated at Yale College in 1709, and after preparation for the ministry, preached in several places till 1720, when he succeeded the Rev. Joshua Hobart as pastor of the first church in Southold.

He married in 1710 a daughter of the Rev. William Urquhart, deceased, of Jamaica, whom he lost in 1712, and in 1714 he married Abigail, daughter of John Taylor, who inherited from him the valuable estate of *Dosoris*,<sup>1</sup> upon which after his death in 1735, they went to reside. The dwelling they occupied stood till 1842, when it was taken down by Mr. Winthrop.

The name of *Dosoris*, compounded of two Latin words, *Dos* and *uxoris*, was conferred by Mr. Woolsey, as implying that the premises were a gift or portion to his wife. The character of this gentleman is so fully described upon his tomb, and in an obituary notice published at the time of his death, that we cannot deny to the reader the pleasure of their perusal.

“ Sacred to the memory of the Rev. Benjamin Woolsey, who, in the united character of the gentleman, the christian, the divine, shone with distinguished lustre, and adorned every station of public and private life, with dignity and usefulness. Early devoted to the work of the gospel ministry, endowed with the gifts of nature and grace, he employed his superior talents in the service of his divine master, with fidelity and zeal. After a shining course of disinterested labors to promote the cause of

<sup>1</sup> North of Glen Cove.—EDITOR.

true religion, he exchanged the ministry of the church militant on earth, for the rewards of the church triumphant in heaven, August 15, A. D. 1756."

In Hugh Gaine's *Mercury* for August, 1756, it is related of Mr. Woolsey, among other things, that "his intellectual powers were much above the common level, and were improved by a liberal education. His universal acquaintance with sacred literature rendered his public performances peculiarly edifying and instructive. His sentiments were just, noble, and proper, his reasoning clear and conclusive, and his pulpit eloquence manly, nervous, and strong. The zeal and pathos that animated his discourses added peculiar grace and dignity to his address, and while it engaged the attention of his hearers, discovered the sincere piety and fervent devotion that warmed and governed his own heart. He loved good men of every profession, and owned and admired sincere piety, under whatever form or denomination it appeared. Justice, charity, and condescension, hospitality and public spirit, were virtues to which he paid the most sacred regard. In the discharge of the various duties which constitute the tender and affectionate husband, the indulgent kind parent, the mild and gentle master, the obliging neighbor, the sincere, faithful, and unshaken friend, he had few equals and no superior."

Mr. Woolsey had two sons, Melancthon Taylor and Benjamin, and four daughters: Abigail, who married the Rev. Noah Wells of Stamford, Conn.; Sarah, who married John Lloyd of Lloyds Neck, L. I.; Mary, who married Platt Smith, and Dr. George Muirson; and Hannah, who married Samuel McCoun, and Daniel Youngs.

Benjamin, youngest son of the Rev. Mr. Woolsey, was

born June 8, 1717, graduated at Yale College in 1744, and resided at Dosoris, in the commission of the peace, till his death in October, 1771. His first wife was Esther Isaacs of Norwalk, by whom he had Sarah; Benjamin, who died at the age of fifteen years; and Mary. His wife was born in 1720, and died March 29, 1756. For his second wife he married Ann, daughter of Dr. George Muirson of Setauket. She was born February 10, 1737, married in 1757, and died August 14, 1807. Her father died at New Haven February 20, 1786, aged seventy-nine.

The children of Mr. Woolsey by his second wife were Benjamin Muirson, John Taylor, George, William Walton, George Muirson, Esther, and Elizabeth. His youngest daughter Mary married in 1777 the Rev. Timothy Dwight, afterwards president of Yale College, by whom she had issue Timothy, Benjamin Woolsey, James and John (twins), Sereno Edwards, William Theodore, and Henry Edwin. She died at the age of ninety-two, October 6, 1845.

Sarah, eldest daughter of Mr. Woolsey, married Moses Rogers, an eminent New York merchant, and had issue Benjamin Woolsey; Elizabeth, who married Samuel M. Hopkins, Esq. of Geneva; Hester, who died young; Julia Ann, who married the late Francis B. Winthrop; Archibald, and Sarah.

Esther, third daughter of Mr. Woolsey, born December 1, 1759, married Captain Palmer of the British army, and died at Raphoe in Ireland, March 15, 1807. His youngest daughter Elizabeth, born September 22, 1768, married William Dunlap, and died May 11, 1848, aged seventy-nine. He was born February 19, 1766, and died September 20, 1839, well known for his excellence



in the fine arts, and as the author of several valuable historical works. By her he had Margaret and John Alexander, author of a treatise on the practice of the supreme court of this state, and other publications.

Benjamin Muirson, eldest son of Mr. Woolsey, born February 17, 1758, was an officer of cavalry in the Queen's Rangers, commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Simcoe in the Revolution; settled in New Brunswick, but returned to the United States, and died at Bridgeport, Conn., January 17, 1813. John Taylor, second son, was born September 20, 1762, and died December 9, 1798, in the British West Indies.

William Walton, fourth son of Mr. Woolsey, was born September 17, 1766, and was a distinguished merchant of New York. His first wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Timothy Dwight, and sister of the late president Dwight, whom he married, April 2, 1792, and who died December 8, 1813, aged forty-two. Their daughter *Mary Ann*, born in 1793, married, first, Jared Scarborough, and, secondly, George Hoadley; *Elizabeth*, born in 1794, became the second wife of Francis B. Winthrop; *William Cecil* and *John Mumford*, born in 1796, the first of whom married Catherine R., daughter of Theodorus Bailey, and died July 24, 1844; and the latter married Jane Andrews; *Laura*, born January 13, 1800, married William Samuel Johnson; *Theodore Dwight*, LL.D., born October 31, 1801, married Martha E. Salisbury, September 5, 1833, and was ordained in the ministry and inaugurated president of Yale College October 21, 1846, which high station he has filled in the most satisfactory manner. *Sarah*, born 1805, married Charles F. Johnson of Oswego. Mr. Woolsey married

again *Sarah*, daughter of the Hon. Charles Chauncey of Connecticut, and died August 18, 1839.

Melancthon Taylor Woolsey, youngest son of the Rev. Mr. Woolsey, was born February 12, 1720, and resided at Dosoris. He married Rebecca, daughter of Henry Lloyd, who was born October 31, 1718, and had issue Mary; Theodosia, who died October 5, 1830, aged eighty-two; Abigail, Elizabeth, Rebecca, and Melancthon Lloyd. Mr. Woolsey died September 28, 1758, while engaged as colonel in the service of his country against the French in Canada, and was buried at Dosoris, as were also his daughters Abigail, Elizabeth, and Mary, who died respectively, the 13th, 16th, and 30th of November, 1753, in their infancy.

His widow died September 13, 1796, at the house of the Hon. James Hillhouse of New Haven, who had married her daughter Rebecca Woolsey. Mrs. Hillhouse was born August 22, 1755, married October 10, 1782, and had issue Sarah, Mary, James A., who married Cornelia, daughter of Isaac Lawrence, and died January 6, 1841; Rebecca, wife of the Rev. Nathaniel Hewett of Fairfield, Conn., and Augustus L., now residing at Paris.

Melancthon Lloyd Woolsey was born May 8, 1758, and at the age of eighteen years entered the American army; was highly esteemed as a soldier, and was selected as aid to his Excellency George Clinton. March 23, 1779, he married Alida, daughter of Henry Livingston of Poughkeepsie, and sister of Rev. John H. Livingston, D.D., late president of Rutgers College, New Jersey. He retired from the army in 1780, but rose subsequently to the rank of major general of militia. In 1787 he removed to Plattsburg, was appointed collector of the

customs for that district, and clerk of Clinton County. He died at Trenton, N. J., June 29, 1819, while on a tour to visit his son, Commodore Melancthon Taylor Woolsey, then commanding at Sackett's Harbor. His widow died at Oswego July 12, 1843, aged eighty-five years. The last named gentleman was born June 5, 1780, and entered the navy of the United States at the age of twenty years. He was engaged in the Tripolitan war, under Commodore Decatur, and was one of the most active officers in the late war with England, under Commodore Chauncey. His wife was Susan C., daughter of James Tredwell of New York. He was in command of Oswego when the British were so brilliantly repulsed. On the breaking up of the marine on Lake Erie, he was transferred to the ocean service, being successively in command of the West India station at Pensacola, and the Brazilian squadron. His death took place at Utica, the residence of his family, May 19, 1838.

Henry Livingston Woolsey, second son of Melancthon Lloyd Woolsey, was born in 1782, and married Eunice, daughter of Wolcott Hubbell of Lanesborough, Mass., and has issue eight children. His daughter Catharine married William Floyd Platt, who died at Oswego, N. Y., April 14, 1844, aged twenty-nine.

Rebecca Nelson Woolsey, sister of Henry, married John Borland, and her brother James Lloyd married Roxana Akerman. Cornelia, a sister, married Harvey De Wolfe; Mary Elizabeth married Wolcott Hubbell; and Susan K. married Samuel O. Auchmuty, and after his death married James Platt of Oswego.

George Muirson Woolsey, fourth son of the last named Benjamin Woolsey, was born April 14, 1772; and September 27, 1797, married Abby, daughter of Joseph

Howland of Norwich, Conn. She was born August 27, 1776, and died in London May 4, 1833. The issue of this marriage were Charles William, born March 4, 1802, who was lost in the conflagration of the steamboat "Lexington," upon Long Island Sound, January 13, 1840 (leaving a widow and seven infant daughters, a son being born after his decease), and Edward John, born October 31, 1803, who married Emily P. Aspinwall.

---

*De Witt Clinton*

This celebrated man, though not a native of Long Island, spent so considerable a portion of his valuable life at his country residence in Newtown, as to render it highly appropriate to give a brief detail of his private and public character in connection with the history of the island. It has been doubted (says Dr. Mitchill) whether it is more desirable to be descended from an illustrious ancestry, or to rise in the world and be the maker of one's own fortune. The former appears to be the preferable case; though even here, where titles, estates, and honors have been won, they unfrequently descend to some unworthy or unqualified individual, or, for lack of heirs, the family becomes extinct. Generally, it is harder work to establish a name than to inherit it; still it strikes many, that on that very account the achievement is more glorious and honorable.

As far back as the reign of Charles I., the family from whom Mr. Clinton was lineally descended were possessed of such character and influence as to invoke the displeasure of the ruling powers for their attachment to that ill-fated monarch. On which account, during the

usurpation of Cromwell, they were obliged to expatriate themselves, and finally settled at Longford in Ireland, where Colonel Charles Clinton, grandfather of De Witt, and son of James, was born. He emigrated to this country from the north of Ireland in 1729, and was soon thereafter appointed surveyor general. His intimacy with the Hon. George Clinton, governor of New York from 1743 to 1753, contributed to give him greater influence. He settled in Ulster County in 1731, and died at Little Britain, Orange County, November 19, 1773, aged eighty-three. He was lieutenant colonel of one of the Ulster regiments and first judge of the county. He commanded a regiment at the reduction of Fort Frontenac, under General Bradstreet, when nearly seventy years of age. His sons Alexander and Charles were bred to the profession of medicine; James and George distinguished themselves in the French war, and in the war of the Revolution, holding the office of major general in the American army. James died December 22, 1812, and George on the 20th of April, the same year; having been governor of this state for twenty-one years, and vice-president of the United States at the period of his death. His children were *Catharine*, born November 5, 1770, who married Pierre Van Cortlandt, and died January 10, 1811, aged forty; *Cornelia*, who married Edmund Charles Genet; *Elizabeth*, who married Matthias B. Tallmadge; *Mary*, who married Dr. Stephen Beekman; and *George W.*, who married Ann, daughter of General William Floyd, and had a son of the same name. His widow married Abraham Varick.

The children of General James Clinton were De Witt, George (who died September 20, 1809), Charles, who married a daughter of Walter Franklin, Alexander,



Mary, who married Samuel Norton, and Ambrose Spencer; Elizabeth, who married a Stuart; and Catherine,\* who married Burrige Norton, brother of Samuel, and the said Ambrose Spencer,† late chief justice of this state. The illustrious subject of this notice was born at his father's residence, Little Britain, Orange County, March 2, 1769, the same day which gave birth to Napoleon, and his conqueror Lord Wellington. His mother was Mary De Witt, a lady of Dutch descent. Mr. Clinton received his primary education at a grammar school in the neighboring village of Stonefield, under the care of the Rev. John Moffat, from which, at the age of thirteen, he was sent to an academy at Kingston, taught by Mr. John Addison, where he remained till prepared to enter the junior class of Columbia College in 1784. He graduated at the first public commencement of that institution after the Revolution in 1786. He was acknowledged to be the first scholar in his class, manifesting at an early age a remarkable quickness of perception and a vigorous power of intellect, which he ever after exhibited, added to a fine talent for composition and extemporaneous debate. On his leaving college he entered upon the study of the law, in the office of the late Samuel Jones, a gentleman deservedly eminent in his profession, formerly recorder of the city, and subsequently comptroller of the state. Under such tuition, with a mind

\* Catherine had by her first husband, John L. and James Clinton Norton—the latter, father of James Clinton, Pearsall and Burrige Norton. The first James Clinton Norton died November 14, 1835, and the latter died January, 1848.

† Judge Spencer married Mary, widow of Samuel Norton, December 12, 1807. She died September 4, 1808, and he then married Catherine, widow of Burrige Norton, who died 1837. His first wife was Laura, daughter of John Canfield, mother of John C. and Philip Spencer. She died May, 1807, aged thirty-nine.

well disciplined to habits of study, and richly stored with all the elementary knowledge of his profession, he soon accomplished his judicial studies; and accordingly, in 1790, we find him practising at the bar with a success that gave promise of high legal reputation, when he was invited to be secretary to his uncle, Governor Clinton, a post which he retained till the close of his administration in 1795. In the meantime he had been chosen secretary to the board of regents of the university. In 1797 he was elected a member of assembly for the city of New York. In August, 1799, he had an affair of honor with John Swartwout, in which, after exchanging five shots, the latter was wounded in the leg. In 1800 he was a member of the state senate, and the next year was appointed a senator of the United States, as the colleague of Gouverneur Morris. In 1803 he resigned his seat and accepted the mayoralty of the city of New York, which he retained till March, 1807. He was again mayor from 1811 to 1815, except the years 1813 and 1814, when he was lieutenant governor, and for the two succeeding years lived a private citizen, but in 1817 was elected almost unanimously governor of the state, and again in 1820. But in 1823 he voluntarily declined the office, and once more retired to private life, devoting himself to the pursuits of science and literature, holding only the unprofitable office of canal commissioner, from which he was removed in 1824 by the shameless malignity of political opponents. This extraordinary act of party meanness and puny persecution was thoroughly rebuked by the majesty of public opinion, and resulted in his elevation to the gubernatorial office by a larger majority than had ever been known in this state at a contested election. In 1825 he was offered the appointment

of minister plenipotentiary to London, which he declined, preferring the performance of his executive duties at home, to which he was again elected in 1826, and retained the office till his sudden death February 11, 1828, in the fifty-ninth year of his age. His body was interred at Albany, but was removed July 9, 1844, to Greenwood Cemetery, near Brooklyn. This great calamity was universally felt; and the public testimonials of respect and veneration for his memory in every part of the state and Union were alike honorable to the people, and a due appreciation of the character, talents, and services of the deceased. As a philosopher, a statesman, a writer, a scholar, an orator, a delightful companion, a correct citizen, and a pure and honest man, his name (says Dr. Hosack) will go down to posterity divested of every reproach. His reputation was not confined to the country he immediately benefited by his services. In the literary circles, and in the scientific institutions of Europe, his name was familiarly known as among the most eminent of his day. It is evidence of the high estimation in which he was held, that he was honored by being made a member of many learned societies in Great Britain, and held also an extensive correspondence with some of the most distinguished men of the age. He was an honorary member of the Linnean, the horticultural societies of London, and of the Wernerian Society of Edinburgh; was in habits of intercourse with the late Sir James Edward Smith, the learned president of the first, and with Mr. Knight and Mr. Sabine, the able officers of the latter. The acknowledged reputation which Mr. Clinton attained in his literary character, taken in connection with his extensive public services, is to be ascribed, not only to his native taste and ardent love of knowledge, but to the

wonderful industry and order with which he performed his many and various duties. He was an early riser, and devoted every moment that could be spared from official and necessary calls to the cultivation of his mind. No one was more ambitious of a reputation for science and literature, and few ever made a more successful progress in the acquisition of useful knowledge. In some of the physical sciences he was especially well versed; and as a classical and *belles-lettres* scholar, his proficiency was very considerable. He observed the utmost punctuality in all his engagements; his regard for truth and honor being one of the cardinal principles of his mind and character. When released from the severer labors which employed his attention, a volume of the classics or a work on science occupied his moments of relaxation; and his large and well-stored library constantly afforded him ample sources of study and entertainment. The ordinary amusements of fashionable life presented no attractions for him, but were avoided, as not only involving the loss of time, money, and reputation, but as incompatible with those pursuits and views belonging to him who has at heart the dignity of his own character, the higher interests of science, and the welfare of his country. In his person Mr. Clinton was tall, finely proportioned, and of commanding aspect. His physiognomy pointed out great mental activity and power, and the phrenological developments of his head were of the most remarkable character, uniting great benevolence with the highest degree of integrity and moral courage. The superior dignity of his person indicated a bold and haughty temper; yet nothing was further from the truth, for he was constitutionally timid, and only an exalted sense of public duty caused him to exercise on any occasion his ability for

public speaking. His untiring industry and perseverance in various public stations were distinguishing attributes, and were exercised to their fullest extent amidst the abuse, calumny, and ridicule which he was compelled to encounter from the vampires of reputation, while prosecuting his great projects of internal improvement. Indeed, few men were ever assailed by a more determined opposition, and no man ever triumphed more completely over every obstacle which came in his way. The task was truly herculean, and the issue most honorable and glorious for his future fame.

In his domestic and social relations he was cheerful and kind; in his friendships warm and sincere; and in his moral character most unexceptionable. As a speaker, he was slow, cautious, and deliberate, manifesting the constant exercise of his understanding. He never indulged in rant or vehemence, either of voice or gesture; yet his clear and logical method, force and perspicuity of style, and dignity of manner, gave, whether in the judgment seat or in a deliberate assembly, an effect and influence which few others ever exercised in this state. If, indeed, the possession of strong native powers of mind, aided by extensive attainments; if an innate spirit of patriotism, quickened and directed by a knowledge of the interests of his country; if a life devoted to the unceasing performance of public duty and expended in the service of his native state, entitle the possessor to respect and gratitude, Mr. Clinton presents the strongest claims, not only to the affections of his countrymen, but to a distinguished place among the sages, statesmen, and benefactors of America.

Two of the most important objects of his heart he lived to see accomplished—the establishment of a better



system of common schools, and the Erie Canal, the last of which should be called by his name, as the most appropriate and durable monument of his fame and services. Whatever claims may be asserted by others in this stupendous project, all impartial and intelligent men are now convinced that the glory of its execution of right belongs to him. From its commencement, through all its subsequent embarrassments, he stood forward, through good and evil report, as its fearless and unwavering advocate, staked his character upon its success and tendered his reputation as its surety. He lived to see the consummation of the work, desiring no other recompense for his time and services than a consciousness of the incalculable importance of the project to present and future generations. In the performance of his judicial duties, his learning, firmness, and integrity have received an unqualified encomium from all. As a magistrate, he was enlightened and dignified; in all the relations of life, public and private, he had few equals and no superior; and his death was truly a subject of regret, not only to his friends but to the nation. As yet no monument has by the public been raised to his memory; but, to the honor of the late executive of the state of New York, the subject has been brought before the legislature, and will, it is presumed, result in the adoption of some measure, creditable alike to all. For, in the words of Governor Seward, "the custom of honoring the dead commends itself to the natural sentiments of mankind; and although, in ignorant and depraved countries, it has been abused by the erection of pyramids and temples and tombs, to preserve the ashes of tyrants, it cannot, among an enlightened people, be otherwise than right and expedient to perpetuate the memory of public benefactors,

and thus stimulate and encourage emulation of their deeds."

It may, without fear of contradiction, be affirmed that to Mr. Clinton is the state of New York more indebted for her present astonishing prosperity than to any other man that ever lived, and that the loss sustained by his death was greater than would have been that of any other individual then living.

Mr. Clinton married, February 10, 1796, Maria, daughter of Walter Franklin of New York, by whom he had several children. She died in 1818, and in 1827 he married Catharine, daughter of the late Dr. Thomas Jones of New York, by whom he had no issue. By his first wife he had *Franklin*, born December 10, 1796, who died in April, 1800; *Charles Alexander*, born September 19, 1798, who married, 1827, Catherine, daughter of John Hone, and is by profession a lawyer; *Walter Franklin*, born July 9, 1800, who died May 2, 1810; *James Henry*, born June 6, 1802, who was an officer of the navy, and died in June, 1824; *De Witt*, born March 10, 1804, who was a distinguished civil engineer, and died in Cuba, December 13, 1834; *George William*, born April 13, 1807, who married Catherine, daughter of John C. Spencer, and was made United States attorney for the northern district of New York in 1847; *Mary Osgood*, born February 8, 1809, who married David S. Jones; *Juliana Osgood*, born August 20, 1811, who died February 13, 1813; *Franklin 2d*, born 1813, who was an officer of the navy, and died February 19, 1842; and *Julia*, born August 20, 1815, who died unmarried, aged twenty-five, November 21, 1839.

*Valentine Mott, M.D.*

This gentleman, whose professional career has conferred honor upon himself, medical science, and his country, is a descendant of Adam Mott, who was born in England 1606, came to New England 1636, was admitted freeman at Hingham 1637, settled (with Sarah, his wife) in Hempstead, L. I., 1656, and died, aged eighty, in 1686. His children were John, Adam, Joseph, Elizabeth, and Mary. Of these Adam, born 1623, died before his father in 1682. By his first wife Phebe, he had Adam, James, Grace, John, Joseph, Gershom, and Henry, and by his second wife Elizabeth, Richbell, Adam, Charles, William, Richbell 2d, Mary Ann, and Elizabeth. The said William, born January 20, 1674, married Hannah, daughter of Captain John Seaman, and died August 31, 1740, aged sixty-six. His children were Elizabeth, Hannah, Martha, and William. The last, born August 6, 1709, married Elizabeth Valentine, and died March 25, 1786; issue William, Hannah, James, Elizabeth, John 1st, Samuel, Hannah, John 2d, Henry, Richard, Joseph, and Benjamin. Henry, the fifth son, born May 31, 1757, married Jane, daughter of John Way, January 1, 1783, and died in 1840, leaving several children, one of whom, and the only surviving son, is the subject of this notice, who was born at Glen Cove, Oyster Bay, L. I., August 20, 1785. He received a course of classical instruction at Newtown, and as his father was a physician, he very naturally inclined to the same profession. He commenced in 1804 attending the lectures in Columbia College, and became a medical student in the office of his relative, Dr. Valentine Seaman.

In the spring of 1807 he repaired to London, where,

though a graduate, he entered as pupil to Mr. (afterwards Sir) Astley Cooper; and after attending the celebrated hospitals of St. Thomas, Guy, Bartholomew, and the London, for nearly two years, following the lectures of the elder Cline, Abernethy, Charles Bell, and Astley Cooper, his preceptor, on anatomy and surgery, Haighton on obstetrics, Currie on the practice of physic, and other distinguished teachers in London, he proceeded to Edinburgh, where he attended the lectures of Gregory on the theory and practice of physic, Hooper on chemistry, Playfair on natural philosophy, and others. He again returned to London, and having revisited the lectures and hospitals, embarked for New York.

Arriving in the fall of 1809, he commenced the practice of his profession, in which he met with success. The following winter he gave a course of lectures upon surgery in Columbia College. In the ensuing autumn he was chosen professor of surgery in the college, and demonstrator of anatomy to the late Dr. Post, then professor of anatomy. Subsequently, the medical faculties of Columbia College and of the College of Physicians and Surgeons, were united under the latter name, with Dr. Samuel Bard as president. Here Dr. Mott retained his professorship of surgery, and was associated with those distinguished men, Drs. Mitchill, Post, Hosack, Osborne, and others. Under the auspices of so much talent, the college obtained a memorable celebrity, as one of the most learned, efficient, and practical schools in the United States, if not the first on the American continent.

But in the midst of its usefulness and most palmy prosperity, the intrigues of certain turbulent spirits, possessing more influence from their political connections, than by any standing, or by any practical knowledge in their

profession, succeeded in making the situation of the above named professors so uncomfortable, that the entire faculty threw up their commissions in disgust, and left the institution in a body. The history of the disgraceful proceedings that led to this result, if faithfully written, would exhibit, in bold relief, the disastrous policy of suffering the interests of science, by any system of state legislation, to be mingled up with the intolerance of party politics.

Dr. Mott had, however, long before, obtained such high reputation by his unparalleled success in various surgical operations, that he had at his command ample and gratifying resources to fall back upon, in now devoting his time exclusively to his extensive practice. In 1818 he had already performed that great and original operation, considered one of the most important in the annals of surgery, the tying of the great brachiocephalic trunk, or arteria innominata within two inches of the heart.

It is unnecessary, if otherwise proper, to dwell upon the merits of an individual, while living, whose genius projected and triumphantly executed this unprecedented exploit, which, of itself, constitutes an epoch in the history of operative surgery.

To this rapidly succeeded other highly important operations, exhibiting the same grasp of mind, and showing to what a wonderful extent remedial surgical means could be carried; suffice it to say, that such has been the brilliant course of this distinguished individual, that no obstacle seems sufficient to deter him from attempting to relieve suffering humanity from any, the most appalling diseases, which it is possible a surgical operation can alleviate; and the victories he has achieved have formed



a splendid era in the healing art. "He has," says Sir Astley Cooper, "performed more of the great operations than any man living, or that ever did live." Surely greater praise than this no mortal can desire.

In 1827 he applied a ligature, for the cure of aneurism, to the common iliac artery, never before attempted for such a purpose, and the next year he excised the clavicle, in a case of osteo-sarcoma of that bone, an operation unknown in the annals of surgery.

Notwithstanding the difficulties he had experienced, Dr. Mott was, some years after the withdrawal of himself and his colleagues from the College of Physicians and Surgeons, induced again to accept the appointment of professor of surgery in the same institution, offered him by the regents of the university. Here he delivered several courses of lectures, till, in 1835, his health failing, he retired to Europe. During his absence, he travelled not only in England and France, but in other countries as far as the Nile. The result of this journey has lately been given to the world in the very interesting form of *Travels in Europe and the East*.

The university of the city of New York having, in his absence organized a medical faculty, he was honored with his former professorship before he reached the shores of his country, which he however accepted on his arrival in 1840, with the additional honor of the presidency of the faculty. This school has been highly prosperous, and has drawn together, from all parts of the Union and the British provinces, a greater number of students than ever attended any previous medical school in America.

Dr. Mott, in addition to the performance of his duties at the university, has recommenced his professional

labors, confining himself chiefly to consultations and operations in surgery, fully sustaining the fame already acquired throughout the world.

By his wife, Miss Murms, a native of Stamford, Lincolnshire, England, he has issue *Lettsom, Louisa*, who married Dr. Vanburen 1843; *Valentine*, who married Isabella Fitzpatrick of Edinburgh, June 14, 1844; *Henry, Alexander, Adelaide*, who married Isaac Bell; *Olivia, Thaddeus*, and *Franklin*.

---

*Dr. Samuel Latham Mitchill*

The great-grandfather of this gentleman was Robert, a descendant of Sir Humphrey Mitchill of Old Windsor, County of Berks, England. The said Robert married Mary Lockerson and Hester Smith, by the last of whom he had a son Robert, born in 1670, who arrived at New York in 1694, and was a farmer in what is now North Hempstead, where he died, eighty-three years old, in 1743. His first wife was the widow Phebe Thorne, maiden name Denton, and his second, Hannah, widow of Thomas Cornwell, daughter of Mr. Van Wyck. By the first he had eight sons and three daughters: Uriah, John, Jacamiah, Phebe, Hannah, Thomas, Uriah 2d, William, Mary, Augustus, and Robert. Of these Robert, born July 6, 1732, married Mary, daughter of William Latham, June 22, 1759, and died July 12, 1789. His widow died October 4, 1806. Issue *James, Samuel Latham, Joseph, George, Singleton, Robert, Jane*, and *Priscilla*.

The second son, and subject of this notice, was born at Plandome, the residence of his brother, the Hon. Singleton Mitchill, August 20, 1764. His parents were

of good standing in the Society of Friends, and brought up their children in the habits and strict morality of that sect. On the maternal side Dr. Mitchill was descended from Joseph Latham, who was born at Bristol, England, 1674, and married Jane Singleton at New York, July 4, 1696, she having been born in 1676. He settled in the city of New York, where he pursued the business of a shipwright with great success, and in 1718 purchased from William Nicoll, the patentee of Islip, L. I., 1,200 acres of land upon Cow Neck,<sup>1</sup> town of North Hempstead, L. I., for the sum of £2,350 or \$11,444.50. Here he died, aged seventy-four, July 7, 1747, and his wife previously, October 21, 1745. Their children were *Jane*, wife of Austin Hicks; *William*, *Margaret*, wife of Robert Bowne; and *Mary*, wife of Nathaniel Pearsall. The said William, born June 17, 1707, married Amy, daughter of Samuel and Hannah Underhill, July 17, 1727, and died in his fifty-seventh year, July 3, 1763. He had issue Joseph, Samuel, Sarah, Hannah, Mary, and Thomas; of whom Samuel second son, born December 18, 1728, became a highly respectable physician, and continued to practice in his native town of North Hempstead to the close of his life, July 24, 1781, at the age of fifty-two. Such was the excellence of his character, and the esteem entertained for him, that General Howe granted him a full protection from injury or molestation, under his hand and seal, bearing date January 16, 1777;\* in consequence of

<sup>1</sup> Now Manhasset Neck.—EDITOR.

\* Dr. Latham being a whig, on the landing of the British on Long Island, he fled to Fishkill, within the American lines, but soon, availing himself of Howe's proclamation of pardon to rebels, he returned home, took the oath of allegiance to his Majesty, and received a pardon as above stated.—H. O.

which he was enabled to afford to the community where he lived the full advantage of his services, during five years of the war, his death having occurred before its termination.

Dr. Mitchill was particularly assisted and patronized by his uncle, Dr. Latham, who gave his nephew all the aid in his power. The resources of this gentleman happily enabled him to enter upon and complete that system of education which the limited income of his father of necessity denied. Of his uncle he always spoke with becoming gratitude and ardent affection. At an early age he was placed under the direction of the Rev. Leonard Cutting, the minister of Hempstead, and a graduate of the university of Oxford. With this excellent instructor he continued for several years, and acquired an intimate acquaintance with classical literature, which constituted one of the favorite amusements of his leisure hours through life. It is due to this kind preceptor to state, that he early predicted the future eminence of his pupil, and contributed by his praise and encouragement to its fulfilment. While at Hempstead, he obtained a partial knowledge of the French language from Mr. John H. Hentz, which he further perfected on his subsequent visit to France. After acquiring some of the elementary principles of medicine with Dr. Latham, he, in 1780, became a pupil of Dr. Samuel Bard of New York, with whom he continued about three years. On the death of his uncle, young Mitchill had little further opportunity for education. In 1784 he went to Europe, and was at the medical school of Edinburgh, then adorned by the talents of Cullen, Black, and Monro. He there had for his friends and compeers the late Thomas Addis Emmet and Sir James Mackintosh; and we have

the testimony of the former that no student of the university exhibited greater tokens of promise. (On the death of this gentleman at New York in 1828, Dr. Mitchill performed the melancholy duty of pronouncing his eulogium.) On his return from Europe in 1786, he devoted a portion of his time to acquiring a knowledge of the laws and constitution of his country, under the direction of Robert Yates of Albany, at that time chief justice of the state of New York. By the influence of this gentleman he was employed in the commission for holding a treaty with the Iroquois Indians, and was present at the adjustment made at Fort Stanwix, 1788, by which the right to a large portion of the western district became the property of the state. In 1790 he was chosen a member of the legislature from Queens County, and in 1792 was appointed professor of natural history, chemistry, and agriculture in Columbia College. At this school he first made known to his countrymen the new theory of chemistry recently matured by the genius of Lavoisier and his associates, in opposition to the theory of his former master, Dr. Black. In 1796 he made his able mineralogical report of a survey of the state of New York; and in 1797 commenced the publication of the *Medical Repository* in connection with Drs. Miller and Smith, of which he was chief editor for more than sixteen years. In 1799 he was united in marriage with Mrs. Catharine Cock, daughter of Samuel Akerly, widow of William Cock, and sister of the late Dr. Samuel Akerly of New York. He was a member of numerous scientific institutions. Of the Lyceum of Natural History of New York he was the founder, and for many years president. He enriched its annals with many contributions, and still further displayed his zeal and lib-



erality by a donation of a large portion of his valuable cabinet. For about twenty years he acted as one of the physicians of the New York Hospital. Notwithstanding his immense literary labors and publications on almost every subject of science, he found time to mingle in the bustle of politics. He was elected from the city of New York a member of the seventh, eight, and ninth congresses; and was afterwards a senator of the United States. Few men enjoyed a more enviable popularity, or preserved a more voluminous correspondence in every part of the world. In private life he was distinguished for affability and simplicity of manners, and was always ready to impart to others of his immense stores of knowledge, which probably exceeded in value and amount those of any man living. The illustrious Cuvier always mentioned him in terms of great approbation; and Audubon, the ornithologist, has bestowed upon him the tribute of his sincere applause. He died, after a short but severe illness, at his residence in the city of New York, in the sixty-seventh year of his age, September 7, 1831. His biography, written several years ago by his brother-in-law, Dr. Samuel Akerly, has for some reason never yet been published, and the world has been greatly disappointed in what it had good right to expect from his widow, to whom the deceased bequeathed a large real and personal estate. A learned foreigner, who visited him during his life, says: "Dr. Mitchill has an extraordinary memory, and has not only cultivated it, but preserved it by devices of his own, before memories were known as a science. He is patient of research, and one would think from his readiness to investigate any subject suggested to him, that he really loved labor. His descriptions and illustrations of a subject are admirable;

his language is plain, but appropriate. Next to his memory are his good feelings. He early in life became enamored with the idea of enlightening the world, and of going down to posterity with an exceeding weight of fame." "I left him," says the writer, "with an increased respect for his talents and acquirements. The world may smile at his credulity as much as they please; his reputation as a philosopher will last as long as his profession remains a science in both hemispheres. He is *an astonishing man*."

---

*Dr. Zophar Platt and the Platt Family*

Among the early settlers of New Haven was Richard Platt, and it is merely probable that Epenetus Platt, the common ancestor of the Long Island families, was his son. He is first mentioned upon the Huntington records in 1672, though he had undoubtedly been there some years before. He was a man of substance and respectability, was a magistrate in the town in 1689, having been also one of those imprisoned by Governor Andros in 1681, for meeting with others to devise some plan for redressing the public grievances which existed. He died in 1693. His children were Phebe, born March 19, 1669; Mary, born January 11, 1672; Epenetus, born April 4, 1674; Hannah, born August 23, 1679; Elizabeth, born March 1, 1682; Jonas, born April 24, 1684; Jeremiah, born November 25, 1686; Ruth, born June 15, 1687; and Sarah, born February 4, 1692.

Epenetus 2d, commonly called Major Platt, was a distinguished man, and was a member of the colonial assembly from 1723 to 1739. His death took place in

1744, at the age of seventy, and that of Elizabeth, his wife, July 2, 1748, at the age of seventy-three. A daughter of Major Platt married Benjamin Tredwell; another married Benjamin Kissam, and Elizabeth married Micajah Townsend April 23, 1732, and died May 16, 1759, aged fifty-two. His sons were Epenetus, Zophar, and Uriah, the last of whom settled in Queens County, from whom descended the late Benjamin Platt, who died May 13, 1833, aged seventy, and had issue Uriah, Henry W., Eliza, who married Charles Hewlett, and Sarah, who married Philip Allen.

Epenetus 3d was a captain of militia and a large landholder in the town, but his male issue is supposed to be extinct. Jonas Platt, second son of the first settler, purchased the farm at Sunk Meadow, now owned by Jeremiah, one of his descendants, in 1717, and spent his days there, but the time of his death is not known. He left Zephaniah, an only son, in possession of his estate. He was imprisoned in New York during the Revolution, and was restored to liberty through the personal application of his daughter Dorothea, to Sir Henry Clinton; but having caught the smallpox while in prison, he died January 27, 1778, aged seventy-four. By his first wife, Hannah Saxton, he had issue Jonas, Zephaniah, Nathaniel, Charles, Hannah, and Elizabeth; and by his second wife, Anna, widow of Richard Smith and daughter of Job Smith, he had issue Jeremiah, Daniel, Sarah, and Dorothea.

His eldest son Jonas married Temperance, daughter of Ebenezer Smith, settled in New York, and died 1775, aged forty-four, one of whose sons was the late Colonel Richard Platt, an aid of General Montgomery at the storming of Quebec. He married Sarah, daughter of

John Aspinwall; she died September, 1848. Elizabeth, sister of the colonel, married the Rev. David S. Bogart, and died October 26, 1841. Jeremiah, fifth son of Zephaniah, lived and died upon the family estate at Smithtown. His wife was Phebe, daughter of William Hedges of Easthampton, by whom he left a son, Jeremiah (who married Hannah, daughter of Elias Smith, May 8, 1825, and died August 17, 1845). Zephaniah, Charles, Nathaniel, and Daniel, the other four sons of Zephaniah first named, were the original proprietors and settlers of Plattsburg. Having soon after the war purchased a number of military land warrants, they located them upon Lake Champlain, and in 1784 personally surveyed the patent of Plattsburg on Cumberland Bay. To induce persons to settle there, ten lots of one hundred acres each were offered to the first ten settlers who should come on with their families, and one hundred acres as a donation to the first male child who should be born upon the patent. The said Charles Platt was appointed judge on the organization of Clinton County, and presided at the first court held October 28, 1788; he held the office till sixty years old, when he was made clerk of the county and so continued till near the time of his death. His brother Zephaniah, born at Huntington, May 27, 1735, settled on a farm at Poughkeepsie in Dutchess County; was twice married—first to Hannah Davis, by whom he had issue Zephaniah and Hannah, and second to Mary, daughter of Theodorus Van Wyck of Fishkill, and had issue Theodorus, Elizabeth, Mary, Jonas, William Pitt, Charles, Nathaniel, Robert, Mary, Levi, David, and James. He died in 1807.

He was a member of the New York convention of 1776, for the purpose of forming a constitution for the

state; and in 1777 he was one of the committee of safety, with his colleague, John Jay, for Dutchess County. In 1788 he was elected senator, and was one of the convention of New York who recorded their votes in favor of the Constitution of the United States. He was first judge of Dutchess County, almost from its organization to 1795, and died at Plattsburg, September 12, 1807. Of his children, Elizabeth married the late General John Smith of Mastic, L. I., and died February 7, 1787; William Pitt married Hannah, daughter of Moss and sister of Chancellor Kent, by whom he had six children, and died at Plattsburg. Robert married Mary, daughter of the Rev. Naphthali Daggett of New Haven, and resides at Peru, Clinton County. Mary married Abraham Brinckerhoff of New York, and died in 1812. James married, first, Eliza, daughter of the late General William Floyd, who died December 17, 1820, and second, Susan K., daughter of the late Melancthon Lloyd Woolsey, and widow of Samuel O. Auchmuty of New York. Issue, William Floyd (who died April 4, 1844), James Augustus, Robert, and Elizabeth.

Jonas Platt, son of the last named Zephaniah, was a man greatly esteemed for his genius and acquirements, as well as for the purity of his principles and the grandeur of his moral character. His talents were respectable but not brilliant, and though he possessed a deep and intense tone of feeling, and a high sense of personal honor, he had acquired an entire control over his passions, and was not likely to be hurried into anything indiscreet or ill advised. He was born June 30, 1769, and after completing his academical education, was placed in the law office of the late Richard Varick. He was admitted to the bar 1790, and the same year married



Helen, youngest daughter of Henry Livingston, Esq. of Dutchess County. Shortly after, he was made clerk of Herkimer and afterwards of Oneida counties. In 1799 he was elected to congress, in 1809 he was a senator for the western district, and in 1810 a candidate for governor of the state of New York. In 1814 he was placed upon the bench of our supreme court, and its judicial annals afford abundant evidence of the learning and diligence which he brought to bear upon the administration of justice. In 1821 he was in the convention for amending the constitution of this state, by the operation of which he was constitutionalized out of office, and returned to the practice of his profession. His health failing, he relinquished his profession, and retired in 1829 to his farm in Clinton County, where he died February 22, 1834. He had eight children, of whom his son Zephaniah has been attorney general of Michigan; his daughter Susan married Richard R. Lansing, and died December, 1843.

Dr. Zophar Platt was the second son of Major Epenetus Platt. He was born 1705, and died September 28, 1792, aged eighty-seven. His wife was Rebecca, daughter of Joseph Wood of Huntington, who resembled her husband in disposition and character, possessing in an eminent degree those qualities which constitute the materials of female excellence (she died April 5, 1782, aged sixty-nine); by her he had three sons, Jeremiah, David, and Ebenezer, and five daughters, Elizabeth, Hannah (died September 26, 1752, aged eleven), Phœbe, Sarah, and Hannah 2d. His principal medical instruction was received from Dr. Jacob Ogden, an eminent physician of Jamaica, and he became distinguished for his knowledge in surgery, as well as in the other depart-

ments of his profession. He possessed a large real estate, and valuable grist mill, which he erected upon Huntington Harbor; besides being extensively engaged in mercantile business. He continued his medical practice till age and infirmity obliged him to desist, and was afterwards consulted in important cases at his own house. He was distinguished also for his public spirit, kindness, and hospitality, and proved himself not only an intelligent, but a most useful and estimable citizen. His daughter Elizabeth married Daniel Phœnix, for many years treasurer of New York City. Phœbe became the wife of Samuel Broome, brother of Lieutenant Governor John Broome, and Sarah and Hannah were married in succession to Robert Ogden of Elizabethtown, N. J. David died while in college, and Jeremiah died at New Haven without issue.

Ebenezer, the other son of Dr. Platt, was born at Huntington 1754. He received a good common education, and succeeded his father in mercantile business in his native place till after his parents' death. He married Abigail, daughter of Joseph Lewis, who was born 1761, and died May 19, 1828, aged sixty-seven. He was elected to the assembly in 1784 and 1785, and in 1794 was appointed first judge of Suffolk County, which he retained till 1799, when he removed to the city of New York. Having, by some reverses of fortune, lost the most of his property, he sought for and obtained a situation in the New York custom house, which he held so long as he was able to discharge its duties, when he retired to private life, and died June 26, 1839, at the age of eighty-five. Judge Platt was a polished gentleman in his manners, affable, courteous, and withal highly intelligent. He possessed much public spirit, and was the

friend of everything which promised to be useful to the community; and like his father was particularly distinguished for kindness and hospitality, his house being the general resort of respectable strangers. His removal from the town was a matter of public regret, and his memory is still cherished with affectionate regard by all that knew him.

Of his children, *Zophar*, born 1785, married Elizabeth Wright, and died June 22, 1828, aged forty-three. *Isaac Watts*, several years pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Bath, Steuben County, N. Y., and afterwards of West Farms, Westchester County, N. Y., married Anna McClure of Philadelphia, and had Joseph M. (died 1848), Ebenezer, James M., Alexander, and Elizabeth M. *Ebenezer*, cashier of the Leather Manufacturer's Bank, New York City, married a daughter of Rev. Cyrus Gildersleeve, who died and had issue Sarah, Ogden, Mary G., who married Rev. Mr. Johnson of the Dutch Church, Red Hook, N. Y.; Amarintha R., who married Rev. Mr. Williamson of Newark, and Caroline, who died, aged sixteen, August 13, 1848. *Elizabeth P.* married James Rogers, and had issue Ann Matilda, Josephine (married John C. Jennings 1st, and Thomas R. Lowry 2d), Abigail P., Mary J., and James P. *Rebecca* married Edmund Rogers May 6, 1813, and had Ebenezer Platt, minister of the Presbyterian Church at Augusta, Ga., Sarah Platt, who married Mr. Colwell, Julia, who married Dr. S. Colwell, John Newton, and Harriet Jones. *Sarah Ogden* married Warren Rogers, and died April 16, 1820, aged thirty-eight, and had issue Theodore, Edward J., Sidney P., and Joseph Warren.

*Of the Descendants of Englebert Lott*

The best information obtained of this gentleman is, that he was originally settled at Newcastle, about thirty-five miles below Philadelphia, upon the west bank of the Delaware, and was the owner of a considerable tract of land on Christiania Creek, which he retained till 1707. He visited New York in 1680, and was in that year united in marriage with Cornelia, daughter of Abraham De La Noy, who was of French extraction and resided in the city of New York.

In 1682 Mr. Lott removed permanently from Newcastle, which had then become a part of the territory of William Penn, to Flatbush, where he purchased a dwelling and lot of ground, and having afterwards leased a tract of land in the same town belonging to the Dutch Church, he entered largely upon farming operations. In 1709 he disposed of his dwelling, and purchased a part of the farm which had belonged to the Rev. Mr. Polhemus, first minister of the Dutch Church in Kings County.

In 1698 he had been appointed high sheriff of Kings County, which office he held during the administration of Lord Bellomont. His death occurred in 1728, and he left two sons, Abraham and Johannes. Of the latter, little else is known than that he died in 1732. Abraham Lott was born at Flatbush in September, 1684, and in the early part of his life undertook several voyages on board a trading vessel to the West Indies, as supercargo, and was probably a part owner.

In November, 1709, he married Catharine, daughter of Elbert Hegeman, and from that time lived on and cultivated his father's farm in Flatbush, of which he became owner by devise. In 1743 he was elected a mem-

ber of the colonial assembly, and served therein for seven years; after which he was re-elected, but died before the whole term expired, July 29, 1754, in the seventieth year of his age.

He left sons, Jacobus, *Englebert*, and Abraham, and one daughter, Cornelia, who married John Vanderveer of Keuter's Hoek. The eldest son married Teuntie De Hartt, daughter of Simon De Hartt, and settled in Flatbush, where he died, leaving several sons and daughters.

The youngest son, Abraham, married Gertrude, daughter of Andrew Coeyman, and entered upon mercantile business in the city of New York, occasionally officiating as clerk of the colonial assembly, and was subsequently appointed treasurer of the province. He died in New York at an advanced age, leaving a son named Andrew, and daughters Catharine, Gertrude, and Joanna, the first of whom married Colonel William Livingston, the second married Comfort Sands June 5, 1797, and the last died unmarried. Andrew married Maria, daughter of Peter Goelet of New York.

*Englebert Lott*, son of Abraham, was born at Flatbush in May, 1719, and lived with his father, upon whose death he became the owner of his farm. In December, 1742, he married Maritie, daughter of Johannes Ditmars. He carried on the business of a house carpenter and wheelwright, in addition to farming, and was at one period the principal land surveyor in the county. For some years previous to the Revolution, he was one of the judges of the court of common pleas for Kings County, being an active and well informed man.

He died in November, 1779, at the age of sixty, leaving sons Johannes E., Abraham E., and Englebert. The two youngest entered upon mercantile business in New



York, which they continued till the Revolution, when they returned to Flatbush. *Englebert* died at that place, November 29, 1779; his brother Abraham went afterwards to Edenton, N. C., where he entered into mercantile business again with a Mr. Payne. His death took place there March 4, 1785.

*Johannes E. Lott*, eldest son of *Englebert*, was born at Flatbush, September 1, 1746, and in May, 1776, married *Adriana*, daughter of *Adrian Voorhees* of Flatbush, by whom he had one son *Englebert*, and a daughter *Phebe*. The first settled on a farm at New Utrecht, and died leaving four sons and three daughters; his sister *Phebe* died unmarried. The wife of *Johannes E.* died in October, 1773, and he married, January 12, 1775, *Catharine*, daughter of *Jeremiah Vanderbilt*, and settled upon the farm devised to him by his father in 1779.

He was a man of sound mind and good education, and in 1775 was chosen one of the eight delegates from Kings County to the first provincial congress of New York. He was elected a representative in the first legislature of this state which convened after the war, and was afterwards appointed surrogate for Kings County under the constitution; this office, as well as that of judge, he held till 1793, when he was made first judge of the county. This last office he resigned in 1801. He died in 1811, in the sixty-fifth year of his age, leaving issue *Jeremiah*, *John*, *Abraham*, *Maritie*, and *Sarah*. His widow died, aged eighty-three, October 23, 1840.

The said *John* became a farmer in Flatbush, married *Elizabeth*, daughter of *Samuel Garretsen* in 1799, and had two sons, whose families now live in the town. The youngest son *Abraham* married *Maria Lott* in 1805, by whom he had *John A. Lott*, a lawyer, late first judge of

Kings County, and state senator. Mr. Lott, after the death of his first wife, was twice married, but had no issue thereby, and died in 1840.

The said Maritie, daughter of Johannes E. Lott, married Jacob Van Pelt of New York, in 1802, and is now a widow with two children. Her sister Sarah married in 1817, John Vanderbilt, who, dying in 1842, left her a widow with three sons and two daughters.

*Jeremiah*, eldest son of Johannes E. Lott by his marriage with Catharine Vanderbilt, was born at Flatbush, in October, 1776. His education was acquired at Erasmus Hall, which he attended from 1790 to 1793. He settled afterwards as a farmer in Flatbush. At the age of twenty years, he commenced the business of surveying, which he followed occasionally for thirty-five years, being at one time the only land surveyor in the county of Kings. In 1801 he was chosen clerk of the board of supervisors of the county, which office he resigned in 1845, having held it over forty-four years. He was a member of assembly in 1814-21-22, and 1839. In 1814 he was appointed surrogate of Kings County, and retained the office nearly twenty years, and has always lived upon and cultivated the farm in Flatbush which his great-grandfather purchased in 1730. In 1805 Mr. Lott married Lydia, daughter of Bateman Lloyd, Esq., a native of Salem, N. J., and an officer of the revolutionary army, by whom he has two daughters Catharine and Abigail; the first became the wife of said John A. Lott in 1829, and the last in October, 1830, married Dr. John B. Zabriskie of New Jersey, who died February 8, 1848, aged forty-two.

*Some further particulars of the Phillips Family*

The *Rev. George Phillips*, second minister of Brookhaven, L. I., was the son of Samuel and grandson of the *Rev. George Phillips*, who was born at Raymond in Norfolkshire, England, about the year 1600, and became a dissenting clergyman at Boxford in Essex, where his son Samuel was born 1625. Such measures were, however, pursued by the government in regard to religion as made his situation unpleasant, and he left his native country with the elder Winthrop in 1630. His wife died soon after his arrival at Salem, and he became the first minister of Watertown, where he labored till his decease, July 1, 1644. His parish, as evidence of personal gratitude and respect, voluntarily contributed to the education of his son Samuel, who graduated at Harvard in 1650, became the colleague of the *Rev. Ezekiel Rogers*, pastor of the church in Rowley, Mass., and died April 22, 1696, aged seventy-one. He was married in 1651 to Sarah, daughter of Samuel Appleton, by whom he had six sons and four daughters. His daughter Elizabeth married the *Rev. Samuel Payson*, who was fourteen years colleague of her father, and succeeded him on his death as pastor of the church at Rowley. She had by Mr. Payson twenty-one children.

George, one of the sons of Samuel, was born at Rowley, June 3, 1664, graduated at Harvard in 1686, settled in Jamaica, L. I., 1693, and in the Presbyterian Church, Brookhaven, L. I., 1697, where he died at the age of seventy-five, June 17, 1739; issue John, Daniel, George, William, Samuel (who died young), Elizabeth, and Mary, who married Andrew Miller. The third son George, born April 1, 1698, married Elizabeth, daugh-

ter of Timothy Mills, April 11, 1726, settled at Islip, from whence he removed to the head of the river in Smithtown, and died November 21, 1771, aged seventy-three, leaving issue *Samuel*, born October 26, 1728; *Sarah*, born February 26, 1730; *George*, born January 16, 1732; *Jonas*, born March 12, 1735; *Elizabeth*, born March 23, 1737; *Mary*, born April 13, 1741; and *Moses*, born March 8, 1742. Of these Samuel married, 1754, Sarah, daughter of Isaac Mills. She died November 20, 1795, aged sixty-two, and he aged seventy-seven, June 3, 1806. His children were *Isaac Mills*, born June 18, 1760; *Sarah*, born June 14, 1763; *Samuel*, born June 23, 1771; and *Hannah*, born July 28, 1756. Of these Isaac Mills married Mehetabel, daughter of Samuel Smith, and died upon the paternal estate at Smithtown, aged fifty-nine, August 24, 1819, leaving George Smith, only child, who married Mary Caroline, daughter of Jonathan Mills, December 10, 1822, who died, aged thirty-three, August 14, 1832, and he again married Elizabeth, daughter of Isaac Blydenburgh, September 25, 1837. Sarah, daughter of Samuel Phillips, married William Henry Helme, and died November 14, 1836, aged seventy-three, leaving issue *Thomas S.*, *Sarah Maria*, *Hannah*, and *William*. Samuel, son of Samuel, married Margaret, daughter of John Bayley, and Ann, daughter of Isaac Hawkins. Hannah, eldest daughter of Samuel, married Daniel Brush, and died September 12, 1834 aged seventy-eight, having lost her husband August 23, 1805, aged sixty. Her children were Samuel and Julia, the latter of whom married Jeremiah Moore September 26, 1807.

William, third son of the Rev. George Phillips of Brookhaven, married Sybil, daughter of Richard Smith, October 27, 1737, and died January 1, 1778. She died

October 31, 1767. Issue John, William, Richard, Zebdial, Mary, James, Ebenezer, Sarah, Mary 2d, Philetus, and Elizabeth. Of these *John*, born September 3, 1738, settled and died at Milford, Conn. *William*, born March 27, 1741, settled in the eastern part of Brookhaven, where he died March 27, 1799, leaving a son William. *Philetus*, born November 24, 1759, settled at Greenville, N. Y., and died in 1817. His son Ebenezer, born October 9, 1786, was ordained pastor of the church, Easthampton, L. I., May 15, 1811, resigned 16th of March, 1830, and died at Carmel, Dutchess County, February 15, 1834, aged forty-eight. His widow died October 1, 1837, aged forty-six, leaving only a daughter. Moses, the youngest son of George of Smithtown, removed to Orange County, N. Y., in 1766, and began the settlement since called Phillipsburgh. He married Sarah, daughter of Henry Wisner of Goshen, January 27, 1760, by whom he had Gabriel Newton, George, Henry Wisner, Lewis, Moses, William, Sarah, Samuel, and Elizabeth. He died December 29, 1818, aged seventy-five. The said Gabriel N. became a physician, and married Elizabeth Paine of Savannah, and died March 7, 1849, aged seventy-nine. Moses married Harriet, daughter of John Kinney of New Jersey, and William married Sarah Evertson.

George and Jonas Phillips, sons of George, settled in New Jersey, the first of whom graduated at Yale 1769, and died 1802. He had issue George, Micah, and Deborah, all of whom are deceased. Jonas married Anna, daughter of the Rev. Thomas Lewis, former pastor of the church in Smithtown, by whom he had one child Anna, who married Daniel Phoenix, and had *Jonas Phillips*, *Lewis*, *John D.*, *Daniel A.*, and four daughters. The



said Jonas Phillips Phoenix married Mary, daughter of Stephen Whitney of New York, and his sister Elizabeth married Henry R. Remsen. William R., son of Moses S., died May 19, 1848, aged twenty-two. Dr. George W. Phillips died May 30, 1841, aged forty-five.

---

*The Sands Family of Long Island*

The family of Sands, or as it was anciently spelled, Sandys, is of Saxon origin, and can be distinctly traced to the time of Edward the Confessor, 1041. The name is supposed to be derived from a place called Sande in the Isle of Wight, as appears from *Domesday Book*, and Camden's *Survey of Britain*.

Sir William Sandys, in the reign of Henry VII. and Henry VIII. (1485, &c.), had great share in the victory over the rebels at Blackheath in Kent. His wife was Margaret Bray.\* He was made a Knight of the Garter, and employed by Henry VIII. against France. In 1524 he was created Lord Sandys, afterwards lord chamberlain of the household, and was one of those who subscribed the articles preferred against Cardinal Wolsey, and the declaration against Pope Clement the VII. His son Thomas succeeded to the title, and William, his grandson, was one of the peers that sat upon the trial of

\* Edwin Bray, third son of William and Margaret, was born in 1519, and educated at St. John's Hall, Cambridge. In 1547 he was Vicar of Haversham, in 1549 of Peterborough, and afterwards vice-chancellor of the university of Cambridge; he was imprisoned by Queen Mary, but obtaining his liberty, fled the country. On the accession of Elizabeth, he returned and was consecrated Bishop of Worcester, December 2, 1559, and in 1570 was made Bishop of London, and afterwards Archbishop of York, March 8, 1576. He died July 10, 1588, having six sons and two daughters.

Mary, Queen of Scots, in 1586. He was imprisoned for joining in an insurrection in London, 1601, made by Robert, Earl of Essex. His son William succeeded him, and died without issue in 1668, and was succeeded by his brother Henry.

In Camden's *Britannica*, we find the following: "As for secular matters, it has of late been honored by giving title to Sir George Sands of Lees Court, knight of the Bath, who, in consideration of his faithful services to King Charles I. was by Charles II. advanced to the degree and dignity of a baron of this realm, by the title of Baron of Thoresley, as also of Viscount, of Sands of Lees Court, and Earl of Feversham, by letters patent, dated at Westminster, April 8, 1676." It will be recollected that Sands is one of the *dramatis personæ* in Shakespeare's *Henry VIII*.

Sir Miles Sandys was created a knight by James I., November 25, 1612. His daughter Hester married Sir Thomas Temple, by whom she had four sons and nine daughters, and lived to see 700 of her descendants. She died in 1656. Sir John Temple, who afterwards came to America, was her great-great-grandson. In the second charter of Virginia, in the year 1609, we find the names of Sir Michael Sandys, Thomas Sandys, Henry Sandys, Esq. (son of Sir Edwin Sandys), and George Sandys, gentleman. Sir Edwin, born at Worcester in 1561, was the second son of Dr. Benjamin Sandys, Archbishop of York; George was the seventh and youngest son of the archbishop. Sir Edwin was appointed in 1617 treasurer and governor of the Virginia Company; in 1619 he was chosen treasurer of the East India Company, and died in 1629. In a letter to John Robinson and William Brewster, at Leyden, November 12, 1617, he spells his

name Sands, and it has sometimes been written Sandes and Sandis. In Stith's *History of Virginia*, we find the names of Edwyn, Samuel, Thomas, Henry, and George Sandys. It is moreover stated as a fact in English history, that a Mr. James Sands died in Staffordshire in 1670, at the age of 140 years, and his wife at the age of 120. (See *Hibernian Magazine* for 1801.)

Sir Richard Sandys, of Northburn, was created a baronet by King Charles II., December 15, 1684, in the thirty-sixth year of his reign.

The first of the family known in New England was Henry, who was admitted freeman of Boston 1640, and had a son John, born in 1646. The next was a brother of the above, called, in the history of those times, Captain James Sands. He was born at Reading, Berkshire, England, 1622, and arrived with Sarah, his wife, at Plymouth, in 1658, during the usurpation of Cromwell. Shortly after which in 1660 he, with fifteen others, purchased Block Island, called by the natives *Manisses*, all of whom removed thither with their families from Taunton. A charter for the island was obtained in 1672. Here he spent his days, and died, aged seventy-three, March 13, 1695. His wife, Ann Walker, survived him.

There was at this time an Indian population of at least 300 upon the island, and it being about the period of Philip's wars, Captain Sands erected a stone house and garrisoned it for defence. He was a leading man in the settlement, and had the principal management of affairs. His children were *John*, born 1669; *Sarah*, born 1671; *James*, born 1673 (died 1731), *Edward*, born 1675; *Samuel*, born 1680; and *Mary*, born 1683. Of these John married Sybil, daughter of Simon Ray of Block Island; Sarah married one Raymond; James married

Sarah Cornwell, and settled at Matinecock, L. I., in 1694. Samuel married another daughter of Simon Ray; Edward married Dinah Walker, and died in 1708; and Mary married Francis Niles.

Samuel also removed to Long Island in 1696, and united with his brothers John and James in a purchase upon Cow Neck,<sup>1</sup> since called Sands Point. But John, who was a sea-faring man, carried on a trade between Virginia and New York, and brought from the former colony some young locust trees, which being planted at Sands Point, produced in the course of time, nearly all the valuable timber of this kind since grown in the town and neighborhood. He died March 15, 1712, and his widow in 1733. They had John, Edward, Nathaniel, George, Mary, Catherine, Dorothy, and Abigail, who married John Thomas, of Westchester, February 19, 1729, and died August 14, 1782. Her eldest brother John, born 1684, married, September 9, 1706, Catherine, daughter of Robert and Margaret Guthrie of Edinburgh, and granddaughter of Dr. Alcock, who came as physician to the Boston Company in 1630. She was born June 24, 1690, and died February 18, 1769. He died August 15, 1747, leaving John, Robert, Edward, George, Anne, Nathaniel, Sarah, Joshua, Simon, Gideon, Mary, and Benjamin. Nathaniel, son of John and Sybil married Miss O'Neil, an Irish lady, celebrated for her beauty. Edward, his brother, married Rachel, daughter of Richard Cornwell, and had Henry, Richard, George, Sybil, Hannah, Polly, and Deborah.

James and Sarah Sands had 1. *Othniel*, born 1699, who married Susanna, daughter of Nicholas Lang, and died 1757; 2. *James*, born 1701, who married Jane Havi-

<sup>1</sup> Cow Neck is now known as Manhasset Neck.—EDITOR.

land and Rebecca Bailey; 3. *Amigah*; 4. *John*; 5. *Sarah*, who married John Aspinwall; 6. *Jerusha*, who married John Carman; 7. *Bathsheba*, who married Thomas Everit; 8. *Seviah*, who married Aaron Smith; and 9. *Maria*, who married Joseph Sutton.

The said Othniel Sands had William; Caleb, who married Peninah Owen; James, who married Hannah Boerum; Lang; Othniel, who married Martha Ketcham; John; Samuel, who married Martha Owen; Mary; Sarah, who married Winant Willison; Susannah, who married James Pinkerton; and Jerusha, who married John Forman.

John Sands, son of John and Catherine (Guthrie), was born January 1, 1708, married Elizabeth, daughter of Caleb Cornwell, May 12, 1736 and died November 22, 1760. Their children were John, Cornwell, Elizabeth, Robert, Comfort, Stephen, Richardson, and Joshua. Of these Comfort, born at Sands Point, February 26, 1748, was bred a merchant, and commenced business in the city of New York in 1769. June 3rd of that year he married Sarah, daughter of Wilkie Dodge, who was born May 24, 1749. In March 1776, he removed to his farm at New Rochelle, and had nearly completed a dwelling when the British landed there in October, pulled down the house, took away his furniture, and destroyed his books. Being compelled to leave his house, he took refuge in Philadelphia, which was afterwards menaced by the enemy, and he removed his family to Rochester, Ulster County, N. Y., where they remained till 1778—then to Poughkeepsie, and again to Philadelphia, where they remained till peace was declared in the year 1783, when they returned to New York. From the beginning till the close of the war, he was almost constantly en-



gaged in public affairs. In 1774 he was one of the committee to carry into execution the resolutions of the continental congress, and in November, 1775, was chosen a member of the provincial congress of New York, in which he served till July, 1776, when he was chosen by the New York convention auditor-general of the public accounts, at a salary of £300. In this capacity he acted until October, 1781, when he resigned. About this time he united with his brothers Richardson and Joshua, in a contract with Robert Morris, to supply the northern army with provisions for 1782. In 1783 he formed a partnership with his brother Joshua, and conducted an extensive mercantile business in the city of New York. The connection was dissolved in 1794. During this period he was several times chosen to represent the city in the assembly. On the 24th of January, 1795, he lost his wife, aged forty-six, having had issue by her ten sons and four daughters. Those who survived her were Joseph, Cornelia, Henry, Francis, Charles, Lewis, Richardson, Augustus, and Sarah. On the 5th of June, 1797, he married Cornelia daughter of Abraham Lott, former treasurer of the province. She was born November 5, 1761, and by her he had issue Robert C., and daughters Gertrude and Julia Maria. Mr. Sands lived to the age of eighty-six, and died at Hoboken, September 22, 1834, having outlived most of his children.

Few persons were more active and useful during the trying period of the Revolution, or enjoyed to a greater extent the public confidence. He evinced his detestation of the cruel measures of the mother country at an early age. In 1765 he assisted in the destruction of ten bales of stamp paper, sent out for the use of the colonies—it was taken from on board a brig, lying at Burling Slip,

and carried up to the beach near Rutgers' Place, where it was burned. In 1769 he joined an association of merchants, which resolved to import no more goods from Great Britain, until the duty on tea, and the act imposing a tax on glass and paints, were repealed. In January, 1776, he was directed by the committee of safety to send three vessels with cargoes to the West Indies, in exchange for medicines, powder, and other articles. He despatched two, which were taken by the enemy, with one of his own, worth, including cargo, \$10,000. In 1777 he was appointed one of the commissioners to meet at New Haven, by order of congress, to regulate the price of articles for the army. He was one of the first directors of the Bank of New York in 1784, five years before its charter was obtained, and continued to serve many years. He was also president of the chamber of commerce, and was concerned with his brother Joshua in the purchase, for \$30,000, of a valuable tract of land in Brooklyn, forfeited by the attainder of John Rapelje, worth at this time many millions of dollars; but Mr. Sands lived to see it pass from his hands, and himself reduced to comparative poverty.

His son Joseph, formerly of the respectable banking house of Prime, Ward, and Sands, was married in Paris by the celebrated Talleyrand, Bishop of Autun, March 26, 1801, to Marie Therese Kamflin, with whom he returned to New York. She survived him and died August 17, 1847, aged sixty-five, having been born at Vienna, December 28, 1782. Their daughter Mary, born June 3, 1804, married Francis Griffin of New York.

Robert C., son of Mr. Sands by his second wife, was born May 11, 1799, and graduated at Columbia College 1815, when he delivered the valedictory oration. He

studied law with David B. Ogden, and was admitted to the bar, but such was his literary ardor that he relinquished his profession, and was soon distinguished as a writer and a poet. His intellect was of a high order, and the productions of his pen are ample proof of his genius and industry. In ancient and modern languages and literature, he had in this country few equals, and probably no superior. His manners were gentle and unassuming, his wit unmingled with acerbity or sarcasm, and his imagination powerful in the extreme. His various publications are distinguished for classic purity of style, and for grace, ease, and elegance. He read familiarly the Greek, Latin, French, Spanish, Italian, and Portuguese authors. His death took place December 16, 1832, at the age of thirty-three, since when an interesting memoir of his life has been written by his friend Julian C. Verplanck.

Joshua Sands, youngest brother of Comfort, born at Sands Point, L. I., October 12, 1757, entered as clerk in a mercantile house at an early age, where he continued till 1776, when he was invited by Colonel Trumbull to accept a situation in the office of the commissary general of the American army. He contributed very essential aid in facilitating the retreat of the Americans from Long Island in August, 1776, and the next year joined his brothers, Comfort and Richardson, in supplying the army with clothing and provisions. On the 9th of March, 1780, he married Ann, daughter of Dr. Richard Ascough, a surgeon in the British army previous to the war. She was born January 5, 1761, and is still living. In 1781 he was employed in furnishing the troops on the Hudson, for the following year. After the war he engaged with his brother in business as above stated, and it was

during this connection that he united in the purchase of lands in Brooklyn containing 160 acres, which in 1800 were divided by commissioners into blocks and squares, a map of which is in the clerk's office of the county of Kings. These lands were then valued at \$150,000, and in 1805 were assessed for the purpose of taxation at \$200,000.

In 1797 he was appointed collector of the customs for the port of New York, which office he discharged with ability and integrity till removed by Mr. Jefferson in 1801. While in business he contemplated the manufacture of cables and rigging for his own vessels, and took measures for procuring from England the necessary machinery and workmen. In this he succeeded, organized a cordage manufactory in Brooklyn, erected wharves and buildings for the purpose and the accommodation of those connected with the business. These things identified him with the interests and prosperity of the village, a relation which marked the rest of his life. In 1802 he represented his district in congress, having been previously a senator and judge of Kings County. He was for some time also president of the Merchants Bank, New York, and in 1824 was again elected to congress. He was active in everything which could promote the prosperity of Brooklyn, and lived to see it become a flourishing city. He enjoyed the esteem and confidence of the people without distinction of party in every official station. To an amiable disposition and much goodness of heart, he united a high-toned spirit of independence and a tenacity of purpose which never swerved when he felt he was right. He died universally regretted, aged seventy-seven, September 13, 1835. His children were 1. *Ann Moore*, born January 1, 1781, who married Fanning

C. Tucker, and died February, 1833; 2. *Richard Ascough*, born April 7, 1783; 3. *Grace Augusta*, born November 29, 1784; 4. *Elizabeth*, born September 20, 1786, who married one Trenchard; 5. *William Malcolm*, born March 9, 1788; 6. *Sarah Ann*, born February 27, 1790, who married Thomas March; 7. *Matilda Caroline*, born March 5, 1792; 8. *Joshua Rattoon*, born May, 1795, who married Harriet, daughter of John Stevens, December 2, 1830; 9. *Grace Augusta* 2d, born February 28, 1797, who married Joseph Henshaw, October 4, 1817; 10. *Samuel B.*, born July 12, 1799; 11. *John Cornwell*, born July 31, 1801; and 12. *Harriet Ascough*, born October 10, 1803.

---

*Of Colonel Smith and his Descendants, or the Tangier Smiths*

Colonel William Smith was born at Newton, near Higham Ferrers, in Northamptonshire in England, February 2, 1655. It seems that in his youth he was destined for the active scenes of life, and it is not probable that he received either a classical or legal education. He, however, possessed a vigorous mind, with a versatility of genius capable of attaining distinction in any employment to which it was applied. The family probably were attached to the royal cause, as he seems to have been in great favor with Charles II., which was continued during the reigns of James II., William and Mary, and while he continued under Queen Anne.

Charles II., in 1675, appointed him governor of Tangier, which place, as well as Bombay, was given to him by the king of Portugal as a part of the marriage por-



tion of his wife Queen Catharine, the daughter of that king; and he probably at the same time gave him the commission of colonel, and the command of the troops necessary to protect an establishment on that barbarous coast. It was intended to make Tangier a place of trade, and to establish a colony there. The project, however, did not succeed; and in 1683 the place was abandoned, and Colonel Smith returned to England. He married Martha, daughter of Henry Tunstall, Esq. of Putney, in the county of Surrey, November 26, 1675.

After his return, he embarked in trade in London, and continued in business until he left the country in July, 1686. It would also seem that he was for a short time concerned in trade after his arrival here, and may have come over for that purpose. There is an entry of a note on the records of Brookhaven, bearing date April 23, 1690, given by Colonel Thomas Dongan, the late governor of the province, to Colonel Smith, for £293, purporting to be for goods, in which the colonel is styled a merchant.

Colonel Smith arrived with his family at New York, August 6, 1686. He very early visited Brookhaven, and seems to have taken a fancy to a valuable neck of land there, called Little Neck,<sup>1</sup> which was held in shares by various proprietors, who were in some dispute about the premises. Governor Dongan aided him in effecting the purchase. He wrote to the proprietors, and recommended it to them to sell out to Colonel Smith, as the best mode of terminating the controversy, to which a considerable portion of them agreed; and on the 22d of October, 1687, Colonel Smith made his first purchase in

\* Now known as Strong's Neck.—EDITOR.

Brookhaven of Little Neck, now owned by one of his descendants.

In 1689 it is supposed he removed to Brookhaven with his family, and took up his permanent residence there. After his settlement at Brookhaven, he made a purchase of a large tract of country, extending from the country road to the South Bay, and from Carman's River to Mastic River, to which the town assented, and which, with his former purchases, was erected into a manor, by the name of St. George's manor, by patent of Colonel Fletcher in 1693; and subsequent to this he purchased all the lands unpurchased, lying between his former purchase and the bounds of Southampton, which were annexed to his manor by another patent of Colonel Fletcher in 1697, whose grants to individuals were so extravagant, that several of them were annulled by an act of the colony legislature under the succeeding administration.

Governor Slaughter arrived at New York March 19, 1691, and on the 15th he appointed Colonel Smith one of the members of the council: he also appointed him one of the commissioners of oyer and terminer, which court tried and convicted Leisler and his associates.

The supreme court was established by an act of the legislature, May 6, 1691; consisting of a chief justice, with a salary of £130; a second judge, with a salary of £100; and three other judges, without salary. On the 15th, the governor and council appointed Joseph Dudley chief justice, Thomas Johnson the second judge, and Colonel Smith, Stephen Van Cortlandt, and William Pinhorne, the other judges. Colonel Smith was at the same time appointed a judge or delegate of the prerogative court for the county of Suffolk.

Colonel Fletcher arrived, and took upon him the government, August 29, 1692. November 11, 1692, the seat of Joseph Dudley was vacated for non-residence, and Colonel Smith was appointed chief justice in his room. On the 8th of June, 1693, he was commissioned to succeed Colonel Youngs in the command of the militia of Suffolk County. During the time he held the office of chief justice the colony was divided into rancorous parties, and the public measures were of course influenced by party spirit; yet he seems to have discharged the duties of his office with great dignity and impartiality. Governor Bellomont, on his arrival April 2, 1698, took part with the friends of Leisler, and, as might be expected, removed Colonel Smith from the office of chief justice, and on the 20th of October, 1700, appointed Mr. Van Cortlandt in his stead. He was, however, allowed to retain his place at the council board, as his loyalty was so well known in England, and such was his popularity with the ministry, that his Excellency dared not carry his resentment so far as to remove him. The governor died 5th of March, 1701, and John Nanfan, the lieutenant governor, being absent from the colony, Colonel Smith, president of the council, claimed and exercised the authority of government. This claim was opposed by the adherents of Leisler, and denied by a majority of the assembly, who were of the same party. The minutes of the supreme court, while Colonel Smith presided, from October 4, 1693, to October 5, 1700, are preserved in the collections of the New York Historical Society. In 1702 Lord Cornbury reappointed him chief justice, which office he held till April, 1703. He continued a member of the council till his death, which took place at his residence upon Little Neck, Setauket, February 18, 1705. The

inscription upon his tomb in the family cemetery is as follows:

" Here lyes intered ye body of ye Hon<sup>b</sup>. Coll. William Smith, Chiefe Justice and President of ye Councill of ye Province of New Yorke. Born in England at Higham-Ferrers in Northamptonshire Feb. ye 2d, 165<sup>4</sup>/<sub>6</sub>, and died at the mansion of St. George, Feb. 18, 170<sup>6</sup>/<sub>6</sub>, in ye 51st yeare of his age."

His wife, a very intelligent and well bred lady, outlived him, and died September 1, 1709. Their surviving children were Henry, William Henry, Patty, Gloriana, and Charles Jeffery. The last, born December 20, 1693, died without issue May 23, 1713, aged nineteen. Patty married Colonel Caleb Heathcote, who arrived here in 1692, and was appointed a member of the council the same year. One of her daughters married Dr. Johnson, the friend and correspondent of Gronovius, and another daughter Anne married chief justice James De Lancey (whose son John Peter De Lancey was the father of Bishop William Heathcote De Lancey, and the wife of James Fenimore Cooper). Gloriana married the Rev. George Muirson of Westchester, who came to America in 1704, and died in 1709.

Henry, eldest son of Colonel Smith, born at Tangier, January 19, 1679, was a man of talent, filled the office of clerk of Suffolk County from 1710 to 1716, and was many years a judge of the county, as well as delegate of the prerogative court, for taking proof of wills, &c. He married Anna, daughter of the Rev. Thomas Shepard of Charlestown, Mass., where she was born January 30, 1685, and married by the celebrated Cotton Mather

January 1, 1705.\* Their children were *Mary*, who married Edmund Smith, and died September 27, 1765; *Anna*, born December 20, 1706, who married Dr. George Muirson; *William Henry*, born October 29, 1708; *Henry*, born September 18 1710; *Gloriana*, born February 26, 1715, who married Nathaniel Brewster, and died July 17, 1756; *Martha*, born February 26, 1717, who married Rev. James Lyon February 7, 1753; *Charles Jeffery*, born September 2, 1719, who died 1754; *Gilbert*, born September 28, 1721; and *Catharine*, born June 20, 1725, who died March 12, 1745. The wife of Colonel Smith died May 7, 1735, and October 8, 1737, he married Frances, daughter of the Rev. Henry Caner of Fairfield, Conn., who died without issue June 24, 1742, and he married, November 6, 1742, Margaret Biggs, by whom he had daughters *Frances* and *Margaret*. She died August 15, 1764, and he in 1767, aged eighty-eight. Of the two last named daughters, Margaret died young, and Frances, born in 1744, married Captain William Nicoll, and had sons William and Henry. Gilbert became a physician, married Margaret Biggs, and died at an advanced age, leaving issue, Jane, Gilbert, Henry, John, Nathaniel, Penelope, Gloriana, Frances, and Phebe, all of whom are deceased. Those who mar-

\* Thomas Shepard, the youngest son of the Rev. William Shepard, who was born at Towcester, Northamptonshire, England, November 5, 1605, graduated at Emmanuel College 1623, arrived at Boston October 3, 1635, and engaged in forming a church at Cambridge, where he continued pastor till his death August 25, 1649. He was an able and voluminous writer, and had great influence in locating the college at Cambridge. His first wife was Margaret Tuteville, who died 1636, his second Joanna Hooker, died April, 1646, and his third Margaret Boradel, who survived him. His son Henry had a daughter Margaret, who married the Rev. Jonathan Mitchell, and who succeeded her father in the church at Cambridge, August 21, 1650. Another daughter Sarah married Samuel Thompson of Braintree, September 14, 1656.



ried were *Jane*, wife of Abraham Cooper Woodhull, born May 21, 1753, who died May 26, 1780; *Penelope*, wife of Thomas Mount, who died October 24, 1800; *Gloriana*, wife of William Douglass; and *Frances*, wife of John Biggs, all of whom left issue.

Henry, second son of Colonel Henry Smith, married Ruth, daughter of Jonathan Smith, and had issue *Charles Jeffery*, who died August 16, 1770; *Brewster*, *James*, *Elizabeth*, and *Martha*. Of these the eldest married Miss Platt, and had Elihu, who became one of the editors of the *New York Medical Repository*, and died in 1795. The said Martha married Thomas Hazzard.

William Henry, eldest son of Colonel Henry, and commonly called "*Young Clerk Smith*," was a man of respectability and usefulness; clerk of Suffolk County from 1730 to 1750, and subsequently judge of the court of common pleas. He married Margaret, daughter of Henry Lloyd, and had William Henry, William, Gilbert, Paschal Nelson, Oliver, Rebecca, Anna, and Catherine. Of whom the said William Henry and Oliver settled and died in Boston; the first died 1793, leaving issue Henry, Elizabeth, and Anne. The second married a Miss Coffin; the said Paschal N. married Hester, sister of Isaac Sears, better known as "*King Sears*." She died in 1805, and had Harriet, who died aged twenty-two, June 29, 1801. William and Gilbert died at Halifax. Rebecca married John Aspinwall, and had William, John, Sarah, and Margaret, of whom William died without issue. Gilbert married Harriet Scott, and died at Jamaica of yellow fever, September 18, 1819, aged fifty, leaving issue John, James, Elizabeth, Rebecca, and Sarah. This John married Miss Winthrop; Elizabeth married John Van Beuren; and Rebecca married

a Dr. Burger. John Aspinwall, jun., above named, married Miss Howland; his sister Sarah married Colonel Richard Platt; and Margaret married Abijah Hammond.

Anna, daughter of "Young Clerk Smith," married the late Selah Strong, and died August 12, 1813; issue Thomas S., Keturah, Margaret, Benjamin, William S., Joseph, and George W. Her sister Catharine married John Grinnell of New York.

William Henry, second son of Chief Justice Smith, and commonly called "Major Smith," was born March 13, 1689, and settled on the south side of St. George's Manor; his first wife being a Miss Merrit of Boston (by whom he had a son Merrit, who settled in Connecticut, and left sons William Henry and Thomas), and his second wife Hannah Cooper was born 1690 and died 1763, by whom he had issue William, Caleb, Elizabeth, Sarah, Martha, Jane, and Hannah. Of these Caleb, born 1724, graduated at Yale College 1743, and settled as pastor of the Presbyterian Church at Orange, N. J., where he died October 22, 1762. He first married Martha, daughter of President Dickinson, by whom he had Nancy, Elizabeth, and Jane; and second, Rebecca, daughter of Isaac Foot of Branford, Conn., by whom he had Apollos. His widow married the Rev. Dr. Azel Roe, and died September 1, 1794. Elizabeth, sister of Caleb, married John Woodhull, and had William, John, Caleb, Henry, Merrit S., James, Gilbert, Jeffrey, Amherst, and Elizabeth. Her sister Sarah married James Sprout of Philadelphia and had issue William, John, Hannah, Olivia, and Sarah. Martha, another sister, born April 10, 1727, married Caleb Smith of Smithtown March 3, 1755, and died October 10, 1778; issue Olivia, Paul, Caleb, and Martha.

Jane died unmarried, and Hannah, youngest daughter of Major Smith, born March 25, 1729, married Thomas Helme November 15, 1753, and died, aged fifty-nine, February 16, 1789, leaving issue Thomas, Hannah, William Henry, Martha, Caleb, and Clarissa.

William, second son of Major Smith, born 1720, died March 17, 1799, on the paternal estate at Mastic, L. I. His first wife Mary, daughter of Daniel Smith, was born May 23, 1735, married, 1755, and died April 23, 1758, leaving issue John and Mary. His second wife Ruth, daughter of Nathaniel Woodhull, was born 1732, married in 1763, and died, aged ninety, in 1822; by her he had William, Caleb, Mary 2d, Hannah, Elizabeth, born 1774, who died in 1795, and Sarah, born 1772, who died 1793, unmarried. Mr. Smith held the office of county judge for several years, and was a member of the provincial congress. In 1777 he was appointed senator under the state constitution, which honor he held till 1783. His daughter Mary 2d, born May 12, 1763, married Dr. Daniel Robert, and died June 6, 1809, leaving issue William, Christopher, Daniel, and Maria. Hannah, born October 4, 1764, married Richard Woodhull of Orange County, had Jesse, William S., Nathaniel D., and Ruth Hester, and died January 6, 1809, aged forty-four. His son William S. died 1822.

Caleb, third son of Judge Smith, born May 26, 1770, married Harriet, daughter of William Bowditch, had Caleb and Elizabeth, and died in 1805; his daughter Elizabeth married William R. Sleight, and died in 1832.

William, second son of the judge, born April 30, 1768, married Hannah, daughter of Philetus Smith, and died July 22, 1803, aged thirty-five. His children were

William Sidney, Apollos, who died May 7, 1816, aged eighteen, and Ruth Amelia, who married Robert M. Russell December 6, 1812, by whom she had five children. William Sidney married Eleanor, daughter of William Jones, and had William Elbert, Charles, Amelia, Robert, James, Sidney, Susan, and Apollos.

John, generally called General Smith, eldest son of Judge Smith, born February 12, 1755, was a man of good abilities, and filled various public stations with entire fidelity, few men having enjoyed a larger share of public confidence. He was a member of the state legislature for most of the time from 1784 to 1800; was in the convention that adopted the Constitution of the United States in 1788; in 1799 was elected to congress, in which he continued four years; in 1803 was appointed a senator to fill the vacancy occasioned by the resignation of De Witt Clinton, and afterwards was reappointed for a full term of six years. He was made marshal of New York in 1814, and held office till his decease, June 25, 1816, at the age of sixty-one. His first wife was *Lydia*, daughter of Thomas Fanning, born 1760, who was married, October 16, 1776, and died, aged seventeen, in 1777. His second was *Elizabeth*, daughter of Zephaniah Platt, who married, 1785, and died soon after. In October, 1792, he married *Elizabeth*, daughter of the lamented General Nathaniel Woodhull, and widow of Henry Nicoll. She was born November 30, 1762, and died September 14, 1839, aged seventy-six. By his first wife he had William, and by the last Egbert Tangier, Robert, Charles Jeffery, and Sarah Augusta. Of these *William*, born 1777, married Hannah, daughter of Samuel Carman, and had Sylvester, William, Lydia, and Egbert Tangier; the two last only are living, of whom

Lydia married David Floyd July 31, 1845; *Sarah Augusta* married John L. Lawrence in June, 1816; and her brother *Egbert Tangier* married Annie M. Robinson.

---

*Of the Descendants of John, William, and Thomas Lawrence*

These brothers were among the earliest settlers of the English towns within the Dutch jurisdiction upon Long Island. They emigrated from England during the political troubles that led to the dethronement and death of Charles I. They are said to have been related to Henry Lawrence, who, with Lord Say and Seal, Lord Brooke, Sir Arthur Hasselrig, Sir Richard Saltonstall, George Fenwick, and Henry Darley, obtained a grant of the lands on Connecticut River, and in 1635 commissioned John Winthrop, jun., to be governor over the same, intending to follow him to this country. One of his instructions was, "to provide able men for making fortifications and building houses at the river Connecticut, and the harbor adjoining, first for their own present accommodation, and then such houses as may receive men of quality, which latter houses we would have to be builded within the fort."

The prohibition to Cromwell and others, from emigrating to America in 1638, defeated their intentions, and Henry Lawrence, in order to avoid the ecclesiastical severity directed against him, retired to Holland, from whence he returned in 1641. He was a member of parliament from Westminster, Hertfordshire, and Colchester borough in Essex, successively; and after the establishment of the protectorate, was appointed presi-



dent of the privy council, and a lord of the "other house." In corroboration of the relationship between him and the above named brothers, we find on the seals appended to their wills, now on file at New York, and on old plate, still possessed by their descendants, the same *crest* and *arms* as those upon the tomb of the lord president. In connection with this subject, we venture to introduce the following extract, from a curious pamphlet of 1660, entitled, "The mystery of the Good Old Cause, briefly unfolded in a catalogue of the members of the late long parliament, that held office, both civil and military, contrary to the self-denying ordinance:"

"Henry Lawrence, a member of the long parliament, fell off at the murder of his majesty, for which the Protector with great zeal declared, that 'a neutral spirit was more to be abhorred than a cavalier spirit, that such men as he, were not fit to be used in such a day as that, when God was cutting down kingship, root and branch.' Yet he came into play again, and contributed much to the setting up of the Protector, for which worthy service he was made and continued lord president of the Protector's council; being also, one of the lords of the other house, and afterwards one of the honorable committee of safety."

We have also met with the sermon preached on the death of the Protector, by George Lawrence, M.A., minister of St. Cross, near Winchester, and printed in 1658. It is a neat volume of thirty-six pages, quarto size, and is entitled, "A good Prince bewailed by a good people"; and in it are inserted portraits of the Protector and his son Richard.

The three brothers first landed in Massachusetts, from

whence they came to this province, then New Netherlands.

John Lawrence, the eldest, was one of the six persons to whom the patent of Hempstead was granted by Governor Kieft in 1644. In the following year, he and his brother William, with sixteen others, obtained the patent of Flushing from the same governor, and were also among those to whom the confirmatory patent was issued by Nicoll in 1666. Soon after the two Dutch patents were granted, John Lawrence removed from Flushing, where he had established his residence, to New Amsterdam, where he held important public stations, both under the Dutch and English. In 1663 he was deputed by Stuyvesant to the general court at Hartford, a commissioner on the part of New Netherlands, to adjust the boundaries between the Dutch and English, and other disputed matters. On the threatened invasion of the province by the English, he petitioned the director general and council to be excused from bearing arms against his countrymen and the king of England. He received the appointment of alderman of the city of New York after the organization of the new government, in 1664; was repeatedly mayor and member of the council much of the time from 1675 to 1698. He was one of the judges of the supreme court, 1692, and so continued till his death in 1699.

By his wife Susanna, who survived him, he had three sons and three daughters; 1. Joseph, who died before him, leaving a daughter, who died young; 2. John, who married Sarah, widow of Thomas Willet, first mayor of New York, by whom he had no issue; 3. Thomas, who died unmarried; 4. Susanna, who married Gabriel Mienville, one of the council of the province, and mayor of New

York, and, after his death, William Smith, one of the aldermen of the city. She survived both husbands, and died without issue. 5. Martha, who married Thomas Snawsell, alderman of New York, and died without issue; and 6. Mary, who married William Whittingham, a graduate of Harvard, in 1660, and great-grandson of the Rev. William Whittingham, dean of Durham, a famous Puritan. Mary, a daughter by this marriage, distinguished for her literary acquirements, and the gifts she bestowed upon Harvard and Yale colleges, became the wife of Gordon Saltonstall, governor of Connecticut, and died in 1730.

William Lawrence, first above named, came to New Netherlands, about the same time with his brother John, and in 1645 was associated with him as patentee of Flushing, where he resided during life. His letters addressed to Stuyvesant and his council in 1662 and 1663 are ably written, evincing his energy and decision of character, and are evidently the production of a man of superior mind and liberal education. He resided upon Lawrence's or Tew's Neck (so called), of which he was the owner.

He served in the magistracy of Flushing, under the Dutch and while under the English he held both civil and military offices upon Long Island. He died in 1680, and the inventory of his estate, on file in New York, shows that his sword, plate, and other personals alone, amounted to £4,432 sterling.

He was twice married. By his first wife he left issue William, John, and Elizabeth. In 1664 he married for his second wife Elizabeth, eldest daughter of Richard Smith, Esq., the patentee of Smithtown, and ancestor of the Bull Smiths, so called. By this marriage he had

seven children, *Mary*, *Thomas*, who, in 1692, married Mary Ferguson of Queens County; *Joseph*, *Richard*, who married in 1699 Charity, daughter of Thomas Clarke of Brookhaven, afterwards of New York City, and of Bucks County, Penn., by whom he had issue Charity and Richard in 1706; *Samuel*, *Sarah*, who married James Tillett; and *James*. In April, 1681, Elizabeth, widow of the said William, married captain, afterwards Sir Philip Carteret, governor of New Jersey, who died in December of the following year, in less than two months after resigning his authority into the hands of his successor, upon which his widow returned to Long Island.

She conveyed to her son Joseph an extensive tract of land upon Little Neck, in the town of Flushing, who, becoming intimate with Lord Effingham, commander of a British frigate, named his son Effingham Lawrence. He afterwards settled in London, where he died in 1806, leaving issue William Effingham, Effingham, Edward Billop, and Catherine Mary, who, in 1816, married Sir John T. Jones, Bart., of Cranmer Hall, Norfolkshire, England, aid to the Duke of Wellington, by whom she had issue Lawrence Willoughby, Herbert Walsingham, and Emily Florence Jones.

Major William Lawrence, eldest son of the first named William, married, 1680, Deborah, youngest daughter of the above named Richard Smith, by whom he had issue nine sons and three daughters, to wit: 1. William, who died before his father and without issue; 2. Richard, who married and left a son William, who married Charity Cornell in 1740, and had issue Catherine, born May 11, 1742, Violetta, born February 15, 1743, William, born January 16, 1745, Charles, born February 1, 1748, Richard, born January 6, 1752, Daniel, born January 8,

1755, Oliver, born November 14, 1757; 3. Obadiah, who died in 1732, and by his wife Sarah had issue William, who was a physician, and settled at Oyster Bay; Deborah, Mary, Sarah, who married in 1735 Joseph Bowne, Samuel, Jordan, and Obadiah; 4. Daniel, who died in 1757, and had by his wife Mary, Longford, Abraham, Mary, who married James Thorne, and Mehetabel, who married Ralph Hilton; 5. Samuel, who by his wife Mary left issue Thomas, William, Augustine, Margaret, Abigail, Samuel, Deborah, who married a Doughty, Elizabeth, who married a Willett, and Mary, who married a Waters; 6. Joshua, who died abroad unmarried; 7. Adam, who was high sheriff of Queens County under the colonial government, and left issue, viz.: Deborah, who married a Van Wyck, Sarah, who married a Hewlett, Catharine, who married a Platt, George, Daniel, a physician, Stephen, Joseph, Clarke, and Sarah, who married a Rodman; 8. Elizabeth, who married John Willets; 9. Caleb, who died in the West Indies in 1723; 10. Stephen, born 1700, who married, 1734, Amy, daughter of Samuel Bowne, and died 1776, leaving issue Somerset, born 1736, Launcelot, Deborah, Robert, and Leonard, born September 20, 1741, who married Margaret, daughter of Samuel Doughty, November 19, 1771, and died December 13, 1821, aged seventy-two, having issue: 1. William, born October 5, 1772, who died unmarried May 2, 1819; 2. Samuel Doughty, born March 8, 1774, who married Hannah, daughter of Samuel Underhill, and died September 20, 1799; 3. Gilbert, born July 1, 1776, who married Esther, daughter of Thomas Pearsall, who died without issue in March, 1837; 4. Deborah, born May 18, 1778, who married John Embree; 5. Launcelot, born December 1, 1780, who died unmarried September 26,



1799; 6. Stephen, born December 19, 1782, who died August 3, 1801; 7. Robert, born December 11, 1787, who died unmarried September 2, 1847; 8. Amy, born February 21, 1789, who died the same year; 9. David Colden, born October 10, 1790, who married Mary Ann, daughter of Jonah Hallett, October 30, 1812, and died May 21, 1823.

John Lawrence, second son of the first William, died 1714, leaving issue by his wife Elizabeth: William, John, Richard, Elizabeth (married a Ford), Mary (married a Briggs), Deborah, Benjamin, Sarah, and Charity. Elizabeth, daughter of the first William, married Thomas Stephens, February, 1672. Her brother Joseph, by his wife Mary, left issue Richard, who in 1717, married Hannah, daughter of Samuel Bowne; Elisha and Thomas (who both removed to New Jersey), and Elizabeth, who married John Bowne in 1714. Said Richard had issue Mary, born in 1718; Elizabeth, born in 1719; Caleb, born in 1723; Hannah, born in 1726; Lydia, born in 1728; John, born in 1731; Effingham, born in 1734; Norris, born in 1737; and Joseph, born in 1741. The said Caleb left one son named Richard, who married Mary Lawrence, and had issue William; Caleb; Mary Ann, who married a Colden; Richard, who married a De Zeng; Sarah, who married Richard De Zeng; and Jane. The last named John Lawrence married Ann Burling, and had issue Edward, who married Zipporah Lawrence; Hannah, who married Jacob Schieffelin; Effingham, who married Elizabeth Watson; Mary, who married Effingham Embree; Jane, who married Isaac Livesay; Catharine; Anna, who married Thomas Buckley; and John B., who married Hannah Newbold. The children of said Effingham and Elizabeth were *Watson Effingham*, who married Augusta M., daughter of John Nicoll of

New Haven; *Effingham Watson* (born December 20, 1795, married, July 23, 1823; issue William Henry, Francis, and Frederick), whose wife Rebecca, daughter of Benjamin Prince, died April 15, 1845, aged forty; *John Watson*, born 1800, who married Mary, daughter of Walter Bowne, deceased; *Mary Watson*, who married James T. Talman; and *Anna Watson*. Elizabeth Watson, daughter of the said Watson E. Lawrence, married Lawrence P. Hill of Moline, August, 1835, and Caroline B., daughter of said John W. Lawrence, married Henry Bedinger of Virginia, October 14, 1847. Joseph Lawrence, son of Richard and Hannah, married Phebe, daughter of Henry Townsend, and died November 5, 1813. She died September 17, 1816; issue Elizabeth, who married Silas Titus; Henry, who married Harriet, daughter of Cornelius Van Wyck; Phebe, born March 29, 1760, who married Obadiah Townsend November 11, 1795, and died August 21, 1839; Lydia, who married Anthony Franklin; Richard, who married Elizabeth Talman; and Effingham, who married Anne, daughter of Solomon Townsend; she died October 9, 1845, aged fifty-seven. Their daughter Lydia married Cornelius W. Lawrence June 5, 1844, and their son Effingham married Jane, daughter of Isaac Osgood, June 9, 1847.

The said Henry and Harriet Lawrence had Cornelius W., Joseph, Sarah H., Richard, Harriet, Catherine, and Phebe. Of these Cornelius married Rachel, daughter of Willet Hicks; Richard, a daughter of David M. Prall; and Lydia, daughter of Effingham Lawrence as above stated. His brother Joseph married Rosetta, daughter of the late Thomas S. Townsend; Catherine married Robert Bell. Henry Lawrence married for his second wife Amy, daughter of Thomas Pearsall, who died April

28, 1843. Henry, by his wife Amy, had only one daughter, Esther P., who married William J. Post.

Thomas Lawrence, the elder, and six other persons were named in Governor Nicoll's patent for Newtown in 1666, and by purchase from the Dutch settlers he obtained the whole of Hell Gate Neck, extending from Hell Gate Cove to the Bowery Bay. In the patent from Dongan in 1686, Thomas, William, and John, sons of Thomas, are named as patentees.

On receiving the news of the Revolution in England of 1688, and of the removal of Sir Edmund Andros as governor of Massachusetts, the family of Thomas became decided actors in asserting the principles which had prompted his departure from England. Many persons in Queens, however, as well as Suffolk County, were not disposed to second the popular feeling which had vacated the offices at the city of New York, and placed Leisler at the head of affairs. Not discouraged at the lukewarmness of his neighbors, Thomas Lawrence, though far advanced in years, accepted the command of the forces of Queens County. William, one of his sons, was appointed one of the committee of safety, by whom the government of the colony was for a time assumed, and soon after, one of the council of the province; an office which he subsequently held from 1702 to 1706, under a commission from Queen Anne. John Lawrence, another of the sons of Thomas, had the command of the troop of horse of the county assigned to him, with his brother Daniel as cornet. John was soon afterwards appointed high sheriff of the county, to which place he was also chosen in 1698. Among the meagre records which are left of Leisler's times, is the entry of an order to Major Thomas Lawrence, dated 29th of July, 1690, "to press

seventy men, horse and foot, as he shall think fit; and horses and provisions; and despatch them to Southold for the defence and protection of their Majesties' subjects there." The misconception or obstinacy, whichever it was, that influenced Leisler in delaying to surrender the fort at New York to Governor Slaughter on his arrival, involved all the members of his council in the consequence of this omission; and William Lawrence, with the rest of them, was seized and committed, on a charge of high treason. John Lawrence, his uncle, who, from the caution of age, or a disapproval of the violence of some of Leisler's proceedings, had never countenanced his elevation, was appointed on the commission with Sir Thomas Robinson, Colonel William Smith, and others, to try those political offenders. These proceedings do not appear, however, to have interrupted the mutual confidence and affection of the uncle and nephew.

The descendants of Thomas Lawrence (being the Newtown branch of the family) are very numerous, residing in Connecticut, New York, New Jersey, and other states of the Union. He died at Newtown in July, 1703, leaving five sons, to wit: Thomas, William, John, Daniel, and Jonathan; of whom John alone permanently remained at Newtown. He married Deborah, the daughter of Richard Woodhull, one of the patentees of Brookhaven, and closed his life December 17, 1729, his wife surviving him about twelve years. He left three sons, Thomas, John, and Nathaniel. The first married Deborah, daughter of Thomas Woolsey of Newtown, January 5, 1730; the last married Susanna, daughter of Thomas Alsop, of the same same place, May 23, 1728, but their respective families afterwards removed from the town. John was born at Newtown September 9,

1695, and married, December 8, 1720, Patience, daughter of Joseph Sackett, Esq. He was a wealthy farmer, possessing great perseverance and intelligence, and served in the magistracy of the county for many years. He died May 7, 1765, leaving seven sons and one daughter; two sons and one daughter having died in his lifetime. Jonathan Lawrence, his eighth son, was born at Newtown October 4, 1737, and early engaged in mercantile pursuits, visiting Europe and the West Indies under the direction, and in the employ of his eldest brother John, an eminent merchant of New York, and connecting himself afterwards in commercial affairs, as partner, with the house of Watson, Murray, and Lawrence. His own gains, the property left him by his said brother John, his portion of the estate of his brother Nathaniel, who died unmarried in the West Indies, and the patrimony derived from his parent, enabled him to retire from business, when about thirty-four years of age. He purchased a residence at Hell Gate, which had belonged to his great-grandfather, Thomas Lawrence (one of the three above named emigrating brothers), intending to enjoy the ease which his pecuniary circumstances seemed to secure to him. The agitating questions between the mother country and her colonies soon, however, forbade him to be inactive. In 1774 we find him a leading member of the political committees of Newtown; his efforts and the influence of his brothers and relatives there, contributed to redeem the town from the ill-timed loyalty which distinguished most of the other portions of the county. In 1775 he was elected a member of the provincial congress that met at New York. In 1776 he was again deputed to that body, and was afterwards elected to the convention of 1776-77, which formed the first



constitution of this state. He had previously, in 1772, received the commission of captain in the provincial militia from the royal government; and on the organization of the militia by the provincial congress in 1775, he was appointed major of the brigade composed of the militia of Queens and Suffolk, of which Nathaniel Woodhull, Esq., was at the same time appointed general. He accompanied that brave officer in the expedition ordered by the convention in 1776, to prevent the supplies of Long Island falling into the hands of the invaders, and was probably saved from participating in the sad fate of his gallant commander, by having been despatched by him to the convention at Harlem for further orders; and having been thereupon sent by that body to General Washington to endeavor to obtain the additional force that had been promised from the army at Brooklyn. During the time spent in these military operations, the battle of Long Island had been fought; much of the island had fallen under the control of the enemy, and stragglers from their ranks had spread over it, in search of booty. All personal communication with his family being cut off, he could only trust to sending a letter secretly to advise them of his situation, and to direct their future course. The convention had adjourned from Harlem, and sought a place of more safety for their deliberation at Fishkill. His anxiety for his family was soon relieved by the presence of Mrs. Lawrence and his five children, accompanied by her sister-in-law, the wife of Abraham Riker, Esq., a captain in the American army, who afterwards died in camp, at Valley Forge, in 1778. The house had, at a late hour of the night, been visited by soldiers clamorous for food and plunder. Amusing them with refreshments in the kitchen, the ladies, by the aid

of some female servants, conveyed the children (the oldest aged nine years, and the youngest a little more than one year) from their beds to a boat at the river side, secured a few articles of clothing, and a small chest containing some money, plate, and other valuables; and embarking, under the guidance of a faithful slave, crossed the river amid the darkness, unmolested, to Great Barn Island, leaving the house and the rest of the property to the mercy of the invaders. At daylight they obtained a boat on the opposite side of the island, and in it safely reached Harlem; thus exchanging the plenty and comforts which a short time had blessed their home, for a state of poverty, and a more than seven years' exile.

From this time Mr. Lawrence was the only attending member of the convention from the county of Queens. On the 9th of May, 1777, he, William Harper, and Matthew Cantine, were appointed commissioners to superintend the manufacture of gun flints, sulphur, lead, and salt; the want of which was severely felt, and which could not then be obtained from abroad. In the course of his duties, he visited the Oneida Indians, procured the holding of a council of their chiefs, made satisfactory experiments on the waters of some of the salt springs in the western part of the state, and contracted with the Indians for such salt as they might be able to produce. Some veins of excellent lead-ore were also discovered, but not in sufficient quantity to justify the working of them. The supplies afterwards obtained from France and elsewhere superseded the necessity of further efforts on the part of the commissioners. On the adoption of the state constitution in 1777, and the organization of the government, it became impracticable for those parts of the southern district possessed by the enemy, to elect repre-

sentatives to the legislature, and the convention deemed it their duty to appoint members of assembly for those counties; they also chose *Lewis Morris, Pierre Van Cortlandt, John Morin Scott, Jonathan Lawrence, William Floyd, William Smith, Isaac Roosevelt, John Jones, and Philip Livingston*, to be senators of the district, till others could be elected in their places, as prescribed by the ordinances of the convention. Mr. Lawrence served under this appointment during the remainder of the war. In 1778 he was appointed a commissioner to execute a law for completing the five continental battalions, raised under the directions of this state, the duties of which office he successfully performed. On the arrival of Count d'Estaing's squadron off Sandy Hook, and in the hope of aiding an enterprise that might hasten the termination of the contest, Mr. Lawrence, with other volunteers, joined the fleet in the expedition against Rhode Island, embarking on the 20th of July from Black Point in New Jersey. He was assigned to the man-of-war "*Hector*," of seventy-four guns, Captain Mories. The wind was unfavorable; and on their arrival off Newport, much delay ensued from the state of the weather and other circumstances; and it was not till the 6th of August, 1778, that they were enabled to get into the harbor, which was effected under an incessant fire from Brenton's Point, Fort Island, and other places. Most of the troops had been landed on the 9th, when the fleet of Lord Howe anchored off the harbor, and a re-embarkation was ordered; and the next day, the wind favoring, the French fleet cut their cables and stood out of port, exposed to an increased fire from the forts guarding the passage. Of the two men killed on board the "*Hector*" by this fire, one was dashed to pieces by a cannon ball at the side of Mr.

Lawrence, who stood so near him as to be covered with his blood and the fragments of his body. Howe also cut his cables and proceeded to sea, and after much retreating on his part and manœuvring for the weather gage, which continued until the 11th, the fleets had been brought into such a position as to render an engagement apparently inevitable, when a storm ensued, which shattered and dispersed the hostile ships, and induced them respectively to seek repairs in the ports of Boston and New York. In consequence of this result, General Sullivan had to withdraw the American forces from Rhode Island; and Mr. Lawrence, after an absence of about six weeks, reached his residence at Rhinebeck. In October following, he was chosen by the assembly to be the member of the council of appointment from the southern district, that being the second appointment to that station under the constitution. His term of office expired in October, 1779. In February, 1780, Mr. Lawrence, Isaac Stoutenburgh of New York, and Stephen Ward of Westchester were appointed commissioners of forfeitures for the southern district of New York, and on the 15th of August he was made one of the commissioners of sequestration for Dutchess County. On the 15th of June, and on the 9th of October, 1780, acts were passed by the legislature for raising a sum in specie, the better to secure the redemption of the bills of the new emission, then contemplated by the continental congress, whose former emission would command but one-fortieth part in gold or silver, of their nominal amount. Mr. Lawrence was immediately after the passage of the last mentioned act, placed at the head of the commission for the southern and middle districts, and John Lansing, Jr. (afterwards chancellor of the state), at the head of the other com-

mission. In the duties of this office, Mr. Lawrence was actively engaged in 1781. He was again a member of the council of appointment in 1782. In 1783 he opposed, though unsuccessfully, the passage of a bill declaring those described therein, who had adhered to the enemy, to have been aliens from the date of the declaration of independence. This bill was clearly in violation of the provisional treaty of peace, and would, if adopted as a law, have produced endless confusion and difficulty on Long Island and elsewhere, beggaring numerous families who had purchased lands *bona fide* from persons thus declared to have had *no title* to them, or who had been prevented, more by their fears than their preferences, from joining the patriotic party. Mr. Lawrence resisted it with great zeal, but his views being opposed by Scott and Schuyler, and others of the ablest members of the senate, he, Mr. Oothout, and Smith of Suffolk, stood alone on the final passage of the bill. It was carried with still greater unanimity in the assembly. The bill having passed both houses less than ten days before their adjournment, the council of revision exercised its prerogative of retaining it until the first day of the ensuing session in 1784, when, a new election for senators and assemblymen having taken place, and men's minds having had time to cool, the objections of the council were acquiesced in by the senate, where it had originated, with but one dissenting voice, and the bill was consequently rejected.

Peace being concluded in September, 1783, Mr. Lawrence was enabled to visit his long deserted home. He found his land stripped of its timber and fences, his stock and furniture destroyed or removed, and his house, having been occupied by British officers, greatly injured. During his long exile, he had not only exhausted those



means which had been saved from the enemy, the gains which he had occasionally been enabled to make during its continuance, and numerous sums owing to him; but had also contracted debts, which the sale of his lands and other resources would little more than repay. Having now, at the age of forty-seven, a large family to support and educate, he resolved to recommence business in the city of New York, and endeavor to repair his ruined fortune. Though nearly destitute of pecuniary means, he found himself in good credit; yet his mercantile pursuits were not productive of all the benefit he had anticipated. The lands belonging to the state being offered for sale, he embarked somewhat largely in the purchase of them, and by resale from time to time, not only avoided the bankruptcy which befell other purchasers, but found himself in comfortable circumstances, with a considerable surplus of land unsold. His fortunes gradually improving until the time of his death, he was enabled to distribute a very considerable estate among his family. This result was aided by a well regulated economy, equally removed from wastefulness and parsimony. Although he declined again to be returned to the legislature, he was not an indifferent spectator of passing events. He took an active part in the re-election of Governor George Clinton; and when the Constitution had been ratified by the requisite number of states, he was anxious for the concurrence of this state; from which period he acted uniformly with the republican party of the Union. He died in the city of New York, at the age of seventy-five, on the 4th of September, 1812. He was twice married; first, to Judith, daughter of Nathaniel Fish, who died at the age of eighteen years, and by whom he had one son, Jonathan, born June 20, 1767; secondly,

to Ruth, daughter of Andrew Riker of Newtown, who survived him, and by whom he had issue Judith, Margaret, Samuel, Andrew, Richard M., Abraham R., Joseph, John L., and William Thomas. Of these Samuel, now deceased, was a representative, both in the assembly of the state and the congress of the United States, and one of the electors of president and vice-president in 1816; William T., a member of the thirtieth congress from the twenty-sixth district, and John L., a state senator from 1847 to 1852.

The brothers of Major Jonathan Lawrence were all born at Newtown, and those who survived till the period of the Revolution were zealous whigs. His only younger brother, Colonel Daniel Lawrence, was, like himself, an exile from his home from 1776 to 1783, and served as a member of assembly from Queens, under the ordinance of the convention of 1777 from that year till the termination of the war. He married Miss Van Horn, a lady of a highly respectable family in the city of New York; and died, leaving numerous descendants, November 7, 1807, at the age of seventy. Samuel Lawrence, the brother next older than Jonathan, was a man of great probity and imperturbable courage, united with great goodness of heart. The early loss of his wife and only child, and the confinement and bodily injury which he was subjected to, during the possession of Long Island by the British troops, probably tended to increase the peculiarities that distinguished his character. These political injuries left in him a deep rooted hostility towards the British Government, which time had no effect in softening, and none of his prayers were more unfeigned, nor probably more frequent, than those for its overthrow. He died in 1810, at the age of seventy-five, leaving no issue.

Thomas Lawrence, the next eldest brother, was born in 1733, and died in his eighty-fourth year, December 1, 1817. He was appointed to the command of the ship "Tartar," of eighteen guns, and made several cruises in her from New York during the old French war. His wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Nathaniel Fish, Esq. of Newtown, who died in February, 1822, aged eighty-one. Possessed of wealth, he settled upon a farm on the shore of Flushing Bay; was appointed in 1784 one of the judges of Queens County, and was distinguished for great decision of character, and for all the punctilious observances which characterize the *élèves* of the old school. He had a numerous family, most of whom he survived. His eldest son Nathaniel, born July 11, 1761, entered Princeton College in May, 1776, but soon joined the North Carolina line of the regular American army as a lieutenant. He was made prisoner by the enemy after behaving with great gallantry, June 1, 1779, and remained in captivity about two years, when he was released and graduated at Princeton 1783. He studied law with the Hon. Egbert Benson, and was the co-student of the late Chancellor Kent. In 1788, at the age of twenty-seven years, he was chosen from Queens to the convention that ratified the Constitution of the United States. So highly was his conduct approved of by the state of North Carolina, that she granted him two tracts of land of 2,560 acres each, in the western district, now Tennessee, upon one of which his grandson, Nathaniel L. Lindsley now resides. He also held the office of attorney general of the state, as successor of Colonel Burr, from December 24, 1792, to November 30, 1795; and represented Queens County in the assembly in 1791-92-95-96; in which latter year he died, at the age of thirty-five.

His wife was Elizabeth, daughter of Judge Berrien, and aunt of John McPherson Berrien, late attorney general of the United States. His only child Margaret Elizabeth married Philip Lindsley, president of Nashville University, whose son, Nathaniel Lawrence, is professor in Cumberland University, Tennessee. *Eliza*, daughter of Thomas Lawrence, married the distinguished barrister John Wells, March 15, 1797; *Sarah* married Major Richard Lawrence, and died August 20, 1818; *Mary* married Adrian Van Sinderen; and *Thomas* married Hannah Maria, daughter of the Rev. Nathan Woodhull, October 9, 1820, who died April 30, 1822.

William Lawrence, the next eldest brother, was for many years a magistrate of Queens County, and filled the station with usefulness. On the capture of Long Island in 1776, part of his house at Newtown was made the headquarters of the British General Robertson, and himself and family were subjected to many of the exactions and vexations which others, who had rebel predilections, experienced from the invaders. He died in 1794, aged sixty-four. His son *John* served on board the frigate "Confederacy," Captain Harding, and died in 1816. *Richard*, another son, married Sarah, daughter of Thomas Lawrence as above stated; *William* died on his plantation in Demerara; and *Isaac*, another son, was president of the United States bank in New York, from 1817 to the expiration of its charter in 1836. He was born February 8, 1768, married Cornelia Beach in 1799, and died July 12, 1841, aged seventy-four. William Beach Lawrence of New York is his son.

Richard Lawrence, the next eldest brother, born in 1725, died in 1781. He held a commission as captain of horse in the militia of Queens County, and after falling

into the hands of the royalists was sent to the provost at New York, where he was for a long time confined, there contracting an illness which terminated his life. The devotedness to their cause which pervaded the body of whigs, is illustrated by the closing scene of this gentleman. The capture of Cornwallis occurred but a short time before his decease, and while languishing on his sick bed, the news of the capitulation was communicated to him. Assuring himself of the truth, he declared his readiness to die, now that the ultimate triumph of his country was secured. He left no issue.

Nathaniel Lawrence, the next eldest brother, died at St. Eustatia in the West Indies, unmarried, in the year 1761, aged thirty-four. He was settled, and successfully engaged in trade at that place.

Joseph Lawrence, the next eldest brother, died at Newtown 1793, aged sixty-nine. He married Patience, aunt of the late Bishop Moore of New York, who died October 6, 1806, aged seventy-two. His son Richard, who went to Edinburgh to complete his medical education, died after his return without issue. His sister Anna married Samuel Riker, Esq., who served Queens County in the assembly in 1784, and was also a representative in congress several years. He was the father of Hon. Richard Riker, late recorder of New York, and his brother John L. Riker; also of Jane, widow of the late Dr. William James MacNeven.

John Lawrence, the eldest brother, left Newtown for New York at an early age, and became one of the most eminent merchants of that day. In 1759 he married Catherine, daughter of the Hon. Philip Livingston, who died August 1, 1817, aged seventy-four. He had no issue by this marriage, and he distributed his property



among his brothers, after making ample provision for his widow. He died in 1764. The celebrated Whitfield, then in this country, pronounced his funeral sermon. The following obituary notice of the deceased is found in the *New York Gazette, or Weekly Post Boy*, of August 9, 1764:

“ On Sunday night about 11 o'clock, departed this life, after a tedious illness, which he bore with becoming resignation, *John Lawrence*, Esq., alderman of the *Dock Ward* of this city, which office he filled with equal dignity and steadiness. On Monday his corpse was carried from his house in Dock street, attended by the different clergy, and a numerous train of relations and friends, who sympathized with each other in the loss of so worthy a relation, friend and acquaintance, to the Presbyterian meeting-house, where at a short notice, a most excellent discourse was given by Mr. Whitfield, who seemed to be particularly affected himself, a friendship having long subsisted between them. His body was deposited in the family vault of the right Honorable the Earl of Stirling in the yard of Trinity Church.”

John Lawrence of Hempstead, son of Gilbert, born 1763, died October 31, 1848, aged eighty-five, having married Margaret, daughter of Jacobus Losee. She died August 10, 1848, and had Gilbert, Andrew, James, Eliza, and Martha. Gilbert married Frances, daughter of Abraham Bedell; Andrew married Abigail, daughter of Thomas Carpenter, and left issue Aquilla.

The first Gilbert married Elizabeth, daughter of John Rushmore, and was the son of Jacobus; both died before the Revolution. A Mrs. Mary Lawrence, widow of Daniel, died in Brooklyn August 27, 1848, aged eighty-eight.

*Notice of Samuel Townsend and Family*

Samuel Townsend, son of James and Phebe Townsend (and fifth eldest son, in a direct line from the first John Townsend of Oyster Bay, L. I.), was born at Jericho, Queens County,<sup>1</sup> in the year 1717, and married Sarah, daughter of William and Mary Stoddard of Rhode Island, afterwards of Oyster Bay. He was a gentleman of talents, firmness, and integrity, a magistrate for more than thirty years, and member of the provincial congress of 1774-75-76-77, which framed the constitution of this state, as was his brother Dr. James Townsend also.

In 1740 he removed to the village of Oyster Bay and purchased and improved the family mansion, which is now standing and is the property of his descendants.

The depth of the water and excellence of the harbor were doubtless the principal inducements with the Sandwich adventurers to plant themselves on its border, and a ketch was built here as early as 1671. Several brigs and smaller vessels, built here by the said Samuel Townsend, were engaged in the European and West India trade, and the place soon rose into commercial importance.

The business was gradually extended and vigorously prosecuted till 1775, when the revolutionary troubles caused its entire suspension, to the no small sacrifice of those engaged in it.

With the exception of his son Solomon, then in Europe, and his sons Samuel and Robert, merchants of New York, all Mr. Townsend's children were in their minority, and he was only enabled to continue his mercantile

<sup>1</sup> Now in Nassau County.—EDITOR.

business at Oyster Bay to a limited extent, from the avails of which he succeeded in maintaining his family. One of his vessels, built at Oyster Bay, a brig, called the "Audrey," after his eldest daughter, was commanded by Effingham Lawrence, who became subsequently an eminent London merchant.

The "Sarah," another brig, was built for, and commanded by his eldest son Solomon. Joseph Lawrence, brother of said Effingham, who married Phœbe, daughter of the fourth Henry Townsend, also commanded, at different times, several of Mr. Townsend's vessels.

Mr. Townsend was a zealous patriot, and did not hesitate in the part he was to act in the great struggle, now commenced between the mother country and his own.

He had of course much to lose, and great would be the sacrifice he must make; but it was considered of little consequence, when weighed against the independence of his country. Being somewhat advanced in age, and unwilling to leave his family and property entirely to the tender mercies of the enemy, who now had possession of Long Island, he determined to remain at his own home, whatever insults and abuses might be heaped upon him by the common foe.

A corps called the "Queen's Rangers," commanded by Lieutenant Colonel Simcoe, was posted in the village, and the best rooms in his house<sup>1</sup> were taken possession of by the British officers, who thus preserved a strict surveillance over him and the members of his household. It was, of course, known to them that he had been a delegate to the provincial congress in 1776, and that his being at that time within the British lines, only prevented his continued attendance in that body.

<sup>1</sup> This house is still standing in Oyster Bay village.—EDITOR.

The troops, on one occasion, opened a battery of cannon upon Fort Hill, in the immediate vicinity, and fired into his dwelling; but for the most part, he was enabled to maintain a tolerable good understanding with those quartered upon and around him. But with a certain Major Grant it was otherwise, who, being a fellow of low birth, and vain of his authority, improved every opportunity of annoying the family, and would have been guilty of other outrages, had it not been for the friendly interference of Thomas Buchanan, a royalist merchant of the city, then resident of Oyster Bay, who had married Almy, daughter of Jacob, a brother of the said Samuel Townsend, and was owner of the ship "Glasgow," then in London, of which Solomon Townsend was the master. Grant afterwards lost his life in an engagement at the south.

The injuries which Mr. Townsend received, in regard to his property, both real and personal, independent of the total prostration of his commercial business, were not less than \$10,000. New York being evacuated in 1783, Mr. Townsend again met the provincial congress, and from this period to his death in 1790, he was constantly employed in public business.

He was state senator, and a member of the first council of appointment under the constitution in 1789. The unexceptionable purity of his life, his well-known integrity, and his devotion to the interests of his country, endeared him to his fellow-citizens, and caused his death to be greatly lamented.

His children were Solomon, Robert, Audrey, Phebe, and Sarah; of whom Robert died unmarried March 14, 1837, aged eighty-four. Phebe married Dr. Ebenezer

Seely, and died without issue October 12, 1840, and Sarah died unmarried December 19, 1842.

Solomon Townsend, the eldest son of Samuel, was born at Oyster Bay in 1746, and early engaged in navigation, for which, almost from infancy, he evinced a strong predilection, and in his twentieth year was put in trust of a brig belonging to his father. When the war of the Revolution broke out, he was in command of the ship "Glasgow," belonging to the said Thomas Buchanan; but owing to the (then) recent interruption of trade between the two countries, she was left, by direction of the owner, in London.

Obtaining permission to leave England, Captain Townsend went over to France, and while at Paris, made the acquaintance of his celebrated countryman, Dr. Franklin, to whom he found means of making himself agreeable, and by whom he was introduced at court, and received other tokens of his friendship and regard.

Having consumed sufficient time to see and examine the most remarkable curiosities in the French capital, he made arrangements to return to his own country, and the American commissioner favored him with the following certificate of protection:

*"Passey, near Paris, June 27, 1778.*

"I certify to whom it may concern, that Captain Solomon Townsend, of New York, mariner, hath this day appeared voluntarily before me, and taken the oath of allegiance to the United States of America, according to the resolution of congress, thereby acknowledging himself a subject of the United States. "B. FRANKLIN."

Captain Townsend, was also commissioned by Dr. Franklin as a volunteer midshipman in the continental



navy, and for this purpose he procured his necessary equipment in Paris. He sailed soon after, in the frigate "Providence," for Boston, with Commodore Abraham Whipple. While on the passage a suspicious looking craft hove in sight, and preparations were of course forthwith made for an engagement; Captain Townsend being ordered to take charge of a division of guns. No engagement, however, took place, and the vessel reached Boston in November, 1778.

Being unable from the condition of the country, personally to visit his family at Oyster Bay, he traversed the interior of New England, and crossing the river Hudson at Newburgh, reached the house of his cousin, Peter Townsend, son of the fourth Henry Townsend, at Chester, Orange County, proprietor of the celebrated Iron Works and estate of Stirling a few miles off.

The wife of said Peter Townsend was Hannah, eldest daughter of William Hawxhurst, son of Sampson and Hannah Hawxhurst, natives of Oyster Bay, the latter being the daughter of John, son of the first Henry Townsend.

Steel was first made by Mr. Townsend at the Stirling Works, and in the German manner, in 1776. He also made the first anchor ever manufactured in this state in 1773; and here was constructed in March and April, 1778, the immense chain which was extended across the Hudson to prevent the British ships passing West Point. The links of this stupendous chain weighed about 180 pounds each, and the whole 186 tons. It was made and delivered in six weeks under the superintendence of Timothy Pickering, and some of its links may now be seen in the museum of the navy yard, Brooklyn.

Mr. Townsend also made the first blistered steel ever

manufactured in this country, in 1810, from the ore of Long Mine. It was first used for edged tools. The first cannon manufactured in this state were made at these works in 1816, and out of the whole number, not one failed in the proof.

After an absence of seven years, Captain Townsend was enabled by pre-concert to meet some of his family upon Shelter Island, but soon parted again under the fearful apprehension they might never meet again in this world.

Like his father, Captain Townsend possessed strong intellectual powers, was ardent in all his pursuits, and of indomitable perseverance. He soon after purchased the mountain estate, adjoining that of his father-in-law, which he named *Augusta*, where he established very extensive iron works, anchory, forges, &c., furnishing thereby ample employment to numerous laborers and artisans for many years.

He continued, nevertheless, to reside in the city of New York, where he owned and superintended an extensive iron store. He also established a manufactory of bar iron on Peconic River in Suffolk County, a short distance above the village of Riverhead, which was carried on during his life. To give some idea of the extent of his business at one period, it need only be stated that the losses sustained by him, occasioned by mercantile failures alone, during the general embargo of 1808, exceeded \$70,000, yet he relaxed not his exertions, but continued his manufacturing operations in their full extent, till arrested by death, March 27, 1811.

He was chosen frequently to represent the city of New York in the state legislature, and was a member of that body at the time of his decease.

His children were *Hannah*, who married her cousin Isaiah Townsend of Albany, now deceased; *Samuel*, and *Jacob*, who died unmarried; *Anne*, who married the Hon. Effingham Lawrence, and died October 9, 1845; *Mary*, who married Edward H. Nicoll of New York; *Phebe*, who married James Thorne; *Solomon*, who has been a member of assembly from the city of New York; and *Peter S.*, a physician and author of much distinction, who was educated at Columbia College, studied medicine with Dr. David Hosack, and graduated at the College of Physicians and Surgeons of New York in 1816. In 1817 he, with his friend, Dr. Samuel L. Mitchill, Dr. Torrey, and others, founded the Lyceum of Natural History, and he afterwards delivered the anniversary discourse before the same society. In 1820 he was appointed by his Excellency De Witt Clinton, health commissioner of the city of New York; he was thus *ex officio* one of the commissioners of the board of health, and was the author of the celebrated report, published by the board, on the exciting subject of the Banker Street fever (so called), which had been, by many eminent physicians, supposed to be yellow fever.

The next year he visited the hospitals and medical schools of Europe, and in 1823 published his principal work, a history of the yellow fever which prevailed at New York in 1822. In 1829 he was chosen a delegate to the first convention held to amend the charter of the city of New York, and successfully advocated the principle of making the powers and rights of the two boards equal in all respects, the magisterial duties of the aldermen only excepted. In 1830 he was elected assistant alderman of the sixth ward, and as chairman of the common council on the subject, he drew up the published re-

port exhibiting the profligate waste of the public money at the quarantine ground, during the whole time of its existence, and recommended to the legislature to establish a distinct and separate hospital for sailors, which resulted in the founding of the Seamen's Retreat, of which Dr. Townsend was the first physician from 1831 to 1833. In 1842 he commenced the translation of a work on surgery, which has since been published.





## APPENDIX

*Narrative and remonstrance of the Deputies assembled at Hempstead, in March, 1665, relative to apprehensions entertained of some matters then and there transacted.*

“ His Majesty having employed his ships of war, and sent a considerable number of soldiers to reduce these parts of America to his obedience, the present government was readily received, and peaceably settled on Long Island, by virtue of his Majesty’s letters patent, made and granted by his Royal Highness James, Duke of York and Albany, bearing date the twelfth day of March, in the sixteenth of the reign of our sovereign Lord King Charles the II, published at Gravesend, on Long Island, aforesaid, about the middle of August following, in the audience of a great number of the inhabitants thereof, by the Right Honorable Col. Richard Nicolls, deputy governor under his royal highness. At which time and place Governor Winthrop, being then present, openly declared that their colonies claimed no jurisdiction *de jure* over Long Island; but what they had done was for the welfare, peace, and quiet settlement of his Majesty’s subjects, as they were the nearest court of record to them under his Majesty; but now his Majesty’s pleasure was fully signified by his letters patent, as above said, their jurisdiction over them ceased and became null; whereupon our honorable Governor then replied also, that he would not put out any of the officers which Connecticut had set up in the civil state, but confirm them under his power to act in every town, until a convenient season served to convene deputies from

all the towns on the island, when and where laws were to be enacted and civil officers established.

“Shortly after, at another meeting of our honorable governor and Connecticut commissioners, several persons were there confirmed by him in civil authority, by his writing under his hand, which they published in several towns where they were to collect rates and former dues for Connecticut, unto which power these eastern towns readily and willingly obeyed and submitted for the space of six months at least.

“In March following, we were convened, being deputies chosen by the several towns in a general assembly held at Hempstead, where his Majesty’s aforesaid patent was first read, and a commission from his royal highness the Duke of York, empowering and investing the aforesaid Col. Richard Nicolls, with authority to put the contents of the said patent into practice and execution, who declared unto us that our first business should be to decide some, and to compose other differences which were on float before he came to the government, according to the manner and form in practice since our late acknowledgment of the Connecticut authority; but that he had prepared a body of general laws hereafter to be observed; the which were delivered to us, and upon perusal we found them to be a collection of the law now in practice in his Majesty’s other colonies in New England, with abatement of the severity against such as differ in matters of conscience and religion.

“We proceeded to object against some and propose other clauses in the laws; whereupon several amendments were made with further assurance from the governor, that when any reasonable alteration should be offered from any town to the sessions, the justices should tender the same at the assizes, and receive satisfaction therein, the truth and effects whereof we have since found.

“The Governor further declared that for his own part

he expected no benefit for his labors out of the purses of the inhabitants, not so much as to defray his charge and expenses at the courts; but that it was absolutely necessary for him to establish a form and rule of county rates, to support the public charge; whereupon we pitched upon the form and rule at this day observed in Connecticut, which was known to some of those present.

“In the next place we conceived that two hundred pounds yearly might defray the public charge; to which the Governor replied that he would touch none of the public money, but that the high sheriff from year to year should cause the same to be collected, and give, at the expiration of his office, in open court at the general assizes, an account of his receipts and disbursements.

“If it should happen the rate was more than the charge of his year, the overplus should remain to the use of the country the next year; if the charge was greater than the rate, the country was obliged to bear it with an additional rate; in all which transactions we acted with sincerity of heart, according to the best of our understanding, and in obedience to his Majesty’s authority established by his letters patent over us.

“Moreover we appointed a committee to attend the governor for his resolution, whether we might not, according to the custom of the other colonies, choose our magistrates. We received answer by our deputies, that they had seen the instruction of his Royal Highness, wherein the choice of all the offices of Justice was solely to be made by the Governor, and some of us do know that a parliament of England can neither make a judge nor justice of the peace.

“In conclusion the Governor told us that we had seen and read his Majesty’s letters patent, the commission and instructions from his Royal Highness the Duke of York, and if we would have a greater share in the government than he could allow, we must go to the king for it.

"Nevertheless some malicious men have aspersed us as betrayers of their liberties and privileges, in subscribing to an address to his Royal Highness, full of dignity and gratitude, whereby his Royal Highness may be encouraged the more to take us and the welfare of our posterity into his most princely care and consideration.

"Neither can any clause in that address bear any other natural sense and construction than our obedience and submission to his Majesty's letters patent, according to our duty and allegiance.

"However, that our neighbors and fellow-subjects may be undeceived of the false aspersions thrown upon us, and the impostures of men disaffected to government manifested, lest they should further prevail upon the weakness of others; we, the then deputies and subscribers of the said address, conceive ourselves obliged to publish this narrative and remonstrance of the several passages and steps conducting to the present government under which we now live, and we desire that a record hereof may be kept in each town, that future ages may not be seasoned with the sour malice of such unreasonable and groundless aspersions."

[Signed by the Deputies.]

[Dated the 21st day of June, 1666.]

---

*Remonstrance of Southampton against the order requiring them to take out a new patent, as mentioned in Chapter on Southampton.*

"SOUTHAMPTON, February 15, 1670.

"To the Governor:

"Honorable Sir.—We, the inhabitants of this town, do hereby present unto you our humble service, &c. to show our respect to your honor's pleasure, and our obedience to the order of the honorable court of assize—we are bold to manifest herein unto you some reasons why we

are unwilling to receive any further patent for our lands, as followeth:

“ 1st, Because, as we have honestly purchased them of the natives (the proper and natural owners of them), so also we have already the patent right, lawfully obtained and derived from the honorable Earl of Stirling, we being to pay one fifth part of gold and silver ore, and four bushels of Indian corn yearly.

“ 2dly, Because the injunction laid on persons and plantations by the laws in 1666, to take forth patents for their lands from our then governor, we groundedly conceive intended not the plantations on this east end of the island, but only those at the west end who were reduced from a foreign government, even as heretofore. Those English, that came to dwell within the precincts which the Dutch claimed, took out land briefs from the Dutch governor.

“ 3dly, Because those of us, who were first beginners of this plantation, put none but ourselves to the vast charge in our transport hither, we greatly hazarded our lives (as some lost theirs) here amongst and by the then numerous and barbarously cruel natives; yet through divine Providence we have possessed these our lands above thirty years without interruption or molestation by any claiming them from us, and therefore we cannot see why we should lose any of our rightful privileges, so dearly and honestly purchased, or how our lands can be better assured to us by taking out another patent from any one.

“ 4thly, And materially because by our said patent we had license (we being but few) to put ourselves under any of his Majesty's colonies for government, whereupon accordingly, by willing consent on all sides, we adjourned ourselves to Hartford jurisdiction, and divers of us became members of the king's court there, and when the worthy Mr. Winthrop obtained a patent from his Majesty our present lord, King Charles II.; for the said



colony Hartford, our town is included, and some of the then chief members of our town expressly nominated in the patent; so that this place became undeniably an absolute limb or part of the said colony; and moreover, since that and after his Majesty's commissioners came into these parts, his Majesty of grace and free motion was pleased so far to encourage his people of the said colony as by his letter to assure them that their ecclesiastical and civil privileges which he had granted them, should not be infringed or diminished by his said commissioners, or any others whatsoever.

" 5ly, It is not only in all our experience beyond all parallel that each town should be constrained to take forth a patent, but also the patents here imposed and those given forth, which yet we have seen, seem to bind persons and towns in matter of payment to the will and mercy of their lord and his successors, or lieutenants; and who can tell but in time to come those may succeed who, through an avaricious distemper, may come upon us with such heavy taxes and intolerable burdens, as may make us, or our poor posterity, to groan like Israel in Egypt.

" 6ly, Because people are enjoined to acknowledge in the said patent (if we mistake not greatly) that his royal highness the Duke of York is sole proprietor of the whole island; which we cannot consent unto, because we know ourselves to be the true proprietors of the land we here possess, with the appurtenances thereunto belonging, and also because men are enjoined by the said patent to pay not only all just dues, but also all demands that may be made by his royal highness or his authorized agent.

" 7ly, Because we are more than confident his Majesty will desire no more of us than already we are, even his faithful liege people, who have many of us already taken, and the rest of us are ready to take, the oath of allegiance unto him. Willing we are to pay our just dues in town and to the country, and ready to serve his Majesty with

our lives and fortunes; we are his subjects, and we know that he will not make us slaves to any.

“ 8ly, Because General Nichols gave it under his hand that we at this end should have as great privileges as any colony in New-England, and yet we are denied our deputies at the courts; we are forced to pay customs for goods imported, for which custom hath before been paid to his Majesty’s use in England.

“ 9ly, and lastly.—The king’s commissioners, in the year 1664, by their proclamation, seemed to demand only the government, with exact and full promise that the people should enjoy whatsoever God’s blessing and their own industry had furnished them withal; and we see not what more a patent can assure us, especially considering that the patents here taken forth by places, or particular persons, secure them not absolutely; for it seems to us by the order of the court of assizes, even from them who have received a patent, wood and timber may be taken away without leave and without pay; in all which respects, and some other, we cannot be willing to take forth more patent than we have. And if we do succeed otherwise than we expect, we hope we shall, like good christians, patiently bear the pressure that may be permitted to fall upon us, yet never fail to be fervent votaries for your honor’s real happiness.”

[Signed by Thomas Halsey, Jr., and 49 other inhabitants of the town.]

---

*Easthampton Address to His Excellency, Thomas Dongan, Governor of the Province of New York, September 10, 1683, as mentioned in Chapter on Easthampton.*

“ To the Honourable the Governour under his Royall Highnes the Duke of York, The humble Address of the Inhabitants of the Towne of East Hampton upon Long Island, sheweth:

“ WHEREAS at the time the government of New Yorke was established under our Sovereign Lord the King, by Collonell Richard Nicolls and those Gentlemen sent in commission with him, WEE, the Inhabitants of this Towne, soe well as the rest of the Island, being required Sent our Messengers to attend their Honours, and then, both by word and writing, wee were promised and engaged the Enjoyments of all privileges and liberties which other of his Majesties Subjects doe enjoy, which was much to our Content and Satisfaction: Alsoe afterwards being required, by theise his Majesties Commissioners, to send upp our Deputies to meete at Hempsteade, and there the whole Island being Assembled in our Representatives, wee did then and there, uppon the renewal of those former promises of our freedom and liberties, Grant and Compact with the said Collonell Nicolls, Governour under his Royal Highnes, That wee would allow so much out of our Estates yearly, as might defray the Charge of Publicke Justice amongst us, and for killing of wolves, &c. But may it please your Honour to understand, that since that time we are deprived and prohibited of our Birthright Freedomes and Priviledges, to which both wee and our Ancestors were borne; Although wee have neither forfeited them by any Misdemeanor of ours, nor have, at any time, beene forbidden the due use and exercise of them by Command of our Gracious King, that we know of: And as yet neither wee, nor the rest of his Majesties Subjects uppon this Island, have been at any time admitted since then to enjoy a general and free Assembly of our Representatives, as others of his Majesties Subjects have had the privilege of: But Lawes and Orders have been Imposed uppon us from time to time without our consent, (and therein we are totally deprived of a fundamentall Priviledge of our English Nation,) together with the obstruction of Trafficke and Negotiation with others of his Majesties Subjects. So that we are become

very unlike other of the Kings Subjects in all other Colonies and Jurisdictions here in America, and cannot but much resent our grievances in this respect, and remaine discouraged with respect to the Settlement of our selves and Posteritie after us.—Yet all this time, payments and performance of what hath beene Imposed upon us hath not beene omitted on our parts, although performance of our Premised Priviledges aforesaid have beene wholly unperformed; and what payments from yeare to yeare, this many yeares, hath beene made by us, Hath beene made use of to other purposes than at first they were granted for and intended by us: Soe that wee cannot but feare, if the Public Affairs of government shall continue in this manner as they have beene, but hope better, least our Freedomes should be turned into Bondage, and our Antiente Priviledges so infringed that they will never arrive to our Posteritie. And wee our Selves may be justlie and highly Culpable before his Majestie, for our Subjection to, and supporting of such a Government, Constituted soe Contrarie to the fundamentall Lawes of England; it being a principall part of his Majesties Antiente and Just Government to rule over a free people endowed with many priviledges above others, and not over Bondmen oppressed by Arbitrary Impositions and Exactions.—These things Considered, we cannot but humbly request your Honour, to weigh our Condition in the Balance of Equity with Seryousnes, before you proceede to any Action of your owne whereby to assert the proceedings of your Predecessors in Government, which wee now with all Christian moderation dos complaine of. And for the redresse hereof, an Adresse as we understand, hath beene made to his Royall Highnesse, by a late Court of Assize, in behalfe of us and our Neighbours in this Colony: So that we are not without hope your Honour hath received Directions to ease us in these our grievances, by the Remedies humbly represented by us, and Petitioned



for by the Inhabitants of this Island to the last Court of Assize that did sit at New Yorke; to which as yet no Satisfactorie Answer hath beene made. If, therefore, your Honour may bee an Instrument under God, and his Majesty our Sovereign Lord the King, to relieve us, and the rest of his Majesties good Subjects uppon this Island, in our grievances, and bee a meanes to helpe us to the free Enjoyment of our Birthright Priviledges, which the fundamentall Constitution of our English Nation Government doth invest us with, (which as wee doubt not will bee very pleasing to his Majestie, and all your Loyall Superiours;) Soe your Honour may bee assured it will firmly Engage and Oblige us, your humble Petitioners, and our Posteritie after us, to have your Prudence and Justice in Honourable Remembrance, as the first Restorer of our freedome and priviledges, to our great Contentment. But, Sir, if it shall fall out otherwise, which God forbid, and wee are very unwilling to suppose; and that your Honour should, by reason of Counsell and Suggestions, pursue a Contrary course to our humble Desires soe as to continue or augment our grievances; then wee Request your Honours Pardon and Excuse, if in our Conscience to God, and in Honour and Submission to his Majestie, our most Gracious Sovereigne, we prostrate our Selves and our State and Condition before the Throne of his unmatched Justice and Clemencie, where we doubt not to find Reliefe and Restauration, and can doe noe less in the mean time but Resent our forlorne and bereaved Condition. Soe, Sir, as our prayers are Continued for a happy and glorious Reigne to his Sacred Majestie the King; and alsoe our prayers for your Honour, that you may bee a blessed Instrument under God, in your Wisdom, Justice and Equity over us: And humblie make bold to subscribe ourselves, his Majesties poore, depressed, though Loyall Subjects, and your most Humble Servants."



*Some account of Captain John Underhill and his  
descendants*

ON a farm lately owned by John Underhill, called Killingworth, upon Matinecock Neck, town of Oyster Bay, L. I., is the grave of this wonderful man, of whom frequent mention is made in the early histories of New England and New York. "He was," says the Rev. Dr. Bacon, "one of the most dramatic persons in our early history." Having served as an officer in the British forces, in the low countries, in Ireland, and at Cadiz, he came from England to Massachusetts in 1630, soon after the commencement of that colony, and was very generally employed in such expeditions as required the most extraordinary courage, energy, and perseverance. He was admitted freeman May 18, 1631, and was a member of the First Church at Boston.

He had an important command in the war against the Pequots in 1636, and on the 2d of February, 1637, was sent to Saybrook with twenty men, to keep the fort there against the Dutch and Indians, both of whom had manifested a design upon that place. He was a man of much resolution, activity, and courage; and such were the rapidity of his movements and the subtilty of attack, that his enemies were generally taken by surprise, and consequently defeated.

He was one of the deputies from Boston to the general court in 1634; eleventh on the roll of the Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company, captain of the train band, 1636, and the first person to command the Boston militia. Most of the accounts of that interesting period are full of the particulars of his chequered life, and few persons were better known, or rendered more valuable

service to the colonies than this individual, especially in their wars and controversies with the savages.

He was the personal and political friend of Sir Henry Vane, who, in 1637, at the age of twenty-six years, was appointed governor of Massachusetts. Underhill was an enthusiast in religion, so far at least as appearances were concerned, yet was a debauchee in practice. Strange, however, as it may seem, the church did not censure him so much for his irregularities, as for saying that he dated his conversion from the time he was *smoking tobacco*. He was not only eccentric in many respects, but everything he did was apt to run into extremes.

As early as 1632, as appears from the accounts of the treasurer of Massachusetts, he received a pension of thirty pounds a year, for services rendered to the colony in its contests with the Indians. Hutchinson says he was one of the most forward of the Boston enthusiasts, and Hubbard declares that in 1636 he was in high favor with the governor, or, as he calls him, *right worthy Master Vane*.

He went to England in 1638, where he was interrogated in relation to his conduct here, but while there published a book entitled "*News from America, or a New and Experimental Discoverie of New England; containing a true relation of warlike proceedings these two years past, with a figure of the Indian fort or palisado; by John Underhill, a commander in the warrs there.*" In this singular production, he mentioned places in New England that had as yet few, or no inhabitants, but which, he says, "yielded a special *accommodation* to such as would plant there, namely, *Queenapoick, Agu-wom, Hudson's-River, Long-Island, Nahanticut, Martin's Vineyard, Pequet, Naransett Bay, Elisabeth Islands, Puscataway,*

*and Casco, with about one hundred Islands near thereto."*

This curious book, now quite scarce, is singularly characteristic of its author. He gives therein, in his peculiar and quaint manner, an account of the frequent, and sometimes sanguinary conflicts between the whites and Indians. The war against the Block Islanders, being occasioned, he says, by their murder of Captain John Oldham, whom "they knocked upon the head and martyred most barbarously, to the great grief of his poor distressed servants, which, by the providence of God, were saved. The blood of the innocent called (says he) for vengeance; God stirred up the heart of the honored governor, Master Henry Vane, and the rest of the worthy magistrates, to send one hundred well appointed soldiers, under the conduct of Captain John Hendicot, and in company with him, Captain John Underhill, Captain Nathan Turner, Captain William Jenningson, besides other inferior officers." In the engagement which followed, Underhill received an arrow through his coat, and another against the helmet, upon his forehead, which helmet he was advised by his wife to take; "therefore (says he), let no man despise the advise and council of his wife, *though she be a woman.*" "It were strange to nature (he continues), to think a man should be bound to fulfil the humor of a woman, what arms he should carry, but you know (says he), God will have it so, that a woman should overcome a man. What with Delilah's flattery, and with her mournful tears, they must, and will have their desire." The writer gives a flattering description of the country, and observes that "Long Island is a place worth the naming, as affording many accommodations." The work, however, abounds with religious cant, which affords some indication of his assumed piety and

deep hypocrisy. Winthrop, in his journal of September 7, 1638, says, "that the next Lord's day, Captain John Underhill, having been privately dealt with, upon suspicion of incontinency with a neighbor's wife, and not hearkning to it, was publicly questioned, and put under admonition." The matter was, says Winthrop, according to his explanation, "for that the woman being very young and beautiful, and withal of a jovial spirit and behavior, he did daily frequent her house, and was divers times found there alone with her, the door being locked on the inside, and confessed it was ill, because it had the appearance of evil in it; but that the woman was in great trouble of mind and sore temptation, and that he resorted to her to comfort her; and that when the door was found locked upon them, they were in private prayer together." But his conduct, says the historian, "was clearly condemned by the elders, who said he ought in such case, to have called in some brother or sister, and not to have locked the door."

Underhill afterwards resided at Dover, of which he was made governor, but his conduct could not long be tolerated, on account of his great irregularity. He behaved very ungratefully even toward his wife, who, he acknowledges, had by her precaution saved his life, in the affair with the Indians; "he afterwards confessed his adultery with the young woman who had *desired his prayers*, and in 1639, before a great assembly at Boston, upon a lecture day, and in the court house, sat upon the stool of repentance, a white cap upon his head, and with a great many deep sighs, a rueful countenance, and abundance of tears, owned his wicked way of life, his adultery and hypocrisy with many expressions of sincere remorse, and besought the church to have compassion

on him, and deliver him out of the hands of Satan." But the church considered him insincere, and cast him out of their communion. In 1639 he solicited to be received with a few families upon Long Island, and to enjoy the privileges of an inhabitant of the Dutch Government; his request was granted by the governor upon condition that he and his adherents should subscribe the oath of allegiance to the States-General and the Prince of Orange. It is probable that he declined the terms offered. At a lecture day in Boston the same year, it being then court time, Underhill again made a public confession, both of his living in adultery with Faber's wife (upon suspicion whereof the church had before admonished him), and attempting the like with another woman; also for the injury he had done the church, and acknowledged the justice of the proceedings against him; yet the church considered his acts so foul and scandalous that they cast him out. In 1640 he appeared during the court of assistants, and upon a lecture day, after sermon, the pastor called him forth, and declaring the occasion of it, gave him leave to speak. "It was a spectacle," says Winthrop, "which caused many weeping eyes. He came," says he, "in his worst clothes, without a band, in a foul linen cap, pulled close to his eyes, and standing upon a form, he did, with many deep sighs and abundance of tears, lay open his wicked course, his adultery, his hypocrisy, his persecution of God's people here, and especially his pride and contempt of the magistrates. That he had been put divers times upon resolutions of destroying himself had not the Lord in mercy prevented him even when his sword was ready to have done the execution. Indeed he appeared," says the historian, "like a man worn out with sorrow, yet



could find no peace, and therefore was now come to seek it in this ordinance of God. He spoke well," says he, "save that his blubbing, &c., interrupted him, and all along discovered a broken and melting heart, and gave good exhortations to others to take heed of such vanities and beginnings of evil as had occasioned his downfall; and in the end earnestly and humbly besought the church to have compassion on him, and to deliver him out of the hands of Satan. So accordingly he was received into the church again; and after he came into the court and made confession of his sin against them, he desired pardon, which the court freely granted him, so far as concerned their private judgment. But as to his adultery, they would not pardon that, for example sake, nor would they restore him to freedom, though they released his banishment.

"He confessed also in the congregation, that though he was very familiar with that woman, and had gained her affections, yet she withstood him six months against all his solicitations (which he thought no woman could have resisted), before he could overcome her chastity; but being once overcome, she was wholly at his will. To make his peace the more sound, he went to her husband (being a cooper) and fell upon his knees before him in the presence of the elders and others, confessed the wrong he had done him, and besought him to forgive him, which he did very freely, and in testimony thereof he sent the captain's wife a token."

Underhill had been engaged with Captain Mason in an attack upon the Indian fort at Mystic, in which the fierce spirit of that warlike tribe was finally broken, by the loss of so many men as were then destroyed; even Saccacus was discouraged, and very soon those Indians, as a tribe,

were extinguished. In 1641, having been chosen governor of Exeter and Dover, he was soon in difficulty with the church of which he was a member. He was, after his arrival here, employed by the Dutch, and took command in the war with the Indians north of the Sound, and west of the Connecticut settlements. This contest lasted till 1646. In Trumbull's history, it is stated that Underhill destroyed 300 Indians north of the Sound, and 120 upon Long Island, who had crossed the Sound to ravage and destroy the Dutch plantations there. At the period of this military employment, he lived at Stamford, Conn., was a delegate from that town to the general court at New Haven in 1643, and was appointed an assistant justice. In 1644 he came, with the Rev. Mr. Denton and others of his church, to Long Island, and soon after became a resident of Flushing, where he evinced the same restless temper as formerly, and was anxious for a military employment. On the refusal of the commissioners of the United Colonies to engage in the controversy between England and Holland, he applied to Rhode Island, which, on the 17th of May, 1653, resolved to appoint a committee from each town, "for the ripening of matters that concerned the Dutch," whom they styled enemies of that commonwealth, and agreed to furnish "two great guns, twenty men, and other aid." They also gave a commission to Underhill and William Dyre, "to go against the Dutch, or any enemies of the commonwealth of England." Under this authority, it is supposed, he made an attack upon the Indians at Fort Neck, when he captured the fort and destroyed many of the natives. He was afterwards settled in Oyster Bay, for in 1665 he was a delegate from that town to the meeting at Hempstead, by order of Governor Nicoll, and

was by him made sheriff of the north riding on Long Island. The Dutch had been detected by him at a former period of corresponding with the Indians for the destruction of the English, and in consequence of his disclosures in that respect, a guard of soldiers was sent from Manhattan to take him, but on his engaging to be faithful to the Dutch thereafter, he was set at liberty, and allowed to depart even without reproof. In 1667 the Matinecock Indians conveyed to him a large tract of land, a part of which, called Killingworth, became his residence and remained in his family nearly 200 years. His death occurred in 1672, and his will is sufficiently curious to deserve a place at the end of this article. His son John, to whom administration upon the will was granted by Governor Andros, November 4, 1676, took possession of the paternal estate, and died December 25, 1692. His will, bearing date the 15th of October, preceding his death, mentions his wife Mary, who died in 1698, and his children, John, Daniel, Jacob, Abraham, Samuel, Mary, Deborah, Sarah, and Hannah. Of these, John died May 28, 1728, and his wife in September, 1713.

In a small volume, called the *Algerine Captive*, by Dr. Updike Underhill, claiming to be a descendant of the captain, it is asserted that his ancestor arrived with Governor Winthrop, and was immediately promoted to offices civil and military in Massachusetts, but in a few years his popularity had so far decayed, that he was disfranchised, and banished out of that jurisdiction. But he denies the charge of adultery, brought against his progenitor, and the fact of his ever having made the confession related by Winthrop.

He also gives the following copy of a letter sent by Underhill to his friend, Hansard Knowles:

“Worthee and Beloved—Remembering my kind love to Mr. Hilton, I now send you a note of my tryalls at Boston. O! that I may come out of this and the lyke tryalls, as goold sevene tymes purified in the furnice. After the Rulers at Boston had fayled to fastenne, what Roger Harlakenden, was pleased to call the damning errors of Anne Hutchinson upon me, I looked to be sent away in peace; but Governor Winthrop sayd, I must abyde the examining of the church; accordingly on the thyrd daye of ye weeke I was convenen before them.

“Sir Henry Vane the Governour, Dudley Haynes, with masters Cotton, Shepherd and Hugh Peters, present with others. They propounded that I was to be examined touching a certaine act of adultery, I had committed with one Mistris Miriam Wilbore, for carnally looking to lust after her, at the lecture in Boston, when Master Shepherd expounded. This Mistress Wilbore hath since been dealt with for coming to that lecture with a pair of wanton open worked gloves, slit at the thumbs and fingers, for the purpose of taking snuff. For as Master Cotton observed, for what end should those vain openings be, but for the intent of taking filthy snuff? and he quoted Gregory Naziazen upon good works. Master Peters said that marriage was the occasion that the Devil took to cast his fiery darts, and lay his pitfalls of temptation, to catch frale flesh and bloode. She is to be further dealt with for taken snuff. How the use of the good creature tobacco, can be an offence, I cannot see. Oh! my beloved, how those proude pharisees labor about the minte and cumine. Governor Winthrop inquired of mee, if I confessed the matter; I sayd I wished a copy of there charge. Sir Harry Vane said, ‘there was no neede of any coppie, seeing I was guilty; charges being made out where there was an uncertaintie, whether the accused was guiltie or not, and to lighten the accused into the nature of his cryme, here was no need.’ Master Cotten said, ‘did you not look

upon Mistress Wilbore?' I confessed that I did. He then sayd, 'then you are verelie guiltie brother Underhill;' I sayd nay, I did not look at the woman lustfully. Master Peters sayd, 'why did you not look at sister Newell, or sister Upham?' I sayd verelie they are not desyrable women, as to temporal graces. Then Hugh Peters and all cryed, 'it is enough, he hath confessed,' and so passed excommunication. I sayd where is the law by which you condemn mee? Winthrop sayd, 'there is a committee to draught laws; I am sure brother Peters has made a law against this very sin.' Master Cotton read from his bible 'whoso looketh on a woman to lust after her, hath already committed adulterie with her in his heart.'

"Boston 28th, 4th mo. 1638, your fellow traveller in the vale of tears,

"JOHN UNDERHILL."

### *Copy of the Will*

"Killing worth y<sup>e</sup> 7<sup>th</sup> mo. called, y<sup>e</sup> 12th day on Long Island in y<sup>e</sup> north riding, under y<sup>e</sup> supream power of Charles y<sup>e</sup> Second, and under y<sup>e</sup> practince call (?) protection of James duke of Yorke and Albina, and in y<sup>e</sup> year of y<sup>e</sup> King's reigne, this my Last will and Testament, declareth before God and all men, I being by my perfect understanding, do bequeath my soule unto y<sup>e</sup> Eternal marcy, love, and Joye of my heavenly Father, in y<sup>e</sup> free death and marcy of my Saivour, my Redeemer, Christ Jesus, which show me by a saving faith I Eternaly close withall, and do declare y<sup>e</sup> witness of the spirit, sealing to y<sup>e</sup> promisses, to my everlasting joye and consolation. In y<sup>e</sup> Holy Ghost my sole and comforter, and in y<sup>e</sup> faith aforesaid—I resigne my body to y<sup>e</sup> Grave, and where it Shall be Decently Entered—I Bequeath my whole Estate in possession of my wife Elizabeth Underhill, during y<sup>e</sup>



time of her widowhood; but if she marry, then my brother John Bownd, Henry Townsend, Matthew Pryer, and my son John Underhill, I empower hereby that they see to y<sup>e</sup> Estate, that y<sup>e</sup> children be not wronged, nor turned of, without some proportionable allowance, as y<sup>e</sup> Estate will afford; and that my son Nathaniel,\* remaining with his mother, untell Twenty one years. I will that an Inheritance of land and some meadow, as my said overseers Shall judge equal and right, be confirmed upon him, and his Linual heirs, and that no part of my lands be alienated from my present ofspring. Signed, Sealed as aforesaid; In presence of Henry Rudick, Nathan Birdsall, y<sup>e</sup> 18th September 1671, day and date above written.

“Pr me JOHN UNDERHILL.”

“CHRISTOPHER HAWXHURST,  
WILLIAM SIMSON,  
JAMES COCK.”

\* Nathaniel, youngest son of Captain John, was born August 11, 1690, and died November 27, 1775, aged eighty-five. His wife was Mary, and his sons were Thomas, John, Nathaniel, Abraham, Benjamin, and Bartow. (See *Bolton's Westchester County*, vol. II., page 228.)—H. O.



## INDEX



## INDEX

- Adams, Wm., ii, 194, 219, 267,  
322; iii, 255.  
Akerly, ii, 266; iii, 565, 566.  
Akerman, iii, 548.  
Albany, i, 184.  
Albertson, ii, 254, 444.  
Alcock, ii, 584.  
Alden, John, i, 436.  
Alderich, ii, 455; iii, 377.  
Allen, iii, 318, 371, 568.  
Allerton, Isaac, ii, 310.  
Alliner, John, iii, 297.  
Allyn, i, 160.  
Alsop, iii, 186, 190, 520, 609.  
Anderson, ii, 268.  
André, Major, iii, 351, 432, 433.  
Andrews, ii, 433; iii, 546.  
Andros, i, 231, 380.  
    Sir Edmund, i, 204, 226, 228,  
    230, 235, 236; ii, 157, 239.  
Antill, Edward, i, 241.  
Antonides, V., iii, 180.  
Appleton, iii, 578.  
Argill, i, 339.  
Armitage, ii, 425, 485.  
Armstrong, Judge J. J., ii, 58.  
Arnham, iii, 52.  
Arnold, I., ii, 241.  
Arondeus, J., iii, 181.  
Arthur, iii, 380, 384.  
Ascough, iii, 588.  
Aspinwall, iii, 464, 569, 585, 596,  
597.  
Assembly, Annual, i, 277.  
Assemblymen, ii, 6, 21, 34, 38, 67,  
68.  
Assize Court, i, 204.  
Astoria, iii, 73, 74, 281.  
Atkins, D., iii, 47.  
Atlee, Col., i, 365.  
Attorneys-General of N. Y. State,  
i, 473.  
Atwood, Chief Justice, i, 251.  
Auchmuty, iii, 548, 570.  
Austin, Daniel, ii, 404.  
Avery, ii, 331; iii, 295, 320.  
Axtell, Col., i, 337, 340, 341, 342.  
Ayres, iii, 370.  
Babbit, J. M., ii, 169.  
Babcock, O., ii, 175.  
Babylon, i, 399; ii, 400, 419.  
Bagley, iii, 526.  
Bailey, i, 108; ii, 285, 446, 447;  
iii, 125, 383, 546, 585.  
Baiting Hollow, ii, 285.  
Baker, i, 108; iii, 372.  
    Thomas, i, 534; ii, 97, 98, 113.  
Baldwin, iii, 143, 184.  
Bancroft, iii, 251, 320.  
Bangs, E. K., ii, 531.  
Bannister, ii, 538.  
Barclay, ii, 627.  
Bard, ii, 318.  
Barentse, iii, 202.  
Barker, ii, 265, 267; iii, 332.  
Barker's Point, i, 61.  
Barlow, W., iii, 185.  
Barnes, ii, 546, 646.  
Bartlett, ii, 648.  
Barton, J. G., iii, 41.  
Bartow, ii, 167, 466, 598; iii, 67,  
253, 256.  
Basset, iii, 92, 182.  
Battin, S. H., iii, 326.  
Battle of Brooklyn, or Long Is-  
land, i, 347, 355, 361, 364.  
Battle Hill, iii, 235.  
Baxter, George, i, 158, 159, 447,  
503; ii, 424; iii, 109.  
    Thomas, ii, 426.  
Bay, Andrew, iii, 62.  
Bayard, iii, 30, 37.  
    Col. Nicholas, i, 250, 444.  
Bayley, D., iii, 493, 494, 579.  
Baylis, iii, 381.  
Beach, ii, 208, 611, 629; iii, 248, 619.  
Bease, H. W., iii, 44, 256.  
Beatie, John, iii, 160.  
Beaver Pond, ii, 639.



- Beck, iii, 468.  
 Becket, M., iii, 310.  
 Bedell, ii, 518, 532; iii, 621.  
 Bedford, iii, 225.  
 Bedinger, iii, 607.  
 Beebee, Joseph, ii, 246.  
 Beecher, ii, 131, 132, 133.  
   Henry Ward, iii, 270.  
   Lyman, ii, 131, 132; iii, 270.  
 Beeckman, J. H., iii, 326.  
 Beekman, iii, 550.  
   Gov. Gerardus, i, 258.  
   Wilhelmus, i, 241.  
 Beers, ii, 169, 266, 268; iii, 380.  
 Bell, ii, 332; iii, 562, 607.  
 Bell Port, ii, 332.  
 Bellomont, Earl of, i, 249, 252, 486.  
 Benedict, i, 108; iii, 302, 427.  
 Benjamin, Daniel, ii, 286.  
 Bennet, iii, 383.  
 Bennett, Wm., iii, 197.  
 Benson, Judge Egbert, i, 92; iii, 442.  
 Benty, J., iii, 198.  
 Bergen, iii, 147, 198, 247.  
 Berrian, W. L., iii, 299.  
 Berrien, iii, 538, 539.  
 Berthemy, ii, 572.  
 Bethpage, ii, 458.  
 Bethune, iii, 261.  
 Betts, ii, 63; iii, 378.  
 Beusset, H., iii, 104.  
 Bickerstaff, H., iii, 310.  
 Biddle, ii, 605.  
 Biggs, ii, 610; iii, 343, 595, 596.  
 Bigotry, Theological, ii, 238, 615, 628; iii, 65, 111, 176.  
   *See* Persecution, Quakers.  
 Bill of Rights, i, 233.  
 Bills of Credit, i, 421.  
 Bird, i, 390.  
 Birds of Long Island, iii, 282.  
 Birdsall, ii, 429, 549; iii, 451.  
   Col. Benjamin, iii, 451, 528.  
 Bisco, Ruth, ii, 307.  
 Bishop, iii, 75, 100.  
 Black, Gov. Frank S., ii, 58.  
 Blackwell, iii, 75, 361.  
 Blake, iii, 322.  
 Blakeman, Phineas, ii, 268.  
 Bleeker, Wm., ii, 646.  
 Block, A., i, 134, 135.  
 Block Island, i, 134.  
 Bloodgood, iii, 38, 64.  
 Bloomer, ii, 628.  
 Blue Point, ii, 339.  
 Blydenburgh, iii, 368, 376, 380, 381, 382, 383, 579.  
 Boardman, Wm., iii, 64, 258.  
 Bodle, iii, 374.  
 Boel, Hy., iii, 368.  
 Boelen, ii, 618; iii, 68.  
 Boerum, ii, 549, 585.  
 Bogaert, ii, 198.  
 Bogardus, E., i, 147; iii, 173.  
 Bogart, iii, 461-469.  
   David S., ii, 168, 565; iii, 376, 461-469, 569.  
 Bogert, C. I., family of, ii, 647.  
 Boggs, James, ii, 436.  
 Bogue, A. J., ii, 178.  
 Booth, John, ii, 238.  
 Borland, ii, 435; iii, 548.  
 Bostwick, ii, 603.  
 Boudinot, i, 102.  
 Boulder formation, i, 67.  
 Boulton, Hy., i, 495.  
 Boundaries, commission on, in 1650; i, 160.  
 Bourne, R. H., iii, 256.  
 Bowditch, iii, 598.  
 Bowers, iii, 382.  
 Bownas, Samuel, Persecution of, i, 449.  
 Bowne, i, 446, 447; ii, 252, 264, 268; iii, 563, 605, 606, 607.  
   John, i, 446, 447; ii, 47; iii, 15, 21; and his descendants, iii, 306-313.  
   Thomas, i, 447; iii, 15.  
   William, i, 446, 447.  
 Bracket, iii, 294.  
 Bradford, Wm., i, 247, 261, 449.  
 Bradlee, Thomas, ii, 638.  
 Bradner, ii, 605.  
 Bradnor, iii, 299.  
 Bradshaw, J., ii, 106.  
 Bradstreet, ii, 165, 424.  
   Colonel, i, 270, 503.  
 Brainard, ii, 503.  
 Brainerd, Jehu, iii, 389.  
 Brandegee, ii, 438.  
 Brant, ii, 526.  
 Bray, iii, 581.  
 Breck, ii, 436; iii, 61.  
 Breed, ii, 148, 149, 590.  
 Brenton, J. J., ii, 638.

- Brestide, iii, 538.  
 Brevoort, iii, 471.  
 Brewster, ii, 19, 306, 307, 310, 311, 324; iii, 295, 296, 297, 362, 375, 377, 389, 473-478, 595.  
     Capt. Caleb, i, 308; iii, 473-478.  
 Bridges, iii, 514.  
     Chief Justice, i, 450.  
 Briget, ii, 605.  
 Briggs, iii, 606.  
 Brinckerhoff, iii, 570.  
 "Bristol," destruction of the, i, 403.  
 British army in L. I., i, 282, 285.  
     Claims to L. I., i, 165.  
     Colonial government, i, 184.  
     Conquest of L. I., i, 300.  
     Punishment of, for loyalty, i, 270, 313, 319, 332.  
 Brittain, T. S., iii, 185, 253.  
 Broadhead, iii, 246.  
 Brock, Major-General, i, 232.  
 Brockholst, Gov. Anthony, i, 231, 241.  
 Brodhead, J. R., i, 21.  
 Brookhaven, i, 41, 77; ii, 289-336.  
 Brooklyn, i, 47, 48; iii, 196.  
     Apprentices' Library Association, iii, 228.  
     City Hall, iii, 229.  
     Collegiate Institute, iii, 228.  
     Lyceum, iii, 228.  
     Military operations in, i, 289, 351.  
     Regiments in Civil War, i, 402.  
 Brooks, iii, 374.  
 Broome, i, 395; ii, 436; iii, 572.  
     Lieut.-Governor, John, i, 395; ii, 436.  
 Brothers, The, i, 77.  
 Brower, A. P., iii, 331.  
 Brown, ii, 173, 178, 321, 337, 630; iii, 75, 76, 84, 94, 369, 370, 375, 512, 513.  
     Capt. David, ii, 178.  
     James, ii, 173, 199, 412.  
 Brownrig, John, iii, 141.  
 Bruce, ii, 539; iii, 537.  
 Brumley, iii, 323.  
 Brush, iii, 329, 372, 377, 384, 579.  
 Bruyne, F., iii, 109.  
 Bryan, ii, 398.  
     Alexander, family of, ii, 398.  
 Bryant, ii, 563; iii, 328, 329, 379, 380.  
 Buchanan, iii, 473, 511.  
 Buckley, iii, 38, 606.  
 Buell, ii, 131, 174; iii, 64, 321.  
     Peter, ii, 129, 130.  
     Samuel, ii, 129, 130, 137, 174.  
 Buffet, ii, 383.  
 Bullions, ii, 134.  
 Bunce, iii, 327, 378, 379.  
 Burcker, G., iii, 38, 185.  
 Burger, iii, 331, 597.  
 Burial Ground at Orient, ii, 143.  
 Burling, iii, 311, 471, 606.  
 Burnet, ii, 606, 607.  
     Gov. William, i, 260.  
 Burr, ii, 128, 271.  
     Colonel, ii, 139, 271.  
 Burroughs, i, 436, 449, 450.  
 Burrows, iii, 319.  
 Burt, James, iii, 62.  
 Burtis, iii, 381.  
 Burton, Capt., i, 389.  
 Burytenhuysen, iii, 538.  
 Bushwick, iii, 81, 94.  
 Buskind, John, ii, 390.  
 Butler, John, iii, 440.  
 Byram, Ephraim, N., ii, 195.  
 Cabot, Sebastian, i, 138.  
 Caddle, Alexander, ii, 268.  
 Cairns, Wm., ii, 563.  
 Caldwell, iii, 371.  
 Campbell, ii, 320, 517; iii, 184, 186, 188.  
 Canada, expedition to, i, 259.  
 Canal, Long Island, i, 452.  
 Canarsie Tribe, i, 124.  
 Caner, iii, 595.  
 Canfield, iii, 357.  
 Capital Punishment, ii, 11, 17, 42, 71, 80.  
 Cardell, Sheriff, i, 449.  
 Carder, J. D., iii, 164.  
 Carle, ii, 412; iii, 378, 379, 380, 381, 428.  
 Carll, iii, 301, 302.  
 Carlton, Gen. Sir Guy, i, 276, 317.  
 Carman, ii, 468, 469, 470; iii, 585, 599.  
 Carmichael, ii, 522.  
 Carpenter, ii, 429, 431, 446, 452; iii, 513, 621.  
 Carr, iii, 389.

- Carroll, D. L., iii, 258.  
 Carter, ii, 414; iii, 473.  
 Carteret, Philip, iii, 376, 604.  
 Case, ii, 284; iii, 374, 375, 534.  
 Caudy, Dennis, iii, 62.  
 Cebra, ii, 646.  
 Cedar Island, ii, 362.  
 Centre Island, i, 57; ii, 446.  
 Chain at West Point, iii, 626.  
 Chalkley, iii, 127.  
 Chancellors, list of, i, 476.  
 Chandler, ii, 519; iii, 320.  
 Chapman, J., ii, 357.  
 Charter of liberties, i, 232, 233.  
 Chasmore, R., ii, 637.  
 Chatfield, John, ii, 5, 89.  
 Chauncey, iii, 62, 547.  
 Cheetham, iii, 390.  
 Chichester, James, ii, 397.  
 Christie, iii, 34.  
 Civil War, i, 402.  
 Clark, ii, 161, 162, 266, 268, 600;  
     iii, 71, 180, 371, 426.  
 Clarke, ii, 242, 564; iii, 37, 66,  
     250, 604.  
     Gov. George, i, 264, 266.  
 Clarkson, iii, 184, 367.  
 Clays of L. I., i, 48, 49, 72, 74.  
 Cleves, ii, 278.  
     Capt. John, ii, 278.  
 Clifford, iii, 125.  
 Climate of L. I., i, 11.  
 Clinch, iii, 343.  
 Clinton, ii, 632, 644; iii, 313, 346,  
     368, 533, 549-557.  
     De Witt, i, 399, 452; ii, 647;  
     iii, 72, 213, 313, 533, 549-557.  
     Vice-Pres. George, iii, 346, 368.  
     Gov. George, i, 267, 318; ii,  
     136, 644.  
     Sir Henry, i, 267, 310, 356.  
 Clinton Academy, ii, 136.  
 Clock, S., iii, 199.  
 Close, ii, 411, 562.  
 Clowes, i, 267; ii, 521, 600, 629;  
     iii, 186, 527.  
     Samuel, i, 267; ii, 627; iii, 513,  
     514.  
 Clute, ii, 318.  
 Coast-line, changes in the, i, 21,  
     55, 64, 66.  
 Cobbet, Wm., ii, 50, 569, 576.  
 Cock, ii, 429; iii, 310, 500, 565.  
 Coe, ii, 587; iii, 62.  
 Cœtus Party, iii, 181.  
 Cœyman, iii, 575.  
 Coffin, i, 387; iii, 596.  
 Cogswell, ii, 436, 580.  
 Coglan, James, iii, 185.  
 Coit, ii, 127; iii, 252, 318, 319,  
     321.  
 Cold Spring Harbor, i, 62.  
 Colden, i, 301; iii, 33, 513, 606.  
     Gov. Cadwallader, i, 271, 326;  
     iii, 33-46, 513; family of, iii,  
     34, 35, 36, 513.  
 Coles, ii, 430, 431, 437, 440, 444,  
     445, 448, 452; iii, 373, 387.  
     Nathaniel, ii, 430, 431, 437, 440,  
     444, 452, 548.  
 Colgan, ii, 626.  
 Collins, iii, 62, 312.  
 Colve, Gov. Anthony, i, 215, 217,  
     224.  
 Colwell, iii, 188, 573.  
 Combs, ii, 606, 625.  
 Committee of Safety, i, 237.  
 Comstock, Capt. J. J., i, 415.  
 Conant, iii, 270.  
 Conduct, ii, 133.  
 Condit, iii, 245.  
 Coney Island, i, 55, 61, 64, 91; iii,  
     122.  
 Confiscations by the Dutch, i, 222.  
 Congress, members of, i, 459; ii,  
     35.  
     Members of Provincial, ii, 7, 34.  
 Conklin, ii, 284, 384, 401; iii, 344,  
     378.  
 Conkling, ii, 92, 113, 124, 138,  
     220, 221, 284, 397; iii, 317,  
     322, 327, 428, 528.  
     Isaac, and family, ii, 131.  
 Connecticut, charter of, ii, 160.  
     Claims, L. I., i, 167.  
     Union between Easthampton and,  
     i, 534.  
 Conover, ii, 619.  
 Constable, iii, 492.  
 Constables, appointments of, iii,  
     158.  
 Constitution of N. Y. State, i, 466;  
     ii, 9.  
     of U. S. A., i, 463.  
 Conventions, ii, 7, 8, 34, 35, 67.  
 Cock, L. D., ii, 128, 186.  
 Cooper, ii, 48; iii, 184, 333, 334,  
     390, 597.

- Cooper, James F., iii, 360, 594.  
 Coote, Sir Richard, i, 249, 252.  
 Copley, J. S., ii, 537.  
 Copp, J. A., ii, 180.  
 Corchoug, or Corchuag Tribe, i, 126; ii, 245.  
 Corey, ii, 241; iii, 333.  
 Cornbury, Lord, i, 249, 251, 254, 255, 257, 448; ii, 121, 624; iii, 65.  
 Cornelissen, iii, 202.  
 Cornell, iii, 37, 362, 514, 604.  
 Cornhill. *See* Cornwall.  
 Cornwallis, Lord, i, 356.  
 Cornwell, ii, 321, 390, 558, 568; iii, 30, 37, 311, 378, 561, 584, 585. *See also* Cornell.  
 Corwin, ii, 226, 287.  
 Cosby, Gov. Wm., i, 262, 264.  
 Cotton, ii, 165; iii, 426.  
 Council, members of, ii, 6.  
 Counties, division into, i, 524.  
 County Clerks, ii, 6, 33, 37, 65, 66.  
 Court of Chancery, i, 234.  
     of Common Pleas, ii, 4.  
     of Oyer, i, 234.  
 Courts, county, ii, 242.  
 Cove Neck, ii, 450.  
 Cow Bay, i, 63.  
 Cow Neck, i, 43.  
 Cowenhaven's Woods, i, 351.  
 Cowperthwaite, G., iii, 310.  
 Cox, iii, 251, 258, 260, 264, 270.  
 Cram, John, ii, 268.  
 Cramer, Wm., ii, 487.  
 Cranch, E., ii, 317.  
 Crane, ii, 610.  
 Crane's Neck, i, 32.  
 Crime, punishment for, ii, 103; iii, 91, 149, 152, 159, 220.  
 Cromline, iii, 378.  
 Cropsey, J. B., iii, 123.  
 Crosbie, iii, 293.  
 Crosby, iii, 368.  
 Cross, ii, 605, 625; iii, 143.  
 Crowell, E. O., ii, 404.  
 Cruikshank, W., iii, 143, 184.  
 Cuffee, Paul, i, 110, 128.  
 Culloden Point, i, 66.  
 Cumming, ii, 413.  
 Cunningham, Wm., i, 283.  
 Currency, paper, i, 425, 426.  
 Currie, R. O., iii, 160.  
 Curtenius, A., iii, 181.  
 Curtis, W. A., ii, 466.  
 Cushman, J. P., iii, 357.  
 Cutler, Benjamin, family of, iii, 251.  
 Cutting, ii, 517.  
 Cypress Hills, iii, 189.  
 Daggett, ii, 168, 380, 381; iii, 379, 570.  
     Herman, ii, 168, 207, 260, 329, 381.  
 Danforth, Thomas, ii, 164.  
 Darbee Leon, iii, 99.  
 Davenport, ii, 128, 161, 258, 259, 260, 265, 268, 592; iii, 501.  
 Davis, ii, 138, 319, 379; iii, 369, 383, 388, 569.  
 Dawes, R., iii, 141.  
 Dayton, i, 335; ii, 91, 92, 99, 138, 343; iii, 322.  
 Dayton Measles, ii, 139.  
 Debost, iii, 466.  
 Debt, repudiation of national, i, 433.  
 Declaration of Independence, i, 276; iii, 395.  
 Declyer, John, i, 172.  
 Deer, ii, 358.  
 Deering, S., ii, 487.  
 Defamation, punishment for, ii, 152, 394.  
 De Grove, iii, 379.  
 De Hartt, iii, 575.  
 De Honneur, iii, 340, 427.  
 Dekay, ii, 450, 532.  
 De Laet, i, 93.  
 Delafield, iii, 358, 367.  
 De Lancey, ii, 365; iii, 35, 360, 514, 528, 594.  
     Chief Justice James, i, 263, 267, 269; ii, 365; iii, 528, 594.  
     family of, i, 270.  
 De La Noy, iii, 574.  
 Delawares, i, 121.  
 Demarest, James, iii, 101.  
 Denis, T., iii, 199.  
 Denison, ii, 201.  
 Denton, ii, 498, 587, 590; iii, 562.  
     Daniel, i, 102, 108, 240, 444; ii, 498, 583.  
     Richard, i, 108; ii, 156, 162, 496.  
 De Peyster, ii, 52, 634.  
     Capt. Frederick, i, 343.  
 de Rapelye, iii, 198, 202, 238.

- De Rham, iii, 492.  
 Dering, ii, 183, 223, 224, 383; iii, 322, 344, 345.  
   Sylvester, and family, ii, 218, 222, 223, 383; iii, 344.  
   Thomas, ii, 183, 217, 223.  
 Dermer, Thomas, i, 134.  
 De Sille, Nicasius, i, 437, 441; iii, 147, 148, 150; iii, 242.  
 Devyr, Thomas, iii, 100.  
 Dewick, iii, 302, 362.  
 De Witt, iii, 551.  
 De Wolfe, iii, 548.  
 De Zeng, iii, 606.  
 Dickerson, ii, 426, 429, 362.  
 Dickinson, ii, 286, 307; iii, 597.  
 Diller, J. W., iii, 253.  
 Dimon, ii, 125, 284.  
 Dirckse, iii, 202.  
 Discovery of L. I., i, 88.  
 District attorneys, ii, 10, 37.  
 Ditmars, iii, 540, 575.  
 Doane, iii, 368.  
 Dobson, iii, 311.  
 Docharty, G. B., iii, 42.  
 Doddridge, ii, 608.  
 Dodge, iii, 376, 585.  
 Dogs, ii, 211.  
   Sale of, to Indians, ii, 119.  
 "Dolphin," the, i, 89.  
 Dominic, G. C., iii, 362.  
 Dominy, iii, 489.  
 Dongan, i, 236; iii, 359.  
   Gov. Thomas, i, 232, 235, 236, 240; ii, 63, 121, 158, 299; iii, 359.  
 Donnelly, Arthur, i, 405.  
 Dosoris, ii, 438; iii, 543.  
 Doughty, ii, 64, 429; iii, 9, 48, 50, 59, 605.  
 Douglass, ii, 178, 552; iii, 44, 596.  
 Downing, ii, 431.  
 Drake, ii, 532.  
 Draper, Sir Wm., i, 270.  
 Dring, Capt. Thomas, i, 385.  
 Duane, ii, 608; iii, 532, 538.  
 Dudley, Mary, ii, 527.  
   Gov. Thomas, ii, 165, 527.  
 Duer, iii, 524.  
 Duffield, iii, 261.  
 Duke's Laws, i, 108, 187, 201; ii, 115.  
 Dunlap, iii, 545.  
 Dunmore, Gov. John, Lord, i, 273.  
 Duryea, ii, 549.  
 Dutch churches, iii, 175.  
   East India Co., i, 133.  
   opposition to the, i, 223.  
   opposition by the, i, 162, 504.  
   petition against intrusion of the, i, 479.  
   settlers, i, 136.  
 Dwight, iii, 245, 545, 546.  
 Dyer, Mary, i, 436.  
 Dyer's Neck, ii, 343.  
 Earle, M., ii, 445.  
 East New York, i, 48; iii, 187, 193.  
 East Rockaway, ii, 536.  
 Easthampton, ii, 84, 136.  
   address, iii, 637.  
   united to Connecticut, i, 534.  
 Eastwicke, John, ii, 435.  
 Eaton, ii, 398, 605.  
   Gov., ii, 226.  
   Theophilus, ii, 86, 385, 398.  
 Eburne, Samuel, ii, 299, 300, 306, 312.  
 Eckford, ii, 532.  
   Henry, ii, 531, 532.  
 Edgar, ii, 175.  
 Edsall, i, 241; iii, 61.  
 Education, ii, 113.  
 Edwards, i, 117; ii, 384; iii, 334.  
   Jonathan, ii, 129, 503.  
 Eels, Nathaniel, ii, 167.  
 Eigenbrodt, ii, 634.  
 Elderkin, ii, 344.  
 Eliot, ii, 528.  
 Elliot, iii, 324.  
 Elliott, iii, 486.  
 Ellison, ii, 307; iii, 360, 362.  
 Ellsworth, iii, 426.  
 Ely, ii, 134.  
   David, i, XXVI.  
 Embargo, i, xxxii.  
 Embree, iii, 311, 605, 606.  
 Endicott, Gov., i, 171.  
 Everett, Wm., ii, 361.  
 Everit, i, 444; ii, 610; iii, 585.  
 Evertson, iii, 580.  
 Excise commissioners of, ii, 9.  
 Fairchild, ii, 563.  
 Fairman, G. W., iii, 32.  
 Faitoute, ii, 610.  
 Fanning, i, 323; iii, 376, 378, 599.



- Far Rockaway, ii, 536.  
 Fardon, iii, 390.  
 Farley, iii, 268.  
 Farmingdale, ii, 458.  
 Farquhar, Dr. Wm., iii, 35.  
 Farret, James, i, 165, 512, 531; ii, 89, 145, 148, 211.  
 Farrington, ii, 147, 148, 149, 150; iii, 311.  
     Edward, i, 441, 446; ii, 150; iii, 15, 306.  
 Fash, G. W., iii, 102.  
 Feake, i, 441, 442, 446.  
 Feeke, iii, 10.  
 Feeks, ii, 443.  
 Feltus, H. J., iii, 249.  
 Ferguson, iii, 186, 604.  
 Ferris, ii, 445, 512; iii, 500.  
 Fidelity, oath of, i, 329.  
 Field, ii, 512; iii, 306, 310, 312, 379.  
 Finance, i, 421.  
 Fire of 1848, Brooklyn, iii, 271.  
     protection against, ii, 100.  
 Fire Islands, ii, 363.  
 Fish, ii, 358; iii, 62, 63, 99, 254, 492, 539, 616, 618.  
 Fishbough, Wm., ii, 264.  
 Fitch, Samuel, ii, 398.  
 Fitzpatrick, iii, 562.  
 Five Dutch Towns, iii, 89.  
 Flatbush, i, 48; iii, 168.  
 Flatlands, iii, 128.  
 Fleet, ii, 317, 390, 404; iii, 328, 372, 373, 378.  
 Fletcher, ii, 163.  
     Gov. Benjamin, i, 246, 252; ii, 304; iii, 175.  
 Flint, iii, 513.  
 Floyd, ii, 252, 299, 302, 335, 364, 512; iii, 297, 335, 338, 344, 377, 378, 379, 382, 391, 550, 570, 600.  
     family, iii, 358, 370.  
     Col. Nicoll, ii, 166.  
     Col. Richard, i, 236; ii, 5, 307, 335.  
     Gen. Wm., ii, 252; iii, 335, 357, 363, 367, 391, 428, 550.  
 Floyd-Jones, iii, 361, 372.  
 Flushing, i, 43; iii, 3.  
 Foot, iii, 597.  
 Foote, Roxana, ii, 133; iii, 270.  
 Ford, iii, 425, 484, 606.  
 Fordham, ii, 162, 312, 468, 469, 470, 500, 501, 555; iii, 385.  
     Robert, and family, ii, 162.  
 Forman, iii, 585.  
 Fort Diamond, iii, 163.  
 Frontenac, capture of, i, 270.  
     Green, i, 350, 352.  
     Hamilton, iii, 163, 164.  
     La Fayette, iii, 163.  
     Pond, ii, 110.  
     Richmond, iii, 163.  
 Fosdick, ii, 224.  
 Fossils, i, 50, 74.  
 Foster, ii, 5, 268.  
 Fox, George, iii, 16, 20.  
 Fox Island, i, 57, 61.  
 Foxcroft, ii, 625.  
 Francis, ii, 174; iii, 251, 327.  
 Franklin, i, 269; ii, 512, 580; iii, 310, 312, 313, 327, 550, 557, 607.  
 Freeman, B., iii, 180.  
 French, Joseph, i, 320.  
 French, war with the, i, 269.  
 Fresh Pond Creek, i, 32, 49; ii, 110.  
 Froelig, ii, 618.  
 Froeligh, Samuel, iii, 68.  
 Frost, ii, 429; iii, 371.  
 Frothingham, David, ii, 193.  
 Fry, ii, 581.  
 Fuller, ii, 383.  
 Funck, ii, 610.  
 Furman, ii, 612; iii, 64.  
     Hon. Gabriel, i, xii, 108.  
 Gale, iii, 528.  
 Gammage, S. P., ii, 325, 331.  
 Gano, iii, 346.  
 Gansevoort, iii, 511.  
 Gardiner, ii, 111, 126, 128, 131, 139, 141, 184, 217, 252, 400; iii, 299, 300, 379.  
     Col. Abraham, iii, 299, 379.  
     David, i, xxxii, 100; ii, 93, 105, 114, 128, 131, 138, 139, 140, 367.  
     John D., ii, 179.  
     Lion, i, 100, 534; ii, 16, 88, 89, 93, 97, 100, 103, 104, 125, 366.  
     Lion, and his descendants, iii, 313-334.  
 Gardiner's Island, ii, 103.

- Garretson, ii, 619; iii, 68, 110, 576.  
 Gates, Sir Thomas, i, 138.  
 Gelston, ii, 165, 166, 183, 633, 646, 647; iii, 328, 367, 378.  
   Samuel, and family, ii, 165.  
 Genet, E. C., ii, 642; iii, 550.  
 Geology of L. I., i, 18.  
 George's Neck, ii, 354.  
 Gibb, Andrew, i, 240; ii, 300, 301, 342, 351, 355, 356.  
 Gibson, M. E., ii, 267.  
 Gilder, W. H., iii, 42.  
 Gildersleeve, ii, 641; iii, 331, 384, 573.  
   Richard, i, 438; ii, 473, 477.  
 Gile, ii, 317.  
 Gilet, N. H., ii, 325, 331.  
 Glassbrook, ii, 609.  
 Gleason, ii, 382.  
 Glen Cove, i, 32; ii, 452.  
 Glentworth, ii, 522; iii, 361.  
 Glover, Samuel, ii, 241.  
 Gneise Rocks, i, 74.  
 Goddard, K., iii, 254.  
 Goelet, iii, 575.  
 Goetschius, ii, 614, 619; iii, 68, 182.  
 Goldsmith, ii, 254, 255, 284, 611; iii, 64, 375, 534.  
 Goodhue, ii, 601.  
 Goodwin, F. J., iii, 38.  
 Goodyear, Stephen, family of, ii, 211.  
 Gordon, ii, 566; iii, 39.  
 Gorham, iii, 250.  
 Gosmer, John, ii, 148, 150.  
 Gould, ii, 262, 528; iii, 383.  
   Judge James, ii, 271.  
 Goulder, Wm., iii, 121.  
 Gouveneur, iii, 492.  
 Goveneul, A., i, 244.  
 Government, of the Americans, i, 247.  
   under the British, i, 108, 187, 199, 208, 234.  
   under the Dutch, i, 151, 504.  
   settlement of the, in 1662, i, 160.  
 Governments, vices of Colonial, i, 276.  
 Governors, power of the, i, 244, 277.  
   rapacity of the, i, 209.  
 Gowanus, iii, 225.  
 Gracie, iii, 523, 524.  
 Graham, ii, 304, 521; iii, 261.  
 Grant, iii, 320, 346.  
   Major-General, i, 356.  
 Gravesend, iii, 105.  
 Great Neck, i, 43; ii, 568.  
 Great South Beach, i, 63.  
 Greaton, ii, 406.  
 Green, ii, 127, 161; iii, 263, 348.  
 Greene, i, 350, 362; ii, 316, 317; iii, 298, 320.  
   family, i, xxviii.  
   Major-General, i, 350, 362.  
   Zachariah, i, xxviii, 308; ii, 263, 316, 318, 390; iii, 298.  
 Greenleaf, iii, 262.  
 Greenly, ii, 361; iii, 344.  
 Greenman, ii, 207.  
 Greenport, i, 40; ii, 251.  
 Greenwood Cemetery, iii, 233.  
 Grey, iii, 319.  
 Grier, Isaac, iii, 184.  
 Griffin, iii, 587.  
 Griffing, ii, 275; iii, 299.  
 Grinnell, iii, 597.  
 Griswold, ii, 531, 571, 572; iii, 323, 388.  
 Grosvenor, iii, 44.  
 Guillock, Jocham, iii, 121.  
 Gulf Stream, i, 6.  
 Guthrie, iii, 584, 585.  
 Hackett, ii, 609.  
 Haines, R., iii, 313.  
 Hainiello, iii, 203.  
 Hale, iii, 429, 435.  
   Capt. Nathan, iii, 429.  
 Hall, ii, 519, 521; iii, 102.  
   Daniel, and family, ii, 178, 220.  
 Hallack, Peter, ii, 244.  
 Hallet, Joseph, iii, 358.  
 Hallett, iii, 71, 73, 310, 606.  
 Hallett's Cove, iii, 281.  
 Hallock, ii, 284, 325, 331, 338, 339, 340, 348.  
 Halsey, ii, 148, 209, 279.  
 Hamilton, Alexander, i, 429; iii, 442.  
   Andrew, i, 263; ii, 341.  
 Hamlin, J. T., ii, 285.  
 Hammel, ii, 628.  
 Hammersley, ii, 626.  
 Hammond, iii, 597.  
 Hampton, John, iii, 65.

- Hand, John, i, 534; ii, 88, 97.  
Hansen, iii, 124.  
Hardy, Commodore T. M., i, 397;  
ii, 195.  
Gov. Sir Charles, i, 269, 279.  
Hare, Colonel, i, 368.  
Harker, Wm., ii, 148.  
Harkness, N. W., ii, 136.  
Harlow, iii, 374.  
Harriman, John, ii, 162.  
Harriman, Orlando, ii, 522.  
Harris, Samuel, iii, 70.  
Harrison, ii, 279, 280, 429, 647.  
Colonel Robert H., i, 363.  
President, ii, 279.  
Hartshorne, iii, 312.  
Haskins, S. M., iii, 101.  
Haslet, Colonel, i, 386.  
Havens, ii, 218, 219, 222, 223,  
224, 252, 329, 645; iii, 299,  
324, 338, 381, 427.  
Nicoll, ii, 183, 222, 223, 252.  
Haviland, iii, 378, 584.  
Hawkins, i, 389; ii, 307, 319, 340;  
iii, 381, 382, 484, 579.  
Hawks, F. L., iii, 41.  
Hawley, Capt. Daniel, i, 311.  
W. C., iii, 264.  
Hawthorn, Wm., iii, 497.  
Hawthorne, iii, 524.  
Hawxhurst, iii, 626.  
Haynes, ii, 268; iii, 266.  
Hazard, ii, 260, 261; iii, 61, 325.  
Hazzard, iii, 596.  
Headlands, i, 56.  
Headly, Esther, iii, 93.  
Heard, iii, 374.  
Hearne, ii, 333.  
Heathcote, Col. Caleb, i, 252; iii,  
594.  
Heckewelder, John, i, 97.  
Hedges, iii, 318, 388, 569.  
Capt. David, ii, 175.  
Hegeman, iii, 574.  
Heister, General, i, 356.  
Hell Gate, iii, 8, 76.  
Hellenus, iii, 180.  
Helme, ii, 299, 300, 301, 307, 330;  
iii, 382, 390, 579, 598.  
Hemenway, iii, 263.  
Hempstead, i, 49, 72; ii, 467, 529.  
Harbour, i, 62.  
remonstrance, iii, 631.  
Robert, iii, 374, 534.  
Hendrick's Reef, iii, 162.  
Hendrickson, ii, 183, 619; iii, 312,  
537.  
Henry, M. P., ii, 207.  
Henshaw, iii, 250, 590.  
Herbard, ii, 586.  
Heresy, i, 144.  
Herrick, ii, 167, 209.  
Herriman, James, ii, 638.  
Herring, iii, 531.  
Hewett, iii, 547.  
Hewlett, i, 312; ii, 451, 518,  
540, 548, 549; iii, 529, 568,  
605.  
Col. Richard, i, 307, 326, 329.  
Hewlett's Point, i, 61.  
Hicks, i, 303, 328; ii, 455, 516; iii,  
311, 469-473, 563, 607.  
Capt. Charles, i, 315.  
Capt. Thomas, i, 241, 320, 334,  
450; ii, 558, 568.  
Judge Thomas, ii, 33.  
Whitehead, iii, 469-473.  
Hicks Neck, ii, 535.  
Hicksville, ii, 457.  
Higbie, J. M., ii, 438.  
Hill, ii, 411; iii, 607.  
Hillhouse, iii, 547.  
Hilton, iii, 376, 605.  
Hoadley, George, iii, 546.  
Hobart, ii, 257, 399, 502, 503, 518,  
519, 592, 593; iii, 70.  
John Sloss, i, 330, 428; ii, 399,  
503; iii, 365.  
Hodge, ii, 285, 434.  
Hodgson, i, 446; iii, 264.  
Hoffman, ii, 549; iii, 35.  
Hogelandt, D., iii, 199.  
Holdbrook, R., ii, 425.  
Holden, C., iii, 21.  
Holland, iii, 338, 342.  
Hollingsworth, R., ii, 398.  
Holman, ii, 538, 539.  
Holmes, iii, 75.  
Homan, iii, 295, 386.  
Hone, iii, 557.  
Honeyman, ii, 622.  
Hooker, ii, 133; iii, 349, 512.  
Hopkins, ii, 300; iii, 388, 390,  
545.  
Hopson, W., iii, 368.  
Horner, iii, 310.  
Horsford, iii, 327.  
Horsmanden, Daniel, i, 265.

- Horton, i, 110; ii, 226, 237, 241;  
     iii, 62, 330, 374.  
     Simon, and family, iii, 62.  
 How, Daniel, i, 531.  
 Howard, ii, 317; iii, 184, 300, 537.  
 Howe, Capt. Daniel, i, 154; ii,  
     145, 147, 148, 149, 150, 151,  
     422, 552.  
     General, i, 281; iii, 30, 395.  
     Richard, Viscount, i, 328.  
     Sir William, i, 328.  
 Howell, ii, 156, 158, 167, 381; iii,  
     317, 327, 330, 376, 534.  
     Capt., i, 538.  
     Edward, i, 531; ii, 89, 147, 148,  
     149, 162.  
     Capt. Stephen, ii, 184.  
 Howland, iii, 312, 384, 469, 549,  
     597.  
 Hubbard, i, 109, 158, 159, 256,  
     447; ii, 63, 598, 601; iii, 121,  
     330, 380.  
     Serg. James, and family, iii,  
     125.  
 Hubbell, iii, 548.  
 Hubbs, iii, 383.  
 Huddie, A., iii, 128, 202.  
 Hudson, ii, 5; iii, 390.  
     Henry, i, 88, 90, 92, 133.  
 Hue and Cryes, i, 528.  
 Huguenots, iii, 29.  
 Hull, ii, 277, 619.  
 Hulse, ii, 224, 327.  
 Hunn, iii, 93.  
 Hunt, ii, 194; iii, 513.  
 Hunter, J., iii, 256.  
     Gov. Robert, i, 258.  
 Hunting, iii, 321.  
 Huntington, ii, 183, 224; iii, 324.  
 Huntington, L. I., i, 42, 48; ii,  
     385.  
 Huntting, ii, 128, 135, 261, 266.  
     Col. Benjamin, ii, 184.  
     Benjamin, family of, ii, 128.  
     John, and family, ii, 126.  
     Jonathan, ii, 135, 261, 266.  
     Nathaniel, and family, ii, 126,  
     127, 135, 261.  
 Hutchinson, i, 482; ii, 159, 239,  
     287, 406, 530; iii, 360, 378.  
 Hyde, i, 266; ii, 611.  
     Edward. *See* Cornbury, Lord.  
 Hyde Park, ii, 569.  
 Hyler, Capt. Adam, i, 337.  
 Ilsley, S., iii, 264.  
 Indian money, i, 104, 111.  
 Indians, alliance with the, ii, 93.  
     customs of the, i, 104, 111.  
     danger from the, ii, 101, 232,  
     236; iii, 217.  
     disarming of the, ii, 302.  
     the "Long-lost Tribes of Is-  
     rael"; i, 102.  
     language of the, i, 131.  
     of L. I., i, 93, 96, 123.  
     missions to the, ii, 121.  
     origin of the, i, 96.  
     robbing the, iii, 152.  
     theology of the, i, 130.  
     traits of the, i, 102, 103.  
     war with the, i, 146.  
 Ingals, ii, 264.  
 Ingolsby, Gov. Richard, i, 241,  
     246, 258.  
 Injustice of the government, i, 319.  
 Innerarity, ii, 328.  
 Intolerance, iii, 85.  
 Ireland, iii, 45.  
     John, iii, 249, 343, 367.  
     Walter, iii, 369.  
 Iroquois, i, 121.  
 Irving, G. F., ii, 532.  
 Irwin, Jane, ii, 280.  
 Isaacs, ii, 137; iii, 511, 545.  
 Islip, ii, 346.  
 Ives, iii, 380.  
 Jackson, ii, 133, 261, 430, 440,  
     448, 548, 549, 550, 582; iii,  
     302, 528, 532.  
     John, i, 394, 450; ii, 430, 542,  
     548, 550; iii, 528.  
 Jacobs, Thomas, ii, 484.  
 Jacobus, iii, 260.  
 Jagger, iii, 63.  
 Jamaica, i, 44, 49, 54; ii, 582.  
 James, ii, 125, 266, 484.  
     Thomas, and family, i, 110; ii,  
     124, 125, 126.  
 Janse, iii, 202.  
 Jansen, Abraham, iii, 91.  
 Jay, ii, 632; iii, 21.  
     Gov., ii, 279.  
 Jayne, Ebenezer, ii, 307.  
 Jenks, iii, 269.  
 Jenner, ii, 293, 300, 313.  
 Jenners, John, family of, ii, 290.  
 Jenny, R., ii, 512.

- Jericho, i, 42; ii, 431, 454.  
 Jerolamon, iii, 348.  
 Jerusalem, ii, 534.  
 Jessup, ii, 154; iii, 330.  
 Jocelyn, iii, 104.  
 John, Peter, i, 128.  
 Johnson, ii, 361, 384, 611, 630, 644; iii, 67, 101, 102, 109, 573, 594.  
     Gen. Jeremiah, i, 351, 376; iii, 212.  
     Gen. Jeremiah, family of, iii, 238.  
     John B., and family, iii, 243.  
 Jones, ii, 126, 166, 398, 410, 451, 461, 462, 466, 549, 550, 580, 600, 638, 646, 647; iii, 37, 57, 60, 72, 329, 344, 360, 361, 362, 363, 368, 372, 379, 428, 451, 458, 514, 525-533, 557, 599, 604.  
 Samuel, iii, 525-533.  
     Hon. Thomas, i, 311; ii, 462.  
 Jongh, iii, 206.  
 Judd, iii, 263.  
 Judges, ii, 5, 9, 33, 36, 64, 65.  
 Justices, Chief, i, 476.  
     of the Court of Appeals, i, 477.  
     of the Peace, ii, 7, 34, 35, 65.  
  
 Kamflin, iii, 587.  
 Kees, iii, 311.  
 Keith, George, i, 449, 451; ii, 620.  
 Kellogg, ii, 207; iii, 186, 300.  
 Kelly, J. A. E., iii, 100.  
 Kelsey, iii, 371.  
 Kent, iii, 255.  
     Chancellor, i, 90; iii, 570.  
 Ketcham, ii, 397, 400, 401, 408; iii, 585.  
 Ketchum, ii, 316.  
 Keteltas, ii, 607, 648; iii, 341.  
 Kidd, Capt., i, 252, 486.  
     treasure, i, 252, 492; ii, 557.  
 Kidd's Island, ii, 557.  
     Point, i, 59, 62.  
     Rock, i, 59; ii, 557.  
 Kieft, Gov. Wm., i, 142, 146.  
 King, ii, 180, 300, 329, 330; iii, 312, 318, 370, 373, 479-483, 497, 517-525.  
     Elisha W., iii, 479-483.  
     Rufus, iii, 518-525.  
 King's County, ii, 62.  
  
 Kinney, iii, 580.  
 Kipp, iii, 500.  
 Kirkland, Gen. Joseph, iii, 367.  
 Kissam, ii, 632; iii, 568.  
 Knapp, ii, 266, 382.  
 Kneeland, iii, 37.  
 Knowles, ii, 124, 282, 477.  
 Knyff, Wm., i, 221, 222.  
 Kouwenhoven, iii, 146.  
 Kuypers, ii, 525, 618; iii, 68.  
 Kyfte, Gov. Wm., ii, 144.  
  
 Labagh, iii, 123, 124.  
 Laight, E. W., iii, 36.  
 Lamb, Joseph, ii, 265.  
 Lamberson, ii, 634; iii, 382.  
 Land, distribution of common, i, 143.  
     public, in Hempstead, ii, 544.  
     obtained from the Indians, i, 124; ii, 86, 93.  
     released by Lord Stirling, i, 531.  
 Landmark, the, ii, 264.  
 Landon, iii, 374, 534.  
 Land-slides, i, 33.  
 Lane, Daniel, ii, 293.  
 Lang, iii, 584.  
 Langdon, Thomas, ii, 486.  
 Lansing, iii, 270, 571.  
 Latham, ii, 245, 558; iii, 311, 335, 562, 563.  
 Lathrop, iii, 321.  
 Latting, ii, 429.  
 Lavoisier, A. L., ii, 405.  
 Lawrence, ii, 264, 307; iii, 74, 310, 311, 312, 376, 382, 538, 600-621, 623, 628.  
     John, i, 330; ii, 469, 470; iii, 385, 512, 514, 600.  
 Laws, borrowed from Connecticut, ii, 99, 233.  
     of Moses, ii, 231, 233.  
 Lawton, Elijah, ii, 198.  
 Lay, iii, 371.  
 Leddra, Wm., i, 436.  
 Ledyard, ii, 269; iii, 75, 77, 374, 375, 507, 533-537.  
     Isaac, iii, 533-537.  
 Lee, ii, 202, 268; iii, 325.  
     Gen. Charles, i, 329.  
 Le Fevre, C. F., ii, 530.  
 Legget, iii, 42, 44, 253.  
 Leigh, B. W., ii, 269.



- Leisler, Capt. Jacob, i, 235, 237, 239, 242, 243.  
 Lenell, iii, 220.  
 Lenington, H., ii, 486.  
 Le Roy, iii, 30, 37, 331, 533.  
 Lester, ii, 254.  
 Leverich. *See* Leveridge.  
     Col. Edward, iii, 64.  
 Leveridge, W., i, 110; ii, 408, 425; iii, 60.  
 Lewis, ii, 381, 546, 570; iii, 44, 253, 256, 259, 328, 437-442, 473, 572, 580.  
     Francis, iii, 44, 437-442.  
     Morgan, iii, 440.  
 "Lexington," conflagration of the, i, 411.  
 L'Hommedieu, ii, 180, 252; iii, 326, 327, 333.  
     Ezra, i, xxx; ii, 252, 254, 364; iii, 326, 365, 367.  
 Lignite, i, 50.  
 Lincoln, C. R., iii, 43.  
 Linde, iii, 202.  
 Lindley, ii, 340.  
 Lindsley, iii, 619.  
 Lines, Roger, ii, 405.  
 Liquors, intoxicating, ii, 118, 119; iii, 150.  
 Liscomb, iii, 377.  
 Lisenard, ii, 646.  
 Little, iii, 383.  
 Little Neck, iii, 44.  
     Bay, i, 44.  
 Little Quogue, ii, 206.  
 Livesay, iii, 606.  
 Livingston, ii, 245, 279, 436, 649; iii, 185, 186, 441, 442, 547, 571, 575, 620.  
 Lloyd, i, 330; ii, 44, 434, 435, 436, 437, 438; iii, 184, 369, 428, 544, 547, 577, 596.  
 Lloyd's Neck, i, 42, 330; ii, 433, 434, 438.  
 Locke, N. C., iii, 262.  
 Lockerson, iii, 562.  
 London Company, i, 138.  
 Long Island, Battle of, i, 347.  
 Long Island City, iii, 79.  
*Long Island Herald*, ii, 193.  
 Longbotham, ii, 319; iii, 375, 382.  
 Lord, ii, 527.  
 Losee, iii, 621.  
 Lott, ii, 65; iii, 574-577, 586.  
 Lott, Englebert, descendants of, iii, 574-577.  
 Lottery, church, ii, 441.  
     land, ii, 299.  
 Lovelace, Gov. Francis, i, 203, 212.  
     John, Lord, i, 258.  
 Low, iii, 524.  
 Lowe, Peter, iii, 92, 143, 160, 183, 186.  
 Lucas, ii, 522.  
 Luce, Abraham, ii, 207, 285.  
 Ludlow, ii, 311, 364, 569, 570, 619; iii, 296, 344, 440.  
 Ludlum, iii, 373.  
 Lupardus, W., iii, 180.  
 Lupton, ii, 463; iii, 243.  
 Lush, i, xxx; iii, 298.  
 Lying, penalty for, ii, 150.  
 Lyman, ii, 131, 528; iii, 62.  
 Lynch, iii, 538.  
 Lyon, iii, 104.  
     James, and family, ii, 321; iii, 595.  
 Lyons, James, iii, 63.  
 McAdam, ii, 364, 365; iii, 100, 341, 342, 360.  
 McAllister, M. H., iii, 251.  
 McArthur, iii, 535.  
 McClean, James, i, 388.  
 McClure, iii, 573.  
 McCoun, ii, 376, 447, 448; iii, 371, 376, 379, 544.  
     W. J., i, xxxvii.  
 Macdonald, ii, 611; iii, 40.  
 McIlvaine, C. P., iii, 251.  
 McKenzie, Francis, i, 257.  
 McLachlan, ii, 139; iii, 325.  
 McLane, iii, 102.  
 McLaren, M., iii, 247.  
 McNeil, iii, 31.  
 MacNeven, iii, 540, 620.  
 McNish, ii, 602.  
 MacNish, George, iii, 62.  
 McPherson, iii, 538.  
 Magaw, iii, 124.  
 Magoffin, iii, 259.  
 Mahew, John, ii, 303.  
 Major, Henry, iii, 492.  
 Manhasset, i, 43, 79.  
     Bay, i, 63.  
     tribe, i, 126; ii, 85, 86.  
 Manley, John, i, 384.

- Manning, Capt. John, i, 214, 228;  
     ii, 63.  
 Mapes, ii, 226, 237; iii, 371.  
 Marauders, ii, 344.  
 Marbury, F. E., ii, 448.  
 March, iii, 590.  
 Marcy, Bradford, ii, 383.  
 Marenus, iii, 182.  
 Marion, Gen. Francis, iii, 251.  
 Marl, i, 55.  
 Marriner, Capt. Wm., i, 337.  
 Marshes, i, 37, 55.  
 Martin, ii, 537, 538.  
 Mason, i, 119; ii, 153, 557; iii,  
     103, 245.  
 Maspeth, iii, 72.  
     Indians, i, 125.  
 Massapequa, ii, 460.  
     or Marsapeague tribe, i, 125.  
 Masters, iii, 332.  
 Mather, i, xii; ii, 130, 284; iii,  
     328.  
     Cotton, i, 101; iii, 594.  
 Matinecock Point, i, 57, 61.  
     tribe, i, 126.  
 Matlock, John, iii, 248.  
 Maverick, Samuel, ii, 159.  
 Maynard, ii, 339.  
 Mayo, Samuel, ii, 425, 426,  
     433.  
 Meacham family, ii, 129.  
 Mechanicville, ii, 356.  
 Meeker, iii, 93.  
 Megapolensis, J., iii, 172, 173.  
 Meigs, Lieut.-Col. R. J., i, 304.  
 Merrick, ii, 534.  
 Merrick, Meroke, or Merikoke  
     tribe, i, 125.  
 Merrit, iii, 597.  
 Mershon, E., ii, 135.  
 Messenger, J. F., iii, 185, 256.  
 "Mexico," destruction of the, i,  
     406.  
 Meyer, iii, 199.  
 Middle Island, i, 57, 61.  
 Middleburgh, iii, 53.  
 Middleton, Thomas, ii, 211, 215.  
 Mienville, iii, 602.  
 Milbourne, Major, i, 238, 240,  
     241.  
     trial of, i, 242.  
 Milburn, ii, 535.  
 Miles, Colonel, i, 356.  
 Miller, i, 450; ii, 88, 89, 131, 133,  
     138, 326, 383, 604; iii, 297,  
     347, 348, 387, 428, 578.  
 Miller's Place, i, 41; ii, 326.  
 Mills, ii, 48, 174, 300, 307, 318,  
     401, 605; iii, 77, 380, 381, 383,  
     389, 428, 579.  
 Milnor, M., i, 441.  
 Minerals, i, 71, 82.  
 Minturn, B. G., iii, 312.  
 Minuit, Peter, i, 137, 139, 145.  
 Mitchell, iii, 251, 381, 527.  
 Mitchell, i, 77; ii, 558, 567; iii,  
     562-567, 595.  
     Samuel L., iii, 562-567.  
 Mix, ii, 383; iii, 389.  
 Moger, ii, 302, 343.  
 Mohawk Indians, i, 117, 121.  
 Mohegan Indians, i, 117, 121.  
 Money, colonial and continental,  
     i, 421.  
     paper, i, 422.  
 "Monitor," the, i, 402.  
 Monkton, Gov. Robert, i, 272.  
 Montauk Point, i, 45, 46, 79.  
 Montauk tribe, i, 117, 122, 123,  
     128; ii, 85, 93, 111.  
 Monteith, W., iii, 143, 183.  
 Montgomery, Gov. John, i, 262.  
 Montrose, ii, 563.  
 Moody, iii, 109, 110, 113.  
     Lady, i, 447; iii, 106, 111.  
 Moore, ii, 261, 266, 269, 280, 517,  
     518, 521, 523, 548; iii, 59, 69,  
     71, 330, 331, 374, 489-492, 534,  
     579, 620.  
     Gov. Henry, i, 273.  
     John, i, 330; ii, 517, 518, 521;  
     iii, 59.  
     William, iii, 489-492.  
 Moral Society, Suffolk County, ii,  
     25.  
 Morgan, J. J. A., ii, 170.  
 Morris, ii, 439.  
 Morrison, iii, 255.  
 Morse, iii, 61.  
 Mortgage of L. I., i, xvi, 166, 512.  
 Mosaic Law not sufficiently "en-  
     lightened," ii, 233.  
 Moscrop, Henry, ii, 322.  
 Moser, ii, 546.  
 Mott, ii, 436, 568, 579, 580, 622;  
     iii, 327, 458, 558-562.  
 Valentine, iii, 558, 562.  
 Moubray, John, ii, 355, 356.

- Moulton, J. W., i, 91; ii, 563.  
 Mount, iii, 383, 483-488, 596.  
 Mount Sinai, i, 41; ii, 325.  
 Muhlenberg, W. A., iii, 40.  
 Muirson, ii, 318; iii, 356, 544, 545, 594, 595.  
 Mulford, ii, 121, 123, 131, 179, 329; iii, 320, 322, 329, 333, 334.  
     John, ii, 122, 158.  
 Mumford, ii, 515.  
 Muncey, John, ii, 311; iii, 296.  
 Munsell, iii, 377.  
 Murms, iii, 562.  
 Murray, ii, 648; iii, 312.  
 Mussey, L., iii, 103.  
  
 Names of L. I. Indians, i, 94.  
     of places changed, i, 196; iii, 281.  
 Nanfan, Lieut.-Gov. John, i, 250, 254.  
 Narragansett tribe, i, 117, 122; ii, 85.  
 Nash, Capt., i, 399.  
     Sylvester, iii, 165.  
 Nassau, Blues, i, 343.  
     County, ii, 58.  
     Long Island called, i, 247.  
 Natives of L. I., i, 93, 96.  
 Naval Lyceum, iii, 227.  
 Navy Yard, iii, 226.  
 Needham, Edward, ii, 147, 148.  
 Negro Plot, i, 264.  
     riots, iii, 139.  
 Neilson, ii, 523.  
 Nelson, ii, 434.  
 Nesaquake, or Niassaquogue tribe, i, 126.  
 Nesbit, iii, 249.  
 Neutrals, oppression of, i, 299.  
 New Amsterdam, i, 137.  
     becomes New York, i, 184.  
     surrender of, i, 167.  
 New Belgium, i, 137.  
 New Lots, iii, 179, 184, 193.  
 New Netherlands, i, 137.  
     boundaries of, i, 502.  
 New Orange, i, 219.  
 New Utrecht, iii, 147.  
     Bay, iii, 161.  
 New Village, ii, 339.  
 New York, conquest of, by the British, i, 163.  
  
 New York, named New Orange, i, 219.  
     recaptured by the Dutch, i, 214.  
     returned to the British, i, 226.  
     seized by Capt. Leisler, i, 237.  
     siege of, i, 348.  
 Newbold, iii, 606.  
 Newman, ii, 429; iii, 185.  
 Newson, Sarah, ii, 167.  
 Newspaper, first, ii, 193.  
 Newtown, i, 44, 53, 79; iii, 47.  
     Creek, iii, 53.  
 Nicholas, Edward, i, 480.  
 Nichols, ii, 521.  
     Col. Isaac, ii, 167.  
 Nicholson, Lieut.-Gen. Francis, i, 235, 237.  
 Nicoll, ii, 115, 218, 222, 224, 254, 264, 293, 363, 365, 383; iii, 325, 343, 344, 358, 359, 361, 363, 370, 379, 383, 404, 537, 595, 599, 606, 628.  
 Matthias, i, 202, 206, 233; ii, 4, 33, 63, 115, 294, 557, 558; iii, 358.  
 Matthias, and his descendants, iii, 333-345.  
 Col. Richard, ii, 293; iii, 25.  
 Gov. Richard, i, 167, 168, 177, 202, 523; ii, 116, 213; iii, 334.  
 Samuel B., ii, 218, 222, 224, 264, 383.  
 William, ii, 33, 217, 218, 222, 299, 349, 361, 363, 365, 558; iii, 427.  
     Capt. William, ii, 363; iii, 595.  
 Nicolls, Richard, i, 481.  
 Nightengale, iii, 523.  
 Niles, iii, 584.  
 Noah, M. M., i, 102.  
 Noble, i, 441, 446; ii, 263, 413.  
 Noll, F. M., ii, 323.  
 Noon, Darby, ii, 436.  
 North Hempstead, i, 79; ii, 551.  
 Northall, ii, 531.  
 Northrum, iii, 426.  
 Norton, ii, 234; iii, 313, 383, 454, 551.  
     Capt. N., iii, 454.  
 Norwich, ii, 457.  
 Nostrand, iii, 390.  
 Noyes, D. P., iii, 260.  
 Nyack, iii, 162.  
  
 Oak Neck, i, 57, 61.

- Oakey, P. D., iii, 247.  
 Oakley, iii, 380.  
 O'Callaghan, E. B., i, 121; iii, 106.  
 Occum, Sampson, i, 110, 128, 130, 131.  
 Ogden, ii, 50, 52, 627, 634; iii, 572.  
     Colonel, i, 236.  
     John, i, 108; ii, 469, 470.  
 Ogilby, iii, 514.  
 Oldfield, ii, 625.  
 Onderdonk, ii, 566, 576, 580, 606; iii, 250, 361.  
 O'Neil, iii, 584.  
 Oort, i, 488.  
 Op-Dyck, Guisbert, iii, 109.  
 Orient, ii, 267.  
     Harbor, i, 45.  
 Osborn, ii, 183, 193; iii, 319.  
 Osborne, ii, 277; iii, 322, 324.  
     Gov. Sir Danvers, i, 268.  
 Osgood, ii, 644; iii, 607.  
 Otis, ii, 517.  
 Outlawry of rebels, i, 327.  
 Overton, ii, 268, 307.  
 Owen, ii, 307; iii, 76, 585.  
 Oyster Bay, i, 42, 49, 62; ii, 422.  
 Oyster Pond Harbor, i, 45.  
     Point, i, 47.  
 Oyster Ponds, ii, 244.  
 Paine, ii, 126, 263, 282.  
 Palmer, ii, 300, 301, 512; iii, 63, 268, 545.  
 Parker, ii, 527.  
 Parks, Joseph, ii, 265.  
 Parmentier, iii, 231.  
 Parshall, J., iii, 318.  
 Parsons, i, 307; ii, 337; iii, 262.  
     Gen., i, 304, 358, 374.  
 Patchen, Jacob, iii, 219.  
 Patchogue, ii, 330.  
     tribe, i, 127.  
 Patent fees, ii, 387, 391.  
 Payne, ii, 137; iii, 345.  
 Payson, iii, 578.  
 Peace, ii, 581.  
 Peacock's Point, i, 57, 61.  
 Pearsall, i, 449; ii, 47; iii, 312, 563, 605, 607.  
 Pease, iii, 358.  
 Peat, i, 53.  
 Peck, iii, 101, 328, 329, 532.  
 Pelletreau, ii, 167, 261; iii, 378.  
 Penniman, A., iii, 102.  
 Pennoyre, iii, 109.  
 Penny, iii, 186.  
 Pequot Indians, i, 117, 118; ii, 85.  
 Pequot War, ii, 106.  
 Percy Lord, i, 356.  
 Perkins, ii, 133; iii, 265.  
 Perring, H., ii, 293.  
 Perry, O. H., iii, 255.  
 Persecution for religious opinions,  
     i, 144, 246, 256, 334, 434-451;  
     ii, 45, 47, 120, 227, 234, 320,  
     482, 485, 507, 513, 598, 620;  
     iii, 9. *See also* Bigotry,  
     Quakers.  
     remonstrance concerning, i, 439.  
 Peters, ii, 516; iii, 261.  
 Pettingall, iii, 437.  
 Petty, ii, 327.  
 Phillips, ii, 133, 194, 267, 300, 312,  
     314, 381, 592; iii, 578-581.  
 Phipps, iii, 265.  
 Phoenix, ii, 381; iii, 541, 572, 580,  
     581.  
 Pierce, Thomas, ii, 292.  
 Pierpont, James, ii, 161, 258.  
 Pierrepont, iii, 256.  
 Piersall, N., i, 241.  
 Pierson, ii, 173, 258.  
     Abraham and family, ii, 159,  
     160, 161, 258.  
 Pike, ii, 279.  
 Pillsbury, Ithamer, ii, 180, 383.  
 Pinhorne, W., i, 234.  
 Pinkerton, iii, 585.  
 Piracy, i, 246, 252, 315, 337, 398,  
     486; ii, 72, 103.  
 Pitkin, J. R., iii, 188.  
 Place, M., ii, 548.  
 Platt, i, 538; ii, 19, 380, 389, 404;  
     iii, 331, 368, 376, 378, 379,  
     382, 464, 548, 567-573, 596,  
     597, 599, 605.  
     Ebenezer, ii, 325, 415.  
     Zophar, and family, iii, 567-  
     573.  
 Plowman, M., i, 241.  
 Plymouth Company, i, 138, 165.  
 Poggatacut, ii, 85.  
 Pokanokets, i, 117.  
 Polhemus, iii, 172, 173, 180.  
 Pomeroy, Samuel, and family, iii,  
     61.  
 Pool, S., ii, 549.

- Poor-laws, i, 205; ii, 327.  
 Poosapatuck Indians, i, 132.  
 Pope, iii, 334.  
 Population, i, 478.  
 Porter, i, 399; ii, 132.  
 Post, iii, 369, 492-497, 524, 608.  
   Capt. James, ii, 170.  
   Wright, iii, 492-497.  
 Potter, ii, 260, 396.  
   Colonel, ii, 173; iii, 396.  
 Powell, ii, 459, 460, 515, 581.  
 Poyer, ii, 624.  
 Prall, iii, 300, 607.  
 Pratt, John, ii, 549.  
 Prence, Thomas, i, 503.  
 Prescott, Jonathan, ii, 165.  
 Prime, ii, 316, 408.  
   Benjamin Y., ii, 178, 314, 316, 407, 412.  
   Ebenezer, ii, 173, 178, 314, 407, 411; iii, 374.  
   Nathaniel S., ii, 178, 408; iii, 103.  
 Prince, ii, 310, 424; iii, 30, 31, 32, 607.  
 "Princeton" explosion on U. S. S., ii, 141.  
 Printing, i, 235, 247, 256; ii, 267.  
 Prior, M., ii, 311.  
 Prison-ships, i, 376.  
 Privateersmen, i, 337.  
 Prudden, ii, 591, 596.  
 Punderson, ii, 319.  
 Putnam, Gen., i, 350, 353, 366; iii, 321.  
 Pyne, T., iii, 253.  
 Pyrites, i, 53.  
 Quakers, Hicksite, ii, 456, 573.  
   execution of, i, 436.  
   persecution of, i, 144, 334, 434-451; ii, 45, 47, 234, 482, 483; iii, 10, 14, 21, 117, 307.  
   *See also* Bigotry, Persecution.  
 Queen's County, ii, 30.  
 Quimby, T. R., iii, 300.  
 Quincy, iii, 513.  
 Quit-rents, ii, 387.  
 Quogue, ii, 206.  
 Rackett, iii, 370, 371, 373.  
 Radcliffe, iii, 500.  
   P. W., iii, 500-503.  
 Raffener, John, iii, 103.  
 Railroad, L. I., i, xli, 457.  
 Rapelye, iii, 312.  
 Rapelyea, iii, 69.  
 Rattoone, ii, 629; iii, 248.  
 Ravenswood, iii, 77.  
 Ray, iii, 523, 583, 584.  
 Raymond, iii, 583.  
 Raynor, ii, 156, 337, 473, 534, 535.  
 Reade, ii, 626.  
 Reading, ii, 606.  
 Reed, iii, 103.  
 Reeve, ii, 207, 270, 271, 272, 285, 325, 329, 379, 380; iii, 366.  
 Reeves, iii, 379.  
 Religion of the early settlers, i, 143.  
 Remsen, iii, 203, 581.  
 Reynolds, iii, 102, 372.  
 Rhinelander, iii, 523.  
 Rhodes, ii, 443.  
 Rice, Charles, ii, 319.  
 Richbill, ii, 433, 579.  
 Ridings, division into, i, 195.  
 Riker, iii, 61, 78, 199, 537-541, 611, 617, 620.  
   Richard, iii, 537-541.  
 Riker's Island, i, 78; iii, 78.  
 Riley, I., iii, 186.  
 Ripley, ii, 257.  
 Ritter, A. P., iii, 100.  
 Riverhead, i, 40; ii, 273.  
 Roads, John, ii, 484.  
 Roanoke Point, i, 40.  
 Robbins, Jacob, ii, 548.  
 Robert, Daniel, ii, 335; iii, 598.  
 Roberts, ii, 182, 328; iii, 346.  
 Robertson, Gen. James, i, 276, 313.  
 Robins, ii, 166.  
 Robinson, i, 436; ii, 265, 268, 570, 645; iii, 440, 600.  
   Col. Beverly, i, 343; ii, 570.  
   Sir Thomas, i, 242.  
 Rockaway, i, 55.  
   Bay, i, 64.  
   Neck, i, 63.  
   tribe, i, 125.  
 Rodman, iii, 311, 312, 514, 605.  
 Roe, ii, 161, 307, 314, 607; iii, 42, 390, 427, 428, 597.  
 Rogers, ii, 199, 251, 396; iii, 300, 330, 379, 545, 573.  
 Rolfe, Colonel, ii, 404.  
 Romaine, B., i, 396.  
 Romeyn, ii, 617.



- Rose, ii, 200, 329; iii, 382.  
 Roslyn, ii, 559.  
 Rouse, ii, 211, 213; iii, 245.  
 Rowland, iii, 529.  
 Rubel, J. C., iii, 182.  
 Rudyard, ii, 341; iii, 382.  
 Rumford, Count, i, 319.  
 Rumsey, iii, 374.  
 Rushmore, iii, 621.  
 Russell, ii, 207, 316; iii, 599.  
 Rutyard, iii, 378.  
 Ruyter, iii, 202, 203.  
 Rycken, iii, 199.  
 Ryerse, M., iii, 199.
- Sabbath-breaking, ii, 78, 118.  
 Sachems, i, 124.  
 Sackett, iii, 610.  
 Safety, committee of, i, 327.  
 Saffin, iii, 512.  
 Sag Harbor, ii, 176, 191-193.  
 Sagamores, i, 124.  
 Sage, Ebenezer, and family, i, xxvii; ii, 198.  
 St. John, ii, 164.  
 Salisbury, ii, 239; iii, 339, 546.  
 Salt, marshes, i, 37.  
     works, ii, 192.  
 Saltonstall, iii, 322, 603.  
     Sir Richard, ii, 473.  
 Sampson, L., ii, 434.  
 Sand, i, 36.  
 Sand-dunes, i, 34.  
 Sandford, ii, 539.  
 Sands, ii, 511, 548, 556; iii, 312, 377, 507, 575, 581-590.  
 Sands' Point, i, 58, 61.  
 Sandy Hook Lighthouse, i, 273.  
 Sandys, iii, 581, 582, 583.  
 Sanford, ii, 544; iii, 258, 329.  
     Nathan, iii, 507-511.  
 Sarles, J. W., iii, 266.  
 Satterly, i, xxv; ii, 300, 302, 343, 380; iii, 298, 384.  
     Col. Isaac, ii, 344; iii, 383.  
     Jacob, i, xxv; ii, 312; iii, 298.  
 Saxton, ii, 266; iii, 381, 568.  
 Sayer, Job, i, 531.  
 Sayre, ii, 147, 167, 202, 261; iii, 248.  
     Job, ii, 145, 147, 148, 202.  
 Sayres, ii, 630.  
 Scarborough, Jared, iii, 546.  
 Schellinger, iii, 319.
- Schenck, ii, 412, 413, 551.  
 Schieffelin, iii, 606.  
 Schoonmaker, ii, 566, 619; iii, 68, 92, 124, 182, 188.  
 Schroeder, J. F., iii, 40.  
 Schuyler, iii, 462, 531.  
     Gov. Peter, i, 260.  
 Scidmore, iii, 328.  
 Scott, ii, 483; iii, 74, 596.  
     Capt. John, i, 481; ii, 293, 487; iii, 303.  
 Scudder, Charles, iii, 329.  
 Seabury, ii, 322, 515, 516, 517, 628.  
     Samuel, ii, 322, 444, 515, 517; iii, 75, 372.  
     Samuel A., ii, 193, 403.  
 Seaman, ii, 455, 459, 533, 548, 549, 566, 580; iii, 254, 343, 384, 497-500, 558.  
     Valentine, iii, 497-500.  
 Sears, i, 328; ii, 380; iii, 376, 596.  
 Seatacot, or Setauket tribe, i, 126.  
 Seawan, i, 111.  
 Secatogue tribe, i, 127.  
 Seely, iii, 624.  
 Selwyn, iii, 242.  
 Selyns, H., iii, 174, 242.  
 Senators, i, 461.  
 Setauket, i, xxvii; ii, 343.  
     fortifications of church at, i, 307.  
     tribe, i, 126.  
 Settlement of L. I., i, 98, 103.  
 Shaler, iii, 333.  
 Shanks, iii, 359.  
 Sharp, ii, 316.  
 Sharpe, iii, 247.  
 Shaw, Peter H., ii, 169.  
 Sheldon, iii, 62.  
 Shelter Island, ii, 210.  
 Shelton, iii, 67, 329, 427.  
 Shenile, ii, 282.  
 Shepard, iii, 594.  
 Shepherd, iii, 294, 368.  
 Sheriffs, ii, 41, 70.  
 Sherwood, L., ii, 405, 451.  
 Shiland, ii, 135.  
 Shimeal, R. C., iii, 252.  
 Shinnecock, i, 29, 54.  
 Shinnecock tribe, i, 127, 132; ii, 86, 151.  
 Shipbuilding, ii, 340.  
 Shipley, iii, 312.

- Shoals, i, 79.  
 Short, ii, 280.  
 Sigourney, iii, 269.  
 Silliman, Major-General, G. S., i,  
     310, 313, 335.  
     family of, i, 313.  
 Simcoe, ii, 449.  
 Simkins, N., ii, 431.  
 Simpkins, ii, 452.  
 Simson, Dugald, ii, 312.  
 Singleton, iii, 563.  
 Skidmore, iii, 380.  
 Skinner, i, 325; ii, 632.  
 Slaughter, Gov. Henry, i, 242,  
     244, 277; ii, 304.  
 Slavery, i, 145, 265.  
 Sleight, ii, 638; iii, 598.  
 Slongo, Fort, ii, 377.  
 Sloss, ii, 399.  
 Smallwood, Gen. Wm., i, 367, 372.  
 Smith, i, xxv, 396, 408, 449; ii, 5,  
     198, 261, 299, 300, 302, 305,  
     306, 307, 313, 315, 318, 319,  
     321, 341, 344, 345, 357, 372,  
     376, 377, 380, 417, 434, 485,  
     531, 539, 603, 607, 608, 627;  
     iii, 39, 74, 100, 250, 295, 297,  
     298, 310, 311, 317, 321, 328,  
     343, 349, 359, 362, 363, 366,  
     367, 369, 372, 375, 376, 377,  
     378, 379, 380, 381, 382, 383,  
     384, 387, 388, 390, 427, 456-  
     461, 464, 527, 540, 544, 562,  
     568, 569, 570, 579, 585, 590-  
     600, 603, 604.  
 Justice Adam, ii, 307.  
 Col. Henry, ii, 307, 318, 321;  
     iii, 343.  
 Gen. John, iii, 342, 363, 404.  
 Melancthon, iii, 456-471.  
 Richard, i, 449; ii, 313, 345, 366,  
     370, 380; iii, 342, 603, 604.  
 Major Richard, descendants of,  
     iii, 375-384.  
 Col. William, i, 132, 242, 253;  
     ii, 302, 303, 305, 306, 336,  
     342.  
 Col. William, and his descend-  
     ants, iii, 590-600.  
 Smithfield, ii, 367.  
 Smith's Clove, ii, 344.  
 Smiths, the Horseblock, ii, 344.  
 Smithtown, ii, 366.  
 Snawsell, iii, 603.  
 Snedeger, Jan, iii, 172.  
 Society for propagating the Gos-  
     pel, ii, 506, 620; iii, 65.  
 Soil, i, 11, 75.  
 Solinus, H., iii, 174.  
 Solyns, iii, 174, 242.  
 South Haven, ii, 332.  
 Southampton, ii, 143.  
     release, i, 166.  
     remonstrance, iii, 634.  
 Southard, ii, 546.  
 Southgate, iii, 312.  
 Southold, i, 45; ii, 225, 273.  
 Spear, iii, 263, 264.  
 Specht, iii, 174.  
 Spencer, ii, 604; iii, 247, 259, 551,  
     557.  
 Spicer, Samuel, i, 444, 446; iii,  
     127.  
 Spooner, ii, 193; iii, 256.  
 Spragg, J., ii, 492, 493.  
 Sprague, iii, 263, 270.  
 Spratt, John, i, 239.  
 Springs, i, 72.  
 Sprout, iii, 597.  
 Staats, Samuel, i, 241.  
 Stage, iii, 384.  
 Stanborough, Josiah, ii, 147.  
 Standard, Thomas, ii, 321.  
 Staples, M. H., iii, 300.  
 Star, Jonathan, ii, 516.  
 Starr, iii, 333.  
 Staten Island, i, 196.  
 Stealing, penalty for, i, 530.  
 Stedman, iii, 324, 378.  
 Steenwyck, iii, 174.  
 Stephens, ii, 438; iii, 377, 514,  
     606.  
 Stephenson, Thomas, ii, 647.  
 Stevens, iii, 330, 590.  
     Major-General E., iii, 504-507.  
 Stevenson, ii, 167; iii, 103.  
     Marmaduke, murder of, i, 436.  
 Stewart, iii, 332.  
 Sticklan, John, ii, 469, 470.  
 Stillwell, iii, 121, 238.  
 Stirling, Earl of, i, 165; ii, 211.  
     Brigadier-General, Wm., i, 358,  
     363.  
 Stockton, Major, i, 344.  
 Stockwell, iii, 124.  
 Stoddard, iii, 622.  
 Solomon, ii, 130.  
 Stokes, J. D., ii, 135.

- Stone, iii, 255, 259, 348.  
 Stony Brook, ii, 339.  
 Storm, iii, 220.  
 Storrs, ii, 260; iii, 269.  
 Stowe, C. E., ii, 133.  
 Strahan, Edward, ii, 404.  
 Stratton, John, ii, 92, 125; iii, 378.  
 Strebeck, ii, 629.  
 Stringham, iii, 312.  
 Strong, ii, 167, 224, 305, 315, 324, 325, 329, 345, 437; iii, 46, 183, 296, 302, 363, 368, 374, 388, 389, 424-428, 597.  
     Selah, ii, 305, 307, 324, 364, 434; iii, 296, 374, 389, 427, 597.  
 Stryker, Jan, iii, 172.  
 Stuart, iii, 551.  
 Stuyvesant, Gov. Peter, i, 148, 150, 172, 437; iii, 14.  
     appeal to the Netherlands, i, 181.  
     defiance of the British, i, 174, 515.  
     oppression under, i, 154.  
     surrender of, i, 178.  
 Stuyvesant, Peter Gerard, i, 183.  
 Suffolk County, ii, 3.  
 Sullivan, Gen. John, i, 357, 358, 363, 366.  
 Sunken Meadows, i, 32.  
 Surrogates, ii, 9, 36.  
 Sutphin, J. H., ii, 38.  
 Sutton, iii, 585.  
 Suydam, iii, 471.  
     Minne, ii, 525.  
 Swallow, ii, 267.  
 Swezey, Moses, ii, 283.  
 Sylvester, ii, 44, 215, 216, 217, 223, 434; iii, 337.  
     Constant and family, ii, 211, 213, 214, 215, 216.  
     Nathaniel, and family, ii, 44, 211, 213, 215, 216, 217, 252, 412, 434.  
 Symmes, ii, 278, 279.  
 Tabor, Frances, ii, 517.  
 Tadens, iii, 203.  
 Talcott, Samuel, ii, 174.  
 Tallmadge, ii, 254, 314, 315; iii, 349, 367, 427, 550.  
     family, iii, 345-349.  
     Colonel B., iii, 349, 367.  
 Talmage, Thomas, ii, 314.  
 Tallman, John, ii, 47.  
 Talmage, David, ii, 91.  
 Talman, iii, 377, 607.  
 Tammany, i, 121, 394.  
 Tangier, iii, 599.  
 Tappan, iii, 261.  
 Tappen, iii, 246, 260.  
 Tariff established by Gov. R. Nicoll, i, 205.  
 Taxation for support of clergy, i, 248.  
     grievances, i, 205, 208, 278.  
     and representation, i, 210, 278, 280.  
 Taylor, ii, 163, 258, 376, 379, 430, 439, 547; iii, 265, 377, 427, 512.  
 Telford T., iii, 297.  
 Temple, Sir John and Sir Thomas, iii, 582.  
 Templeton, iii, 428.  
 Ten Broeck, iii, 246.  
 Tennent, Wm., ii, 413.  
 Terhune, iii, 469.  
 Terry, ii, 281, 487; iii, 302, 333, 362, 388.  
 Tew, Capt., i, 252.  
 Thane, ii, 600.  
 Thayer, iii, 268.  
 Thomas, ii, 506, 511, 512, 547, 580; iii, 267, 359, 366, 584.  
     Capt., i, 370, 371.  
     Gen., iii, 367.  
 Thompson, i, xxviii, xxv, xxix, 317; ii, 262, 271, 306, 307, 311, 355, 362, 404, 634; iii, 292-302, 322, 323, 324, 375, 377, 382, 383, 387, 427, 428, 595.  
     Abraham G., ii, 355.  
     Sir Benjamin, i, 317.  
     Judge Isaac, ii, 355, 362.  
 Thompson, Benjamin F., ii, 533.  
     biography of, i, xxv.  
     children of, i, xxix.  
     Democratic party, i, xxxviii.  
     education of, i, xxvi.  
     genealogical work of, i, xlvii.  
     legal career of, i, xxxiv.  
     marriage of, i, xxviii.  
     personality of, i, xlvii.  
     portrait of, i, xli.  
     railroad, L. I., i, xli.  
     woman suffrage, i, xxxviii.  
 Thomson, W., ii, 124.

- Thorne, iii, 7, 310, 342, 471, 562, 605, 628.  
 Thorowgood, Thomas, i, 101.  
 Throop, Wm., ii, 260.  
 Thurston, R. I., ii, 648.  
 Ticonderoga, iii, 391.  
 Tillett, iii, 604.  
 Tilley, James, ii, 167.  
 Tillotson, S., iii, 330.  
 Tilton, i, 447; iii, 121.  
   John, and family, iii, 127.  
   persecution of, i, 436, 446, 447.  
 Titus, ii, 548, 581, 610; iii, 60, 161, 310, 311, 473, 489, 607.  
 Tobacco statute, i, 145.  
 Tobias, iii, 373.  
 Toby, Wm., ii, 266.  
 Todhunter, iii, 300.  
 Tompkins, Gov., i, 395.  
 Tone, iii, 540.  
 Tonneman, Pieter, i, 347.  
 Tooker, iii, 375, 376.  
 Topping, ii, 156; iii, 377.  
 Tories, oppression of the, i, 299.  
   robbed of their property, i, 331.  
 Toutedville, iii, 595.  
 Town meeting, ii, 227.  
 Townley, ii, 415.  
 Townsend, i, 447, 448; ii, 429, 447, 448, 459, 463, 464, 580, 587, 603; iii, 312, 342, 371, 372, 525, 529, 568, 607, 622-629.  
   Henry, ii, 426, 429.  
   Henry, persecution of, i, 438, 441, 442, 444, 446, 447, 448.  
   John, i, 441, 444, 446, 447; ii, 430.  
   Samuel, and family, 622-629.  
 Transcripts, iii, 89.  
 Treat, i, 223; ii, 604.  
 Tredwell, ii, 378, 379, 516, 549; iii, 382, 527, 548, 568.  
 Trenchard, iii, 590.  
 Trente, iii, 320.  
 Tribute extorted from the Indians, i, 119.  
 Troup, ii, 628.  
 Trumbull, iii, 426.  
 Truxtun, Commodore T., iii, 447.  
 Tryon, Gov. Wm., i, 274, 302, 303, 304, 308, 322.  
 Tucker, ii, 293; iii, 249, 590.  
 Tunstall, iii, 591.  
 Turk, iii, 531.  
 Tuthill, ii, 221, 226, 262, 278; iii, 370, 373, 374.  
 Tyler, ii, 319.  
   President John, ii, 141; iii, 326.  
 Udall, R., ii, 363; iii, 383.  
 Underhill, ii, 443, 548; iii, 44, 310, 311, 312, 371, 387, 563, 605, 641-651.  
   Capt. John, i, 126, 185; ii, 429, 443.  
   Capt. John, and his descendants, 640-650.  
 Union of the colonies, i, 269.  
 Union Course, ii, 639.  
 United Colonies of New England, ii, 236.  
 University, regents of the, i, 474.  
 Unkechaug tribe, i, 132.  
 Updike, ii, 372.  
 Urquhart, Wm., ii, 258, 622; iii, 543.  
 Usury, legislation on, i, 264.  
 Vail, ii, 255, 270; iii, 383, 384.  
 Valentine, E., ii, 580; iii, 558.  
 Van Arsdale, iii, 246, 247.  
 Van Basten, iii, 68.  
 Van Beuren, iii, 596.  
 Van Brunt, i, 341; iii, 160, 348.  
 Van Brunt's Neck, ii, 343.  
 Van Buren, Martin, i, xlii.  
 Vanburen, iii, 562.  
 Van Buskirk, ii, 124.  
 Van Cleve, iii, 245.  
 Van Corlaer, iii, 128.  
 Van Cortlandt, i, 241; ii, 355; iii, 203, 550.  
 Van Dam, Gov. Rip, i, 262.  
 Van de Beeck, iii, 199.  
 Vanderbeck, iii, 238.  
 Vanderbilt, iii, 576.  
   John, ii, 64; iii, 183, 185, 577.  
 Van der Donck, iii, 50.  
 Van der Donk, Adrien, i, 89, 150.  
 Vanderhoof, Jacob T., i, xxx, xlv; iii, 298.  
 Vanderveer, iii, 575.  
 Vandervoort, iii, 480.  
 Van de Voert, iii, 199.  
 Van Doren, iii, 101.  
 Van Dyke, Henry, iii, 66.  
 Van Eckkellen, Johannes, ii, 74.

- Van Gelder, ii, 134.  
 Van Hoeson, iii, 160.  
 Van Horn, iii, 617.  
 Van Horne, iii, 362, 510.  
 Van Kleek, iii, 143, 186.  
 Van Kouwenhoven, iii, 128.  
 Van Liew, Ellen, iii, 69.  
 Van Naerden, iii, 202.  
 Van Nest, iii, 68, 199.  
 Van Neste, ii, 618.  
 Van Nieuwenhuysen, iii, 243.  
 Van Nostrand, ii, 626; iii, 253, 329.  
 Van Pelt, i, 341; iii, 577.  
 Van Rensselaer, i, 140; iii, 37, 336, 346, 523.  
 Van Ruyven, C., ii, 63.  
 Van Salee, iii, 108, 109, 149.  
 Van Schaack, iii, 245.  
 Van Schaick, iii, 181.  
 Van Sinderen, Adrian, iii, 619.  
 Van Sinderen, U., iii, 181.  
 Van Tuyl, iii, 537.  
 Van Twiller, i, 140, 146; iii, 129.  
 Van Werekhoven, iii, 148.  
 Van Wyck, ii, 540; iii, 326, 381, 461, 471, 562, 569, 605, 607.  
 Van Wycke, Gilbert, ii, 516.  
 Van Zandt, ii, 627; iii, 44.  
 Van Zuren, iii, 180.  
 Varick, iii, 180, 368.  
 Verazzano, John de, i, 89.  
 Veron, iii, 330, 331, 332.  
 Vesey, ii, 622; iii, 65, 294.  
 Vinton, F., iii, 254, 257.  
 Voorhees, ii, 413, 446; iii, 576.  
  
 Wading River, i, 41; ii, 286.  
 Waldron, Resolve, i, 444.  
 Walker, ii, 404, 590, 596; iii, 468, 583, 584.  
 Wallabout, i, 376, 394; iii, 225.  
 Waller, Henry D., iii, 39.  
 Walsh, Wm., iii, 72.  
 Walton, H., ii, 147, 148.  
 Wampum, i, 111.  
 Wansley, T. J., iii, 141.  
 War of 1812, i, 397; ii, 194.  
 Ward, ii, 528; iii, 93, 251.  
 Wardsworth, iii, 370.  
 Washborne, ii, 425.  
 Washington, George, i, 306, 339, 354, 359, 360, 374, 427; ii, 420.  
  
 Waters, iii, 605.  
 Watrous, C. S., ii, 638.  
 Watson, i, 108; ii, 602; iii, 483, 606.  
 Watts, ii, 400, 531; iii, 338, 361.  
 Way, ii, 580; iii, 558.  
 Webb, ii, 251, 602; iii, 61.  
 Webster, ii, 525, 526; iii, 27.  
 Weed, ii, 401, 610; iii, 263, 348.  
 Weekes, iii, 371, 372, 427.  
 Weeks, D., ii, 429.  
 Welch, B. T., iii, 266.  
 Weller, Surrogate, ii, 38.  
 Wells, ii, 147, 148, 226, 237, 283, 285, 286, 287, 379, 571; iii, 184, 326, 501, 544, 619.  
     Capt. John, ii, 280, 571.  
 Welton, ii, 261.  
 Wentworth, Capt. Ralph, iii, 36.  
 Wessels, iii, 462.  
 West, iii, 464.  
 West India Company, i, 135, 138, 141, 145.  
 West Neck, i, 42, 48.  
 Westbury, ii, 573.  
 Westerhout, iii, 199.  
 Western, H. M., ii, 440.  
 Westhampton, ii, 206.  
 Westminster, treaty of, i, 223.  
 Wetmore, ii, 315, 316, 590; iii, 389.  
 Whaling, i, 288; ii, 92, 100, 118, 177, 183, 188, 335, 416.  
 Wharton, Robert, ii, 341.  
 Wheaton, iii, 370.  
 Wheeler, ii, 418, 564; iii, 44, 381.  
     Capt., i, 538.  
 Wheelock, Eleazer, i, 110.  
 Wheelwright, ii, 159, 406.  
 Whitaker, E., ii, 262.  
 White, ii, 166, 172, 252, 316, 317, 437, 629; iii, 266, 270.  
     Ebenezer, and family, ii, 166, 172, 173.  
     Sylvanus, and family, ii, 166, 167, 173.  
 Whitehead, iii, 470, 473.  
     Daniel, i, 241; ii, 425, 430, 433, 439; iii, 470.  
     Jonathan, i, 449, 450.  
 Whitestone, i, 44.  
 Whitfield, ii, 259.  
 Whiting, ii, 164, 398, 503; iii, 45, 513.



- Whiting, Joseph, and family, ii, 164, 165, 503.  
 Whitman, ii, 404; iii, 329, 379.  
 Whitney, iii, 581.  
 Whitson, T., ii, 460.  
 Whittingham, ii, 182; iii, 603.  
 Wickes, ii, 632; iii, 427.  
     Thomas, family of, ii, 390.  
 Wickham, ii, 5, 103, 253, 262, 269, 284, 611.  
 Wiggins, iii, 370.  
 Wigham, iii, 361.  
 Wilkins, iii, 7.  
 Willemson, M., iii, 314.  
 Willet, ii, 34, 47, 424, 600; iii, 35, 311, 511-518, 527, 602.  
     Col. Marinus, 514-518.  
     Thomas, i, 171, 184, 241, 328, 450, 503; ii, 4, 47.  
     Capt. Thomas, and family, 511-514.  
 Willets, ii, 348, 354, 357, 455, 581, 619; iii, 310, 324, 382, 605.  
 Willett, iii, 605.  
 Williams, i, 241, 326; ii, 168, 173, 396, 425, 430; iii, 372.  
     John, and family, ii, 129.  
     Robert, ii, 425, 430, 439, 440, 454, 484, 485.  
     Roger, i, 101, 120, 121; ii, 370, 425.  
 Williamsburgh, i, 54; iii, 95.  
 Williamson, ii, 302; iii, 573.  
 Willis, ii, 558, 580; iii, 529.  
 Willison, iii, 585.  
 Willocks, G., ii, 341.  
 Willoughby, iii, 261.  
 Wilmot, ii, 603.  
 Wilsie, ii, 319.  
     Capt. John, ii, 323.  
 Wilson, ii, 169, 278; iii, 186.  
 Winder, S., ii, 341.  
 Wines, E. C., ii, 135.  
 Winkelman, F. T., iii, 268.  
 Winnequaheagh, ii, 349.  
 Winslow, Capt. Charles, i, 406.  
 Winter, G., iii, 32.  
 Winthrop, i, 222; ii, 250, 251; iii, 545, 546, 596.  
     Gov., i, 119, 171, 174; ii, 143, 145, 146, 160, 248, 473.  
 Wiswell, ii, 261.  
 Wit, P. J., iii, 82.  
 Witchcraft, ii, 44, 98.  
 Withers, i, 120.  
 Wodhull, Richard, ii, 292, 293, 294, 296, 300, 313. *See also* Woodhull.  
 Woertman, iii, 202, 203.  
 Wolcott, iii, 426.  
 Wolver Hollow, ii, 453.  
 Wolves, i, 526; ii, 119, 151; iii, 218.  
 Wompanoags, i, 117.  
 Wood, ii, 412, 416, 417, 429, 469, 470; iii, 571.  
     Silas, i, xii; ii, 416.  
 Woodbridge, ii, 161, 207, 208, 266, 445, 526, 527, 528; iii, 247.  
     Sylvester, and family, ii, 207, 208, 445, 526.  
 Woodbury, ii, 457.  
 Woodhull, ii, 300, 302, 307, 312, 316, 345, 412, 501, 606; iii, 63, 64, 244, 297, 342, 362, 368, 377, 380, 382, 384-390, 427, 428, 596, 597, 598, 599, 609, 619.  
     Col., ii, 89.  
     Nathan, and family, iii, 63.  
     Gen. Nathaniel, ii, 646; iii, 342, 363, 377, 390, 401, 599.  
     Richard, ii, 312, 501; iii, 297, 379, 609.  
     Richard, descendants of, iii, 384-390.  
     Selah S., and family, iii, 244.  
     *See also* Wodhull.  
 Woodroffe, ii, 595.  
 Woodrop, ii, 595.  
 Woolsey, ii, 258, 318, 319, 323, 435, 439, 440; iii, 78, 263, 368, 371, 378, 542-549, 570, 609.  
     Capt. John, ii, 323.  
     George, descendants of, iii, 542-549.  
 Woolworth, Aaron, and family, ii, 131, 174.  
 Wooster, Gen. David, i, 324, 325.  
 Worham, John, ii, 130.  
 Worth, i, 392; iii, 330.  
 Worthington, iii, 524.  
 Wright, ii, 429, 433, 443, 549; iii, 248, 366, 492, 573.  
     Anthony, ii, 425.

- Wyandanch, i, 127, 129; ii, 85,  
93, 110, 245, 291, 294.  
Wyatt, W., iii, 67.  
Wyllis, i, 222; ii, 503.  
Wyllys, Samuel, i, 160; ii, 245.  
330, 412; iii, 345, 370, 532,  
533, 544.  
Benjamin, ii, 5, 241, 256, 314,  
412; iii, 533.  
Capt. John, i, 180, 232, 484; ii,  
158, 235, 237, 239.  
Col. John, ii, 256.  
Rev. John, and his descend-  
ants, ii, 236, 244, 256, 314;  
iii, 370, 533.  
York, Duke of, grant of L. I. to  
the, i, xvi, 162.  
resistance to government of  
the, i, 225, 226.  
Yorkshire, i, 195.  
Youngs, ii, 242, 256, 264, 283, 314,  
Zabriskie, J. B., iii, 577.  
Zenger, John Peter, i, 262.

---

## ERRATUM

Volume III, Page 267, St. Mary's Church. Read St. Patrick's  
Catholic Church.









